SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 02

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Volume 5: Wargod Luo Feng

Chapter 1: Three Months of Training

“Let’s go downstairs and eat with mom and dad” smiled Luo Feng.

“Okay” Luo Hua felt like he was a completely different person. Before, he thought that his future was full of despair; he thought living his life would be no better than death itself. But after seeing the miraculous effects of the ‘elixir of life’ and the ginormous number on Luo Feng’s phone, Luo Hua was full of energy! Pushing the wheelchair, Luo Feng brought Luo Hua downstairs.

Father Luo Hong Guo and mother Gong Xin Lan were sitting on the sofa without making a sound. From yesterday until today, in just one day’s time, the couple has suffered too large of an impact.

Their little son tried to commit suicide and now he’s extremely emotionally unstable.

“What should we do”

“What on earth should we do” the two of them had no solution. Breakfast has long been finished in the kitchen, but nobody had the heart to eat anything.

Suddenly——”Dad, mom!” Luo Feng pushed the wheelchair and brought his brother downstairs and he smiled as he yelled, “Where’s breakfast? Let’s eat breakfast together”

“Breakfast?” Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan both stood up.

Luo Hua also smiled: “Dad, mom, I’m hungry already”

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan stared at their son, Luo Hua, as if they were looking at a monster. Soon after, they ferociously woke up and Luo Hong Guo immediately said: “You’re hungry? Good, good. Hurry, hurry and bring us breakfast!”

“Qin” Gong Xin Lan yelled as she charged towards the kitchen.

Father Luo Hong Guo also ran towards the kitchen. In a moment, the entire household was filled with energy; the heavy atmosphere from before was nowhere to be seen.

Luo Feng laughed as he watched this scene unfold: “Well, now we’re past this problem. With time, my brother’s legs will be able to grow out and he’ll be able to stand up again. Our family will be even happier when that happens”

Why did he bother taking the risk to steal the dragon egg? Isn’t it to hurry up and make enough money for his brother’s elixir of life?

Maybe the heavens were helping him, since he got the battle gear of a wargod when stealing the dragon egg. Thanks to that, he almost instantly received the gigantic 30 billion.

※※

Jiang-Nan city, main city sector.

In the living room on the first floor of a villa on the peak of the Marvelous mountain in the Jiang-Nan mountain water sector, the fighter called ‘Scorpion’ in the circle of fighters, Venina※Paulinus, was currently sitting on the couch with a cold face.

And beside her, was ‘Vulture’ Li Wei who sat there without an expression, as if he was a blade.

“What results do we have” said Li Wei coldly.

In the living room, the middle-aged butler wearing a black suit said respectfully: “Sir, Madam. After investigating the targets for a few days, we picked out 12 people. However, even though we carefully investigated each of the 12, we still don’t have enough evidence to confirm who the culprit is”

“In other words, you still can’t even pick out a target?” Li Yao’s raging, explosive anger could be seen in his eyes.

Hu! The black suit wearing butler felt like he was being stared at by a gigantic monster and couldn’t help but to hold his breath as he respectfully said: “In these group of people, their motives range from being pressured by the HR alliance and wanting revenge by killing the young master, to having grudges against the young master’s bodyguard ‘Ka Long’. Some of them even have grudges against the young master’s bodyguard ‘Pan Ya’ from the tiger fang squad..... we can pick out 8 of them that have such motives.

However, these motives are very small, extremely small. If their brains are still working properly, they wouldn't kill the young master"

"Trash! If they have a grudge against Wei's bodyguard, they'll kill Wei? And that, what, tiger fang squad, what kind of shitty squad can enrage such a powerful enemy!" yelled Li Yao as he scolded, "Remember, the person who killed Wei is someone who can instantly kill two advanced level warlords and two intermediate level warlords. He killed them so quickly that none of the four were able to send out a message!"

"Yes" the butler responded respectfully.

"Keep in mind that this culprit is extremely powerful and is just hiding his battle record! To be able to instantly kill two advanced level warlords; with this power, he should be at least 20 years old" Li Yao commanded, "The targets we investigated, other than the ones that have already died, are quite young and weak. Some of them even just passed the 'Fighter Combat Exam'. You think those little shrimps have enough power to instantly kill two advanced level warlords?"

"You are right, sir" respectfully replied the butler.

Li Yao coldly commanded: "Carefully investigate their past and see which one of them could be hiding their skill. Once you think one of them has that possibility, check them!"

"Understood!" the butler didn't dare to say any extra words.

“Okay! Once even a sliver of a hint of them being a ‘wargod’ level fighter or a spirit reader appears, stick onto them even more!” said Li Yao coldly, “Of course, we have to investigate the high priority targets, but don’t let the low priority ones go either. Record their info, from bank accounts to wilderness battle records to what their family and friends are doing. Record all of that”

“Yes” respectfully replied the butler.

“You’ve been following me all these years, so I want you to do this with absolutely everything you can and have, understood?” Li Yao’s voice sank and had a hint of killing intent in it.

The butler’s forehead couldn’t help but to start letting out balls of sweat: “Understood”. Of course he knew how powerful this man in front of him was. Even the advanced level wargod, ‘Scorpion’ Venina※Paulinus from the Paulinus family, didn’t dare to go against Li Yao.

“Go!” Li Yao waved his hand.

The butler swiftly left.

After the butler left, the only people left in the living room were the couple Li Yao and Venina※Paulinus.

“Yao, if the culprit prepared to kill our son, he probably didn’t bring his tactical communications watch” said Venina with her

accented Chinese, “This shows that maybe none of the targets are the culprit”

“I know this possibility exists” said Li Yao coldly, “However, we have to grasp every chance we can. If there weren’t too many people..... I would rather kill a thousand of them than let one go!” a cold light flashed in Li Yao’s eyes. This case has around 500 targets involved, with the Dojo of Limits, the Thunder Dojo, the government’s army, etc. behind them.

These people are all near the headquarter city and enter the headquarter city sometimes, which was why Li Yao didn’t kill them all.

If there were only a few dozen people, he wouldn’t be afraid to take action.

“Yao, who do you think would do it?” frowned Venina as she asked.

“There are less than 10 advanced level wargods that have a grudge against me, Li Yao, on the entire earth. We also made quite a few enemies by letting you have the seat of the HR alliance’s HuaXia sector director back then. Thankfully, I successfully came out of the ancient archaeological ruins back then, so those stupid freaks didn’t dare to take action!” said Li Yao coldly, “The culprit who killed Wei better not let me find out who he is”. In the eyes of the two powerful fighters Venina and Li Yao, they ones with highest possibility of being the culprit was one of their wargod enemies from the past.

However, they won't stop investigating the 506 suspects either.

※※

Yang Zhou city, Ming-Yue sector.

Luo Feng was quite relaxed: when he's free, he'd chat with the fighters at the Limit Hall, but he usually spends most of his time immersed in the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》.

"Hello, captain"

In the reaction speed testing room of the Limit Hall, Luo Feng walked to the side to pick up his phone, "Oh, you guys are going to the wilderness again after new years on March 1st? Sure, I'm fine with that. I wanted to stay at home for a bit anyway and safely spend my two months here, along with polishing up on my blade techniques. Alright, okay, we'll go after new years"

"You already know about my brother's situation? This kind of stuff sure spreads quickly"

"I can't, even I can't do anything with these kinds of things. But there's no problem, my brother's already fine. Yea, I'm training my technique right now. Okay, we'll talk later"

Luo Feng hung up and left the phone in the corner. After that, he

walked back towards the reaction speed testing machine.

We say it's a testing machine, but Luo Feng has completely treated it as a training machine.

"Intermediate level warlord test, time: 10 minutes" Luo Feng adjusted the testing time on the reaction speed tester: this was already the greatest amount of time possible. Getting shot by a huge amount of rubber bullets is actually good for training one's dodging abilities, so Luo Feng likes to come here and train.

With a body drenched in sweat, Luo Feng put his phone and some other random things into his pockets.

"For most of the time of the month I was in the wilderness, I've been absorbing genetic energy to strengthen my body. Now, I'm not too far from the standards of a 'low level warlord'"

"I have to keep working hard and see how much stronger I can get in these two months"

Time passed day by day. On New Years' eve, Luo Feng and his family happily went to a Chinese New Year banquet. Luo Feng and his family also went to meet some friends. As for relatives? Luo Feng didn't really have any relatives, since his father and mother were both orphans after the Grand Nirvana period.

The Grand Nirvana period destroyed many families, causing many to become orphans.

※※

February 26, dawn.

Luo Feng, in a white dojo uniform, smiled as he headed towards the Limit Hall.

“Crazy, going to the hall so early in the morning?” a brute with a big moustache smiled.

“I’ll be going to the wilderness soon, so I have to hang on to my last few minutes and train and train” smiled Luo Feng as he said. The brute with the big moustache glared: “Dammit crazy, stop saying things that’ll make people mad. Hanging on to your last few minutes? I was there when you were taking your prospective fighter exam and, in a blink of an eye, you’ve already surpassed me”

Luo Feng laughed: “The waves in the back always push the ones in the front in the Yangtze river, so of course each generation has to be stronger than the next”

“Go go go, stop making me mad” laughed the brute with the big moustache as he scolded.

Luo Feng entered the Limit Hall and came to the sixth floor.

There are rarely any people in the Limit Hall at dawn so, as usual, it was empty here.

Luo Feng wouldn’t have come here if it wasn’t to test the fruits of his recent training. Last time he tested, his strength neared 13,000 kg and he received the grade ‘superior’ on the low level warlord reaction speed test. Luo Feng slightly warmed up, “It’s February 26 now. I wonder how much my fitness level has went up after these three months!”

Chapter 2: Arriving from HQ

Sixth floor of the Limit Hall, in the empty training hall.

Luo Feng turned on the fist strength testing machine and its display lightened up.

“I’ll punch without the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》technique first and just use my regular strength” Luo Feng slightly adjusted his breathing. After that, like a rampaging gorilla, his right arm and shoulder charged forwards and his fist drew across an arc.

PENG! A low knocking-like sound rang on the machine and the power of the fist violently shook the machine for a bit. The fist strength testing machine displayed a number—— ‘9981 kg’.

“Oh, it increased this much” Luo Feng looked at this number and couldn’t help but to let out a happy smile, “Last time it was 6,121 kg and now it gained 3,000 kg more”. Actually, this number was also within Luo Feng’s prediction. Normally, after training on the border between life and death, your strength will increase exponentially.

So, for the month where Luo Feng was in #003 city, Luo Feng improved extremely quickly.

And for the two months he was at home, since Luo Feng completed the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》right before he returned home, his rate of improvement was significantly higher than before.

With these three months, his strength has also increased by this much.

“According to the body fitness level estimates, the range 4,000 kg to 8,000 kg represents an advanced level warrior! And 8,000 kg to 16,000 kg represents the range of a beginner level warlord!

In other words, my body fitness level is comparable to a regular beginner level warlord”

Luo Feng smiled as he readjusted his posture.

This time, Luo Feng was preparing to use the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》technique. Sadly, even though he purchased the first four stages of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》and has been training for the past two months, he hasn’t been able to complete it no matter what he does. At most, he was only able to control his power more accurately.

“Hu!”

Luo Feng yelled deeply and his breath shot out of his mouth like an arrow. As he yelled, his right arm instantly drew across the space and, in that short interval, it drew across the space, started accelerating, and instantly broke the sound barrier. As a result, a horrifying sonic boom rang. The steel hammer-like fist heavily smashed onto the machine.

“RUMBLE~~” the machine ferociously swung forwards and backwards before stabilizing.

“Feels good” Luo Feng looked towards the display.

The display paused for a bit and then displayed the number——’28081 kg’.

“Hmhm, 9,981 times 2.8 is around.....” Luo Feng calculated in his mind, “Around 27,947. So a punch of 28,000 kg is acceptable”

Luo Feng was quite satisfied with this number: 28,000 kg is quite horrifying.

That’s 28 tons of fist strength! Even a truck is only a few tons, so one can imagine how powerful this fist was.

According to the body fitness level estimates, 16,000 kg to 32,000 kg belongs to the intermediate level warlord range. However, even if they’re both intermediate level warlords, the difference between 16,000 kg and a seasoned intermediate level warlord is extremely gigantic.

If Luo Feng swung his blade with that power, he would be considered powerful for an intermediate level warlord.

※※

As the chief instructor of the Limit Hall, chief instructor Wu Tong frequently comes to the Limit Hall.

“A sonic boom?”

Wu Tong, who was in a quiet room on the fifth floor, suddenly heard the sonic boom on the sixth floor and jumped out of surprisement, “What kind of powerful person caused that sonic boom?” Wu Tong turned into a shadow and directly flew across the stairs and charged towards the sixth floor. The training hall of the sixth floor was mostly empty; only one person was there——Luo Feng! At this time, Luo Feng was still standing in front of the fist strength testing machine, thinking about his current level of strength.

“Eh?” Luo Feng turned around, “Uncle Wu”

“Damn, you little kid, were you the one who made that sonic boom? Let me see how powerful your fist was” Wu Tong was extremely surprised as he walked towards Luo Feng, but when his gaze landed upon the fist strength testing machine’s display, he couldn’t help but to freeze, “28,081 kg?”

Wu Tong couldn’t help but to stare at Luo Feng, as if Luo Feng transformed into a monster: “You did this?”

“Who else?” Luo Feng laughed, “However, my body fitness level isn’t this powerful”

“The《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》?” Wu Tong guessed in an instant. He knew long ago that Luo Feng purchased the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》instruction manual. However, many powerful fighters don’t purchase this instruction manual even if they have the money, since many can’t even complete the first stage.

“Even if you’re practicing the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》, it shouldn’t be this absurd. What’s your normal fist strength? Up to what stage have you completed in the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》?” Wu Tong followed up his question.

Luo Feng smiled as he answered: “Regular fist strength is around 10,000 kg and I’ve finished the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》. No matter how much I train, I can’t grasp the fourth stage”. Luo Feng wasn’t planning on hiding his progress on the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》, since his strength will gather attention anyway.

Letting out some of his special points will still reap him some benefits.

As for his identity as a spirit reader, Luo Feng won’t reveal that. Even before the vulture scorpion couple started investigating the culprit’s identity with the ‘Astronomical Bounty’ case, Luo Feng never wanted reveal his identity as a spirit reader..... because around the entire world, spirit readers are even more rare than fighters, and fighters are pretty rare in the first place! The appearance of a spirit reader will complicate things a lot.

“Messed up, you’re too messed up, you’re a monster” Wu Tong

couldn't help but to hammer Luo Feng's chest, "I knew you were quite talented, since I scouted you for the Dojo of Limits. Even though the fact that your body fitness level reached the 'beginner level warlord level' is quite astonishing, I'm not too surprised, since some people grow even faster than you. However..... you actually managed to complete the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》in just a measly half a year! This is just too absurd, monster, monster!"

There are talented people everywhere. There are tons of people whose body fitness level grows at an insane rate! For example, during the few short years of the Grand Nirvana period, the strongest fighter 'Hong' and the second strongest fighter 'Thunder God' became existences that surpassed the wargod level. In just a few years, they grew to that level where they can even fly!

One can imagine how many geniuses there are on this world! However, the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》has nothing to do with body fitness at all.

Luo Feng's fitness level rose quickly and he was able to finish the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》; he's definitely a monster. Only one or two of these monsters appear a year around the entire world.

"Hurry, test your speed and show me the results" Wu Tong passionately went to turn on the speed testing machine for Luo Feng.

Luo Feng laughed.

Whoosh! His body instantly accelerated like an arrow leaving a bow and then stopped after a few breaths.

The display on the machine showed the number——“128m/s”

“Not bad, this is the level of a normal beginner level warlord” smiled Wu Tong as he nodded.

Luo Feng was pretty happy too.

He was clear that as a fighter’s fitness level increases, his strength will continuously increase too! Strength is okay, but speed..... as you advance, speed becomes harder and harder to increase.

Since the faster you are at sprinting, dodging, and jumping, the more air resistance you’ll encounter! The faster you are, the larger the resistance, which is why speed is harder to increase.

“Speed of 128 m/s, strength of roughly 10,000 kg, with the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》: around 28,000 kg. And my reaction speed test gave me a rank of superior for the ‘intermediate level warlord’ test” Luo Feng frequently trains with the reaction speed testing machine, so he has long been clear of his current level.

With his Ru Wei class technique and a bit of knowledge on the “Perfect level’, Luo Feng’s dodging abilities are quite astonishing.

As Luo Feng and Wu Tong were chatting...

Jiang-Nan city's main city sector's airport.

The word airport is a very foreign word.

Ever since the Grand Nirvana period, the amount monsters in the sky has increased, raising the standards on airplanes by who knows how many times. The cost to construct an airplane is insanely higher than the cost it took before the Grand Nirvana period. The so called 'airplane' has basically no relationship with most people.

There indeed still exists commercial airplanes, but the cost of each ticket for a normal person is insanely expensive! Even a rich person would be reluctant to buy a ticket.

In the waiting area of the airport, the chairman of the Dojo of Limits headquarters and the three chiefs below him, the Big Four of Jiang-Nan city's Dojo of Limits, were waiting.

"He's here!" Zhu Ge Tao smiled as he looked towards the sky.

Whoosh! A shadow virtually instantly appeared in the sky above the airport and then dramatically slowed down as it passed through the city's defense system. After that, it slowly descended. This was a gigantic, blue UFO-shaped commercial airplane that was around 30 to 40 meters in diameter. An enchanting, blue light reflected off the surface of the aircraft.

Beep! The hatch of the commercial UFO-shaped aircraft opened and a staircase extended from it. The Big Four of the Dojo of Limits immediately walked to the side of the staircase. Only people with status were able to come directly to the side of the aircraft. In total, there were around 10 people.

The passengers of the aircraft started coming down the staircase and each of them were of special status.

Keep in mind that.....

Aircraft like these are extremely, extremely rare throughout the entire world! When flying in the air, the aircraft has to guarantee the safety of its passengers. First, the aircraft's surface's material is comparable to a Q series battle uniform and a Q series weapon. Even though it's just a thin sheet, it can completely fend off attacks from a horde leader level flying monster! At the same time, the aircraft is equipped with an expensive mechanical wave cannon! This mechanical wave cannon can completely decimate an emperor level monster that dares to fly near the aircraft.

With all of this, the safety of the passengers is guaranteed. At the same time, the cost to construct it is extraordinary! For example, a Q series ghost blade is 3 billion, half price 1.5 billion. Cheapest price available in the palace of wargods is 1 billion. And the actual value of the blade is around 0.8 to 0.9 billion. If you just count solely the Ke-luo alloy, it's around 0.6 billion.

And the entire surface of the aircraft is made out of that material.

A 30 m to 40 m diameter aircraft, even though it's just the surface, the high density causes it to total at around 30 tons. Just the price of the Ke-luo alloy reaches billions and billions of Chinese dollars! Once you add on the mechanical wave cannon and the other stuff.....

A commercial aircraft, just the cost to construct it, is like a galaxy away from the cost to construct an aircraft before the Grand Nirvana period.

Furthermore, the maintenance fee of these types of aircraft is also astonishing! Each time they encounter an attack from a flock of flying monsters, they'll naturally have to expend tons of energy to fend them off.

That's why the prices for a ticket is extremely absurd! Many average rich people wouldn't even purchase one.

"Old Yang!" The chairman of the Dojo of Limits headquarters smiled as he yelled.

A middle aged man wearing a grey robe smiled as he walked over: "Steel hand, haha, long time no see"

"Old Yang, you came here to check out that Luo Feng's strength right? Well, leaving the small matters aside, let's go, us brothers will have a nice talk" smiled the chairman of the Dojo of Limits headquarters.

Chapter 3: Dragon Blood

“Mr. Yang!”

Zhu Ge Tong and the other three chiefs respectfully yelled.

This middle aged man, ‘Yang Hui’, who apparently looked around only 30 years old, was actually over 50 years old and was an ‘intermediate level wargod’. Usually, he lives in the Dojo of Limits’ world headquarters. Whether strength or identity, this Yang Hui is comparable to the man who is nicknamed ‘Steel Hand’, Zhou Zheng Yong.

“We haven’t seen each other for eight years huh. Let’s go, go and find a place to drink some tea. After that, we’ll eat some lunch. Oh yea, Zhu Ge, is your big brother here in the headquarter city? Tell him to come too” said Yang Hui.

“Alright, I’ll call my big brother right now” said Zhu Ge Tong.

Yang Hui was a wargod, chairman Zhou Zheng Yong was a wargod, and Zhu Ge Tao’s brother, ‘Zhu Ge Shan’, was a wargod. People look at each other’s status when making friends; people without any background at all definitely can’t enter their circle.

“Steel hand, is the investigator still in the headquarter city?” asked Yang Hui.

“The investigator went to #003 city in the wilderness a few days

ago to train his spear techniques on the horde leader monsters" said steel hand Zhou Zheng Yong, "After the investigator returns, I'll bring you to him. Half a year ago, when the head came to Jiang-Nan city to find the investigator, the investigator was still in the wilderness"

The head!

When this word came out of Zhou Zheng Yong's mouth, the three chiefs on the side and Yang Hui's expression immediately became serious.

Only one man can be called the head by the chairman of Jiang-Nan city's Dojo of Limits headquarters: The undisputable, most powerful fighter on earth: the creator of the Dojo of Limits, 'Hong'!

A powerful fighter with seemingly limitless strength! Mankind's most powerful fighter!

"The investigator has been training, since he's trying to become an existence that surpasses the wargod level" sighed Yang Hui, "The head also said that investigator Liu has the largest hope of accomplishing such a thing"

An investigator——————is nearly at the top of the entire Dojo of Limits! People like Zhou Zheng Yong and Yang Hui who are often allowed to come into close contact with the world's most powerful fighter, 'Hong', could also be considered as some of the most important people of the Dojo of Limits.

“Go, let’s go get some tea. We’ll slowly investigate that little Luo Feng’s stuff later” smiled wargod Yang Hui.

Headquarter ambassador Yang Hui, with the Big Four of Jiang-Nan city, left the airplane.

※※

February 28, dawn.

After finishing a basic warm up that lasted half an hour in the training hall, Luo Feng entered the audiovisual room. The curtains of the windows were closed tight, causing the inside of the room to be mostly dark. The only light source came from the sliver of light shooting in from the door.

“Turn on” commanded Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was relaxed as he finished making his tea and sat on the couch. At the same time, he put the wireless keyboard on his legs and swiftly entered the ‘warlord discussion board’ in the ‘Home of Limits’ and replied to some posts.

These posts have tons of warlord fighters from South America, the EU, Africa, etc. and sometimes, wargods come here too.

And through these posts, you could even video chat with some

fighters one on one.

There were tons of functions.

“An elixir of life is indeed rare” Luo Feng purposely posted on some threads that haven’t been active on the topic of the ‘elixir of life’. He caused three of the threads to appear at the top of the page again. Using the terms on the discussion board, he was ‘necroposting’.

Naturally, tons of warlord fighters all over the world see these updated threads, so tons of them started their discussions about it.

Through these discussions, Luo Feng learned much more about the ‘elixir of life’. Sometimes, he would also reply and chat with the fighters in the thread.

“There’s a startling amount of warlord fighters under the Dojo of Limits around the world. And yet, none of them know where the ‘elixir of life’ is” frowned Luo Feng, “Could it really be as the say? That every rare elixir of life ends up in an auction?”

Even if there actually was an elixir of life available, Luo Feng wouldn’t dare to buy it.

He doesn’t have enough strength, so once the Vulture Scorpion couple find out, his nightmare will begin.

“Whatever, for me right now, the most important thing is to

increase my strength!”

“The most powerful thing about me is my spiritual force! As of now, my body fitness level is still at the beginner level warlord level. Since my spiritual force raises my actual level by two, I’m actually an ‘advanced level warlord’. In other words, I can openly and easily defeat advanced level warlords” Luo Feng was extremely happy.

Last time, he killed the old veteran named Liu and the white brute by instantly ambushing them from behind when they weren’t prepared!

If he attacked front on, then Luo Feng wouldn’t have a 100% chance of victory. However, the current Luo Feng could destroy the two of them even without ambushing! Spirit readers can destroy fighters of the same level and can fight fighters beyond their level! This is a known fact in the circle of fighters.

“As of now, I can fight against a beginner level wargod!”

“If I play dirty and rely on my spiritual force, it wouldn’t be too difficult to kill a beginner level wargod”

Luo Feng indeed improves quickly. It has only been 8 months since he has awakened, and his strength already rivals a beginner level wargod!

This isn’t that weird though since Luo Feng is an extremely rare

spirit reader. The value of a spirit reader is unrivaled. When they are born, their initially weak spiritual force naturally agglomerates and stays hidden in their minds.

Spiritual force turns into the state of a liquid for those who have less of it.

And for those who have more, it exists as a combination between liquid and solid. The more solid there is, the more spiritual force.

And for those with an extraordinarily large amount of spiritual force, it exists only as a solid!

Luo Feng is one of those people possessing that astonishing amount of spiritual force. His rate of growth should already be startling but, once you add the ultimate instruction manual, the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》, and Luo Feng's own bitter training..... Luo Feng's rate of growth reaches an alarming rate.

In just 8 short months, he's already comparable to an amazing 'beginner level wargod'!

However, when compared to 'Hong' and 'Thunder God', there's still a difference. 'Hong' and 'Thunder God' became existences that surpassed the wargod existence during the Grand Nirvana period; their rate of growth was even more startling!

"The dark, golden ball in my conscience holds a huge amount of spiritual force. It's just that my body isn't powerful enough to

handle it, so the spiritual force can only exist in that dark, golden ball" Luo Feng held his cup of tea and lightly took a sip. The aroma of the tea emanated in his mouth, "So, the stronger my body becomes, the stronger my spiritual force becomes"

"Right now, I should increase my body fitness level as fast as possible!"

Luo Feng entered "Ways to raise body fitness level" in the board's search function and quickly found a large amount of threads. Clearly, this topic has been discussed by a lot of people.

Luo Feng clicked some of the threads with the highest amount of replies.

"Ways, what ways?"

"Genetic medicine? The price isn't expensive and, through captain's friends, I can buy some with 200 million. However, this genetic medicine damages the body quite a bit. After using it to raise your skill, it'll be hard to raise it any further" Luo Feng slightly shook his head. Genetic medicine usually cuts off all your future hope.

So only people like Wei Tie, Wei Qing, and Chen Gu who haven't been able to increase their skill by the slightest amount of a long period of time, and those who have no confidence in doing so in the future, are willing to use the genetic medicine.

And for people like Luo Feng?

Someone with virtually infinite potential using the genetic medicine is something an idiot would do.

“The second way is pretty good. Once you do it, your strength can multiply by many times! Not only does it have no side effects, but it can also speed up your training” Luo Feng looked at the second way and could only shake his head in vain, “Sadly, this method costs too much”. The second way is by spreading dragon blood all over your body and letting your body absorb it to become stronger!

However, the requirements for the dragon blood is extremely high. First, it must be an emperor level dragon!

Next, it has to be blood from the dragon’s heart. After killing an emperor level dragon, only one portion of ‘dragon blood’ can be made.

How many emperor level monsters are on earth?

And how many of those monsters are dragons?

One can imagine how expensive this ‘dragon blood’ is!

“One portion of ‘dragon blood’, using the Dojo of Limits’ half price, reaches 80 billion! And the half price requirement is a four star contribution rank” Luo Feng could only stare. This is like the

legendary ultimate medicine: after using it, your strength will soar without any side effects and your training speed will increase! How great is that!

Sadly, how many people can afford to buy this?

“The third way? Train bitterly!” Luo Feng shook his head. The only thing he could do was train honestly and bitterly, which is also the path that most fighters take.

“With my training speed”

“My body fitness level should be able to reach the intermediate level warlord level in half a year!”

“After I reach the intermediate warlord level, my body fitness level should be able to reach the advanced level warlord level in a year”

Luo Feng nodded: “In other words, with my spiritual force, I’ll be able to reach the ‘intermediate wargod level’ and be able to defeat others of the same rank. I can also challenge advanced level wargods! In three years, with my spiritual force, I’ll be able to reach the ‘advanced level wargod level’, making me virtually invincible against other advanced level wargods! When that time comes, will I still be afraid of Vulture and Scorpion? Two throwing knives will be enough to get rid of them”

Of course———————he’s thinking extremely positively. There’s

a huge prerequisite to all of this!

Which is his dark, golden ball has to be able to supply enough spiritual force for him to reach the ‘advanced level wargod level’. If, while training, the dark golden ball disappears…

Then his rapid growth stage ends!

Every spirit reader has a ‘rapid growth stage’ which relies on absorbing the spiritual force they were born with. Once they finish absorbing it, their rapid growth stage will end!

“The existence of the dark, golden ball allows me to train extremely quickly! Hopefully my rapid growth stage will last until I reach the ‘advanced level wargod level’ with my spiritual force” Luo Feng thought to himself expectantly. An advanced level wargod level spirit reader….. for existences below the wargod level, they are the most horrifying existence.

And his dark, golden ball…..

How long can it last until it’s used up?

Chapter 4: Astonished Envoy

Nobody knows when the dark, golden ball in his conscience will be used up, so Luo Feng didn't think any further on that matter.

March 1st.

Thursday, the day the fire hammer squad departs.

First floor of the HR alliance market, the five members of the fire hammer squad were gathered together.

"Crazy, what're you looking at? Disappointed that lady Xu Xin isn't here?" joked Wei Tie. Luo Feng didn't mention that he already called Xu Xin last night and that he ate lunch and chatted with her for an extremely long time during New Years.

Luo Feng had a crush on Xu Xin, and Xu Xin liked Luo Feng too.

However, none of them said anything about that.

Xu Xin was still in school. She's also from the extremely powerful Xu family, so she can't get into a relationship that easily.

As for Luo Feng himself, because of Vulture and Scorpion, the astronomical bounty will keep on going. The shapeless pressure brought by the bounty stares at Luo Feng for every second of the day.

An occasional phone call, an occasional date.

That's good enough.

"Alright, let's go" captain Gao Feng stood up.

"Haha, my body's starting to rust after New Years, let's go" laughed Wei Qing. After that, Wei Tie, Chen Gu, and Luo Feng all stood up, and the five members of the fire hammer squad rode the HR alliance's private car towards the train station. After riding the train, they arrived at the south east military resupplying base.

Wilderness, #023 city.

Luo Feng stole a dragon egg last time, and the steel armored dragon's territory is near the highway and around the country area.

If Luo Feng follows the normal route towards #023 city, he might get caught by the steel armored dragon! After stealing its dragon egg, Luo Feng didn't dare to accept the steel armored dragon's fury! In the yard of a ruined, old building, Luo Feng and Gao Feng were attacking a cast steel armor-like gigantic bull. Its body was completely fiery red and white streams blew out from its nostrils as it crazily attacked the human it hated the most ——Like a fly, this young human was always by its side.

This cow type monster was indeed the 'steel armored bull' which

possessed extraordinary defense. With its armor, this steel armored bull easily placed into the ‘medium level commander level’.

The two high level soldier level steel armored bulls that were with it were taken care of by Wei Tie and Wei Qing.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Luo Feng’s light steps were as swift as lightning, as if he was a gladiator from the times before the Grand Nirvana period that was playing with his target! There were numerous wounds on the steel armored bull but, sadly, they didn’t have much of an effect on it.

“PUCHI!”

A cold light flashed like lightning.

Fresh blood shot up as half of the ghost blade directly sank into the steel armored bull’s neck. After pulling out the blade at the speed of lightning, Luo Feng dashed away!

“PENG~”

The steel armored bull let out an unsatisfied roar. Since its throat has been sliced apart, the roar was weak and sounded like the bull was out of air. After that, the gigantic body fell to the ground, causing the entire ground to shake. The ground that was full of dust and blood directly shook apart, forming a crack.

“Beautiful” praised Gao Feng.

“Crazy, your technique is getting better and better” Wei Qing also couldn’t help but to praise.

Luo Feng himself was clear. When he was surrounded at the ‘family mart’ in the steel armored dragon’s nest and dashed out of the group of several hundred commander level monsters, Luo Feng temporarily grasped the ‘perfect level’ technique for a few short seconds. After that, for the two months he was home…

He frequently used the ‘reaction speed testing machine’ at the Limit Hall to train his technique.

The classifications for technique: ——’Basic level’——‘Intermediate level*’, ——‘Perfect level’, ‘Conception level’.

Indeed, Luo Feng has grasped a bit of the perfect level in his two months of bitter training.

“Everyone’s tired now right? We received quite a bit today, so let’s go back to the resupplying base to rest” said Gao Feng as he dissected the corpse of the steel armored bull for materials. Wei Tie, Wei Qing, and Chen Gu all replied: “Go, let’s go back”

“Captain, you guys go back first”

“I’m going to go find some more monsters and practice my technique. I’ll come find you guys later” smiled Luo Feng as he

said.

“The young sure are energetic” laughed Gao Feng, Chen Gu, and the others. Luo Feng was like this the past few days too. When the other members became tired and wanted to rest, Luo Feng went out alone to hunt more monsters. However, everyone knew about Luo Feng’s strength, so they didn’t stop him.

Gao Feng and the others left, leaving only Luo Feng behind.

※※

The sky was dark.

Luo Feng held his blade in one hand and his shield in the other as he passed through the alleys of #023 city all alone. Sometimes he would fight against powerful commander level monsters, and sometimes he would face off against monster hordes! #023 city was originally Suzhou. Many of the buildings here were oriental style buildings. Sadly, this place has become an amusement park for the monsters.

“Pu! Chi! Fresh blood flew everywhere! Limbs of the monsters were being tossed around! Luo Feng unleashed the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》over and over again as he continued to challenge his limits. He rushed into groups of monsters and fought in there! Within a monster horde, Luo Feng would continuously push his technique to the limits and attempt to use the other monsters and the surrounding environment to assist himself.

After a very long time.....

Three hours after Gao Feng and the others left to rest, Luo Feng dragged his tired body to a small river and cleaned his battle uniform set as he prepared to return. In a short three hours, hundreds of monsters died to Luo Feng's hand. However, the reproduction rate of the monsters was also extremely high.

Even if Luo Feng doesn't kill them, the monsters would kill the weaker ones for food.

The structure of the battle uniform was extremely tight, so nothing could seep inside and no needle-like attacks could get through. A quick rinse is all that is needed to wash off the monster blood on it.

※※

On the sixth floor of a six story residential apartment was where the fire hammer squad was staying.

"Back?" Gao Feng and the others looked at the door as Luo Feng walked through.

"Uh, I killed eight commander level monsters" Luo Feng took out the materials of eight commander level monsters and put them on the floor, "I'll go train my genetic energy for a bit, and then I'll come eat dinner". Unlike others, Luo Feng hunts so many

commanders that his bag can't hold all the materials.

Chen Gu persuaded: "Luo Feng, don't push yourself too hard; relax a bit"

"Yea, what's the point of trying so hard and making yourself this tired" Gao Feng also persuaded.

Of course, if Luo Feng pushes himself, the entire squad benefits. Even though most of the materials that Luo Feng gets in his solo hunts goes to him, the other people still receive a share too.

"Haha, this much is nothing" Luo Feng laughed as he went into another room.

In the empty room. The floor has long been cleaned by Luo Feng.

After putting down his shield, backpack, blade, and throwing knives, Luo Feng started training his Dao Yin technique.

"Feels good"

"My body starts to shake when I train my Dao Yin technique when my body is extremely tired". Luo Feng was extremely happy. Why is it that your training speed increases when you get further in the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》? Because the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》makes you use even more of your body's power.

So much power that it starts to affect the cells! The more energy your cells use, the hungrier they become. The hungrier they become, the more energy they can absorb. This is why they can absorb so much genetic energy!

“Why do fighters always say that your strength increases quickly when fighting on the border of life and death?”

“Because, when fighting on the border of life and death, you subconsciously dig out every ounce of strength in your body”

“Using all of this energy enables you to absorb even more energy when training your genetic energy technique” Luo Feng easily deduced the reasons. Compare one person swinging his blade with all his might at home and another person swinging his blade as he kills monsters in the wilderness.

Both of them are swinging their blade! However, the person in the wilderness is able to bring out more of his energy, and therefore uses more energy. This increases his training speed!

“Clearly, I’ve been improving around 30% faster here in the wilderness than at home!” Luo Feng could estimate his training speed via keeping track of how much time he takes to absorb genetic energy every day.

With this, Luo Feng killed monsters all day in the wilderness. Every day, he was covered in blood, as if he just came out of a sea of blood.

And his technique, blade technique, and body fitness level steadily rose thanks to this crazy training style.

Killing crazily like this changed Luo Feng's aura by quite a bit.

What kind of truly powerful fighter hasn't been through this kind of slaughtering?

Luo Feng himself is just steadily advancing on this path.

※※

Jiang-Nan city, top of Jiang-Nan city's Dojo of Limits headquarters.

Inside a huge audiovisual room.

"Judging from these materials, this Luo Feng is quite talented, and he works quite hard too. In two months, he killed over 10,000 soldier level monsters? Sure is bitter. Indeed, he earned that 'beginner level warlord' strength through his own efforts" the envoy from the headquarters, wargod Yang Hui, looked at the neatly printed data in front of him.

"Steel hand, did you get that Wu Tong ready?" asked Yang Hui.

"Wu Tong is online right now. He's ready to chat with you online any time" said chairman Zhou Zheng Yong as he smiled.

Yang Hui nodded and quickly activated the 3D hologram projector.

A dreamy light quickly appeared in the middle of the audiovisual room, forming a 3D hologram. The chief instructor of Yang-Zhou city's Limit Hall, 'Wu Tong', directly appeared, as if he was actually personally there. The only difference between an actual person was that a bit of light could be seen on the surface of the body.

"Wu Tong greets the chairman and envoy" bowed Wu Tong.

"Okay" nodded wargod Yang Hui, "I'm sure you know why I've looked for you. You're the chief instructor of Yang-Zhou city's Limit Hall, and that Luo Feng lives in Ming-Yue sector. You're quite familiar with him, right?"

"Yes" nodded Wu Tong.

"Tell me about his body fitness level and his current skill level" commanded Yang Hui.

"Yes" a proud smile appeared on Wu Tong's face, "Luo Feng is one of the geniuses that appeared in Yang-Zhou city in the last decade. He just turned 19 after New Years. Even though he became a fighter only half a year ago, as of now, his fist strength is 10,000 kg and his speed is 129 m/s. I'm not too sure about his reaction speed, but I know that half a month ago he passed the 'intermediate level warlord test'!"

“Also, I know that he’s training the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》technique and, over New Years, has reached the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》. In other words, he reached the third stage in half a year”

Wu Tong slightly bowed: “This is some of the important data I know”

“Third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》?”

The face of wargod Yang Hui, which was very calm before, quickly changed.

“Are you sure?” Yang Hui couldn’t help but to ask.

“I am sure. I saw him throw a punch with all his strength which reached nearly 30,000 kg with my own eye” said Wu Tong with certainty.

Wargod Yang Hui and chairman Zhou Zheng Yong exchanged glances.

“The decision of the higher ups is probably going to change” laughed Zhou Zheng Yong.

But Yang Hui was looking at Wu Tong: “Where is Luo Feng right now, I want to meet him personally!”

Chapter 5: A Spot

Wu Tong slightly bowed as he answered as a 3D hologram: “Envoy, Luo Feng already left with his fire hammer squad members on March 1st. As of now, they are still in the wilderness and haven’t returned to the headquarter city yet”

“March 1st?”

The two great wargods, Yang Hui and Zhou Zheng Yong, couldn’t help but to exchange glances as they started to laugh.

Yang Hui couldn’t help but to laugh as he scolded: “When I arrived at Jiang-Nan city, this Luo Feng hasn’t even went to the wilderness yet. It’s all because of you, steel hand. If it weren’t for you trying to drag me to the.....” as he said that, he suddenly stopped and then waved towards Wu Tong: “Alright, you’re done here”

“Yes, chairman, envoy” Wu Tong slightly bowed.

Chichi~~ the dreamy light scattered and the 3D hologram disappeared.

“Man, that was nearly a slip of the tongue. If this Wu Tong heard that, he would laugh at us for sure” Steel hand Zhou Zheng Yong’s expression slowly became serious, “Okay, let’s not talk about that anymore. Let’s talk about Luo Feng”

“About what that Wu Tong just said, he wasn’t lying about anything right?” frowned wargod Yang Hui.

“100% truth for sure” said Zhou Zheng Yong with confidence, “This Wu Tong knows what he’s doing. Furthermore, if he dares to lie, I can check his facts myself when I get back..... with this, how would he lie?”

“Okay” wargod Yang Hui slightly nodded, “I understand. However, I really don’t believe that a little kid who just turned 19 has a body fitness level equivalent to a ‘beginner level wargod’ and managed to reach the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》in just half a year..... rare, really rare indeed. Looks like we’ll have to contact the higher ups”

Zhou Zheng Yong also nodded: “The special training, for this Luo Feng, isn’t too suitable. He might just barely have the rights to enter the《Wargod Preparation Camp》.

The legendary.....

The Dojo of Limits has two large training camps. One of them is the “basics training camp” while the other is the “elite training camp”. In the basics training camp, genius fighters are picked from all over the world. After signing the contract, they enter this training camp and accept the best training!

And the ‘elite training camp’ is the #1 training camp on earth. It is also called the “Wargod preparation camp”

On earth, the Dojo of Limits has the basics and elite training camp. At the same time, the Thunder Dojo also has the basics and elite training camps..... however, it's indisputable that the Dojo of Limits' elite training camp is #1! Even the strongest fighter, Hong, teaches there sometimes.

Hong, who even wargods have a hard time meeting, teaches there. In this elite training camp, you have the chance to meet him!

"Elite training camp you say?" Yang Hui frowned, "His conditions just barely make it, but——I'll need to apply to the higher ups. You also know how valuable a spot is in the elite training camp"

"Yea" Zhou Zheng Yong nodded, "I understand!"

Usually, there'll be two or three geniuses that appear every year in Jiang-Nan city's Dojo of Limits that get selected to enter the basics training camp. When the Thunder Dojo tried to take Luo Feng back then, they were also using this spot.

However, the 'elite training camp is different!'. Usually only one person in Jiang-Nan city, a city with a population of 200 million, gets selected to enter the 'elite training camp' every five years! And China only has six headquarter cities. You can say that in all of China, a place with over a billion people, only one person a year gets selected!"

"Contact the investigator" commanded Yang Hui.

“Beep beep……”

“Hello!”

A deep, hoarse sound echoed around the listening room.

“Mr. investigator!” Yang Hui and Zhou Zheng Yong immediately stood up and were extremely respectful.

The investigator! The one whose position in the Dojo of Limits is only second to the creator, ‘Hong’! According to the rules of the Dojo of Limits—— all fighters in the Dojo of Limits who become existences surpassing the wargod level directly earn the title ‘Investigator’. In other words, all the investigators are existences that surpass the wargod level!

“Oh, Yang Hui, what do you need?” The investigator’s voice carried over.

“Mr. Investigator, I came to Jiang-Nan headquarter city to examine a young man named Luo Feng. However, I found out that he’s only 19 and his body fitness level is already at the beginner warlord level. Furthermore, he only practiced the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》for half a year and has already reached the third stage! I think he has the right to enter the ‘elite training camp'” said Yang Hui.

“Oh?”

The investigator went silent for a bit. The audiovisual room was completely silent; Yang Hui and Zhou Zheng Yong didn't dare to make a sound.

"The Chinese government's army's representative just came to our headquarters to make a deal and took a place in the elite training camp. The spots for this year is almost full. Technically, we can't give any more spots to China..... hm, okay, give this Luo Feng a chance and let him take the B grade exam. If he passes, let him enter the elite training camp" the investigator's hoarse sound echoed around the audiovisual room.

Yang Hui respectfully replied.

"Beep" the other side hung up already.

Only until now did Yang Hui and Zhou Zheng Yong let out a sigh of relief. Even though wargods and existences that surpass the wargod level only seem to be a step apart, the difference in strength is way too large! An existence that surpasses the wargod level can easily wipe out a city of millions of people and can talk to a powerful country on equal terms.

"B grade exam?" frowned Zhou Zheng Yong, "Isn't it usually just the A grade exam?"

"There aren't enough spots and there are too many people in China, so one or two outstanding geniuses appear quite frequently. One of the spots was taken by the Chinese government's army, so

if China wants to let another genius fighter enter the training camp, it won't be weird for that person to take a harder exam" said Yang Hui.

"Okay" Zhou Zheng Yong nodded, "Oh yea, The Wang family in Kyoto city hopes to reserve an elite fighter training camp spot next year. They're willing to pay 50 billion Chinese dollars"

"Kyoto's Wang family? Next year?" Yang Hui frowned, "The HR alliance and our Dojo of Limits are cooperating right now, so the HR alliance is guaranteed to receive some spots every year. What, isn't that Wang family one of the nine great families of the HR alliance? Were they not able to get a spot for themselves?"

"If they got a spot, why would they try to go through the back door?" laughed Zhou Zheng Yong, "There are nine core families in the HR alliance, so it wouldn't be weird for the Wang family to not get a spot. After all, in the underground conferences of the HR alliance, the western families have the advantage"

"This case is quite problematic" Yang Hui shook his head, "Usually, only an investigator can decide on this. 50 billion is a huge sum of money, but it's hard to say whether or not that's enough to move the investigator"

"You're on quite good terms with investigator Liu, so the Wang family hopes to get that spot through you" laughed Zhou Zheng Yong.

"Wang family's son in law is just like that, already selling out his

old friends” Yang Hui couldn’t help but to shake his head, “Steel hand, for your sake, I’ll try talking with uncle Liu. You should know..... there are only so many spots for the elite training camp every year. All the countries and all the huge families are staring at them like wolves. It’s not an easy thing to go through the back door”

“Understood. After this case, the Wang family will remember this favor” said Zhou Zheng Yong.

Wang Quan.

The #1 family in all of China and also one of the core nine families of the HR alliance. However, these families are still quite a bit off from the gigantic beasts named the Dojo of Limits and the Thunder Dojo! Since the creators of the Dojo of Limits and the Thunder Dojo, ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’, are existences that even countries fear.

They are already invincible!

“Help me prepare a fighter jet so I can check out this Luo Feng in the wilderness. I’ll also let him take the B grade exam” said Yang Hui.

‘Alright, the fighter jet will be ready momentarily. However, even though this Luo Feng is pretty good, whether or not he can pass the B grade exam.....” Zhou Zheng Yong shook his head.

“Oh yea, contact Luo Feng first and confirm his current position” requested Yang Hui.

“No worries, do you even have to mention such small things?” Zhou Zheng Yong laughed loudly.

※※

#023 city. The sky was dark and the cold winds were blowing.

Luo Feng was sitting cross legged in the Wu Xin Xiang Tian position as he practiced his genetic energy technique. The formless energy entered his body through the five passages. All of Luo Feng’s cells, which have long been starving, seemed to start cheering in joy as they ferociously gobbled up all the energy passing by them.

The cells quickly converted the energy into genetic energy.

As the cells absorbed the energy, the body slowly started to become stronger.

“Hu!”

Luo Feng let out a breath after he felt all the cells in his bones, muscles, etc. were filled up. He stood up and felt 100 times more energetic.

“Luo Feng, done training? Hurry up and come eat dinner” brother Chen’s voice carried over.

“Coming” Luo Feng smiled as he walked out.

The group of people in the living room swiftly sat together. Luo Feng was also mixed in there as the group of people merrily drank and ate their high energy candies, compressed bread, and a few meat pieces in their bags.

“There’s quite a bit of monster materials in our bags now. We should go back to the resupplying base in two days” said Gao Feng as he drank water, “Primarily thanks to Luo Feng, since he got us quite a bit of monster materials”

“If you compare us to crazy, we’re just old men” Wei Tie purposefully sighed.

Chen Gu couldn’t help but to shake his head: “I’ve been meddling in the wilderness for a few dozen years already. It seems like I can’t become any stronger anymore. After a period of time, Luo Feng’s strength would probably need require him to join a new, stronger fighter squad. I’m also preparing to retire when that happens”

“Us brothers are also preparing to retire in a year or two” Wei Tie and Wei Qing also nodded.

Suddenly, the mood became a bit sad.

“Retiring is a great thing!” laughed Gao Feng, “When that happens, maybe I’ll be able to join the same fighter squad as Luo Feng. Or maybe, they wouldn’t even want me and I’ll have no choice but to join another fighter squad. All of this is hard to say..... but no matter what, I still want to keep at it for another 10 years and see if I, Gao Feng, can become a wargod!”

Luo Feng was right about to speak, but suddenly—— the watches of the five members of the fire hammer squad all vibrated.

They lowered their heads and saw a GPS system appear on the watch. On the map was a flashing, red dot.

“Emergency SOS signal?” The five members of the fire hammer squad exchanged glances, “Only around 1,500 meters away from us?”

“Hurry! GO!” The five members of the fire hammer squad quickly packed their bags and weapons and then swiftly rushed out.

Chapter 6: Emergency Rescue

In #023 city stood various delicately constructed buildings. However, these buildings were already quite ruined. The cold wind blew, carrying the howls of monsters in it. The five members of the fire hammer squad swiftly moved forward.

Actually, with Luo Feng's spiritual force, his body fitness level of 'beginner level warlord' jumps up to 'advanced level warlord' which allows him to battle against a beginner level wargod! In other words, you can treat Luo Feng as a wargod now! With Luo Feng there, as long as they are a bit careful, there's virtually no danger! Since horde leaders are rare and anything below the horde leader level instantly gives up their lives the instant they encounter Luo Feng! Even if they run into a 'rat tide' or an 'ant tide', Luo Feng can fly, which guarantees his safety!

"Look, right ahead" Luo Feng and the others were bent over on the black roof of a two story hotel as they looked towards the street in front of them which was big enough to hold four cars side by side.

On the street was a huge horde comprised of ocelot monsters. All of them were howling as they chased a fighter squad. These ocelot monsters had several two tailed ocelots and even a three tailed one.

"There's even a four tailed ocelot in the back!" said Gao Feng softly.

A two tailed ocelot is a low level commander. A three tailed

ocelot is a medium level commander. A four tailed ocelot is a high level commander! A high level commander, for the usual fighter squad, is an absolute nightmare.

And ocelots have the power and cruelty of tiger type monsters and the swiftness and agility of cat type monsters. They are quite difficult to get rid of.

“This isn’t too hard” Luo Feng slightly squinted.

“They’re brothers from the Dojo of Limits, we gotta help them” said Gao Feng seriously. Whenever you encounter danger in the wilderness, you can send out an emergency SOS signal, which would indiscriminately send out signals to every fighter in the vicinity. If they’re from the same Dojo, the signal would be red. If they’re from different Dojos, the signal would be green!

Each tactical communications watch is connected to the person’s fighter ID card, so the watch can automatically differentiate whether or not they’re in the same Dojo.

“Captain, you guys go help, I’ll cut the back” said Luo Feng softly.

“Crazy is best at fighting in a horde” Wei Qing gave a huge thumbs up. Indeed, Luo Feng, who has amazing technique, performs extremely well in chaotic battles.

Gao Feng softly said: “Go!”

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The group of people immediately started sprinting. Gao Feng, Wei Tie, Wei Qing, and Chen Gu immediately charged towards the escaping fighter squad, while Luo Feng started slaughtering in the middle of the street behind them! For a wargod, a monster horde holds absolutely no threat at all, unless it's a horde made out of tiny monsters like the rat tide or ant tide.

Of course, if Luo Feng doesn't use his throwing knives, this monster horde is still quite challenging.

"Pu!"

"Puchi!"

Fresh blood flew everywhere and the heads of the ocelot monsters flew up one by one. The huge bodies instantly crumbled to the ground, clogging up the street. These ocelot monsters were mostly soldier level. Only some of them were two tailed ocelots, while even fewer were three tailed ocelots. And there was only one four tailed ocelot!

Like a butterfly, Luo Feng easily floated through the monster horde.

The charge of the monsters was horrifying. Once you get hit by one, it'll be easy for the countless monsters to trample you to

death! However, Luo Feng's technique was superb as he used the corpses of other monsters and even some of the sprinting ocelot monsters to block the other monsters. This also allowed him to deal with fewer monsters at a time.

※※

"Hm? The phone call isn't going through? No one's picking up or replying"

In Jiang-Nan headquarter city, on the top of the Dojo of Limits headquarters, chairman Zhou Zheng Yong was looking at his phone with a confused look. Wargod Yang Hui shook his head on the side: "You can't even deal with something like this, steel hand, I have to treat you with scorn for a bit". As he said that, wargod Yang Hui also dialed Luo Feng's tactical communications watch's number, "Hm, it already displayed his position: #023 city"

Using the signal of the phone, it's easy to determine the location.

Even normal cell phones have this function. "I'll just go over there directly" Wargod Yang Hui waved his hand and directly entered a dark blue jet fighter. After he closed the hatch, the jet fighter quickly soared through the air and flew out the city's defense system as it headed southeast.

※※

In #023 city, the emergency SOS signal broadcasted to the

surrounding 20 km. Actually, when fighters in the wilderness encounter danger, fighters won't come help them if they're too far away! This emergency SOS signal, which was originally set to a radius of 23 km, was broadcasting to quite a large area.

"Hm? It's a green emergency SOS signal, so it's not people of our Thunder Dojo" four fighters were currently sitting in the sixth floor of an old, shattered hotel. "It's probably people from the Dojo of Limits. Brothers, should we go?" said a brute with a scar on his face as he looked towards the others.

A bald, handsome young man lowered his head and said: "We can't make this distance, so let's go take a look. If we can help, then we will. If it's too dangerous, then nevermind".

"Let's do what Guo said, go"

"Alright, let's go"

This North River squad, which was quite famous in Jiang-Nan headquarter city, instantly made their decision and immediately, yet carefully, went out. This North River squad had one advanced level warlord and three intermediate level warlords. However, one of the intermediate level warlords, Guo Hai, was nearing the advanced level warlord level. A fighter squad like this was indeed powerful.

However, they were quite slow in the wilderness city. They didn't dare to sprint, since they were afraid of a monster lying in ambush ahead.

“Right ahead us”

“Hmhm, ocelot monster horde. Damn, bet there’s around a thousand of them” the North River squad squatted on the roof of a store and looked towards the street.

“Look over there, what a powerful guy. Just him alone attracted over half of the monsters”

“Where’d that ferocious dude come from?”

The members of the North River squad were all surprised. Even the bald young man, ‘Guo Hai’, widened his eyes as he looked carefully. All that was seen was a young fighter who had a hexagonal shield in one hand and a ghost blade in the other. As if a ghost, he kept dodging around with amazingly fast, yet extremely precise technique.

“HOWL~~”

“HOWL~~” The enraged monster horde crazily charged towards Luo Feng. Their claws waved like crazy and there were even a huge amount of monsters that leaped towards him. It seemed as if a wave was about to swallow up Luo Feng! However, no matter how crazily the monster horde attacked...

Luo Feng’s technique was already ‘artistic’, as each of his steps were extremely precise. It was a pleasure to watch him sidestep

and dodge. The monster horde that was seemingly crazy and enraged, was like a joke in front of Luo Feng's steps.

"Ru Wei class!"

"This is definitely the Ru Wei class technique"

The fighters of the North River squad couldn't help but to say out of surprise.

"Luo Feng? It's actually him?" frowned Guo Hai.

Of course he recognized Luo Feng. When wargod Lu Gang died and the memorial started, he was chatting about Luo Feng with the Xu family's Xu Gang while Luo Feng was chatting with Xu Xin near him. From a certain perspective..... Guo Hai and Luo Feng were rivals in love! Guo Hai liked Xu Xin, and so did Luo Feng.

"Stop watching, let's go already"

"Go!" the four members of the North River squad rushed out.

"This Luo Feng just barely became a fighter. Could it be that he's actually catching up to me?" Guo Hai's heart was filled with a fierce feeling of unsatisfaction. Guys, especially in front of their crush, don't easily accept defeat. Furthermore, he, Guo Hai, is a genius fighter that is approaching the advanced level warlord level. If you don't count in the spiritual force then, indeed, he isn't inferior to Luo Feng.

Luo Feng, like a rock, clogged up the street where the monster horde was sprinting. A huge amount of monster corpses surrounded the area! Whether they charged or leaped towards Luo Feng, there were monsters surrounding Luo Feng in absolutely every direction. However, he was hanging on in this kind of situation.

“This is a way of using the environment to assist my technique” Luo Feng dodged while attacking and was excited inside, “Using the environment and every object, whether the corpses of monsters or the bodies of the monsters that are attacking me, or even a rock..... merge myself with the environment. This is the perfect level” Luo Feng has been thinking about the ‘perfect level’ technique for this period of time.

He understood the reasoning behind it but, when he actually has to do it, he can’t maintain the state for a long time.

“HOWL~~”

With a howl that flew up to the skies, the entire ocelot horde retreated with their leader like a receding ocean. They quickly left. Even though the ocelots were enraged and filled with hatred when they left, the ocelot leader was clear: even if the entire horde was sacrificed, they wouldn’t be able to eradicate this human fighter.

“You must be the famous crazy from our Jiang-Nan headquarter city. Now that I saw it for myself, you are indeed powerful. I am the captain of the North River squad, Kang Wei” the man with a

scar on his face passionately walked over.

Luo Feng smiled as he walked over. A sound then rang at this time: “Luo Feng!”

A bald young man whose battle uniform had some marks of blood on it walked over and stared at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, I’m Guo Hai….. you should’ve heard my name before”

“Guo Hai?” Luo Feng looked at the young man in front of him, “You’re the one who became an intermediate level warlord at the age of 21?”. Of course Luo Feng remembers this name. When Xu Gang was ridiculing him back then, he mentioned two people——the genius fighter ‘Guo Hai’ and the ‘Wang Xing Ping’ from the Wang family. They count as his rivals in love. “That’s me” a smile appeared on Guo Hai’s face, “You probably heard from Xu Gang”

“Hm?” Luo Feng frowned.

“We’ll compete on equal terms for Xu Xin!” Guo Hai’s eyes were flashing, “Luo Feng, I admit your technique is superb. You’re not the kind of person who only just barely stepped into the Ru Wei class and makes mistakes every so often. Your Ru Wei class technique is almost perfect. In terms of technique, I’m inferior to you. At least for this point, I’ll praise you”

By this time, the fire hammer squad members and the fighter squad of the Dojo of Limits that was saved by them came over.

“The thunder Dojo’s genius fighter Guo Hai?”

Of course Gao Feng, Chen Gu, and the others knew about Guo Hai. Guo Hai was extremely famous! He was also scouted for the Thunder Dojo back then.

“However, Luo Feng, by the end of this year, I should be able to become an advanced level warlord!” Guo Hai slightly smiled, “I think a 22 year old advanced level warlord is enough for the Xu family to give their daughter’s hand in marriage to me”. Guo Hai was a very calm person. When he first heard of Luo Feng, Guo Hai didn’t even give a second thought about him at all.

However, he felt a threat when he saw Luo Feng’s performance today, which was why he said all of that!

“Even if the Xu family is willing, Xu Xin has to agree as well” frowned Luo Feng. Because of Xu Xin’s identity, many people are sure to chase after Xu Xin. Who knew that he would actually meet a rival in love today.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked towards the far away sky and saw a dark blue light flash through the sky. After that, it stopped above them. This beautiful, dark blue colored UFO-shaped fighter jet then started to descend and actually stopped on a street around a dozen meters away from Luo Feng and the others.

Chapter 7: B Grade Exam?

The sky wasn't dark; the streets were flowing with the fresh blood of monsters. The fighter jet that descended through the cold air attracted the gaze of all the fighters present. The last time Luo Feng saw such a fighter jet was during the rat tide incident.

"What's a fighter jet doing here, and even stopping right in front of us. Who are they looking for?" Luo Feng was full of suspicion.

The other fighters on the side started quietly discussing.

"A fighter jet?"

"Is this fighter jet from the military or a wargod's personal aircraft?"

The members of the fire hammer squad, the north river squad, and the rescued 'Arctic Fox' squad all looked towards the fighter jet with suspicion. Normally, fighters would rarely even see a fighter jet flying by in the air over the course of a year in the wilderness. And don't even mention a fighter jet stopping right in front of them.

"HUA!"

The hatch of the aircraft opened.

Luo Feng looked carefully and saw two shadows jump off one by one. The two of them were wearing black battle uniforms. One walked in front of the other as they came over, and the one behind was one of Jiang-Nan city's big four: Zhu Ge Tao! Zhu Ge Tao was even smiling towards Luo Feng.

"Chief Zhu Ge Tao"

"Chief"

Luo Feng, Gao Feng, the other fire hammer squad members, and the rescued arctic fox squad members all yelled respectfully. The north river squad said nothing on the side, since they were from the Thunder Dojo.

However, the members of the fire hammer squad, the arctic fox squad, and the north river squad were all confused. One of the great big four of Jiang-Nan headquarter city was walking behind this middle aged man like an assistant?

Who is this middle aged man?

"Luo Feng, Gao Feng, and Tao Ke, let me introduce to you guys" smiled Zhu Ge Tao as he stood next to the middle aged man, "This is envoy Mr. Yang who arrived from the Dojo of Limits world headquarters. Mr. Yang is a wargod level fighter"

The members of the fire hammer squad and the arctic fox squad were all stunned.

“Mr. Yang” the people all yelled respectfully.

“Yea”

The wargod Mr. Yang just nodded and didn’t say anything more to the fighters. His gaze scanned across the group and quickly landed on Luo Feng! This scene instantly confused the other fighters. Why is this envoy from the Dojo of Limits world headquarters staring at Luo Feng?

Of course, Yang Hui has seen Luo Feng’s photos before.

“Luo Feng” spoke Yang Hui.

“Mr. Yang” responded Luo Feng, his heart full of confusion.

Zhu Ge Tao smiled on the side as he looked at Luo Feng: “Luo Feng, Mr. Yang rushed to Jiang-Nan city from the Dojo of Limits world headquarters mainly for you. Mr. Yang worked quite a bit for you, so you have to thank him deeply”

Indeed, even though Mr. Yang has the common sickness called ‘arrogance’ that all wargods have… he still cares about his talented juniors. If Yang Hui didn’t apply for Luo Feng to enter the ‘elite training camp’, Luo Feng wouldn’t even have the chance to take the exam.

“No need for thanks, Luo Feng’s own hard work earned him this chance” Yang Hui slightly smiled.

Luo Feng was still full of confusion.

What is this Yang Hui and Zhu Ge Tao talking about? How come he has no idea what’s going on?

“Luo Feng, come, get on the fighter jet” persuaded Zhu Ge Tao, and right after, commanded the fire hammer squad members, “Gao Feng, you fire hammer squad members temporarily halt your actions in the wilderness and return to the headquarter city. From today on, Luo Feng won’t be in your fire hammer squad anymore, so you guys have to make the necessary preparations”.

“What?”

Luo Feng and the other fire hammer squad members were all flabbergasted.

“Chief, what is going on?” asked Luo Feng.

“I’ll tell you when we return to the headquarter city” Zhu Ge Tao scanned the area. Even though he doesn’t have to keep this a secret, he still doesn’t want to talk about this in front of so many people.

With the gaze of many sending them off, Luo Feng got on the fighter jet with Zhu Ge Tao and envoy Yang Hui. The fighter jet

quickly ascended and turned into a dark blue light which directly disappeared into the horizon.

Gao Feng, Chen Gu, Wei Tie, and Wei Qing all had complicated looks on their faces.

They could tell.

The fire hammer squad was going to be disbanded!

It was clear when Zhu Ge Tao said the phrase, “Luo Feng won’t be in your fire hammer squad anymore”. And today, a wargod and a chief of the Dojo of Limits personally came to pick up Luo Feng. Something big is probably going to happen!

“Luo Feng is probably going to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters and undergo special training” said the captain of the arctic fox squad, Tao Ke.

“Most likely”

“Indeed, Luo Feng’s strength earns him that special right”

“Don’t spout nonsense. Special training in the world headquarters isn’t big enough for a wargod and a chief to personally rush to the wilderness. In our Thunder Dojo, two or three people in the entire headquarter city have the right to undergo special training, as long as a chief applies for it and an envoy comes to test them. Why would an envoy wargod come all

the way to the wilderness?" the captain of the north river squad, Kang Wei, shook his head, "Unless... it's the legendary wargod preparation camp!"

"Wargod preparation camp?"

Guo Hai took in a deep breath and his face changed dramatically. The legendary #1 camp in the entire world. It's real name is the 'elite training camp' but is called the 'wargod preparation camp' by fighters because every fighter that enters the camp has a 90% chance of becoming a wargod! The other 10% is for those who become handicapped or die in the camp.

"This Luo Feng, entered the wargod preparation camp?" Guo Hai couldn't help but to clench his fists.

A complex feeling would naturally appear because of a rival in love.

"In all of Jiang-Nan headquarter city, only one person enters the wargod preparation camp every few years. And he entered? Impossible" Guo Hai's face had an extremely unpleasant look on it.

※※

Whoosh!

The dark blue UFO-shaped fighter jet formed a light and quickly arrived at the skies above Jiang-nan headquarter city. It then

started to slowly descend.

“Luo Feng, we have arrived at the headquarter city. Get off the jet immediately” said Zhu Ge Tao.

“So fast” Luo Feng looked at this fighter jet.

A few statistics of the fighter jets aren’t made public. Using what he witnessed when the fighter jet flew over to the wilderness, just the naked eye was enough to tell him that this fighter jet was moving at a few times faster than the speed of sound! Over 1,000 meters in a second is definitely reasonable. Adding to that, the fighter jet was following the path of a straight line.

It took mere seconds for the fighter jet to arrive at the headquarter city from #023 city.

The hatch opened automatically and Zhu Ge Tao, Luo Feng, and Yang Hui jumped off the jet. The fighter jet landed on the roof of the Dojo of Limits headquarters.

The Dojo of Limits headquarters building. The main layer was an extremely gigantic training hall. The entire training hall was silverish white, and a man in a white dojo uniform was sitting cross legged in the center.

“Ding!”

The elevator door opened and Luo Feng followed Zhu Ge Tao and

Yang Hui as he entered this gigantic training hall. When he first entered, Luo Feng's gaze was attracted by the man in the white dojo uniform. He could feel that an energy invisible to the naked eye was currently pulsing around the man in the white dojo uniform.

"His hands are quite large" Luo Feng realized with a glance that the man's hands were almost like fans: his one hand was comparable to the size of a normal person's two hands combined.

"Arrived?"

The man in the white dojo uniform stood up and smiled as he looked at Luo Feng, "You must be Luo Feng. Oh, old Yang, are you preparing to let Luo Feng take the exam in my Jiang-Nan headquarter city?". Yang Hui slightly hesitated. The man in the white dojo uniform continued: "After you went to search for Luo Feng, I've thought about it carefully. Applying for the test in a headquarter city is quite troublesome. Whether Luo Feng passes or fails, he'll be going to the world headquarters anyway. If so, then he might as well go to the headquarters to take the test; that would be much more simple"

"You're right" laughed Yang Hui, "Indeed, if Luo Feng passes, he'll enter the 'elite training camp'. If he fails, he'll enter the 'basics training camp'"

No matter what, there's absolutely no problem for Luo Feng to pass for the basics training camp.

Luo Feng listened to the two with confusion. What exactly is this test that they have been mentioning?

“Luo Feng, this is the chairman of our Jiang-Nan city Dojo of Limits headquarters” said Zhu Ge Tao softly. Luo Feng realized: it was him!

Zhou Zheng Yong, wargod level fighter. The man nicknamed ‘steel hand’, the chairman of the Jiang-Nan city Dojo of Limits headquarters.

Zhou Zheng Yong and Yang Hui talked for a bit before looking at Luo Feng.

“Luo Feng, our Dojo of Limits world headquarters has two big camps: the basics training camp and the elite training camp. You know about this right?” said Yang Hui.

“Not clearly” Luo Feng shook his head.

Zhou Zheng Yong laughed loudly on the side: “You must have heard of the special training before”

Luo Feng nodded. The Thunder Dojo used this special training contract to attract him.

“The basics training camp accepts geniuses from all over the world and supplies them with the best resources!”

“The elite training camp is the #1 training camp on earth. It accepts the geniuses of geniuses, demon-like students” Zhou Zheng Yong looked at Luo Feng, “Similarly, the elite training camp has an astonishing amount of resources, and your teachers will be wargods at least! There are “examiners” and even those who have surpassed the wargod level, “investigators”, too! Even the world’s strongest fighter, “Hong”, goes to the camp. The second strongest fighter, “Thunder God”, is invited there too!”

Luo Feng froze.

The elite training camp? Accepts demons only? Their teachers are at least wargod level? Even Hong and Thunder God go there?

“Not only do you have the best teachers, but you even have the world’s most advanced technology supplied to you in the elite training camp. Some of them were even treasures excavated from archaeological ruins. You will receive the most perfect training!” Zhou Zheng Yong stared at Luo Feng and tried to hide his excitement as he spoke.

Yang Hui sighed on the side: “The world’s most genius students, best teachers, and best equipment gathered. The elite training camp which is #1 in every aspect! As long as you don’t die, you’ll become a wargod!”

Luo Feng blinked twice.

“Of course, each spot in the elite training camp is priceless! Even

huge families rarely get a spot even after spending tens of billions!” Yang Hui looked at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, you have a chance to enter the world’s best training camp. The only requirement is that you must pass the B grade exam!”

Chapter 8: Grasp the Chance

Luo Feng held his breath in.

A huge family that uses its various connections and tens of billions can't even secure a spot? And there are archaeological treasures used for equipment?

"Archaeological ruins, there are really archaeological ruins?" Luo Feng couldn't help but to ask.

"Of course" smiled Yang Hui, "There's more than just a single archaeological site. Most regular civilians don't know this, and many fighters don't know this either. Only an extremely small number of core people and elite existences know these secrets" Yang Hui has long determined that Luo Feng will become a wargod.

So of course, he didn't hide any of this.

"Mr. Yang Hui, chairman, this #1 training camp can rapidly increase people's strength?" continued Luo Feng.

"Without a doubt!"

Chairman Zhou Zheng Yong was filled with confidence, "Your body fitness level, technique, blade technique, battle experience, etc. are all irrelevant! Your rate of improvement in the camp will be who knows how many times faster than your own bitter

training! Keep in mind that the best equipment and setup is there. The equipment there, especially the ones from the archaeological ruins, are extremely beneficial to a fighter's growth"

"Who knows how many times faster?" Luo Feng started thinking to himself.

His current body fitness level growth rate was quite fast already.

If he entered this #1 training camp on earth and had the assistance of the best possible equipment, he'll probably become an advanced level wargod fighter much faster.

"If I stay in Jiang-Nan headquarter city, I still have to be careful of the Vulture Scorpion couple's investigation. Rather than being on my toes all day, why not go to the "world's best training camp". Since it's a core area of the Dojo of Limits headquarters, Vulture and Scorpion won't be able to find it" Luo Feng instantly made his decision.

Figure out a way to enter the world's best training camp! That's where all the geniuses of earth are gathered. Competing with all these geniuses is indeed a very entertaining thing.

"Any more questions?" Yang Hui and Zhou Zheng Yong looked at Luo Feng.

"When can I return after entering this training camp?" asked Luo Feng.

“The elite training camp lasts for five years! In these five years, the only times you get to go home is during January and February” Yang Hui continued to answer, “Of course, if you become a wargod level fighter within these five years, you can graduate early”

Luo Feng slightly nodded.

Become a wargod and graduate! If you can’t become a wargod, then you can stay for at most five years.

“However, even if many students” laughed Zhou Zheng Yong on the side, “reach the wargod level, they won’t prove their true strength by hunting and bringing back a horde leader level monster back to the training camp. They’ll use the identity of ‘advanced level warlord’ and continue to stay at the camp until their five years are up”

Their level is determined by their battle record! Even if some students are wargods, if they won’t hunt any horde leader level monsters, they’ll never be recognized as wargods! This way, they can stay until their five years are up.

“Luo Feng, even wargods dream about entering the elite training camp. So even if you become a wargod, you should continue to stay there” reminded Yang Hui, and then laughed, “Of course, if you do actually get in, you’ll find out how great it is for yourself”

Luo Feng nodded and was awed..... looks like this elite training camp is quite attractive.

“Yang Hui, what is the B grade exam?” Luo Feng continued to ask.

“Your test”

Yang Hui seriously spoke, “The B grade exam..... is extremely difficult! You have quite a lot of control over your body since you’ve already reached the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》. However, your chances of passing the B grade exam..... ” when he said that, Yang Hui shook his head. Clearly, he didn’t have much confidence in Luo Feng.

“Actually, you only have to take the A grade exam under normal conditions. However, the Chinese army received a spot after negotiating in the headquarters, so if you want to get in, you have to pass the B grade exam” Yang Hui didn’t hide anything, “Of course, you still have hope of passing the B grade exam. If you don’t give up, there’s hope”

“Okay” Luo Feng was full of confidence.

If worse comes to worse, he’ll just use his spiritual force to boost his capabilities.

He’s sure that there’ll be no problem in passing this B grade exam!

“Any more questions?” smiled Yang Hui.

“No” Luo Feng shook his head.

“Are you willing to take the B grade exam to enter the elite training camp? If you fail, you can still enter the basics training camp!” Yang Hui looked at Luo Feng.

“I am willing” nodded Luo Feng.

Yang Hui slightly nodded and pointed towards the fist strength testing machine: “Go throw a punch for me”. This was just a simple check. With Yang Hui and Zhou Zheng Yong watching, they can see what stage he has reached in the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》based on how many times the strength of his punch changes when he throws it. They can also look at the value on the machine’s display.

With just pure strength, 1,800 kg.

With everything he had, 10,000 kg.

He passed.

Yang Hui didn’t even need to test Luo Feng’s speed and reaction speed, since he was just testing what stage Luo Feng reached in the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》.

※※

Luo Feng sat on the sofa and looked at the contract in his hands.

This was a special training contract.

“The Dojo of Limits indeed has few restrictions on fighters” Luo Feng had no complaints about the contract and signed four of them in one go.

“Out of these four contracts, one of them belongs to you. The other three will go through our headquarters” smiled Yang Hui as he took out a black wooden box. This black wooden box had a stamp, which was the stamp of the envoy. Yang Hui’s personal signature had no effect; only the stamp did.

PA! The stamp pressed onto the contracts.

“Don’t lose this” Yang Hui handed one of the contracts to Luo Feng.

“Zhu Ge, tell Ya Xia to come here for a bit” commanded Yang Hui.

“Yes”

Zhu Ge Tong immediately rode the elevator down. In mere moments, the elevator doors opened again. Zhu Ge Tao brought a teenager wearing a dojo uniform. This teenager’s head was a bit

yellow. He was quite handsome, entirely comparable to a celebrity in the entertainment industry.

“Luo Feng, this guy is Ya Xia, one of the young fighters that our Dojo of Limits has decided to send to the basics training camp this year. He’s also a little genius” smiled Yang Hui.

Luo Feng walked over and smiled as he stretched out his hand: “Luo Feng”.

“Ya Xia” this handsome teenager also stretched out his hand and lightly shook Luo Feng’s hand.

“Ya Xia, this is your senior. He’ll also go with you to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters. Your senior is aiming for the elite training camp!” as Yang Hui said that, the originally expressionless handsome teenager, Ya Xia, suddenly became shocked. Of course, as a genius about to enter the basics training camp, he also knew about the elite training camp.

Those who can enter the basics training camp, are geniuses.

Those who can enter the elite training camp, are geniuses of geniuses——demons!

“Senior Luo Feng, let me introduce myself. Ya Xia, a freshman in Jiang-Nan university” Ya Xia’s attitude clearly changed. Geniuses only feel pressured when they meet someone who’s even better than them.

“Jiang-Nan university, the best university in Jiang-Nan city?” Luo Feng smiled as he praised, “You’re really impressive. Your senior is just someone who failed the high school exams”

“Don’t make fun of me..... how many students are accepted all year throughout the country in Jiang-Nan university? Furthermore, there are two to three more universities that are better than Jiang-Nan city throughout the country. And in all of China, only one person can enter the ‘world’s best training camp’ upfront each year!” said Ya Xia.

Ya Xia, in front of Luo Feng, wasn’t prideful at all.

Indeed—— the elite training camp only accepts the geniuses of geniuses throughout all the armies, huge families, and fighters. How many are accepted every year? It’ll be amazing if more than 10 are accepted! “Luo Feng, Ya Xia” smiled Yang Hui, “You guys leave with me to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters on the same day! You two must meet up with me at the airport before 2 PM on March 22nd!”

“Yes”

“Yes”

Luo Feng and Ya Xia both responded.

“Alright, both of you go back and meet up with your families. In

the future, you'll only be able to return during new years" said Yang Hui.

Luo Feng and Ya Xia both got on the elevator and left.

※※

The sky was dark, and in one of Jiang-Nan city's eight cities, Yang Zhou city, tens of thousands of homes were shining bright.

One of the Dojo of Limits' private cars slowly moved along on the street. Luo Feng looked through the window and saw residential building after residential building, store after store: "Yang Zhou. I've been here for so many years. Soon, I'll be leaving. Leaving China to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters!"

"Five years? Such a long time! I can keep in touch with dad, mom, and my brother through video chat"

"I also need to pay attention to the elixir of life my brother needs and see when it becomes available"

"Also..... Wen. Before I leave, I need to go see Wen". Wen was the one who played with him ever since they were little tiny kids. Their relationship is comparable to Luo Feng and Luo Hua's. Ever since Luo Feng became a fighter, Wen had to go to college, so they only met a few times during New Years.

"Also the brothers from the fire hammer squad! Even though we

weren't together for a long time, we've been through quite a bit together"

Suddenly—— a person appeared in Luo Feng's mind.....

Xu Xin! What's he going to do with Xu Xin?

"Xu Xin. I'll be leaving China to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters, what'll I do with Xu Xin?" Luo Feng's feelings were complicated. As he looked at the various bright homes, his feelings were jumping around. A sweet and sour feeling came up. After taking a deep breath, Luo Feng shook his head, "What's the point of thinking about this. I'll just video chat with her often. When I have enough power and authority——nobody can stop my relationship with Xu Xin"

"Oh yea, Xu Xin is at Jiang-Nan university"

"Hm, that Ya Xia is there too" Luo Feng had a good impression of the genius fighter, Ya Xia, who was about to leave his home and live outside the country for a long period of time.

"Wen is at Jiang-Nan's #2 military school and Xu Xin is at Jiang-Nan university! They're all in school, so I'll go find Wen and then meet Xu Xin for our final goodbyes"

"Beep!"

With the sound, the car entered Ming-Yue sector. He's home!

Chapter 9: Brother

Since he's leaving China and headed towards the Dojo of Limits world headquarters at the end of the month, Luo Feng stayed at home with his family for nearly every single day since he got back. Even though father Luo Hong Guo, mother Gong Xin Lan, and brother Luo Hua were sad, they didn't want to change Luo Feng's great future.

On March 12th, Luo Feng gathered with his fire hammer squad members. The first thing they did was sell off the monster materials they got from before. Since this is the last time the fire hammer squad was going to sell their materials, Luo Feng suggested that everyone receive an equal share. The materials sold for around 800 million.

Technically, Luo Feng did the most work, so he should've received the most. He would've received around 300 million.

However, everyone knew that Luo Feng was about to leave the fire hammer squad. And the older members Chen Gu, Wei Tie, and Wei Qing were about to retire, so the fire hammer squad was going to be disbanded! Luo Feng stayed in this squad for nearly a year, while Gao Feng, Chen Gu, and the others stayed in the squad for a much longer time.

Everyone's feelings were complicated.

Gao Feng immediately accepted Luo Feng's suggestion that they split the profits equally. Even though Luo Feng and Gao Feng were

supposed to receive most of it, they both agreed. Seeing this, Chen Gu, Wei Tie, and Wei Qing didn't say anything more, and everyone received a bit more than 100 million.

After that, the fire hammer squad drank that night all the way until 3 to 4 AM. They rode the train home on the second day's afternoon.

With this, the fire hammer squad was officially disbanded! Chen Gu, Wei Tie, and Wei Qing were going to retire, Luo Feng was headed towards the world headquarters, and Gao Feng would continue to fight in another squad!

※※

March 21st, the sun was shining and the weather was great.

Jiang-Nan headquarter city, main city sector's university area. This university area was gigantic and the eight research institutes of Jiang-nan city were all gathered here.

In front of one of the colleges, the attractive characters 'Jiang-Nan #2 military school" were shining on the main gate. At this time, quite a few male and female students were quickly coming out of the school's gate. Some of them came out in couples, while others came out in huge groups.

There was one teenager, wearing a simple dark blue T-shirt, who was leaning against the bars of the gate as he watched the students

leaving.

“Oi, Luo Feng!” a bright sound carried from far away.

Luo Feng turned his head towards the origin of the sound and saw a skinny teenager running on the road. This person who seemed gentle was indeed his good brother ‘Wei Wen’ that played with him ever since they were kids.

“Wen” Luo Feng smiled as he ran over, “I was even waiting for you in front of the gate, why’d you appear here”

“I finished my culture lessons this afternoon so I went back to my dorm. Our dorm is quite far from the school” explained Wei Wen.

“Oh, the school area is separated from the dorm? This sure opens the eyes of this person who never went to college” laughed Luo Feng in a weird matter.

“The fuck, you’re a fighter and you’re still making fun of me” laughed Wei Wen and couldn’t help but to punch Luo Feng in the chest, “We just entered Spring, so it’s still a bit chilly. Aren’t you cold just wearing a T-shirt? Hehe..... just what you’d expect from a fighter!”. Wei Wen was clearly wearing much more than Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked around: “Let’s go find a place to sit”

“Haha, I’ve finally encountered a huge, fat sheep, so I need to cruelly slaughter it. I want to go to..... ‘Venetian'” followed Wei

Wen.

“Alright, just lead the way to that Venetian or whatever” laughed Luo Feng. Since he’s usually in the wilderness, he’s always a bit cautious when dealing with the other fighters in the resupplying base. When hanging out with Wei Wen, Luo Feng felt relaxed like he was back in middle and high school.

Venetian, a restaurant with average prices. The meal they ate costed around 300 to 400 dollars.

However, for students with no source of income, this was quite extravagant spending already. For fighters, this was extremely, extremely common.

“Sirs, how many?” the waitress passionately received.

“Two” Luo Feng looked around, “Find a quiet place”

This waitress works here every day and has seen all sorts of people. With just a glance, she could tell that Luo Feng was different from the other students around him. That sharp gaze was enough to make her heart skip a beat, so she naturally lowered her head and said: “There’s a private room upstairs, please follow me”

“Hehe, a private room. I haven’t been there yet. I’ve only been here with my girlfriend a few times, and that’s in the lobby on the first floor” Wei Wen and Luo Feng went up the stairs.

“Girlfriend? I didn’t hear you say anything about that over New Years. How long has this been” Luo Feng asked as the two of them entered the private room upstairs and swiftly ordered some dishes and a box of beer from the menu. Wei Wen put the menu down as he laughed, “Over New Years, my relationship with my girlfriend wasn’t entirely set. It was only set right when we started school again after New Years!”

“Congrats, congrats” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to laugh, “Hasn’t even been a year since you entered school and you’ve already picked up a girlfriend, NICE!”

“I was just lucky, my girlfriend is from the neighboring Shifan university” Wei Wen popped the beer bottle’s cap, “You also know that there are more guys than girls in our school. The amount of girls is so small it’s scary”

“So that’s why you went to search in another school?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to laugh.

“Alright, let’s do this first” Wei Wen held his bottle of beer.

Luo Feng also held his bottle of beer and drank two gulps.

“Luo Feng, this girlfriend business isn’t easy” Wei Wen couldn’t help but to say after drinking quite a bit of beer; his skin was already red. He shook his head as he sighed, “Now everyone’s just competing. People compare how beautiful their girlfriends are, and this is even the small stuff! The most important thing is..... atmosphere!”

“Atmosphere?” asked Luo Feng in a confused tone.

“For example, if I don’t bring my girlfriend to a nice place when we eat…. My girlfriend’s temper is good, so she doesn’t say anything. But…… her female friends will start talking about that” Wei Wen shook his head, “You don’t know that the shit that goes on between the girls is way more dramatic than us guys!”

“Her boyfriend is some rich kid, her boyfriend is some elite member of the Dojo, her boyfriend is this and that, they always compare everything!”

“For the sake of my girlfriend’s appearance, I have to bring her to a nice place” Wei Wen couldn’t help but to shake his head.

Luo Feng froze.

He has never went to college, so Luo Feng really doesn’t understand all of this. However, in high school, some girls were already doing this.

“You know that eating outside is expensive, and I occasionally have to buy my girlfriend gifts. It’s only been a month and I’ve spent 4,000 already” Wei Wen drank the rest of his beer in one gulp and his eyes were a bit red, “And sometimes, I have to pay for the whole bill when I eat with her”

Luo Feng slightly frowned.

“My girlfriend and I are both normal people. Our rent is quite expensive already! Even though I’m a tutor now, but I’m not an elite member of the dojo. Tutors don’t earn much money” Wei Wen shook his head, “I pretty much understand now. People live just for their appearances!”

Luo Feng sighed inside.

Wei Wen’s family was a bit better off than his family was back then. When they were in middle and high school, Wei Wen had to lend him money.

“In just this one month, I’m already broke”

“It all comes down to this one word——status!”

“This is a dog eat dog world. If your family is rich, there’ll always be people following you and girls will be flying to your arms! And people with strength, ‘fighters’, are also respected! Some people are always trying to hang out with others with a big enough background, hoping that the latter will help them out!”

“Money, authority, strength”

“People with those have status”

“People with a nice background have authority and status”

“Fighters, naturally have status too”

Wei Wen popped open another bottle of beer, “So, this world is simple. People respect those with high status and look down on those with low status”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to nod.

Luo Feng has always thought that Wei Wen was smart. Even though these words were a bit rough, but they clearly explain what this society was like.

“If a rich person runs out of money, it’s over for him”

“If someone with a great position loses that position, his authority will probably disappear too”

“Position and money are external, only your own strength is truly reliable”

“So in conclusion——the best thing is still your own strength! Fighters, even if they become handicapped, still have enough power to become dojo instructors” laughed Wei Wen, “This love business also made me solidify my thoughts. I must become a fighter!”

“I have the chance of becoming an ‘elite dojo member’ this year.

Hopefully I can become a fighter by the time I graduate!” Wei Wen lifted his beer bottle, “Come, cheers”

Luo Feng worries were gone once he saw that Wei Wen wasn’t discouraged anymore.

“Cheers!” Luo Feng lifted his beer bottle.

The two brothers chatted as they drank. After finishing their drinks, the two of them ordered some tea and chatted until 4 PM. Only until then did Luo Feng bring Wei Wen back to his dorm.

Outside the dorms.

“Go straight on this road and after two traffic lights, you’ll see Jiang-Nan university” Wei Wen pointed forward.

“Okay” said Luo Feng as he took out his phone.

“Giving Xu Xin a call?” snickered Wei Wen on the side.

Suddenly——Wei Wen felt his phone vibrate and took it out. He sighed: “It’s probably my girlfriend asking to eat dinner together, sigh, I have to spend money again”. He opened his phone and after looking, he saw a short message——”Your card ending in 0306 has received 6,000,000 dollars on 16:51 of the 21st. Remaining balance: 6,002,100 (communication bank)”

“Six, six, six million?” Wei Wen’s eyes widened.

This is an astronomical number for him.

“Who transferred this money?” Wei Wen practically instantly thought of someone, the Luo Feng beside him! Out of all his friends and relatives, only Luo Feng can take out this much money without changing his expression.

“Luo Feng, this is your…..” Wei Wen lifted his head and looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng patted Wei Wen’s shoulder: “Wen, since you want to become a fighter, work for it with all your heart. Don’t waste your time being a tutor. Just think of this money as a present from your brother congratulating your first relationship. Let’s see what your girlfriend’s female friends are going to say now. Men always have to stand in front of their girlfriends with straightened backs”

Wei Wen’s eyes uncontrollably started to become red.

“Are you shitting me? You’re going to cry?” Luo Feng’s eyes widened, as if he just witnessed something extremely strange.

“Why the fuck would I cry” Wei Wen couldn’t help but to laugh.

This money was indeed nothing to Luo Feng. He’ll earn over ten million after randomly hunting a medium level commander level monster.

“Alright, I’ll be going to Jiang-Nan university now” Luo Feng waved his hand and started heading towards Jiang-Nan university.

Wei Wen looked at the message on his phone and the astonishing six million. He felt like this was all a dream. Previously, he was anxious inside as he held a smile on his face as he talked with his girlfriend. Who knew that in a blink of an eye he’d receive such a huge amount.

Chapter 10: Cruel Move

Evening. Luo Feng was walking on the street. Since it was in the university area, the streets were filled with young male and female students.

“Hello” Luo Feng dialed Xu Xin’s number, “It’s me, Luo Feng!”. Last night, Luo Feng and Xu Xin video chatted for a long time. He told Xu Xin that he would come see her today. “Night Spring Post? Intersection? Alright, I’ll wait for you there”

Luo Feng hung up and quickly came to the intersection called Night Spring Post. The reforesting of this area was done quite well. Luo Feng leaned against a post on the street and silently waited. At the same time, he couldn’t help but to think about what his good brother was talking about. What he said clearly resonated with Luo Feng. “Indeed, it’s status!”

“The first time I met Xu Xin’s brother, Xu Gang, he looked down on me and told me to stay away from his sister. From his point of view, I was just a rookie fighter that wasn’t good enough for his sister!”

“That great young master, ‘Li Wei’, also thought I was a little shrimp. If I was a wargod or a child of some wargod, he probably wouldn’t have dared to touch me”. Of course, even though young master Li Wei allowed his underlings to kill Luo Feng, Li Wei ended up giving his life in the end. “If I become an existence that surpasses the wargod level, if I become comparable to investigator Zhu, would the Vulture Scorpion couple dare to pull off something like the astronomical bounty?”. People have different statuses in

different circles.

In a university, a fighter or a rich person counts as people with high status in the circle of students. When looking at the whole of Jiang-Nan headquarter city, a beginner level wargod is famous!

If you look at the entire world, powerful wargod fighters like the ‘examiners’ of the Dojo of Limits shake the entire world.

And existences that surpass the wargod level like investigator Zhu, the investigators that stand at the top of the Dojo of Limits, are treated with respect by huge countries. And those so called huge families are just a joke to them. At this level, money has very little effect. “Existences that surpass the wargod level around the world are super rare”

“My goal right now is to become an advanced level wargod spirit reader as fast as possible! When that happens, would I even be afraid of Vulture and Scorpion?”. To get what he desires and to do what he wants to do, he has to raise his status!

Truly powerful fighters, like Hong, just need to say a single sentence to make the countless powers around the world fight over being the first to do his bidding. This is status!

※※

Jiang-Nan university’s Gate.

“Xu Xin, you’re not eating dinner with us anymore?” a few female classmates looked towards the nearby Xu Xin, who smiled as she waved her hand: “I still have things to do. I’ll be eating outside tonight”. After saying that, Xu Xin headed towards the night spring post intersection nearby Jiang-Nan university’s gate and met up with Luo Feng, which her other female classmates witnessed. “Hm?” one of the girls with large eyes raised a cell phone that seemed quite expensive and pointed it towards the night spring post intersection.

“Look, look, Xu Xin’s with a guy” said this large eyed female classmate as she pointed her phone towards the intersection. Even though night spring post intersection was around 500 meters away from the school gate, which was too far for regular eyes to discern someone’s looks, the capabilities of modern phones are too great.

The phone can take photos and videos. This large eyes girl’s phone can even record someone’s face that’s 1,000 meters away.

“Hey, it’s true!” the other girls leaned over and looked, “He seems quite handsome”

“Oh shoot, I forgot something back in the classroom. You guys go first, I’ll catch up soon”. The large eyed girl started running towards the school and quickly arrived at a corner of the empty track field. She took up her phone and immediately sent out the small video she just recorded.

In a suite of a high class hotel not far from Jiang-Nan university, a young man wearing a bathrobe was laying on a sofa. A seemingly beautiful girl, who was also wearing a bathrobe, was massaging

him. Another seemingly pure young girl was also lightly massaging his feet and even happily chatted with the guy. Suddenly, his phone rang. “Hello” the young man picked up his phone.

“Young master Wang, Xu Xin just went out to eat dinner with a guy I don’t know. I just sent you the video”

“Oh” the young man frowned, “Alright, you did a good job”

After saying that, the young man opened up the video and took a close look. The scene with Luo Feng and Xu Xin was incredibly high quality, and the young man slightly frowned: “Luo Feng? Who could’ve thought that this Luo Feng would run all the way over to the university area to look for Xu Xin. Looks like his relationship with Xu Xin isn’t normal!”

“You guys go down” the young man waved his hand, “Tell uncle An to come”

“Yes, young master”

The two girls obediently went away. Soon enough, an old suit wearing butler came and bowed: “Young master”

“Uncle An” the young man stood up and frowned, “Xu Xin just went out to eat dinner with Luo Feng”

“Luo Feng?” this butler, uncle An, couldn’t help but to be surprised. He was clear that this young master, ‘Wang Xing Ping”,

transferred to Jiang-Nan university from Kyoto headquarter city just to get closer to his prize. And, all the information about guys that are even slightly close to Xu Xin was recorded. Naturally, Luo Feng's information was recorded too. Not only that, but three of Xu Xin's female classmates were bribed! At the same time, there were probably around 100 people around Jiang-Nan university that belongs solely to him!

"Ruining their relationship should be easy" said Wang Xing Ping coldly, "Just a fighter. Uncle An, I'll hand this mission to you. First find out where they're eating tonight. I'm sure I don't have to tell you what to do next? I only have one request——ruin their relationship!". The butler, uncle An, nodded as he replied: "I'll prepare immediately!"

"Okay" Wang Xing Ping waved his hand. The butler immediately and respectfully went away.

In mere moments, in another suite of the hotel. The butler, Uncle An, was currently looking at two young girls he just found. These two beautiful girls were quite cute and could easily trigger a reaction in the bottom half of the body.

"Your goal, is him!" the butler, Uncle An, pointed towards a display. The display was currently showing a photo of Luo Feng and another one of Xu Xin. "His name is Luo Feng and is from Jiang-Nan headquarter city's Yang Zhou city. His phone number is . . . . . record all of this information and add his phone number to your contacts"

"Yes" the two beautiful girls obediently nodded.

“This is the plan, look carefully” as he said that, the butler, Uncle An, lightly tapped his notebook, which then displayed the contents of the in depth plan. The two beautiful girls took a look and made eye contact with each other.

“We understand, uncle An”

“Alright, Luo Feng is at the nearby ristorante Yinuo, go” commanded the butler, Uncle An. He watched the two beautiful girls leave and then looked at the plan on the display. He couldn’t help but to shake his head, “Luo Feng, you also count as quite a hard working fighter. Sadly, our young master has his eyes set on Xu Xin, so you have no right to touch her”

※※

Yinuo, a quite stylish ristorante near Jiang-Nan city. The music there was like a flowing river, improving the atmosphere even more.

Luo Feng and Xu Xin sat in a corner. The candles were lit on the table; this is the legendary ‘candlelit dinner’. For Luo Feng’s sake, Xu Xin requested that seats nearby them were empty so that nobody could bother them.

“You’re going there?” smiled Xu Xin, “Yeah, this is a good thing for you. I heard that as long as you can enter the world’s best training camp, you’ll become a wargod in the future with no problem..... Future wargod, I’ll congratulate you first” as she said

that, she lifted up her glass of wine. In the glass was red wine with an extremely low alcohol content.

"Thanks" Luo Feng also smiled as he lifted his glass.

After lightly taking a sip, Luo Feng and Xu Xin started chatting. They chatted about Xu Xin's complicated family matters and then Luo Feng's family. The two of them happily chatted. Even though they were just chatting like that, they seemed like a couple. It's just that neither of them moved the relationship to that point.

"Sis, I heard that guy last night was really great?"

"Why would I trick you. I mean, I'm quite experienced and have tasted quite a few men, but the one last night was just..... fantastic. Hehe, my heart is going wild now that I think about it. I'll go find him to play some more in a few days"

"You know his cell phone number?"

"While he was sleeping, I used his cell phone to call my cell phone and then recorded the number"

Two quite beautiful girls were chatting in small voices on the table beside the table next to Luo Feng's. However, this restaurant was just way too quiet, so Luo Feng and Xu Xin heard every word clearly. The two of them could only exchange a funny glance; they didn't think that they would be able to hear such a conversation here.

Luo Feng and Xu Xin continued to chat.

Around half an hour later.

“Well, let’s go” the sisters finally stood up.

Suddenly, one of the ‘sisters’ walked past Luo Feng and then walked back a few steps. She carefully examined him and said in a surprised tone: “Eh? I didn’t think it was really you. I felt like it was you when I looked at your back, but it was just too dark so I couldn’t see clearly. Now that I look, it’s really you. Wow, what a coincidence to meet you two days in a row”

“Sis, who’s he?” said the girl on the side in a confused tone.

“Two days in a row? This young lady, I don’t think I’ve ever seen you before” said Luo Feng as she looked at the beautiful girl in front of him, “I think you have the wrong person?”

“Ehhh——” the cute girl took another careful look and then glanced at Xu Xin on the side. She then said, “Wrong person, wrong person. I’m really sorry”

Xu Xin frowned on the side as she witnessed this scene. Xu Xin hates things like one night stands…… and the scene that just took place in front of her couldn’t help but to raise her suspicions: has Luo Feng actually played with this cute girl before? Fighters are always fighting on the border between life and death, so it’s quite

normal for many of them to blow their money on some beautiful girls. In the past, Xu Xin always thought that Luo Feng wasn't this type of person. But now that she witnessed this scene……

Chapter 11: Wang Xing Ping and Luo Feng

When destroying the relationship between a couple, especially when involving someone like Xu Xin who lives in a huge family, your tricks can't be too obvious. If so, Xu Xin's suspicions would be raised too easily! Because of that, uncle An didn't plan on destroying their relationship in one go; he planned on splitting the attack into several waves.

For the first time, he simply wanted to raise Xu Xin's suspicions. Clearly.....

He succeeded.

This simple scene where she mistaken Luo Feng for someone else was enough to raise Xu Xin's suspicions.

"Wrong person? There's no way she mixed their faces up. This girl even looked at luo Feng carefully to confirm his identity. How can she say that she has mistaken him for someone else? Way too fake" Xu Xin saw through this in a glance. At the same time, Luo Feng's expression wasn't looking too good at the moment; why is he getting involved in such messed up things.

"Sorry, really sorry. I've mistaken you for someone else" apologized the beautiful girl, "Let's go"

What else can Luo Feng say?

They already said they mistaken him for someone else.

“You two ladies, please wait a moment” said Xu Xin.

Luo Feng froze and looked at Xu Xin. However, Xu Xin’s head was only faced towards the two girls.

“Oh, is there something you need?” the two beautiful girls turned their heads toward Xu Xin and the ‘sister’ asked.

“Didn’t you just say you met him two days in a row.....” Xu Xin just started to speak.

“Not your boyfriend” followed the sister, “One of my good guy friends, Da Shan”

Xu Xin nodded: “Da Shan? Oh, so when you said you met him two days in a row, you mean you met with that ‘Da Shan’ yesterday too?”

The ‘big sister’ and ‘little sister’ exchanged glances. The big sister glanced at Luo Feng and then smiled towards Xu Xin: “Of course. It wasn’t just a simple meeting: we stayed together throughout the night as well! My Da Shan sure is great, I wonder how good your boyfriend is.....” she started to snicker slightly as she said that.

“Over the night? Oh, then it looks like you two really did mistake him for someone else. My boyfriend and I video chatted late into the night yesterday. Since the session lasted for around three to

four hours, there's no way he could've spent some time with someone else that night" smiled Xu Xin. Suddenly, the faces of the two beautiful girls changed dramatically. The cat's out of the bag!

There's a problem with the plan: the plan never took into account the possibility of Xu Xin and Luo Feng video chatting for so long. The two beautiful girls exchanged a glance; panic could be seen in their eyes. The beginning step of the plan just started and they failed, so the second and third step won't even have a chance to begin. The two beautiful girls dropped off a few phrases and then immediately left.

Luo Feng laughed when he saw this and then looked at Xu Xin with a surprised look: "Xu Xin, we only chatted for like an hour last night, how come you said three to four hours?"

"Well, just wanted to see their reaction and scare them a bit. As expected, their faces changed dramatically" giggled Xu Xin, "If my guess is correct, these two girls were probably sent from my brother or some other young master. However, this plan was quite well done". Indeed, the 'mistaken person' act by the two beautiful girls rose Xu Xin's suspicions slightly, but there was a hole in their plan——

Xu Xin indeed video chatted with Luo Feng yesterday for around an hour, which made Xu Xin suspicious..... would Luo Feng go out to play after video chatting late into the night? Not too realistic, so Xu Xin followed up with some questions and exaggerated a bit. The two beautiful girls immediately thought they've been found out and escaped in a hurry.

“Nice, nice” Luo Feng gave a big thumbs up.

“These family matters are quite messy. Sorry that you had to go through such a joke” apologized Xu Xin.

Luo Feng suddenly laughed: “You said before..... ‘My boyfriend and I video chatted’, oh..... boyfriend..... hehe” Luo Feng laughed in a weird matter.

“Luo Feng, I didn’t know you were like this too! I only said that because of the situation I was in” Xu Xin couldn’t help but to blush.

※※

After leaving the restaurant, it was around 8 PM; the sky was already dark.

Along the street of the university area, Luo Feng escorted Xu Xin back to the dorm area of Jiang-Nan university. After going through the ‘destruction’ of the two beautiful girls, Luo Feng and Xu Xin’s relationship improved even more. The two of them would make fun of each other, but they just wouldn’t officially set the relationship into stone.

The stars filled the night sky.

“No need to go any further, I’m going in now” Xu Xin looked at Luo Feng, “Do your best in the elite training camp”

“Okay” Luo Feng nodded.

Xu Xin’s face was slightly red as she stood at the staircase at her dorm, whether because she drank red wine or because of him: “I, I can’t believe I got messed up so much just because of what that girl said. Why would I get so mad? Because of him..... am I really....?”

Luo Feng was also inside the sector of the dorm. In front of him were a couple people in the shade of a tree.

“Luo Feng” spoke someone in front of him.

Luo Feng looked carefully and saw six people under the tree. Leading them was a rich young master who looked pretty good and had white skin. Behind him was an old man and four burly brutes. Just looking at these brutes was enough to know that they were fighters. Someone who can get four powerful fighters to be his bodyguards?

Probably not someone normal.

“I’m Luo Feng, who might you be?” smiled Luo Feng as he looked at the rich young master.

“I’m Wang Xing Ping from Kyoto headquarter city!” the rich young master walked over, “I’ve come to see you just to deliver a single phrase: You better stay away from Xu Xin!”

“What if I don’t stay away?” said Luo Feng as he looked at the rich young master.

“Oh?” frowned Wang Xing Ping.

“I know your identity: the great young master of the Wang family of Kyoto headquarter city. Kyoto headquarter city’s Wang family is one of the nine core families of the HR alliance” said Luo Feng as he looked at him.

Wang Xing Ping smirked: “Very good. It seems like you’re someone who knows the rules. There are rules in every area, and what you must do is follow those rules. If you break the rules and do something you shouldn’t do…… you won’t be able to handle the consequences! Do you understand what I’m saying?”

Night time is the dorm area’s most crowded time.

Quite a few university students that were eating snacks and walking around noticed Luo Feng and Wang Xing Ping’s group, since Wang Xing Ping’s underlings weren’t regular people.

“Rules?” Luo Feng narrowed his eyes.

The Wang family of China is one of the nine core families of the HR alliance and their influence on society is tremendously huge. Normal people definitely can’t imagine what these families are capable of.

“Luo Feng, you should know that not everyone is equal. Even though everyone yells “everyone’s equal”, everyone is not. Some people can only follow the rules and laws, and even when they do, they get in trouble. Some people can pick up all the beautiful girls they want and break all the rules: beat people up and even kill people. But those people don’t get into any trouble. Some people..... can ruin a family with a single phrase. Some people can force a young man with a beautiful future ahead of them to obey their every command, even if they’re a fighter” Wang Xing Ping looked at Luo Feng, “You probably know which group I belong to, and which group you belong to!”. The superiority he held in his bones wasn’t covered up at all in this talk. Luo Feng said nothing.

※※

As Luo Feng and Wang Xing Ping talked, a couple was holding hands not too far away from the dorm sector.

“Tao Tao, really sorry. I’ll be out of the country for a whole three years. Of course, I’ll come see you over New Years” the one speaking was precisely the one who was headed towards the Dojo of Limits world headquarters with Luo Feng, Ya Xia. The girl holding Ya Xia’s hand was his girlfriend since high school.

“Ya Xia, it’s fine. We can talk over the internet frequently. It’s just three years, it’ll be over really quickly” the girl named Tao Tao grasped Ya Xia’s hand. Ya Xia was definitely a legend in Jiang-Nan university: he’s handsome, has a nice temper, and all his friends think highly of him. His family’s great too because his father’s a wargod!

He himself was also powerful. Since he's headed off towards the 'basics training camp', he might become a wargod in the future! Since his father is also a wargod fighter, tons of girls would be chasing after this young man. Initially, quite a few people were trying to ruin Tao Tao and Ya Xia's relationship.

"But you better not mess around" Tao Tao looked at Ya Xia.

"Okay" Ya Xia nodded.

"Hm, what's going on ahead?" Ya Xia looked in front of him with a confused look on his face. As a genius fighter, his eyesight was able to discern the looks of the people ahead. "Wang Xing Ping, huh, that's senior Luo Feng? Tao Tao, remember I told you about a super powerful fighter that's leaving the country with me? He's right ahead of us" said Ya Xia.

"Where is he?" Tao Tao was quite curious.

"Come, I'll bring you to him" smiled Ya Xia, "Senior Luo Feng's temper is quite good. He's in the shade of the tree"

Wang Xing Ping looked at Luo Feng: "You're a beginner level warlord level fighter right. These people here are 100% loyal to my Wang family. You guys, tell Luo Feng your ranks"

"Intermediate level warlord"

"Intermediate level warlord"

“Intermediate level warlord”

After the three brutes spoke, the final bald, middle-aged brute smiled: “Advanced level warlord! Young man, you should know your place. Even a wargod wouldn’t dare to act so arrogantly in front of one of the nine core families of the HR alliance. Your future is bright, so don’t ruin it for yourself”

Luo Feng’s eyes brightened and he smiled as he nodded, “Young master Wang, you sure are great. Four bodyguards: an advanced level warlord and three intermediate level warlords”. Young master Li Wei had two advanced level warlords and an intermediate level warlord back then. However, Li Wei died.

“Brother Wang, you’re here too” a familiar voice rang.

Luo Feng turned his head and so did Wang Xing Ping and the others. Ya Xia and his girlfriend Tao Tao came into their vision.

“It’s young master Ya Xia” said the butler, Uncle An, in a small voice.

The four bodyguards also smiled towards Ya Xia. Wang Xing Ping smiled towards Ya Xia. This Ya Xia’s father is one of the wargods of Jiang-Nan city. Since he has a nice temper and many connections, quite a few wargods are his brothers to the death. When faced with such a wargod, even the Wang family has to treat them with respect.

Furthermore, this Ya Xia is quite talented himself, since he's about to enter the basics training camp. He might be able to become a wargod in the future.

"Ya Xia, what a coincidence, you're here too" Wang Xing Ping's previous attitude towards Luo Feng disappeared; he was now much more approachable.

"Haha, I saw senior Luo Feng here, but I didn't expect brother Wang to be here too" Ya Xia smiled as he looked at Luo Feng, "Senior Luo Feng, you know brother Wang too?"

"Senior Luo Feng?" Wang Xing Ping frowned. Usually, fighters only call someone 'senior' when they're from the same dojo and clearly more powerful than them. And Ya Xia is calling Luo Feng 'senior'?

"Ya Xia, I just met with Wang Xing Ping just now, so I'm not too familiar with him" smiled Luo Feng.

Ya Xia laughed loudly and said to Wang Xing Ping: "Brother Wang, you love meeting genius fighters right? Senior Luo Feng is way better than me. This time, senior Luo Feng is leaving the country with me, and Luo Feng is entering the world's best elite training camp!"

"Elite training camp?" Wang Xing Ping's heart thumped dramatically: oh shit!

Each country's army tries everything possible to earn a spot in the elite training camp, since every person that enters the elite training camp will become a wargod in the future! And the special training in this elite training camp makes these wargods way more powerful than other wargods that trained by themselves.

Every elite training camp student has an immensely high position. Even the nine core families of the HR alliance want these students on their side.

These students will become extremely powerful in the future and all their fellow students are also absolute geniuses from all over the world. After they all graduate, each and every one of them are wargods! Their own abilities, added with their connections..... each of these students will become an important member in the Dojo of Limits or in the government's special forces; even the HR alliance invites them as special guests. They are the absolute top! Even the government treats these guys like masters, since they are actually masters!

These demon students are also extremely intelligent and naturally form a group! One demonic genius fighter is already insanely powerful. If you add ten of them or a hundred of them into a group that looks out for its members, they become an extremely powerful force that none of the core families of the HR alliance are willing to mess with.

This is also why the huge families spend tens and hundreds of billions to try and get a spot in the elite training camp! And these students..... might even become the students of 'Hong' and

‘Thunder God’.

“Fuck, this, this Luo Feng all of a sudden…….” Wang Xing Ping wanted to smash his head a couple times. He was a perfectly normal fighter, how did he all of a sudden……

“Senior Luo Feng, brother Wang is a great person who loves to make friends” smiled Ya Xia towards Luo Feng. After that, he turned his head towards Wang Xing Ping, “Brother Wang, how about me, senior Luo Feng, and you find a place to chat later?” as he said that, he even purposefully winked at Wang Xing Ping.

From Ya Xia’s point of view, he’s doing Wang Xing Ping a huge favor. How many of these demonic genius fighters exist on earth? Everyone would want to try and get to know them if given the chance.

Chapter 12: World Headquarters

The nights of early spring were cold, but Wang Xing Ping's brain was melting and his face was astonishingly hot: "This is the worst thing I've ever ran into in my life. How many students does the world's best training camp accept every year all over the world? Only one person gets in every few years in Jiang-Nan city! And now I actually encountered someone and even threatened him....." if Wang Xing Ping was the head of the Wang family, he might have the authority to threaten that person. However, the Wang family's head is his grandpa!

His grandpa has quite a few sons and over a dozen grandsons! He's a direct descendant of his grandfather and therefore has a higher position than the other grandsons, but that's not even close to enough to determine who will become the next head. The internal struggle is extremely competitive: the successors are all decided by the family.

After his grandfather gives up his spot, his father's generation goes up.

After a couple dozen years, it'll be his generation's turn!

Even if Wang Xing Ping is able to become the head, he'll have to wait quite a few years.

"I have some of the family's power, but only an extremely small portion" Wang Xing Ping clenched his teeth, "If the family knew that I started a fight against a student of the 'world's best training

camp', the first thing they'll make me do is apologize. After that, I'll have to organize a negotiation with Luo Feng to attempt to calm the situation!"

Wang Xing Ping was clear of his family's rules.

If you can't kill them, befriend them!

Even the five great countries wouldn't dare to send people to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters that Luo Feng is about to enter! Because that place is the territory world's strongest fighter, Hong. Hong's name is more explosive than a nuclear bomb.

"Hey, brother Wang, what're you thinking of?" smiled Ya Xia as he urged.

Wang Xing Ping took in a deep breath as he looked at Luo Feng, and then lowered his head and deeply bowed: "Luo Feng, this is my, Wang Xing Ping's, fault. Please don't mind my actions!"

Apologized? This Wang Xing Ping actually bowed as he apologized!

"What, what, what's going on?" Ya Xia froze as he looked at Wang Xing Ping and then at Luo Feng. Even if he's blind he could tell that something was wrong with this situation.

Luo Feng looked at Ya Xia and smiled: "Nothing, it's just that young master Wang Xing Ping had a little misunderstanding. Well,

I still have things to do, so I'll be going first!" after saying that, Luo Feng turned around and walked away on the dark, concrete street.

After Luo Feng left, Ya Xia whispered: "Brother Wang, what happened? You enraged this Luo Feng?"

"I messed up big time" Wang Xing Ping straightened his back, "However, Ya Xia, thanks a lot for this. If you didn't tell me about this Luo Feng's identity, I would've offended him without knowing who he was!".

The current Luo Feng has no power to do anything, but in a few years, once he becomes a wargod and enters the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits, dealing with some random rich kid of the Wang family is easy. In front of the Dojo of Limits, not just the Wang family, but even the entire HR alliance has to lower their heads!

※※

"FUCK, FUCK, FUCK!!!" once he returned to the hotel, Wang Xing Ping ferociously slammed the great bottles of wine on the counter around. Bottle after bottle of extremely expensive high quality wine slammed on the table, the wall, and the ground.

PENG! PA!

As the shattering sounds rang, butler, uncle An, said nothing as he stood in the corner. After unleashing his rage, Wang Xing Ping furiously sat on the sofa, "Uncle An, find and bring a pair of twin

sisters here". Wang Xing Ping's eyes were cold like a wolf's. Every time he encounters some trouble, he'll want to vent.

"Young master" butler, uncle An, couldn't help but to say.

"DON'T WORRY, NOBODY WILL DIE!" Wang Xing Ping turned his head and coldly looked at the butler, uncle An. Under Wang Xing Ping's glare, the butler didn't dare to say anything more.

"Yes" butler, Uncle An, turned his head and walked out of the room.

※※

After encountering Wang Xing Ping, Luo Feng just treated it as a joke and forgot about it. For the next few days, Luo Feng spent most of his time on the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》. Time flowed like water and, with a blink of an eye, it was March 22nd, the day that Luo Feng leaves the headquarter city!

March 22nd, 1:30 PM. Jiang-Nan headquarter city airport.

"Feng, once you get there, take care of yourself" said Luo Hong Guo.

"Got it, Dad" smiled Luo Feng.

Gong Xin Lan's eyes were teary as she held Luo Feng's hand:

“Feng, watch yourself!”

Every time Luo Feng enters the wilderness, his family becomes extremely worried. However, after a while, especially after living in a fighter’s sector like Ming-Yue sector, his parents understood—— this is the path of a fighter!

“Luo Feng, it’s time to check in” said wargod Yang Hui from far away.

“Coming” responded Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked at his parents and then immediately ran towards Yang Hui. Not too far away, Ya Xia was also saying goodbye to his parents and then went along with Luo Feng and wargod Yang Hui through the security check. The Dojo of Limits chairman, Ya Xia’s family, and Luo Feng’s family watched them as they left.

There was only one extremely huge saucer shaped commercial plane in the entire airport. Luo Feng went through the tunnel and entered the commercial plane.

“Mr. Yang, your seats are in the first class cabin” smiled the beautiful female flight attendant.

“Okay” Yang Hui nodded and went up the stairs.

This was Luo Feng and Ya Xia’s first time riding a huge

commercial plane like this, so they were extremely curious. Luo Feng, like many others riding this plane for the first time, was looking around with curiosity. The interior of the plane was dreamy. Since the plane was saucer shaped, the cabins were split into the top level, middle level, and bottom level. The top level was the first class cabin, while the middle and bottom levels were normal cabins.

"Round?" Luo Feng looked at the wall on the top level and noticed that it, along with all the other things, were round. The seats were also placed in a circular manner, ring after ring. Naturally, there were more seats in the outer rings. And in the very middle was a 3D hologram.

E21 was Luo Feng's spot. He, Ya Xia, and Yang Hui sat side by side. The other passengers soon came in one by one.

"Luo Feng, Ya Xia, this is your first time riding a plane, so the Dojo of Limits will pay for you two" said Yang Hui, "If you ride an airplane again in the future, you'll have to buy the ticket yourselves. The cost for a ticket for the Chinese large commercial planes from the six headquarter cities to our world headquarters is 10 million for a normal cabin and 20 million for the first class cabin!"

Luo Feng sighed inside.....

No wonder even the average rich person wouldn't ride these planes. It'll be good for some rich person's company to be worth over a hundred million. Spend 10 million for a plane? They probably would be reluctant to do so.

“How is this first class cabin better than the normal cabins below?” Ya Xia couldn’t help but to ask.

“The size of the seats and the level of comfort” smiled Yang Hui.

“I don’t see how these seats are wide?” Ya Xia couldn’t help but to say.

“That’s because you haven’t sat in the seats in the normal cabins below!” laughed Yang Hui, “You have to keep in mind that there are barely any commercial planes on this world; the cost it takes to build and maintain each plane is disgustingly high. Because they’re so rare, they’ll want to squeeze in as many seats into the plane as possible! So even though you can sit in the normal cabins, you can’t stretch your legs”.

Ya Xia blinked twice.

Luo Feng shook his head. Double the price just for a larger seat! However, for the people at the top of the world, 10 million and 20 million really don’t have much of a difference.

RUMBLE~~

With a rumble, the plane finally lifted off. However, the round cabins were completely sealed and had no windows, so Luo Feng and the others couldn’t look outside.

A recently famous movie was playing in the middle of the cabin! It was quite realistic thanks to the 3D hologram.

“If you want to watch it, put on your headphones. If you don’t, then just rest. We’ll arrive at the world headquarters in around an hour” Yang Hui closed his eyes.

After around an hour and 20 minutes, the commercial plane landed at the Dojo of Limits world headquarters——Hong Ning headquarter city’s airport. Luo Feng and the others left the airport and got on a private car.

Inside a long cadillac.

Luo Feng and Ya Xia were looking out the window and were amazed. The entire headquarter city was extremely beautiful and the buildings were all based off of ancient China: pavillons could be seen everywhere.

“During the Grand Nirvana period, the head brought a bunch of people to this place and created a simple human base, allowing many people to escape here. As time flowed, this Hong Ning headquarter city grew bigger and bigger!” smiled Yang Hui, “Our Hong Nin headquarter city is located at western Asia, close to Europe. Because our head is here, this is the safest headquarter city in the entire world!”

“Many rich people and fighters come to our headquarter city every year. However, the head always controls the population of the headquarter city. As of now, the population of the entire

headquarter city is only around eight million" smiled Yang Hui, "If the head didn't regulate the population, it'll be normal for it to reach a value of 200 to 300 million. However, quality over quantity! Our Hong Nin headquarter city has the highest fighter birth rate in the entire world! As of now, there has never been an emperor monster that dared to mess around at our Hong Ning headquarter city" said Yang Hui confidently.

Luo Feng and Ya Xia's eyes were filled with astonishment.

The entire world has five great countries and 23 headquarter cities! And Hong controls a headquarter city and the Dojo of Limits. Add his own virtually invincible strength to the equation..... 'Hong' is indisputably the most powerful man on earth! #1 in strength and #1 in authority!

"We're at the training camp, let's get off" said Yang Hui, "This is the elite training camp. Ya Xia, you come and take a look too. If you keep working hard, you might have a chance to come here"

"Okay" Ya Xia had trouble suppressing his excitement.

Luo Feng and Ya Xia got off the car and went through the training camp's huge gate with Yang Hui.

Right after going through the gate, they saw a gigantic sculpture of a dragon. A gigantic black dragon that was around 50 meters tall was staring at Luo Feng; it's invisible aura instantly pressured Luo Feng, causing him to choke. Ya Xia's face was completely white on the side. Only after Yang Hui coughed lightly did Luo Feng and Ya

Xia wake up.

“Startled just by a sculpture?” laughed Yang Hui.

Luo Feng’s forehead was full of sweat; this dragon sculpture pressured him more than the steel armored dragon. On the scales of the 50 meter tall black dragon were tiny screens, which displayed a list of names.

NO.1 Reinatus Bridge (530321)

NO.2 Zhu Qiang (540601)

NO.3 Eben Perth (520316)

NO.182 Jaclyn Bernard (570319)

From the top of the dragon to the bottom, the scales displayed a full 182 names.

Yang Hui smiled on the side: “This is the ranking. As of now, there are 182 students in the elite training camp, which are the geniuses of geniuses from all over the world. Everyone is ranked based off their battle scores! Luo Feng, if you pass the B grade exam, you better work hard and raise your ranking”

Chapter 13: B Grade Exam

“Ranking?” Luo Feng looked at the list of names on the huge black dragon’s scales and couldn’t help but to ask, “Ranking for what?”

Yang Hui laughed as he looked at Luo Feng: “You think you can just relax once you enter the elite training camp and just ride your way to the wargod rank? What a joke! The environment in the elite training camp is much more competitive than anywhere else. The rankings determine how much stuff you can get! For example, who gets to use one of the unique treasures from the archaeological ruins? The higher your ranking, the more resources you receive! And as for the people who are ranked at the bottom three, if they get ranked there for over three times, they’re disqualified”

Luo Feng was astonished, since he didn’t know that it was possible to get disqualified from the elite training camp.

“Well, stop asking questions. Once you pass the B grade exam, you’ll learn all the rules. If you don’t pass the B grade exam, then there’s no point in knowing the answers to your questions” Yang Hui looked up at the huge dragon sculpture, “Haven’t you guys realized why this dragon sculpture is special?”

“Aura” said Ya Xia.

“Spirit” said Luo Feng.

Both of them were stunned by the dragon sculpture. When they

looked into the eyes of the sculpture, they felt like they were being stared at by a monster even more horrifying than a high level horde leader level steel armored dragon; it caused fear from the bottom of their hearts! Luo Feng wasn't even this terrified when he saw the steel armored dragon.

"This was a real SS emperor level monster, a black dragon born inside a volcano! After the head slayed it, he left its two eyes inside this dragon sculpture"

"The materials making up this dragon sculpture are quite expensive. Of course, the most expensive thing in this sculpture is its eyes, since they're the real eyes of a black dragon!"

"The dragon's eyes were designed to glare at the entrance of the gate, so once someone enters the gate, they'll be stunned after looking into the eyes of the dragon sculpture" laughed Yang Hui proudly, "Just this pair of dragon eyes is already worth over 10 billion!"

Luo Feng and Ya Xia exchanged glances. Holy shit, they actually used the eyes of a black dragon in a decorative sculpture! Damn!

"Come with me, remember, don't run around" commanded Yang Hui.

"Yes" Luo Feng and Ya Xia carried their backpacks as they followed Yang Hui.

Even though it's called a training camp, it was extremely beautiful and dreamy; it gave one the feeling that they have arrived at an ancient palace. There were precious flowers and trees everywhere and even flowing rivers and streams. After a few main palaces, detailed pavilion after pavilion could be seen all around. Sometimes you could see dojo uniform wearing young people walking out of the pavilions. In the group of young people were males and females and white, black, and yellow people.

"Look, those young people far away are all officials members of the elite training camp" Yang Hui pointed at the huge nine story tower in the exact middle of the training camp, "Even though there are only nine floors in that tower-shaped buildings, its height is comparable to a regular 20 story building's height. All the students are headed there. That tower-shaped building is called the 'Nine Grand Floors'!"

Yang Hui smiled: "The Nine Grand Floors is where all the students learn and train. The special training rooms are in there too! In the training camp, the students are always in there except when they sleep"

Luo Feng and Ya Xia were extremely well-mannered as they walked in the training camp, since they weren't students here. Each and every single student in the elite training camp, with Luo Feng's judgment, had a completely different aura compared to the regular fighters outside. This was where all the demonic geniuses of the world gathered.

"A lot of these 182 students graduate every year! So every year, we accept——43 people" Yang Hui smiled as he walked, "However,

2/3 of these people come from our Dojo of Limits' basics training camp. Only 1/3 comes from the other parts of the world"

Luo Feng froze.

No wonder————

Around 30 people are accepted every year and 2/3 of them come from the basics training camp. That means only around 10 spots are left.

"So, Ya Xia, after you enter the basics training camp, you still have hope of entering the 'elite training camp'. However, the number of students in the basics training camp is way higher than the number in the elite training camp. Because of this, the competition for the spots are intense. You better work hard in the future" said Yang Hui as he looked at Ya Xia.

"Understood" Ya Xia's eyes were shining.

The limit in the basics training camp is three years, while it's five years in the elite training camp!

"Ya Xia, stay here first. Don't run around. I'll bring Luo Feng in there to deal with his housing" said Yang Hui.

A two story building. Even the furniture here was antique.

“Since our head is Chinese, he loves the style of ancient China. Because of that, he built Hong Ning headquarter city based off of that style. This training camp especially, since even the furniture is like that. So while you’re here, you won’t have any couches or television” smiled Yang Hui, “Thankfully, the head is merciful and allows everyone to bring a notebook”

Luo Feng was speechless. There was no television, washing machine, etc. Thankfully, there were electronic plugs.

“You just rest well here. If you want to eat something, just make a call and someone will bring you food” said Yang Hui, “You better not run around today. Tomorrow at noon, I’ll bring you to the Nine Grand Floors to take the B grade exam. If you pass, you’ll become an official member of the elite training camp. If you fail, you’ll go to the basics training camp”

Luo Feng nodded: “Understood”

Yang Hui soon left after that.

Luo Feng was the only one left in the quiet room. He went to the second floor’s study room and left his backpack there. Afterwards, he went to the balcony and looked at the entire camp.

“This is the world’s best training camp? It’s quite quiet here” Luo Feng’s hands supported his body against the wooden pole of the balcony as he appreciated the view of the camp.

Not too far away was a flowing stream. From there carried a voice in standard Chinese, “Hey, from China?”

Luo Feng turned his head and looked down. He saw a young, white dojo uniform wearing yellow skinned man. His eyebrows were thick and his eyes were big. He had a steel spear in his hands as he smiled.

“Yea” responded Luo Feng.

“I’m Tian Qiong” smiled the yellow skinned young man as he greeted, “From Northeast headquarter city”

“I’m Luo Feng, from Jiang-Nan headquarter city” smiled Luo Feng.

The person named Tian Qiong smiled: “Since you’re living here, I assume you’re going to take the entrance exam? Work hard! There are quite a few Chinese here..... once you enter the camp, we can all meet up” after saying that, this Tian Qiong headed towards the Nine Grand Floors with his spear in hand. As he walked, he occasionally waved his spear around.

PU! The ear piercing sound from the thrusting spear changed the Luo Feng’s face, who was on the balcony: “This person’s spear technique is way better than Zhang Ke’s!”

Luo Feng’s judgment abilities are extremely great right now. When that person named Tian Qiong thrusted his spear, it felt like

all the air surrounding him gathered on the tip of his spear.

"Even though I named my blade technique, 'Thunderbolt', I've barely touched the start of it. Compared to him, I'm way off" Luo Feng had no pride left at all.

Just a random student's spear technique was clearer superior to his blade technique!

Luo Feng realized——

Only the geniuses of geniuses could enter this training camp! Whether they competed for the spots after accepting three years of training and graduating from the basics training camp or were accepted from every part of the world, none of them weren't outstanding!

"I have to stand my ground in this elite training camp, or else I won't even have the right to stand up against the two wargods Vulture and Scorpion!"

"Of course, I have to pass the B grade exam first"

After training his genetic energy until late into the night, Luo Feng enjoyed a nice rest. Even though he hasn't officially entered the training camp yet, the ranking on the black dragon sculpture and the random thrusts from that 'Tian Qiong' from before made Luo Feng realize: his future in the elite training camp will be extremely competitive.

※※

11 AM. Luo Feng had a luxurious lunch. Only until 11:30 AM did wargod Yang Hui appear.

“The weather’s not so good today. It’s almost noon and yet the sky’s already dark. Looks like we’ll have a storm soon” Yang Hui walked in and laughed as he looked at the table, “Not bad, you have quite the appetite. If you’re ready, then follow me to the Nine Grand Floors”

“Do I need to bring anything? Weapons? Battle uniform?” asked Luo Feng.

“No, just come with me with nothing in hand” said Yang Hui.

Luo Feng headed towards the Nine Grand Floors with Yang Hui!

Each story in the Nine Grand Floors was around six meters high. Since the width of the Nine Grand Floors was over 130 meters, it was definitely a gigantic tower. Even though the building seemed quite ancient from the outside, it was extremely technological in the inside. The floors were made out of sturdy alloys. Sonic booms and yells could easily be heard.

“Go, to the ninth floor” Yang Hui and Luo Feng entered the elevator.

The elevator was extremely fast. “DING!”

The doors of the elevator opened and revealed the top floor of the Nine Grand Floors. The ninth floor was a spacious lobby. In the lobby were a few cushions where young men and women chatted in English, French, or even Chinese. When Luo Feng came here, quite a few people turned their heads towards him.

“Bro, Chinese?”

“Chinese” Luo Feng nodded.

“Good luck! Once you enter the camp, we’ll have another Chinese member” laughed a bald young man.

“Dream on” an accented phrase of Chinese came out of a black girl’s mouth. There was a butterfly tattoo on the black girl’s face and she sneered as she glanced at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng followed wargod Yang Hui’s lead and entered the interior of the lobby. There was a passageway here with large rooms on both sides. Soon enough, Luo Feng was brought to the innermost room. The room wasn’t big and was a bit dim.

“PA!” The lights were turned on. There were only two sofas in the room, and each sofa had a faint blue helmet on them.

“Our human scientists worked quite hard to create these two helmets. These two helmets mimicked a brain computer interface

linked to a virtual space machine” said Yang Hui as he pointed towards the helmets, “We could only create these simple brain computer interfaces. As for the actual machine that creates the virtual space, that ancient thing has been sleeping underground for who knows how many years”

Luo Feng froze as he stared at this helmet: “Virtual space?”

Too crazy.

Something that only exists in sci-fi. According to what Yang Hui said, humans as of now have only been able to create the ‘brain computer interfaces’. As for the actual machine that creates the virtual space, humans haven’t been able to create that at all.

“We’re still using that same old machine underground. Human scientists don’t understand that machine at all, so don’t even mention creating it” said Yang Hui shook his head.

“Okay, once you wear that, you’ll enter an extremely realistic virtual space. You could say that it’s exactly the same as real life” said Yang Hui, “After you enter the virtual space, we’ll let you enter the ‘Tower of Trials’ to take the B grade exam!”

Chapter 14: Tower of Trials

“Do I, wear it?” Luo Feng nervously picked up one of the faint blue helmets and looked at Yang Hui with a confused look, “Mr. Yang, do I just wear it directly like this?”

“Copy me!” laughed Yang Hui and then lay down on the sofa, “You sit on the sofa too”

Luo Feng obediently lay on the sofa. The sofa was extremely comfortable and was just right for one person to lay on it.

Yang Hui said seriously: “When you put on the helmet later, your mind will enter the virtual space. So, don’t panic. Here, put on the helmet!” under Yang Hui’s watch, Luo Feng took in a deep breath and put the helmet on.

Virtual space? It was described in sci-fi novels, but this was his first time experiencing it.

“Eh?” the instant Luo Feng put on his helmet, he felt like his brain paused.

Yang Hui watched Luo Feng put on his helmet and then smiled as he put on his.

※※

This was an infinite silver colored place.

Two shadows, one in front of the other, appeared on the ground. They were precisely Luo Feng and Yang Hui.

“How amazing, this is virtual space?” Luo Feng looked around. The sky of the virtual space was the starry universe with millions of shining stars, causing a dreamy light to reflect off of the entire silver ground.

“This silver ground? It’s as smooth as a mirror” Luo Feng bent down with surprisement and knocked against the ground with his fingers. It let off a ‘CLANG CLANG’ sound like a type of metal.

“Luo Feng, this is the tower of trial’s virtual space. The sky is filled with stars and the ground is completely silver. The material making up the ground is similar to an alloy!” Yang Hui smiled as he pointed into the distance, “And in this entire silver space, the only building you can see is that seven story tower of trials! Which is where you’ll be taking your exam”

Indeed, after looking in each direction.

There was only one building! It was a huge tower-shaped building that was around 300 to 400 meters tall. The entire tower had engravings of various monsters on the surface of it, which spiralled around the entire tower. The naked eye could barely distinguish the seven floors of the tower.

“I take the B grade exam there?” with a thought of his heart, Luo Feng tried using his spiritual force.

How come there’s no spiritual force?

He couldn’t feel even the slightest bit of his spiritual force.

“Not good” Luo Feng jumped twice and threw some punches and kicks, “My body is kind of… off”

“Mr. Yang, how come my body feels different from before?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to ask.

Yang Hui laughed loudly and pointed towards the sky and then the ground: “Where is this? Virtual space! Only our minds have entered this area, which is why weapons and other things can’t come here”

“Only our minds entered?” Luo Feng was stunned and thought to himself, “In other words, nothing other than our minds can enter here. My spiritual force didn’t come here too….. this is a problem. Without my spiritual force, I only have a portion of my strength. I wonder if I can pass this B grade exam?”

Yang Hui continued to speak: “Luo Feng, no matter who it is, only their minds enter the virtual space! And the virtual space constructs a virtual body for us. All our body fitness levels are identical” said Yang Hui.

“Identical?” Luo Feng was astonished.

“Yeah, whether a wargod, an existence that surpasses the wargod, a regular fighter, or even a regular person, once their mind enters this area, they’ll all have the same body fitness level. Fist strength of 10,000 KG, speed of 150 m/s, and reaction speed of beginner level warlord level superior”

Luo Feng froze.

Everyone has exactly the same body fitness level in this virtual space?

“Since everyone’s body fitness level is the same in this virtual space, even the head, Hong, has this body too. This way, we can easily test a person’s true fighting ability” Yang Hui looked at Luo Feng, “Now, come with me to the tower of trials!”

What can he do now?

Everyone’s equal in this virtual space. No matter how powerful you are in the real world, everyone is the same here.

The tower of trials was absolutely gigantic.

Luo Feng and Yang Hui stood at the entrance like two ants.

“Look at that pillar” Yang Hui pointed towards a black pillar to

the left of the main entrance of the tower of trials. An engraving started to appear on this black pillar——

Name: Luo Feng

Gender: Male

Identity: Elite training camp prospective student

Tower of Trials level: 1

Luo Feng turned his head to the black pillar on the right of the main entrance. An engraving started to appear on this pillar too——

Name: Yang Hui

Gender: Male

Identity: Wargod tower of trials

Level: 3.2

Luo Feng was astonished, his level was 1 and wargod Yang Hui's was 32. What's the significance of this tower of trials level?

"Luo Feng, are you thinking about the tower of trials level?"

smiled Yang Hui, “If anyone with this body enters the tower, you start going through the floors. After you pass the first floor, you enter the second floor. At that time, your level will be 2.0. When you enter the third floor, your level will be 3.0. During the third floor, your level could be 3.1, 3.2, 3.3, etc. Since you haven’t entered the tower of trials yet, you’re just at level 1, which means that you never did anything in the tower of trials yet”

Luo Feng froze.

And was stunned. Wargod Yang Hui was so old, so he must have plenty of battle experience. Who could’ve thought that he only entered the third floor!

“There are seven floors in total! As of now, nobody has entered the seventh floor!” Yang Hui smiled as he looked at Luo Feng.

“Not even one?” Luo Feng was stunned.

What about the world’s strongest fighter Hong? And the second strongest fighter Thunder God?

“Yeah, not even one. The world’s strongest fighter ‘Hong’ can enter the sixth floor, which is the world record” Yang Hui shook his head as he sighed, “This is the difference. Even though I’m using the same body as the head, I can only get to the third floor while the head can get to the sixth!”

Luo Feng raised his head and looked at this seven story tower of

trials.

No fighter on earth can reach the seventh floor.

Suddenly—— “Luo Feng, please select your battle uniform and weapon. After selecting, enter the tower of trials and accept the B grade exam within a minute!”

The electronic sound echoed around the entire virtual space.

All types of battle uniforms and weapons appeared in front of Luo feng. He didn’t have much time, so he immediately picked a battle uniform that fit his size, a ghost blade, and a hexagonal shield. Afterwards, the same battle uniform, ghost blade, and hexagonal shield dropped onto the floor. Luo Feng quickly put them on.

His sprinting speed could reach 150 m/s, and he was also super fast at equipping his gear.

Within 10 seconds, like a flash, he was finished equipping.

“Luo Feng, I’ll pray for your success” smiled Yang Hui, “This B grade exam is the difficulty level of intermediate in the tower of trial’s first floor. Even though it’s only the first floor, a few dozen of the official members of the elite training camp are still stuck there!”

“Okay” Luo Feng took in a deep breath and directly walked

towards the dark entrance! As if the space around him transformed, Luo Feng entered a boundless grassy plain.

"Luo Feng" an electronic voice rang around the plains, "The B grade exam is to kill a horde of 100 low level commander level raging bulls within 30 minutes! If you die, then you fail! If the kill count hasn't reached 100 within 30 minutes, you also fail! This is your first time entering the tower of trials, so you have 5 minutes to prepare"

Luo Feng's face changed dramatically.

"100 raging bulls? And all low level commander level?" Luo Feng was completely frightened.

Even though a regular monster horde is quite scary, most of the horde is made up of soldier level monsters; they contain very few commander level monsters.

Who would've known that you would have to face 100 raging bulls in the B grade exam, and all of them are low level commander level! Since they're all low level commander level... compared to his fitness level, any one of the raging bulls is around equal in speed and power. 100 monsters that are equal to Luo Feng and all charging at Luo Feng! And within 30 minutes, Luo Feng has to kill all 100 by himself?

"Messed up!"

“The first floor is so messed up. No wonder a few dozen out of the 182 members are still stuck here!” it wasn’t hard for Luo Feng to imagine how messed up the second floor, third floor, fourth floor, etc. would be. It’s quite incredible that ‘Hong’ reached the sixth floor using the exact same body he was using.

“My real life body isn’t too different from this virtual body, so I can get used to it quickly” Luo Feng moved around, swiftly dodged, jumped, and swung his ghost blade around to get used to this body.

Five minutes quickly passed!

“B grade exam, begin!” the electronic voice rang around the plains like thunder. At the same time, tons of burly cow type monsters that were three meters tall appeared 100 meters away. These are the cow type monsters that are famous for forming hordes——raging bulls! They had long hair, curved, sharp horns, and bloodshot eyes.

“MOO”

All 100 raging bulls had a faint red color on their horns, as if there was blood on them. If these sharp horns hit Luo Feng, even if they don’t rip apart his battle uniform, all of his internal organs and bones will be crushed. Every single one of them is threatening!

MOO….MOO…

Along with the mooing sounds that rang across the grassy plains,

all 100 low level commander level raging bulls trampled the grass below with all their hooves and charged at Luo Feng while snorting out air! The entire grassy plain started shaking.

"Other than the time at family mart, I've never faced so many low level commander level monsters before" Luo Feng himself wasn't confident. No wonder this B grade exam was used to test the geniuses of geniuses of the world..... it's so difficult it's scary. If he had his spiritual force then he would be confident. But without his spiritual force?

"I can only go for it! A couple dozen people are still stuck on the first floor, which means over 100 people have passed it. I don't believe that I won't be able to pass this!" Luo Feng clenched his teeth. Since he's already in this situation, what else can he do?

Give it everything he has!

100 raging bulls that were larger than tanks were charging.

RUMBLE~~ the ground shook.

The low level commander level raging bulls charged past the 100 meter distance with their speed that was beyond 100 m/s. Within a blink of an eye, fell into the sea-like horde!

Chapter 15: Brand New Future

Luo Feng stayed completely still as the horde of raging bulls charged at him. With his hexagonal shield in one hand and his ghost blade in the other, he calmly remained in position.

"RUMBLE~" the air the raging bulls snorted out emanated around. The first raging bull in front of the horde finally reached Luo Feng..... Luo Feng, who has been through who knows how many battles against monster hordes, had tons of experience. A nice step to the side and a flash of his ghost blade! 《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》 stage three, explosion of 2.1x the original force! Blood bursted out from the neck of the first raging bull.

"One!" Luo Feng's eyes were ice cold and he was as calm as calm could be.

He stood directly in front of the monster horde and never messed up when the monsters tried to surround him!

"These raging bulls are quite large, larger than the average iron fur boar. They're like a tank! Since they're so huge, only two or three can attack me at the same time" Luo Feng was clear: he had to use the bodies of these raging bulls to block the other ones. He had to rotate around in the spaces available!

Time passed second by second.

Luo Feng's intermediate level technique was definitely almost perfect. He was able to accurately dodge around in the middle of

the horde of raging bulls. Thankfully, Luo Feng has tons of experience with fighting in the middle of monster hordes. If he didn't have any experience, it'll be quite troublesome to deal with 100 low level commander level raging bulls.

Other than that, Luo Feng's《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》has reached the third stage, giving him the ability to kill a raging bull in one attack!

31, 32, 33 – the kill count kept rising. The raging bulls jumped, leaped, and charged straight. Like a leaf, Luo Feng barely dodged all the attacks.

"Not good!"

One of the sharp horns grazed his face. At the same time, a raging bull corpse behind Luo Feng was also violently smashed into by the charging raging bull. Instantly, Luo Feng's area of retreat was blocked off and, because of this mistake, the raging bulls from in front, behind, and above instantly surrounded Luo Feng! He's in a nearly hopeless situation!

PENG!

In an instant, Luo Feng, like a raging bull, charged with the hexagonal shield on his left arm and smashed into a raging bull that was coming from the left.

RUMBLE~

The force of impact numbed Luo Feng's left arm and his body couldn't help but to step back a few times as he spit out a mouthful of fresh blood. As he stepped back, Luo Feng's steps were distanced oddly and, with a sudden burst of acceleration, the cold light from his blade flashed.

CHING!

Like lightning, the blade drew across the hooves of one of the raging bulls charging from the air! After slashing the hoof off, it started to fall to the ground. At the same time, Luo Feng charged forward like lightning and instantly smashed the back of the ghost blade against the falling hoof. Like a cannon, the hoof flew into one of the raging bulls charging from behind!

An extremely chaotic struggle!

Keep in mind that all the raging bulls were charging at speeds of over 100 m/s. In an area less than 10 m^2 and within 0.8 seconds, Luo Feng damaged three raging bulls and killed five of them. Even though he was heavily injured as a result, he was barely able to survive the dangerous situation.

"Even though a single strike from my blade is extremely powerful, I can't deal with groups!" in the past, Luo Feng always strived for as much power as possible in a single strike. However, the more powerful a strike becomes, the longer it takes to withdraw the blade.

If Luo Feng is able to strike 10 times within a blink of an eye and kill all the surrounding raging bulls, then he wouldn't even need to rely on his almost perfect intermediate level technique to dodge around; he can easily slaughter all the raging bulls! However, the precision required to attack 10 raging bulls charging at over 100 m/s within a blink of an eye was just too high.

CHI! Luo Feng didn't dare to relax. Actually, ever since the 1.2 seconds he used to escape the #003 city's family mart, he has had a few more experiences of the 'perfect level' technique.

Using the entire environment to assist you!

Man and environment come together as one!

"Just like this!" Since every raging bull was low level commander level, this pressure caused Luo Feng to perceive the surrounding environment as a single entity after the 70th kill. With this, Luo Feng had a clear sense of all the surrounding raging bull corpses and even the grass around him.

No need for intense, extreme use of the brain. Follow your instincts to profoundly use every single raging bull's corpse to help you.

It has never been so relaxing! PU! PU! PU! The heads of the bulls flew up one by one; fresh blood sprayed around.

"Used 21 minutes and 18 seconds to kill all 100 raging bulls. B

grade exam, you pass! Congratulations, student Luo Feng" as if a higher entity, the electronic sound rang across the entire grassy plains.

Only until now did Luo Feng wake up from his previous state and couldn't help but to laugh bitterly: "How come there weren't more raging bulls when I needed them" Luo Feng's《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》includes the technique《Liu Guang》, so he clearly understood.....

Just how difficult it was to go from the intermediate level to perfect level! In the past, Luo Feng used his spiritual force to sense his surroundings. With luck, he would get a feel of the perfect level. However, he didn't have any spiritual force in this virtual space and this monster horde, unlike real life, was made out of commander level monsters. Each and every single one of these monsters were threatening to Luo Feng, so he was pushed to his absolute limits!

He unknowingly stepped into the state of the 'Perfect level' technique and managed to maintain it for such a long time. Thanks to this, it'll be easier for him to truly advance to the perfect level in the future. Sadly, Luo Feng was only given the chance to maintain it for a short duration, since it took him less than 5 minutes to kill the final 30 raging bulls. When the exam ended, Luo Feng came out of that state.

"Student Luo Feng, you will automatically leave the virtual space in five seconds. 5, 4, 3, 2, 1....."

※※

Elite training camp, ninth floor of the Nine Grand Floors

When Yang Hui and Luo Feng happily chatted as they left the training room, all sorts of genius fighters from all over the world looked towards them with surprisement in the lobby. One of the yellow skinned youth even asked: “Instructor, did he pass the exam?”

“He passed” smiled Yang Hui, “I’ll go finish the procedures. I’ll probably be done at around 1 PM. You guys can go train now”

Afterwards, every single person in the lobby either chatted with Luo Feng or discussed with each other; they were all extremely enthusiastic.

Luo Feng and Yang Hui left the Nine Grand Floors with umbrellas in their hands, since the sky was densely packed with clouds and rain was pouring.

“Even though there are only around 160 students here, all five countries, each family of the HR alliance, etc. are connected” said Yang Hui, “Luo Feng, if you aren’t disqualified from the elite training camp, then your future will surely be bright!”

“While in the training camp, extraordinary organizations, governments, and the families of the HR alliance will attempt to make you work for them..... money, women, all sorts of attractions will be used. However, you must keep in mind that the most important thing is your own strength!”

“Try to ignore those temptations. You only have one goal——”

“To raise your rank!”

“Including you, there are 183 students. Each of these students are extraordinary geniuses. You have to step over them and put yourself in a higher position!” said Yang Hui seriously.

Luo Feng nodded.

“Which numbers are you preparing to choose for your ID?” asked Yang Hui, “Today is March 29th, so you’ll officially enroll in the training camp on April 1st..... so, the first four numbers of your ID must be 5704. As for the last two digits, you can pick them since you’re the only person enrolling into the camp in April”

Luo Feng suddenly realized what those numbers next to the names on the black dragon’s scales represented.

The first name on the ranking he saw last time was—— NO.1 Reinatus Bridge (530321). Looks like this person joined the training camp on March of 2053. As of now, he’s been in camp for a whole four years.

“What two numbers are you going to pick?” asked Yang Hui.

“Uh..... 03!” answered Luo Feng.

The trouble caused by the dragon egg from #003 city and the price of 30 billion for an elixir of life made Luo Feng think that he had quite the affinity to the number 3.

“Okay” nodded Yang Hui, “Your student ID will be 570403. With that, the rest of the procedures will be completed quickly”

The 183rd name, NO. 183 Luo Feng (570403), appeared on the ranking on the sculpture of the black dragon in the world’s best training camp. The news of this instantly spread to all five countries and every single headquarter city. The armies of the government, the core nine families of the HR alliance, and dozens of other important families all received this news. On that day, all of these organizations received Luo Feng’s information! Everything from where he was born, how he lived in a cheap rented apartment.....

his family, etc. Everything was recorded.

※※

China, Kyoto headquarter city, an underground building.

Floor B3.

An extremely elegantly decorated office room. A skinny man wearing a loose dojo uniform lightly tapped the table with one hand and flipped through documents containing Luo Feng’s

information with the other.

“Contact the divisions in Jiang-Nan headquarter city and send people to watch Luo Feng’s family at all times. First, make sure that Luo Feng’s family never leaves Jiang-Nan headquarter city. Second, ensure Luo Feng’s family’s safety”

“I’ll never accept something like last time happening again!”

There was a mole on the chin of this skinny man and his eyes were gloomy and cold.

“Yes”

All the huge organizations, wealthy families, armies of the governments, etc. received all sorts of information about Luo Feng who just entered the elite training camp! At the same time, as director of the HR alliance in China, Venina※Paulinus naturally received this information too.

※※

Jiang-Nan mountain water sector, a villa on the top of marvelous mountain.

“Venina, isn’t this Luo Feng one of our many suspects?” as he flipped through the documents, Vulture Li Yao instantly thought about the inconspicuous Luo Feng from the list of suspects.

“Yeah, when Wei died, Luo Feng was quite close to him” Venina shook her head, “However, he’s only 19 this year and is only a beginner level warlord. Our family is also trying to figure out a way to bring this Luo Feng under their name to work for us”

“How did he enter the elite training camp. Is it because he’s a spirit reader?” Li Yao’s cold eyes flashed.

“No, you’ll see after reading” Venina shook her head, “Yao, I think you’re becoming too sensitive after trying to find the suspect after all this time. Now you suspect almost everyone”

Chapter 16: Jiang-Nan Pagoda

“DRIP DRIP!” The rain drops dropped against the umbrella like flying ants.

Luo Feng held his umbrella as he walked by Yang Hui’s side. After walking through a manmade bridge, they arrived at a building complex. Yang Hui pointed not too far away: “Luo Feng, the one over there is Jiang-Nan pagoda. Jiang-Nan pagoda already has two students now. You will be the third student of Jiang-Nan pagoda”

“Jiang-Nan pagoda?” Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat and couldn’t help but to ask, “Instructor, how come it has the same name as Jiang-Nan headquarter city?”

Since he became an official student of the training camp, Yang Hui is now one of his instructors in the training camp.

Naturally, he’ll call Yang Hui, ‘Instructor’.

“Haha, they’re all based off the names of the headquarter cities. Jiang-Nan pagoda has two students living there, and they’re both from Jiang-Nan headquarter city. However, they all came before you” Yang Hui suddenly lowered his voice and mysteriously said, “I’ll tell you something. Right now, one of the two students living in Jiang-Nan pagoda is named Shi Jiang! He’s extremely powerful; even I don’t think I can beat him. If you improve your relationship with him, it’ll benefit you in the long run”

“Instructor, you are not even confident of beating him?” Luo Feng was astonished.

Yang Hui is an intermediate level wargod!

“Yea” nodded Yang Hui, “This Shi Jiang is within the ranking’s top five. Many students in this elite training camp already have wargod level strength. However, they just won’t accept the title of wargod! This way, they can continue to stay in the training camp. Actually, all top 30 students in the training camp virtually have wargod level strength”

Luo Feng blinked, all top 30 students have wargod level strength?

This is insane.

All of them are just faking their strength. Even though they can graduate, they purposefully stay in the camp to finish their five years.

“The top five students are all extremely messed up!” said Yang Hui deeply, “The elites from all over the world are extremely competitive, and those that can keep themselves in the top five..... When this Shi Jiang graduates, he’ll receive the highest amount of respect no matter where he goes!”

“For example, he can easily become the chairman of Jiang-Nan city’s Dojo of Limits if he wants to” said Yang Hui.

Luo Feng froze.

The chairman of Jiang-Nan city's Dojo of Limits? This is the head of Jiang-Nan city's Big Four!

"After his strength increases in a few years, it won't be impossible for him to become an 'examiner' of our Dojo of Limits" Yang Hui sighed. Even though the difference between his strength and that Shi Jiang's strength isn't too large, Yang Hui is already around 50 years old. Shi Jiang, on the other hand, is only around 20 years old! That person's future is limitless.

While still in shock, Luo Feng arrived at Jiang-Nan pagoda.

Jiang-Nan pagoda's courtyard was only around a few dozen m^2. The walls were white and had black tiles. There was even the engraving of a dragon on the wall.

After opening the gate.

There were three buildings within Jiang-Nan pagoda. When Luo Feng and Yang Hui walked into the courtyard, it was completely silent. Yang Hui directly yelled: "Shi Jiang, Zhao Ruo!"

A short haired girl wearing a large, loose nightgown was standing on the balcony of the second floor on the building to the left. A shadow jumped down from the building directly in front of them, which appeared to be a black dojo uniform wearing youth with an umbrella in hand.

Luo Feng closely examined this youth who was heartily praised by Yang Hui.

This youth was slightly taller than Luo Feng; around 1.7 meters tall. Even though he's kind of short overall, he seemed quite buff, as if his entire body was forged out of steel. His eyes were reserved, but the occasional flash of them could easily scare people.

"He is Shi Jiang" Luo Feng silently noted.

"A new student came?" a happy voice came down from above. Zhao Ruo held her umbrella as she happily looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked at his senior. This senior named 'Zhao Ruo' had short hair and was quite small. The only thing wrong with her was that her skin was kind of black and her eyes were too small, causing her to fall short of a beautiful woman.

"His name is Luo Feng. From now on, he'll be living with you guys in Jiang-Nan pagoda" said Yang Hui, "Shi Jiang, Zhao Ruo, both of you are his seniors. Luo Feng just arrived, so take care of him"

"No worries, leave it to me" Zhao Ruo thumped her chest in confidence, "With me here, he won't be in trouble"

"Okay, then I'll go first" laughed Yang Hui as he patted Luo Feng's shoulder. After that, he directly left.

※※

There were three buildings in total at Jiang-Nan pagoda. The one in the center was where Shi Jiang lived. The one to the left, the western side, was where Zhao Ruo lived. Naturally, Luo Feng will live in the building to the east.

“Luo Feng, sit, sit” Zhao Ruo was extremely passionate. Right now, the three of them were sitting in the lobby.

“I came here on year 55 while senior Shi Jiang came on year 53. Both of us came way earlier than you” smiled Zhao Ruo.

Shi Jiang also let out a smile on the side: “Man, 53, 55, 57. All three of us are exactly two years apart. Not only that, but we’re all from Jiang-Nan city. What a coincidence!”

Right when Shi Jiang spoke, Luo Feng felt that his voice was heavy and that he was a calm person overall.

“I’m from Jiang-Nan city’s Su city while senior Shi Jiang is from the main city sector. What about you, Luo Feng?” asked Zhao Ruo.

“From Yang Zhou city” said Luo Feng.

Shi Jiang laughed in surprise: “My grandfather is in Yang Zhou city!”

The three of them all came from Jiang-Nan city. However, as for Shi Jiang and Zhao Ruo, one of them came to the ‘elite training camp’ after competing in the ‘basics training camp’ while the other was an elite in the government’s army and was sent here. Only Luo Feng was chosen as a regular fighter.

“Luo Feng, when you get to your room later, open the notebook provided to you by the training camp” notified Shi Jiang, “Inside the notebook is a ‘Student Notice’ PDF. Read that carefully”

“Yea, that thingy is really important” followed Zhao Ruo.

“The most important thing is your score!” reminded Zhao Ruo, “In the training camp, your ranking is the most important thing! You probably saw that ‘black dragon ranking’ in the entrance right”

“I saw it” nodded Luo Feng.

There seemed to be only one Chinese person in the top three.

“The higher your score is, the higher your rank will be in the black dragon ranking! From the 1st to the 28th of every month is the time to increase your score. The 29th of every month is the day where the ranking is reorganized! Next month, everyone’s score is reset to zero. At that time, everyone works hard for raise their score again to raise their ranking” explained Zhao Ruo.

Luo Feng froze.

This ranking is reset every month!

“Seniors, where does this score come from?” asked Luo Feng.

“Points come from ‘battle points’ multiplied by the ‘battle ability amplifier'” explained Zhao Ruo, “For example, you’re going to start raising your score in April. If your total battle points from April 1st——28th is 2,000 and your battle ability amplifier is 1.8, then your score will be 2,000 x 1.8, which is 3,600! After that, the ranking is organized based on highest to lowest battle score”

The more Luo Feng listened the more confused he became.

What are these battle points and battle ability amplifier?

“Battle points are earned from hunting monsters! As for the detailed situation, read the ‘Student Notice’ PDF later and you’ll know” explained Zhao Ruo, “As for the ‘battle ability amplifier’, you earn that from the virtual space. Again, you’ll understand the details after reading the student notice.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to blink in helplessness.

He has to figure out everything himself from the student notice.....

“Luo Feng!” Shi Jiang finally spoke.

“Senior” Luo Feng looked towards Shi Jiang.

“Remember, if you want to improve faster, you have to work hard to raise your ranking every month. The higher the better” said Shi Jiang seriously, “This ranking is related to how many resources you’ll receive. Even wargods are envious of these resources, which is also why many wargod students are still staying here”

Zhao Ruo grinned on the side: “For example, our senior Shi Jiang”

Shi Jiang was speechless.

Zhao Ruo giggled. Luo Feng laughed too.

※※

Jiang-Nan pagoda, Luo Feng’s room.

Not too long after turning on his notebook, Luo Feng sat on his chair while carefully reading the ‘student notice’.

“Training room? Provoking room? Gravity room? All three of these training rooms were made out of discoveries from the archaeological ruins”

With this, Luo Feng discovered more and more about the elite training camp. There are tons of equipment available, but of course, the most valuable equipment are the archaeological ones.

And the most important thing in the training camp is the——score ranking! From high to low, this affects many things. For example, the ‘gravity room’ made out of archaeological discoveries is way more effective than the copied gravity rooms the earth currently has. However.....there’s only one ‘training room’ of this type in the entire camp. Who gets to use it? This depends on the ranking.

The higher your rank, the longer you get to use it! And this is just one point!

“If you collectively stay in 1st place nine times, you will receive one portion of dragon blood worth 80 billion and can pick any three complete instruction manuals. You can also become a direct pupil of ‘Hong’ or ‘Thunder God'”

“If you collectively stay in 1st place six times, you will receive one drop of chrysoprase worth 30 billion and can pick any one complete instruction manual. You can also receive one private lesson from either ‘Hong’ or ‘Thunder God'”

Luo Feng was dumbfounded as he read what was described in the PDF file.

Dragon blood? Become Hong or Thunder God’s pupil? And the

pupil decides his teacher?

Any three complete instruction manuals?

Keep in mind that the price for an ultimate instruction manual is extremely high.

“Messed up, messed up. But all these rewards are for the person in first place, and you have to stay in first place multiple times” Luo Feng continued to read.

“Fist strength level 6, eligible to receive a portion of dragon blood worth 80 billion, SS battle uniform set, full weapon set.....”

“Fist strength level 5, eligible to receive.....”

Luo Feng read the rewards and was completely astonished.

“Tower of trials floor 5, eligible to receive the title of ‘investigator’ of the Dojo of Limits, a portion of dragon blood worth 80 billion, SS battle uniform set, full weapon set, any three complete instruction manuals, one set of Black God from the archaeological ruins”

Clearly, the tower of trials gave the highest rewards.

Investigator! Normally, that’s an existence that surpasses the wargod level. And a set of ‘Black God’ from the archaeological

ruins? What's that thing?

Luo Feng's heart couldn't help but to beat faster. However, once he thought about the scene from the B grade exam just now, he felt immense pressure.

He was only taking a test on the first floor and had to deal with 100 low level commander level raging bulls! And that's probably not even the hardest thing on the first floor.

Above that are the second, third, fourth.... floors.

Even the wargod 'Yang Hui', who has plenty of experience, can only barge into the third floor! And the world's strongest fighter 'Hong' only reached the sixth floor! It's not hard to imagine just how difficult it is to reach the fifth floor.

No wonder they offered such shockingly high rewards.

Chapter 17: Explosion of Strength

Tower of trials floor 5, eligible to receive the title of ‘investigator’…

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to reread the part about the archaeological ‘Black God’ set.

What exactly is this ‘Black God’ set?

Envious! So envious! Even a country has to deal with an investigator with caution.

In other words….. if you reach the fifth floor of the tower of trials, your authority on this world will shoot up to the sky! You also get a mysterious archaeological ‘Black God’ set.

Even though Luo Feng didn’t know what that was, he could guess that it was something really good!

※※

Soon enough, Luo Feng finished reading the student notice file. From what Luo Feng read, the three most important things in the training camp were——tower of trials level, fist strength level, and the black dragon ranking!

“So that’s where the points come from”

Battle score comes from ‘battle points’ multiplied by the ‘battle ability amplifier’. And battle points are simple, since there’s only one way to get them——hunt monsters.

One low level commander level monster equals 1 battle point

One medium level commander level monster equals 10 battle points.

One high level commander level monster equals 100 battle points.

One low level horde leader level monster equals 1,000 battle points.

Of course, in the elite training camp, very few would bother hunting low level horde leader level monsters even if they had the ability to kill them! Since after you kill two low level horde leaders, your ranking will raise to the ‘wargod level’ rank, which means you’ll graduate and leave the training camp.

Students are rarely willing to leave.

And the ‘battle ability amplifer’ is quite simple too: your ‘fist strength level’ multiplied by your ‘tower of trials level’.

For example——

If someone has 1,000 battle points, a fist strength level of 1.5, and a tower of trials level of 2, then their battle ability amplifier is 3. As a result, their battle score will be 1,000 x 3 = 3,000!

“The training camp takes fist strength level and tower of trials level quite seriously. If your battle ability amplifier is just slightly higher, then your score will be huge” Luo Feng finished this student notice PDF file and then picked out some video lessons from this notebook provided by the training camp.

There are many wargod instructors in the training camp to teach lessons.

However, the training camp was clear that many of these world geniuses have quite odd personalities and wouldn’t be willing to go to class properly. Because of this, they have ‘video lessons’, where they record every single class. All these recordings are inside every student’s notebook!

Of course..... if you actually go to class, then you can directly ask the teacher questions and let the teacher instruct you one on one.

The efficiency would be way higher than watching a video lesson.

“However, I’ve never been to a wargod’s lesson before, so I should start by watching these video lessons” Luo Feng carefully looked at the file names.

The levels of technique were similarly divided into——Basic level, Intermediate level, Perfect level, and Conception level. Luo Feng opened several videos about these four main levels. Most of them were talking about the intermediate level, since the perfect level was clearly very hard for the teachers to describe in words.

You need to experience it for yourself; it's extremely difficult to teach.

And the conception level is even harder to express in words.

※※

4:35 PM.

Luo Feng was still sitting in front of his notebook and watching a video about how to use your strength.

"Teacher, my fist strength can reach 1.8x my normal strength. However, my legs can only reach 1.5x my normal strength. Teacher, you said that your legs can explode in strength in the same matter that your fists can. How come my multipliers are different then?"

In the video, a black youth asked a question. The video's language was set to Chinese, so Luo Feng could naturally understand what was going on.

In the video, a white brute smiled as he said: "You have to

experience this for yourself! Carefully think about how your fist exerts its strength and then go back and train your legs! You already reached 1.5x, which shows that you are improving. You have to rely on yourself for the rest. I can only show you the way”

BOOM!

As if struck by lightning, Luo Feng sat in front of his laptop dumbfounded. After that, he let out a face of immense joy, slapped his head, and jumped up: “I’m really stupid. I’m so, so stupid. I can’t believe I couldn’t even realize such a simple thing!”

“Holy, I can’t believe I never realized this problem!”

“Yea, if your fists can exert their strength in a certain way, then naturally, your legs can do so too!” Luo Feng’s body was slightly shaking, “Through the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》technique, my strength can reach 2.8x of my normal strength! However, my sprinting speed has always remained at a normal beginner level warlord level’s speed!”

“I can’t believe I didn’t realize that since I can send the force through my arms, I can send it to my legs too!”

Luo Feng laughed bitterly.

The concept was simple. Advanced fighters could explode their strength after skillfully controlling it. Naturally, your legs can do so too! Luo Feng just never connected those two ideas after all this

time.

“Regular fighters aren’t spirit readers, so they can’t use spiritual force to increase their speed!”

“If so, then how would fighters training the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》fight against higher ranked fighters if they only have powerful attacks? A beginner level warlord probably can’t even keep up with an advanced level warlord’s shadow!” Luo Feng can fight against fighters of a higher rank because of the support of his spiritual force.

“I’m dumb”

“The force exertions of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》can be used on the legs just like they can be used on the arms. With this, both legs will become super powerful and fast! Only by keeping up in power and speed can you fight fighters of a higher rank.

Luo Feng’s eyes were shining.

“I can reach 2.8x of my normal strength. In other words, after my legs reach 2.8x, my speed will fly up!” to the true advanced fighters, speed is more important than power. If your speed is way greater than your opponent’s, he’ll be playing in the palm of your hand.

“Speed! I need to increase my speed!”

Luo Feng couldn’t bother to continue watching the video lesson and immediately shut his notebook and charged downstairs.

**

Every student’s building had a training room in the basement. This underground training room was made out of Ke-Luo alloy, so students can train to their hearts desire.

In Luo Feng’s building’s underground training room.

“PA!”

After turning on the lights, the light shone through the various tiny holes in the Ke-Luo alloy ceiling, brightening up the entire room. The underground training room was around 2.5 m high, 5 m long, and 5 m wide. The walls were all dark green. Clearly, these alloys weren’t pure Ke-Luo alloy; they had other materials mixed in too.

On the Ke-Luo alloy floor, various dents made by fists and feet could be seen. These were left behind by previous students.

“HU” Luo Feng ferociously charged forward and exerted his strength into his fist and directly punched at the Ke-Luo alloy wall.

BOOM!

At the end of February, Luo Feng's fist strength neared 10,000 kg. Now it's the end of March. In the time of one month, Luo Feng's fist strength increased by a ton: his fist strength reached 11,500 kg, which clearly showed he was improving at a faster rate compared to the previous months. Under the explosion of 2.8x, it surpasses 30,000 kg! In other words, one punch from him surpasses 30 tons.

The alloyed wall slightly shook. A faint, 1 cm dent was made by his fist.

Clearly, Luo Feng was still very weak compared to the seniors that used to live here. Those seniors probably had wargod level power!

"I'll check out my legs' strength!" Luo Feng started using the force exertion technique from the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》.

First attempt of the first stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》!

One extra exertion of force on top of the original force.

"PU!" "PU!" Luo Feng's right leg blurred as it continuously kicked.

"There's some feeling"

"Yea, send out the force"

“Just like this!”

Since Luo Feng already reached the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》’s third stage, it was easy for him to reach 1.4x of the force in his leg. With that, Luo Feng started swiftly charging back and forth like lightning in this narrow 25 m^2 room. While also doing swift horizontal dodges to the left and right, he began his swift technique training.

When fighting in a real battle, your body has to constantly change directions. Sending out 1.4x of the force constantly is much more difficult than just using your original strength.

After 20 minutes, Luo Feng’s two legs were completely used to exploding 1.4x of his normal strength over and over again!

Luo Feng is already able to explode 2.8x of his normal strength when swinging his blade over and over again. He already has the experience, so now he just has to apply that experience to his legs. The only thing he needs is time to get used to it.

.....

Next is the second stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》, attempt to let both legs reach 2.1x of the normal strength.

.....

“Luo Feng! Aren’t you working a bit too hard? Bitterly training in

the underground training room on the first day? It's almost 8 PM. Tonight, our Chinese brothers and sisters are going to hold a banquet to welcome you" senior Zhao Ruo's voice came from outside.

Inside the training room.

Luo Feng, whose excitement couldn't be hidden, finally stopped with his body completely drenched in sweat.

"It's almost 8? I entered the underground training room at around 4. Who would've known that around three hours already passed" Luo Feng was extremely joyful inside, "In three hours, my leg are pretty much set. I can continuously maintain them at 2.1x when dodging nonstop. As for 2.8x, that'll probably take some more time"

Luo Feng immediately charged out of the underground training room.

"Senior, I'm going to go wash first and change clothes. I'll be right back" said Luo Feng.

At this time, the rain already stopped. Shi Jiang and Zhao Ruo in the courtyard couldn't help but to shake their heads as they laughed after seeing Luo Feng drenched in sweat.

"This Luo Feng is pretty hardworking" complimented Shi Jiang as he laughed.

“Well yea, but this guy kept bitterly training until 7:30 in the underground training room even though the banquet starts at 8” said Zhao Ruo helplessly. She wasn’t too surprised though, since virtually everyone in this training camp was extremely hard working. However, there aren’t too many people like Luo Feng who start bitterly training in the underground training room on the first day they arrive at the camp.

.....

After washing up, Luo Feng put on some relaxing casual clothes and stood in front of the bathroom’s mirror with a bright smile on his face: “Mirror, oh mirror. I’m sure that I’ll reach 2.8x soon enough. When that happens, my speed will multiply! With such an increase in speed, how far can I reach in the tower of trials?”

What does it mean to double your speed? It’ll be scary to see how much your strength increases as a result. If Luo Feng combines his doubled speed with his technique that’s at the intermediate level and reaching the gates of the perfect level to the B grade exam, then Luo Feng would be able to take out those 100 raging bulls with no trouble.

“Okay, time to participate in the banquet! Let me take a look at all those geniuses from China” Luo Feng smiled at the mirror and then turned around and swiftly headed downstairs.

With seniors Shi Jiang and Zhao Ruo, they left Jiang-Nan pagoda and headed towards the camp’s gathering of those from China.

Chapter 18: Rookie

8 PM, second floor of restaurant #1 in the elite training camp. A full 21 students from China have gathered here, just to welcome Luo Feng's arrival! People are quite passionate with others from the same country, so many seniors were happily chatting and drinking with Luo Feng.

One hour later.

"Phew, I'm finally let off" Luo Feng held his glass and stood in a corner.

"This banquet was prepared for you. You're the main character, so of course everyone will find you to chat and drink with" Zhao Ruo's face was slightly red. Under the light of the room, she seemed quite charming, "And Luo Feng, senior Zhu Qiang paid for this banquet tonight. Do you know how much this banquet will cost?"

Luo Feng shook his head: "All of these dishes taste extremely great, but I can't guess how much they'll cost. However, even if the cost is up at the sky, probably around a million Chinese dollars right?"

How expensive could eating and drinking be?

"A million? Nice joke!" Zhao Ruo lowered her voice, "The chefs at the elite training camp are the world's best. Also, many of these dishes were made out of monster materials, so this banquet for

21..... would cost at least 10 million”

Luo Feng blinked twice.

“Don’t complain about the price! You can’t even eat certain things around the world with just money!” Zhao Ruo shook her head, “However, this bit of money really is nothing for senior Zhu Qiang. In our training camp, if any top 10 student is willing to join an organization, they’ll definitely receive tons of money!”

“Zhu Qiang joined some organization?” Luo Feng asked with surprise.

When he arrived yesterday, Zhu Qiang appeared to be rank 2 on the black dragon ranking. Someone who can be ranked second, even if it’s just temporary, is probably quite scary.

“Zhu Qiang was pulled over by our Chinese army. Everyone knew of this since last year” Zhao Ruo whispered, “And I even heard that the Dojo of Limits is trying to get Zhu Qiang on their side too. Even certain organizations within China are fighting over him. Apparently, the army prepared a special division. After Zhu Qiang graduates, he’ll become the leader of this entire division!”

Luo Feng gasped in shock.

An army established a special division just to welcome Zhu Qiang?

“Well, there’s no helping it. Zhu Qiang really is strong” sighed Zhao Ruo, “He can easily stay within the top 5. In the training camp, 10 people have the ability to reach the top 5 in terms of pure strength! However, only one or two people can consistently stay within the top 5 over time”

Luo Feng nodded to show he understood.

The black dragon ranking ranks people based off of battle score. Even if the powerful people are ranked higher, the ranking cannot rank people with 100% accuracy! If I charge into the top 5 this month, someone with similar skill could charge into the top 5 next month. Everyone’s strength isn’t too different at that point.

So that’s why…… there are 10 people with the ability to enter the top 5.

Those who can stay in the top 5 for an extended period of time are the scary ones.

“The government is definitely going to pay Zhu Qiang a gigantic amount of money every year” sighed Zhao Ruo, “In our training camp, there are three types of people with tons of money….. First, people like Zhu Qiang who are extremely powerful and joined some special organization. Second, someone who joined one of the core families of the HR alliance. Third, spirit readers!”

“However, people of the second category who join the core families of the HR alliance are pretty dumb. Even though they have money, how can their power compare to armies of the

government? The Dojo of Limits? The Thunder Dojo?”

“And as for the third category, spirit readers. Sigh, nothing we can do about that. With their spiritual force, hunting monsters is like harvesting wheat! The amount of materials they receive every day is astonishing. Just with this, they earn a crazy amount of money! The amount of money a single spirit reader can earn is comparable to ten of us!”

Luo Feng laughed.

As a spirit reader himself, of course he was clear on how quickly spirit readers could make money! An intermediate level warlord, like Gao Feng, only made 200 to 300 million last year. And advanced level warlords would be lucky to make around a billion a year. As for Luo Feng, an advanced level warlord level spirit reader, it wouldn’t be weird for him to make nearly 10 billion a year.

Even better than a beginner level wargod!

Advanced level warlord level spirit readers rival a beginner level wargod in strength. With their spiritual force, they can hunt monsters with higher efficiency.

“These three types of people are the people with the most money in our training camp” mumbled Zhao Ruo.

“Luo Feng!” a clear sound rang.

Luo Feng and Zhao Ruo turned their heads. What they saw was a tall youth whose face looked like it was carved with an axe. Indeed, he's the legendary figure of the training camp——Zhu Qiang!

"Senior Zhu Qiang" laughed Zhao Ruo as she yelled, "You guys chat". As she said that, she obediently left.

Luo Feng and Zhu Qiang stood in the corner.

"Luo Feng" Zhu Qiang glanced at the other people and then lowered his voice, "Our Chinese army is quite interested in you. Not sure if you have any interest in joining the army?"

"The army?" Luo Feng froze.

He just joined the elite training camp and people are already trying to pull him over?

"Indeed!" Zhu Qiang took a sip of wine, "No worries, the army isn't stingy at all. They'll treat you based off of your strength after you graduate the camp! When you become stronger, they'll treat you with more respect! As for the details, we can slowly discuss that later. Also, if you agree to join..... then for the five years you remain in the camp, the army will fund you with 5 billion a year"

Luo Feng's heart beated slightly faster.

“Five billion?”

If he wasn’t a spirit reader, then he wouldn’t be efficient in hunting monsters. For example, a beginner wargod would have lots of trouble successfully hunting a low level horde leader monster! So it’s pretty good for a beginner level wargod to earn 5 billion a year. And wargods also spend an astonishingly high amount, so many wargods need money!

Dragon blood, elixir of life, SS grade battle uniform.....

Which one of these isn’t astronomically expensive?

Many wargods can’t afford these.

For example, the battle uniform set that Luo Feng earned back at the steel armored dragon’s nest only had a SS grade vest. Clearly, the wargod who passed away couldn’t afford the entire SS grade set and only bought the most important part.

“Senior, I just entered the training camp, so I’m not planning on joining any organization. I’ll think about it a few years later” said Luo Feng.

“Oh?” Zhu Qiang was surprised, “Alright, your way of thinking is right too. These five years are the most important five years to raise your strength. If you ever decide to join the Chinese army, just let me know”

.....

On this night, Luo Feng received six invitations! Three of the organizations were inside China. Only after receiving these invitations did Luo Feng know..... other than the army, there were other special organizations. However, the army is more powerful than all of them.

As for the other three invitations, two of them came from the core families of the HR alliance while another came from a mercenary group called the 'Flame Legion'.

There are quite a few mercenary groups on this world.

However, while many of them are quite average in terms of strength, some of them are extremely powerful!

Both 'Hong' and 'Thunder God' have one headquarter city and have spread both of their dojos all over their world. Their power isn't inferior to a country's.

They are the two major figures on earth.

There are other ambitious people on earth who wish to establish a power of their own! For example, the 'Flame Legion' was created by two existences that have surpassed the wargod level. Their mercenary group is extremely powerful and invited by several African headquarter cities to assist them.

However.....

Luo Feng rejected all six invitations!

※※

March 30th, morning. The temperature was very low.

Quite a few students were running or walking in the training camp; Luo Feng was one of those students too.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng”

While walking on the stone paved road, Luo Feng, who was wearing a black training uniform, turned his head back in surprise. He saw a blonde, short haired youth smile as he walked over. With his especially accented Chinese, one word was all that was needed to determine that a foreigner was the one speaking.

“My name is William, William※Edison, from the EU” said the blonde youth passionately.

William?

Luo Feng mumbled to himself, this name is just like Russia’s ‘Alexander’, United States’ ‘David’, and China’s ‘Wang Wei’ and ‘Zhang Wei’; all of these names are so common that they can’t become any more common.

“William? Nice to meet you” smiled Luo Feng.

“I’ve always been curious about China” said the blonde youth, William, passionately, “And in the training camp, there are many geniuses from China. And Luo Feng, you entered this camp alone, so I really want to have a practice match with you to test our strength. I wonder if you are willing to grant my request”

Luo Feng froze: “Practice match?”

“Yea, we can do it at the battle room, is that okay?” asked the blonde youth, William, passionately.

“Battle room?” the contents of the ‘student notice’ that Luo Feng read immediately came to mind. This battle room is also one of the things from the archaeological ruins. After entering the battle room, the two people enter the ‘virtual space’ via the brain computer interfaces and then start a battle to the death!

Usually, these battles have stakes!

“Let’s not bet too much, how about one billion Chinese dollars?” the smile of the blonde youth, William, became even more passionate and bright.

“William!”

A tender voice rang.

Luo Feng turned his head and saw Zhao Ruo wearing a purple training uniform. Her face was full of rage as she yelled: “William, how can you be so shameless! Luo Feng just came here and is still a rookie, and now you’re challenging him to a staked match in the battle room? You filthy people secretly found some rookies at the beginning of March and challenged them to some staked matches to get their money! If you’re so great, why don’t you bet with me!”

“Lady Zhao Ruo, this has nothing to do with you, doesn’t it? There is no problem, I believe that Luo Feng is very powerful. Maybe I’ll lose to him” William looked towards Luo Feng.

Zhao Ruo turned towards Luo Feng: “Luo Feng, don’t trust this foreign devil. Some people in the training camp are just sneaky and always pick on the rookies. They wouldn’t dare to do it out in the open, so they do it through staked matches..... And virtually all the rookies lose those matches and their money. Only until then do the rookies realize the strength of the seniors! This foreign devil has a battle ability amplifier of ‘intermediate’. Even though that’s not high, it’s not low either. Most rookies aren’t his opponent”

“Just a billion”

The blonde youth, William looked towards Luo Feng, “If you just join any organization, you’ll earn even more than this in a year, I’m sure”

Luo Feng completely understood what was going on. Some

people pick on the rookies who don't understand everything yet and passionately drag them to the battle rooms to cruelly snatch their cash away.

"It's William!" a Chinese youth ran over here. This Chinese youth was named Jiang Chen, who Luo Feng met yesterday in the banquet, "Luo Feng, don't bet with him! This guy is extremely devious. I just joined the training camp on March 1st and was tricked by him on the first day I arrived. He took a bunch of my cash from that"

"****!"

William's face wasn't looking too good at the moment. Initially, he just wanted to find a chance where he could talk to Luo Feng alone, but who would've known that so many people would come and destroy his plan.

"Alright, if you want to bet, we can" Luo Feng smiled as he looked at him.

"Luo Feng" Zhao Ruo and Jiang Chen looked at him with astonishment.

"Oh" William let out a face of unexpected happiness, "Luo Feng, let's arrange a time"

"However, one billion is just too little, so I'm not interested. Let's make it slightly bigger, five billion!" Luo Feng glanced at William,

“If you wanna play, then let’s go. If you’re too scared, then nevermind”

Zhao Ruo and Jiang Chen widened their eyes.

“5 billion?” William froze too.

Chapter 19: Challenge

A beginner wargod's one year of hard work could only earn him around 5 billion. Even though these geniuses of the elite training camp have extremely bright futures and receive money from all sorts of different organizations, 5 billion is still quite a large number. Usually, only spirit readers or students with high ranking use such high stakes when challenging each other.

Of course, there are unexpected situations too. For example, when two people argue and get into the mood, they could raise the stakes to an extraordinarily high amount!

"5 billion?" William squinted and carefully examined Luo Feng.

"Luo Feng……" Zhao Ruo and Jiang Chen looked at Luo Feng with surprise.

"If you're too scared then nevermind" Luo Feng shook his head, "Senior Zhao Ruo, Jiang Chen, let's go". Zhao Ruo and Jiang Chen woke up from their astonishment by now and immediately laughed as they went with Luo Feng. Jiang Chen even sneered at William before he left. Because of William, he lost a ton of money.

Seeing how Luo Feng was about to leave.

"Wait" yelled William.

"What, not scared anymore?" Luo Feng looked at William, "5

billion. Not playing if it's lower"

"Alright, 5 billion, I'll do this" even though he had trouble with the Chinese tones, it was clear from William's eyes that he was going to go for this with everything he had.

"Alright, nice!" Luo Feng laughed.

"Say a time" William was full of confidence.

"Tomorrow" said Luo Feng.

It's hard to say an exact time, since there's only one battle room. It might be in use by other students, so you have to check the computer system first before you can arrange for an exact time.

"Alright" William rubbed his nose, laughed, and then turned and left.

**

Jiang-Nan pagoda.

After hearing of this, senior Shi Jiang, who went to the Nine Grand Floors to train, immediately rushed back to Jiang-Nan pagoda. No matter what, Shi Jiang and Zhao Ruo were like Luo Feng, all from China's Jiang-Nan headquarter city! Not only that, but they're older than him and entered this training camp earlier

than he did.

Naturally, they would help Luo Feng.

“Luo Feng” Zhao Ruo was a bit angry, “Why would you bet with him? Do you think you’re a genius fighter with amazing power who can’t lose to anyone in the same age group as you? Is that why you’re confident?”

“You’re just being cocky!”

Zhao Ruo said angrily, “Many people who just entered the training camp are tricked into doing these ‘staked matches’ with the seniors. 80 to 90 percent of them lose..... you can enter this training camp because you’re a genius of geniuses. So which one of us here isn’t a genius of geniuses? And they have been learning in this training camp for a long time”

“Alright, Zhao Ruo” Shi Jiang spoke on the side.

“Senior Zhao Ruo” Luo Feng laughed as he poured his tea, “Don’t be angry. Oh yea, you said that William has a battle ability amplifier of ‘intermediate’ right?”

“Yea” Zhao Ruo froze.

“Looks like Luo Feng is prepared” Shi Jiang looked at Luo Feng with astonishment.

While battling to the death in the virtual space, the two people have the exact same body fitness levels. So at this time, you'll have to see how they handle their strength, speed, technique, etc.

The battle ability amplifier equals 'fist strength level' multiplied by 'tower of trials level'.

A battle ability amplifier of 1————2 is beginner. Many of the students who just entered the training camp are in that range.

Battle ability amplifier of 2————4 is intermediate. In the elite training camp, many people are able to step into the intermediate level after 1.5 years of training. That person named 'William' is precisely intermediate.

Battle ability amplifier of 4————8 is advanced. These count as passing students in the elite training camp.

Battle ability amplifier of 8————16 is superior. This is the marker of an 'excellent student'. Because the range of 8————16 is quite large, the gap between people who are all at the superior level could be quite large.

Battle ability amplifer of above 16 is extraordinary! Also called the 'super level', even the world's strongest fighter 'Hong' and 'Thunder God' would be fighting over taking a person like this as their disciple. All the countries and organizations of the world would be willing to pay enormous sums to invite these so called 'Legendary' figures.

“Hehe, a bit” Luo Feng laughed.

“If you’re confident, then it’s all good” Shi Jiang punched Luo Feng in the chest and encouraged, “Let that William know that us Chinese can’t be taken advantage of that easily”

“Okay. Seniors, I need to go train now. There’s no helping it, now that 5 billion is on the line, I’m under lots of pressure” said Luo Feng purposefully.

“Pressure my ass” said Zhao Ruo with a hmph, ” ‘1 billion is just too little’ and ‘5 billion. Not playing if it’s any lower’. Hehe, that tone was boss”. Luo Feng laughed bitterly at Zhao Ruo’s words. How is this Zhao Ruo like a girl at all, she’s way too bold.

Luo Feng immediately said: “Seniors, you guys do what you need to do”

After saying that……

Luo Feng immediately returned to his living quarters. On the day of the 30th, other than to eat, Luo Feng stayed in his underground training room and underwent his speed training! He started at noon and trained all the way until around 7 PM. Only until then could he use the 2.8x force brought by the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》’s third stage in his legs as much as he pleased.

With the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》, Luo

Feng's speed, without the aid of his spiritual force, rivals an 'advanced level warlord'!

……

8 PM.

After washing up, Luo Feng, who was wearing a bathrobe, was sitting in front of his notebook.

"That William guy has a battle ability amplifier of intermediate, which is 2——4! What about me? My fist strength level should be 2.8". Even though he didn't test it in the training camp, this so called fist strength level is basically how high your power can go based off your original strength.

He can explode 2.8x the force, so his fist strength level is 2.8!

As for the tower of trials level, according to what I heard from the many discussions my fellow students were having in the training camp, 100 raging bulls should count as the first floor's B grade. Since I passed, my tower of trials level is 1.6!

"My tower of trials level definitely, isn't just 1.6, but just 2.8 x 1.6 already makes my battle ability amplifier surpass 4"

"He's trying to pick on my inexperience?"

“Hmph, even though I haven’t been in the wilderness for long, I’ve already killed more monsters than many fighters would ever kill in their entire life” Luo Feng opened his email.

This notebook, which the training camp provided, was connected to the training camp’s network.

In the email was a message.

“Letter of challenge?”

This ‘William’s Letter of Challenge’ was sent after he applied to the training camp’s computer system.

“Accept!” Luo Feng made his decision.

It’s not enough to just reply to this email; you also have to prepare 5 billion Chinese dollars and send it to the special account of the ‘Challenge System’! Only after William and Luo Feng both deposit their money into this special account can this match be organized.

At that time, only Luo Feng and William will have permission to enter the battle room!

Both payments automatically enter the winner’s account.

“Just 5 billion isn’t it?” Luo Feng took out 5 billion from his

Swiss nameless account and directly deposited it into the training camp's special account.

"In the past, I wouldn't dare to move this amount of money without thinking twice. However, now that I entered the training camp..... which organization isn't willing to pay an astronomical price for me?" Luo Feng isn't worried that Vulture and Scorpion's suspicions will raise after the money is transferred to his normal account.

There's no way that they would be suspicious.

It's normal for students in the training camp to have over 10 billion in their accounts!

"BEEP!"

An email arrived.

Luo Feng opened it.

"Such high efficiency. It already determined the date? March 31st, 11:15 AM?"

**

In another pagoda.

A few white men and women were gathered together.

“He already transferred the money over. The date is tomorrow at 11:15 AM” said William Edison. A tall, skinny blonde youth beside him couldn’t help but to say: “William, you’re too careless. This is 5 billion Chinese dollars…… I think there’s something dangerous is going on this time”

“Candace, what’re you worrying about?” William’s gaze was cold, “I’ll definitely win this time”

“You have a higher probability of winning” the blonde youth named Candace nodded, “If this Luo Feng’s strength greatly surpasses the average rookie that enters the elite training camp, he would’ve entered much earlier; he wouldn’t have waited until now. This shows that he isn’t much stronger than the average rookie”

“However, he dared to propose a bet of 5 billion” Candace frowned, his eyebrows were like two sharp blades, “I think you should still be careful”

“Candace, you’re the #1 successor of the Paulinus family, you don’t have to care so much about a measly 5 billion bet. Also, it’s just Chinese dollars, not euros” laughed a brunette girl on the side.

…..

William※Edison, from the EU, has challenged the rookie Luo

Feng from China!

The wager is 5 billion Chinese dollars!

This news spread through the entire training camp like a hurricane. A wager of 5 billion, and against a rookie! These two points caused many students to come to the Nine Grand Floors on the 31st.

March 31, 11:10 AM.

Nine Grand Floors, ninth floor.

Around 45 students were gathered here. There were people from the EU, America, China, Russia, etc.... basically, people from all six countries have arrived. Even some rookies that just joined this year rushed over here too. Some of the rookies in that group were picked on before.

“5 billion Chinese dollars, isn’t that just around 40 billion Rubles? What a wager”

“I wonder if William or that rookie will win”

The large nosed white youths mumbled on the side. From their language and looks, one could tell that they were from Russia. In today’s world, one earth dollar equals 3.5 Chinese dollars, which equals 30 Rubies.

“William※Edison, Luo Feng, enter the battle room!”

An electronic sound reverberated in the lobby of the ninth floor.

Luo Feng and William exchanged looks and headed towards the training room.

“William, beat that kid” yelled Candace※Paulinus.

“Luo Feng, you better beat him to death. If you win, your senior will cook for you personally” Zhao Ruo was also yelling. Many students were supporting each side, since this battle was a battle of senior vs rookie, and also the first EU vs China exchange. In this training camp, the students were extremely competitive.

KA!

The door to the battle room opened. Luo Feng and William both entered.

Luo Feng scanned the room. This battle room had virtually the exact same layout as the training room; there were two sofas and two dark blue helmets here too.

“Luo Feng, thanks for the free 5 billion” William slightly smiled as he lay on the sofa.

“I hope you won’t cry later” Luo Feng also lay on the sofa.

Whoosh!

Both of them put on their dark blue helmets at virtually the same time.

Chapter 20: Battle in the Gymnasium

There was only one building in the infinite silver land——a stage!

Whoosh! Whoosh!

A yellow skinned youth and a white skinned youth appeared out of thin air on the stage; they were precisely Luo Feng and William.

“Please select your weapon and battle uniform set” a huge sound reverberated around the entire land. At the same time, a gigantic amount of weapons and armor appeared in front of Luo Feng, just like the time at the tower of trials. Luo Feng skillfully selected the ghost blade, hexagonal shield, and a battle uniform set that fit his size.

The two of them swiftly equipped themselves.

“Oh?” Luo Feng’s gaze landed upon a pillar on the stage. Words started to appear on the pillar——

“Name: William※Edison

Gender: Male

Identity: Elite training camp official student

Battle ability amplifier: Intermediate”

After reading that, Luo Feng turned and looked to the pillar to his side. The introduction on the pillar was exactly the same, other than the name and the battle ability amplifier, which was ‘beginner’.

“Please select your battle location” a virtual voice rang again.

In front of Luo Feng and William appeared eight different locations.

“You choose” smiled William, “So you won’t make any excuses when you lose”

“Then….. the gymnasium” Luo Feng casually picked a battle location.

“Gymnasium?” William let out a surprised face and carefully looked at the Chinese youth in front of him. Is he really confident or just cocky?

RUMBLE~~~

The sky and earth shook. Luo Feng and William’s surroundings started changing. Instantly, Luo Feng and William appeared in the middle of a gigantic gymnasium. The gymnasium was also completely empty; there were no obstacles. Around the gymnasium were enough stands for tens of thousands of spectators to watch the match.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

A blinding light brightened up the entire gymnasium. The entire gymnasium held only two people: Luo Feng and William.

“Challenge, begin!” the electronic sound echoed around in the gymnasium.

William had a long sword in one hand and a round shield in the other as he confidently looked at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, I gave you a chance to pick a location that would give you the advantage. However, you picked a gymnasium with no obstacles at all! I’ll let you know the true difference between a veteran and a rookie in this training camp!”

“Come” Luo Feng slightly squinted.

This shall be his first opponent in the training camp.

The sides of William’s mouth slightly curved. His body ferociously and instantly passed through a distance of around 50 meters. Like a ray of light, his long sword created ripples in the air as it thrusted directly towards Luo Feng’s forehead. At the same time, Luo Feng backed off and swung his blade as fast as lightning!

“CHI!” The long sword in William’s hand slightly shook as it collided with Luo Feng’s ghost blade.

It then went along Luo Feng's blade and shot towards Luo Feng's neck with a horizontal strike!

Whoosh!

Luo Feng retreated explosively while moving his hexagonal shield to block it.

"HUA!" The long sword instantly drew across a delicate arc. It actually followed the movement of the hexagonal shield in Luo Feng's left hand as the blade drew towards Luo Feng's right hand.

Retreat!

Luo Feng basically instantly backed off to a distance of 100 meters away as he directly jumped onto the stands.

"What, scared?" William laughed loudly as he, with his round shield in one hand and long sword in the other, slowly walked towards Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, you might think you're extremely powerful compared to a regular fighter, but no veteran in this training camp is as simple as you think they are"

"This time, just think of this 5 billion as your tuition"

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his right hand. The armguard on his right hand's wrist had a white mark on it. However, there was a wound on his arm and blood already started coming out. Thankfully, the wound wasn't deep.

“His blade isn’t fast, but I was completely controlled during that short engagement? As if his attacks were naturally formed, there were no openings. One attack followed the other, all of them offensive” a few balls of sweat couldn’t help but to seep out of Luo Feng’s forehead as he squinted, “I can only use speed to control him!”

William was still calm, as if a gentleman in a banquet.

“It’s not good enough to just have have a swift blade. You have to reach the point where it moves like a cloud and flows like water; use all sorts of attacks from all sorts of positions to form your offense!” William smiled, “After entering the training camp, as long as I remained within the camp grounds, I practiced my blade for over 5 hours! I only rested after my arm hurts like crazy”

“You still need years before you can defeat me!” William stepped on the ground.

Whoosh!

He directly flew towards the stands.

“HU!” Luo Feng’s eyes were shining as his ghost blade’s speed shot up to the extreme. Multiple forces merged into the ghost blade. Hu~~ As if a hypnotizing cold light that’s carrying an electric current, the unrivaled momentum and heart stopping speed directly shot towards William’s head!

Swift!

This attack can be described in one word——Swift!

“RUMBLE~~”

CLANG CLANG CLANG CLANG.....

A series of sounds rang as the willow branch-like long sword in William’s hands clashed with Luo Feng’s ghost blade. Right after that, William’s body flew back. CHI! A gigantic, shocking crack directly appeared on the stands ahead. Smashed, shattered rubble flew around in all directions, some even smashing onto the plastic chairs.

“What a swift blade. However, your blade technique is really just average” William laughed loudly as he jumped back onto the stands.

As he jumped onto the stands, the plastic chairs flew away one by one, as if William was a wild hurricane.

“I admit that your blade technique is superior to mine. However..... you’re too slow!” Luo Feng completely exploded his speed when William appeared in front of him! In terms of speed, Luo Feng is definitely around 50% faster than William! This isn’t even on the same level anymore.

Clearly, in terms of exploding his strength, William is quite lacking compared to Luo Feng.

“Whoosh!”

“Whoosh!”

These two humans who were both moving at over 100 m/s have completely turned into two mirages, especially one of the black shadows, whose speed was clearly faster than his opponent’s. Every time they clashed, the air exploded and formed currents visible to the naked eye.

One attack, another attack! And another!

Luo Feng was relying on his speed; whenever he had a chance, he’ll attack. If he didn’t have any chances, he’ll dodge, and then attack!

Luo Feng himself has realized that he is quite far off in terms of actual blade technique compared to William.

“FUCK”

William angrily yelled: “you….. You, if you have skills, then fight against me from the front!” William was so enraged that he even yelled out english. Luo Feng’s current battle style was quite sinister, since he was just relying on his quick speed and blade to punish people! He wasn’t fighting from the front at all.

“From the front?”

“Alright”

“I’ll grant your wish” as Luo Feng’s voice echoed around the gymnasium, Luo Feng’s attack was aimed at William’s left side.

Suddenly——

Luo Feng stepped three times. These ghost-like steps actually dodged William’s sharp blade. William himself was extremely surprised: “Impossible”. He only felt a shadow float past him. William now knows he’s in trouble, since he already lost sight of Luo Feng.

PUCHI!

The blade’s light flashed across William’s neck and his head flew up.

“PU!” fresh blood sprayed towards the sky.

William’s body fell powerlessly, his blood scattered across the already destroyed plastic chairs.

“Challenge, Luo Feng wins!” the electronic sound reverberated within the interior of the gymnasium. Everything in the

gymnasium became blurry and then disappeared.

In the silver land, on the empty stage.

Luo Feng and William were standing.

“Impossible” William stared at Luo Feng, “I couldn’t have lost! I was chosen to enter the elite training camp and I’ve already been bitterly training here for a year. For this entire year, I’ve been working hard on my blade technique, control over my force, etc. for virtually every single day. My strength is much higher than it was compared to when I just entered. How could I lose to a rookie like you?”

“A loss is a loss” spoke Luo Feng.

William clenched his fists tightly.

If it was just a regular, casual match, then it wouldn’t matter too much if he lost. However, this match attracted many students. He’ll lose respect and..... a gigantic sum of money! William definitely wouldn’t be happy to lose this huge amount.

“You already lost” Luo Feng looked at William in front of him and couldn’t help but to compliment, “I admit that you are way above me in terms of blade technique”

Way above!

His speed and power was way above his opponent's, but he couldn't win! Because his blade technique was extremely simple. In the past, Luo Feng thought that his blade technique was pretty good, especially when his 'spiritual force' boosts its speed. In the wilderness, he was unstoppable. However, when put against with a genius like him, William……

His blade technique is incomparable!

William's technique flowed like water, one attack after the next. As if the waves came over and over, Luo Feng couldn't help but to retreat!

Thankfully, Luo Feng was finally able to unleash his 'perfect level' technique at the end! His speed was already above his opponents. Adding his special technique to that, it's natural that he'll win in one attack!

"My speed and power are above my opponent's but I couldn't even win. In the end, I had to rely on my phantom-like technique!" even though Luo Feng was the victor, he wasn't too satisfied with himself.

"Lost!"

William clenched his teeth. If he knew that Luo Feng wasn't satisfied, he would probably be even more mad.

××××××

Nine Grand Floors, lobby of the ninth floor.

Young men and women of all skin color from all sorts of places on the world were gathered here: some were bald, some had a small ponytail, some had shockingly gigantic bodies, and some were extremely skinny and small..... These genius fighters from all over the world were waiting and discussing here.

“That guy named Luo Feng will realize the difference between rookies and seniors!”

“Wouldn’t it be okay if he just lost 1 billion? He just had to yell 5 billion”

“If he wants to gift us money, why wouldn’t we accept?”

A few youths from the EU were laughing as they chatted. Students from other places of the world also chatted, but it was pretty clear that most of the people here thought that William would win. The seniors almost always win against the rookies. Only in an extremely small amount of challenges do rookies ever attain victory.

“Challenge, Luo Feng wins!” an electronic sound echoed around the lobby.

Silence.

Everyone in the entire lobby went silent.

“What!”

The youths from the EU were all wide-eyed.

“Oh, lord!” a few white and black youths from America were also surprised.

“40 billion rubles was won by Luo Feng?” the youths from Russia were shocked too.

And thus, another case of a rookie defeating a senior in the training camp was recorded in the training camp’s history.

Luo Feng defeated William.

“KA!” The door to the challenge room was opened. William, whose face looked extremely bad, and Luo Feng, who was holding his cell phone, came out together.

Chapter 21: Luo Feng's Teacher

"What are you looking at on your phone?" Zhao Ruo smiled as she walked over. The other students from China went over too.

"Oh, the notification of the balance change in my bank" answered Luo Feng.

After saying this, William's face on the side became even worse!

"Balance change? Hehe, you just entered the training camp and earned 5 billion; such an event is quite rare in the training camp. You better treat us all, and treat us to the best stuff possible" said Zhao Ruo. The other students from China also talked one by one.

"Of course there's no problem!" Luo Feng looked at Zhao Ruo with a weird expression, "Senior, didn't you say that you would personally cook if I won?"

"Uh..... this....." Zhao Ruo rubbed her head.

"Zhao Ruo, I heard that nice and clear too. You did indeed say that" said Shi Jiang in a serious matter.

Zhao Ruo frowned and looked at Shi Jiang: "Senior, I didn't know that you were this evil too. Alright, I'll cook then!"

In the lobby of the ninth floor, the Chinese youths chatted

happily.

However, the group from the EU wasn't that happy as they chatted in English. A short, brunette girl couldn't help but to complain: "William, how could you lose to a rookie. You're not that good at controlling your force, but your blade technique is above average compared to those who entered at the same time as you. How did you lose? Did you underestimate him?"

"No" frowned William, "I tried my best. That Luo Feng is better at controlling his force"

"Force exertions?"

"William" a tall, skinny, blonde youth spoke on the side, "If you lost, then you lost. However, we can't let that Chinese kid get away with 5 billion Chinese dollars so easily. In the future..... we'll figure something out to make him spit it out" the blonde youth spoke extremely quietly. The others all nodded.

That's how it is in the training camp.

If you win a bunch of money from me, I'll definitely figure out a way to win it back! If I can't win, then I'll get my seniors to help. Of course, you could always act like a turtle hiding in its shell and never accept any challenges.

.....

Luo Feng was in quite a good mood. Even though he couldn't cleanly win his match, he was able to realize his weaknesses! This is a good thing. More importantly..... with the 5 billion he made, he now has enough to buy an elixir of life.

"It auctioned off for 30 billion last time, and that counts as a huge price. If there's another elixir of life, it might not reach 30 billion"

"I should have enough money now"

"Even if the price is too high, I can still borrow money from the bank!"

Everybody has a limit to how much they can borrow from the bank. For fighters, the higher their position and the stronger they are, the more money they can borrow from the bank! It wouldn't be hard for the students of the world's best training camp to borrow over 10 billion. Of course..... the interest rates on these loans are quite high.

"Go, let's eat lunch"

"Haha, let's eat on the 2nd floor today. Luo Feng's treat" yelled Zhao Ruo.

"No problem, senior can burst her stomach open as she eats" laughed Luo Feng.

At this time, the youths from the EU walked over. The leader was

a guy who was tall and skinny; his cold gaze was set on Luo Feng: “Luo Feng, your strength is really amazing..... and I’m really itching to fight. I wonder if I have a chance to have a staked match with you! You choose the stakes. No matter how large of a number you choose, I’ll play!”

Silence. Quite a few students in the surrounding area quieted down.

Interesting.

Things are becoming more interesting now. The students from Russia, USA, India, Hong Ning headquarter city, and other headquarter cities were all watching, all of them hoping for things to become more chaotic. They expectantly watched the battle between the students from the EU and China.

“Whatever I choose?” Luo Feng gasped as he carefully looked at the guy in front of him.

This guy was nearly 1.9 m tall, but was quite skinny. His eyes were extremely cold and he naturally had an aristocratic feeling to him. While looking at the guy in front of him, Luo Feng connected him to the legendary beings——vampires!

He’s letting him pick any price he wants?

This white youth’s power is extremely, extremely high for sure.

“How bold, just what you’d expect from the successor of the Paulinus family, rich”

“Bold my ass” Zhao Ruo couldn’t help but to curse.

A low, gentle sound rose.

“Candace, you were ranked 42 on March’s ranking and have been in this training camp for three years already. Even so, you still feel like it’s perfectly appropriate for you to have a staked match with Luo Feng?” within the group of Chinese youths, Shi Jiang took a step forward and frowned, “How about you have a staked match with me. Likewise, you pick the price. No matter how high of a price you pick, I’ll fight!”

Candace’s face changed. Who is Shi Jiang?

The fact that he’s able to steadily stay within the top 5 shows that his strength is at the top of the training camp! Isn’t staking with him just gifting him free money?

“Shi Jiang, you should have a staked match with Reinatus” said Candace.

“So you know how to be scared too” Shi Jiang looked towards Luo Feng.

But Luo Feng was looking at Candace……

Shi Jiang and Zhao Ruo both jumped out of astonishment.

Don't tell me that this Luo Feng wants to fight against Candace also? Candace isn't William. That guy named William just entered the training camp for a year! Candace has been here for three years already, and he's ranked 42. He is quite the excellent student in the training camp.

Seeing this, Candace was extremely happy: "Is this Luo Feng really that cocky? He actually wants to fight me?". Candace immediately and seriously said: "Luo Feng, I, Candace※Paulinus, would really like to have a match with you to test our skills, I wonder if……"

"Candace※Paulinus?" Luo Feng said to himself.

Indeed, didn't one of the Chinese students say, "Just what you'd expect from the successor of the Paulinus family". Luo Feng's heart jumped…… the Paulinus family! The Vulture Scorpion couple who wants to kill him even in their dreams! And that Scorpion is named Venina※Paulinus!

The blood sister of the Paulinus family's head.

"I didn't think that I would encounter someone from the Paulinus family here too" thought Luo Feng.

"Sorry, I still have to eat lunch with my seniors" smiled Luo

Feng. After saying that, he walked with Shi Jiang and the others to the elevator. Luo Feng wasn't dumb..... he wouldn't fight against someone if he had no confidence of winning.

※※

Night of the same day.

The night wind blew. In the courtyard of Jiang-Nan pagoda.

"Luo Feng, this is teacher Jiang. For the five years you'll be in the training camp, you'll be with teacher Jiang" introduced Shi Jiang.

Luo Feng looked in front of him with shock. A young, beautiful girl wearing a purple training uniform with an amazing body: busty and skinny.

Teacher Jiang?

All the teachers in the training camp are at least wargod level! And each of these wargods must have something special about them to be able to be selected to guide these geniuses. This teacher Jiang..... no matter how Luo Feng looks, she's quite young and probably not much older than him. And this person is actually going to be his teacher for the next five years.

"I'm Jiang Fang" the purple clothed girl gave off the overall feeling of a blade!

“For the next five years, I’ll be your direct teacher” continued Jiang Fang, “There are currently five students with me. You’ll be the sixth”

Luo Feng slightly bowed: “Teacher Jiang”

“Okay. Take your blade and come with me” spoke Jiang Fang.

“Yes” Luo Feng immediately took his ghost blade and put it on his back as he walked out with Jiang Fang.

……

Who would’ve known that he would have a female teacher in the elite training camp.

As they walked in the training camp, Jiang Fang smiled: “I heard you beat William this afternoon, right?”

“Yes” Luo Feng nodded.

“The state of William’s blade is quite good; it has reached the second level. Not bad, you were able to defeat him” Jiang Fang nodded her head with satisfaction and pulled out two curved blades from her waist, “Come, Luo Feng…… show me your blade technique and fight against me! I won’t exceed your power or speed!”

This Jiang Fang is already at the wargod level in terms of body fitness level. Because of genetic energy training, she seems quite young.

Even though she looks like she's around 20, she's actually 30 something already.

"Yes, teacher" Luo Feng pulled out his ghost blade.

"Attack!" commanded Jiang Fang.

"Yes!"

Luo Feng charged forward like lightning and his blade cleanly struck towards Jiang Fang. The curved blade in Jiang Fang's stayed still; she only moved her left hand. "CLANG!" In the instant the curved blade in her left hand collided with Luo Feng's ghost blade, Luo Feng felt a peculiar, powerless feeling. Before he even pulled his blade back, the curved blade's light flashed across Luo Feng's neck and then went back.

"You lost" frowned Jiang Fang as she looked at Luo Feng, "Again"

Luo Feng's spiritual force was already surrounding Jiang Fang's curved blade. If Jiang Fang tried to slit his throat, his spiritual force would've directly controlled the curved blade.

There was no helping it.....

That blade was really horrifying.

“Yes” Luo Feng attacked again.

“CLANG” “CLANG!” Jiang Fang’s left hand’s curved blade only touched against Luo Feng’s blade twice before leaving his body completely exposed.

“How is your blade technique so poor?” Jiang Fang looked at Luo Feng with confusion, “Did you really defeat William?”

Luo Feng was ashamed inside.

Being belittled by this female wargod teacher..... Indeed, the speed and power of her blade wasn’t even as fast or powerful as his, but it was always able to easily destroy his rhythm. And the blade’s attack just came wave after wave, which easily and completely destroyed him!

In terms of the blade’s state..... who knows how many times more powerful this Jiang Fang is compared to that William. And Jiang Fang only used a single blade; the other curved blade hasn’t moved at all.

If he uses his ‘spiritual force’, he might be able to have a go at it.

However, if he's only using his blade, he'll lose to the point where he can't lose any harder.

"Teacher, I relied on speed and power to control that William. With that, I defeated him" said Luo Feng.

"Oh?"

Jiang Fang let out a face of joy, "Looks like your force exertion is quite powerful. Force exertion requires extremely high control over your body! This shows that you're quite good on the basics of controlling your power. Hm..... even though your blade technique is quite sloppy, it can be improved in the future! What's your fist strength level?"

"2.8" answered Luo Feng.

"Hmhm, your fist strength level is so high despite just entering the training camp. No wonder you were scouted for" Jiang Fang nodded with satisfaction, "Luo Feng, don't feel bad about your sloppy blade technique; this is normal! You guys are so young. If the state of your blade and your technique is extremely high, then that would be too horrifying. I trained ever since I was little. Only after 20 years of bitter training could I reach today's state"

"Come with me"

Jiang Fang sheathed her curved blades and walked in front. Luo Feng followed this female wargod teacher.

Chapter 22: Life in the Training Camp

Inside the Nine Grand Floors, Jiang Fang introduced to Luo Feng: “The most important rooms in the Nine Grand Floors are of course the ‘challenge room’, ‘training room’, and ‘gravity room’ on the ninth floor! These three rooms were made out of treasure excavated from the archaeological ruins. There are also many training rooms on the seventh and eighth floors. For example, there are copied ‘gravity rooms’ made by our scientists, etc. Even though they aren’t as effective as the ones from the archaeological ruins, they’re better than nothing”

BEEP!

The elevator door opened.

They walked through the lobby on the ninth floor towards the training room.

“Students are training in the training room and gravity room every month from the 1st to the 30th. In these 30 days, the resting period lasts from 12 PM —— 1 PM every day. When new students are taking their exam, they usually do it in this hour” explained Jiang Fang.

“And this month is March, with a 31st day. On the 31st, the gravity room and training room are both empty” said Jiang Fang as she brought Luo Feng to the door of a room.

Out of the three rooms on the ninth floor, Luo Feng has been to

the ‘training room’ and ‘challenge room’ already.

A light flashed past Luo Feng and Jiang Fang.

BEEP!

The door opened and Luo Feng and Jiang Fang entered together.

“This is the gravity room; a gravity room discovered in the archaeological ruins” said Jiang Fang. Luo Feng carefully examined the room. The floor and walls of the gravity room were made out of an alloy with yellow and black mixed in. Because of this strange alloy, the entire gravity room felt quite special.

“Even our scientists haven’t figured out this alloy yet” said Jiang Fang as she pointed towards the alloy on the wall, “Even existences that have surpassed the wargod level can’t leave a mark on this wall”

Luo Feng froze. He looked at the wall beside him and saw a fist mark that was around 5 mm deep.

Jiang Fang’s eyes flashed as she said with admiration: “This mark was left by our world’s strongest fighter, ‘Hong’. Within the existences that have surpassed the wargod level, only the head was able to leave a mark on this wall. Nobody else can do this! The head is the strongest fighter on earth”

“BEEP!” after saying that, Jiang Fang pressed the button to the

side.

“Your body fitness level is at the beginner warlord level, so 9x gravity should be nearing your limit” said Jiang Fang as she quickly pressed some button that increases gravity. The number on the display continuously changed——

2, 3, 4, 5.....

BUZZ~~~

A shapeless energy instantly covered every single part of his body. Not even given the time to take a breath, the gravity multiplier quickly rose from 8 to 9. Luo Feng felt like everything went black as he directly fell to the floor. The sound of his heart beating was like the beat of a drum and the sound of his blood flowing sounded like a flowing stream; everything was that clear.

“How do you feel?” Jiang Fang looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was barely able to stand up. His face was pale and his body was about to collapse at any moment: “I feel extremely heavy and my heart is in pain every time it beats. It’s hard for me to breathe too; every single spot of my body is in pain”. Luo Feng was carrying his ghost blade, which turned into a burden of around 1,000 kg under 9x gravity.

Even though he was carrying such a heavy object, it wasn’t as painful as all his blood vessels and organs fighting against 9x

gravity.

“Luo Feng, do you know the significance of the gravity room to fighters?” under 9x gravity, Jiang Fang was still smiling and chatting in a relaxed manner.

Luo Feng looked towards Jiang Fang.

“Fighters absorb energy and transform it into genetic energy. The body then absorbs that genetic energy to improve its genes and strengthen itself!” Jiang Fang sighed, “However….. once every cell in the body absorbs a certain amount, they become full! They won’t be able to absorb any further!”

“The more people exercise, the more food they eat”

“The fact is that when our cells are involved in our exercise, they are able to absorb more genetic energy, “Jiang Fang sighed, “Even though we seem tired when we train normally, it’s extremely difficult to exercise every single cell in our body”

Luo Feng nodded, he understood this point. This was also why your body fitness level improves at a higher rate when you reach a higher stage in the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》.

“But the gravity room is different!”

“The gravity amplified by the gravity room affects every single part of your body. Your muscles, bones, blood vessels, organs,

cells, and even atoms!" explained Jiang Fang, "Gravity works on everything. Naturally, it'll work on the smallest parts of your body"

Luo Feng's eyes flashed.

Indeed, gravity affects every part of your body.

"So, in the gravity room, especially under the highest multiplier possible!" smiled Jiang fang, "Even if you stand there and do nothing, every single cell in your body will be affected by gravity and will fight against it, therefore using up energy! This is way more efficient than any form of training you can do"

"Yeah" Luo Feng couldn't help but to nod his head in agreement.

Jiang Fang smiled: "Of course, if you train in this room in conjunction, the effect will be even better! You can say..... 2 hours a day in the gravity room will speed up your training speed by ten times!"

"Ten times?" Luo Feng's eyes flashed.

Damn!

If he relies on the gravity room, wouldn't he just need 3 to 4 months instead of 3 years to become an 'advanced level wargod level spirit reader'?

“However, there’s only one gravity room” continued Jiang fang, “Even the Thunder Dojo’s elite training camp doesn’t have one. 183 students have to share this one room. How much time can be divided to you?”

Luo Feng froze.

“So the higher your rank, the longer you can stay in this room” continued Jiang fang, “The gravity rooms that our scientists created can only reach a multiplier of 3. In other words, it can only go up to 3x gravity. When training in the gravity room, you want to reach your limit for the best effect”

“And this gravity room excavated from the archaeological ruins has a range of 1 to 1,000!” sighed Jiang Fang, “Way better than the ones we reproduced”

“1,000 times?” Luo Feng stared, “Who can handle 1,000x gravity?”

“Of course, this 1 to 1,000 multiplier was after we modified it to create this display number” Jiang fang pointed towards the display, “You think the archaeological ruins will have arabic numbers in them? This display number and on/off button was created by us. Of course, we can’t modify the main component at all”

……

There’s only one archaeological gravity room. How long can Luo Feng, a rookie, use it for?

There are more copied gravity rooms created by the scientists, even though they can only reach 3x gravity. In the entire training camp, there are 10 of these gravity rooms.

……

“Luo Feng, you’re still new and are ranked 183. For the first 28 days of April, you’ll follow the other students and hunt monsters in the wilderness and earn battle points on the odd days! For the even days, you’ll stay in the training camp and properly learn. At that time, I’ll guide you” commanded Jiang Fang.

“Yes, teacher” Luo Feng nodded.

In the training camp, you have to grab the chance to absorb as much as possible to strengthen yourself!

××××××

Night, 11 PM.

Luo Feng, in his bathrobe, sat in his room and looked at his notebook.

“Ranked #1, April, eligible to use the archaeological gravity room for 90 hours, training room for 90 hours”

“Ranked #2, April, eligible to use the archaeological gravity room for 60 hours, training room for 60 hours”

.....

“Ranked #11——30, eligible to use the archaeological gravity room for 6 hours, training room for 6 hours”

“Ranked #31——50, eligible to use the archaeological gravity room for 4 hours, training room for 4 hours”

“Ranked #51——100, eligible to use the archaeological gravity room for 2 hours, training room for 2 hours”

“Ranked #101——end, eligible to use the archaeological gravity room for 1 hour, training room for 1 hour”

Luo Feng looked at the last line and laughed bitterly.

He just joined, so he’s ranked #183. For the entire month of April, he can only use the archaeological gravity room for 1 hour? Training room for 1 hour?

“Only 1 hour. The person ranked first must feel so good, 90 whole hours. He has to hunt monsters on the odd days, so he has like 15

days to train in the training camp. He can stay in the archaeological gravity room for 6 hours and the training room for 6 hours every day. Improving slowly would be a challenge" Luo Feng was envious.

If you stay in the archaeological gravity room for just 2 hours a day, your one day is equivalent to 10 days.

And don't even talk about someone staying in there for 6 hours.

"Thankfully April is the first month for me after entering the training camp. As a result, I have a special right: I can take the tower of trials test one time" Luo Feng thought to himself.

Taking the tower of trials test is a special privilege every student gets after entering the training camp. The amount of time they spend taking that test isn't counted into the time they receive. For example, Luo Feng only receives 1 hour of time in the training room during April. However, he might spend 40 minutes taking his tower of trials test. In all, it's one hour and 40 minutes.

Some people spend a lot of time taking this test, while others spend very little time.

"My blade technique is still sloppy"

"I'll train hard this month and then take the tower of trials test on the 26th" thought Luo Feng to himself. Since he counts as a new student, he can pick within the timespan of 12 PM——1 PM on any

day to take his test.

******

With a blink of an eye, it was already April 1st. Luo Feng's days in the training camp officially begins.

April 1st, Luo Feng followed 91 other students and headed towards a city that was around 300 km away from the training camp——1001 city. This name was personally set by the creator of Hong Ning city, 'Hong'. All students must hunt monsters in this city.

Furthermore, there's a satellite in orbit just to observe this 1001 city.

There are absolute rules within the training camp——

1. Those who secretly trade monster materials with other students to help them raise their battle points, once found, will be expelled.

2. Those who kill other students, once found, will be executed!

"PUCHI!"

After the ghost blade slashed, a Back Mountain Deer's head that was as large as a small mountain flew up.

“The monsters in this western area are quite different from the ones in China” Luo Feng in the wilderness was like a fish in water. He trained his blade in monster hordes back then. Other students are afraid of falling into monster hordes while Luo Feng doesn’t have this fear at all.

So, Luo Feng was quite efficient at hunting monsters and earned quite a few battle points.

.....

“The state of a blade is split into the categories Basic——Expert——Complete——Conception, these four levels. Right now, you better build up your basics! Train in the copied gravity rooms for 2 hours and practice your blade there! In the blade training room, train your blade there for 2 hours too! After that, you still have to train your blade! If your basics aren’t steady, then what can you do?”

“When you train, use your brain and think! What can you do to make your attacks flow like water and continue endlessly!” ordered Jiang Fang.

“Yes, teacher!”

.....

Whether in the gravity room, the blade training room, or the

underground training room in Jiang-Nan pagoda.

Everyday, Luo Feng trained his blade technique and even used his spiritual force to observe the trajectory of his blade. With his careful observation, Luo Feng continuously improved himself and bitterly trained.

“This kid’s rate of improvement is quite scary. However, something like this is normal in this training camp” even though Jiang Fang was surprised, she expected even more out of Luo Feng.

All sorts of training methods were used on Luo Feng.

……

Of course, you can’t stop your genetic energy training for even a day!

Only when he’s relaxed does he occasionally talk with his parents and Xu Xin through his notebook.

“Luo Feng, you seem quite tired to me?”

“Nah. Once I see you, I’m not tired at all” Luo Feng laughed as he video chatted with Xu Xin through his laptop.

“I didn’t know that even Luo Feng was this good at saying stuff like this”

……

Luo Feng was completely immersed in his days at the training camp. There were many geniuses here; many geniuses that were way better than him! As for spirit readers, there were dozens of them in this elite training camp. In terms of spiritual force, many of them were significantly more powerful than him. Whether blade technique, technique, or force exertions, there was always someone better than Luo Feng.

People here have reached force multipliers of 4x.

For technique, there are tons of people who have reached the conception level.

For the blade's state, Luo Feng is at the bottom of the training camp.

"This Luo Feng's technique and force exertions were superior in the first place. Even though his rate of improvement isn't the best, it's up there. I'm sure he'll step into the blade's second state soon" Jiang Fang was quite satisfied with her student, "Luo Feng is entirely capable of charging into the top 10 after two or three years"

……

Luo Feng was like a sponge who absorbs nutrients in the training

camp with all he had. Whether body fitness level, blade technique, and all the other things, Luo Feng has been showing improvement. This rate of improvement was way faster than training alone! And there were many wargod teachers here that frequently taught class!

Even investigators taught!

******

April 26, morning.

Jiang-Nan pagoda, Luo Feng's room.

"Looks like it's quite difficult to charge up the black dragon ranking" said Xu Xin in the video chat.

"It is" nodded Luo Feng.

For this entire month, other than sleeping and occasionally chatting with his family and Xu Xin, he put all of his time into training!

His improvement this month is quite astonishing!

"There are tons of geniuses in this training camp. The guy that lost to me, William, is around #150 on the black dragon ranking. Many students are below #150 on the first year they arrive;

charging to the top 120 is as hard as flying up to the sky. And don't even get me started on the top 100" said Luo Feng.

Xu Xin laughed: "Luo Feng, you're quite good then"

"Acceptable. However, I wasn't able to charge into the top 120" Luo Feng shook his head. The amount of monsters Luo Feng hunted these 26 days is comparable to the students that have been here for three to four years. Even with that, added with his battle ability amplifier of 4.48 (2.8 x 1.6), his battle score still wasn't enough to charge into the top 120. However, he's still higher than that William!

"Luo Feng, don't pressure yourself too much"

"You're already very strong. Didn't you say you're ranked 2 out of the students that just arrived at the training camp this year?" encouraged Xu Xin, "And according to what you said..... your battle ability amplifier is way above 4.48. Once you finish your tower of trials test, your battle ability amplifier might raise. You might be able to charge into the top 100"

"From what I heard, anybody capable of entering the top 100 soon after entering the training camp is quite the remarkable person" sighed Xu Xin.

Because of Xu Xin's background, she knows quite a bit of information about the elite training camp.

“Today is the day you take your tower of trials test, go for it” Xu Xin gave a thumbs up in the video.

“Hehe” grinned Luo Feng.

“I’ll do it, watch me”

The higher you go in the tower of trials, the higher your level.

When he passed the B grade exam back then, his tower of trials level automatically turned into 1.6. WIth his rapid improvement in technique and speed, his tower of trials level will certainly improve by a lot.

……

11:50 AM, Luo Feng chatted for a while with his parents.

After that, Luo Feng put on a casual shirt and leisurely walked out Jiang-Nan pagoda. Coincidentally, Zhao Ruo just returned and laughed: “Luo Feng, going out to eat lunch?”

“I ate already” smiled Luo Feng.

“I just went and looked at the black dragon ranking and saw that you’re already ranked #126. You’re quite powerful; your senior is only in the top 100” teased Zhao Ruo. Luo Feng smirked: “Senior, you better be careful. My goal is to charge into the top 100 soon!”

“Soon? How soon? 2 months, 3 months?” guessed Zhao Ruo.

“I’ll chat with you later, I still need to do stuff” Luo Feng didn’t say anything more.

He already decided that he’ll take the tower of trials test on noon of April 26. Other than Xu Xin, nobody else knows.

After he finished talking, Luo Feng headed towards the Nine Grand Floors.

On his way, quite a few students greeted Luo feng..... students also respected the strong. And Luo Feng was able to become ranked 126 in just a month. Even though the ranking is officially set on midnight of the 28th, Luo Feng’s strength is already clear.

19 years old and he’s already this powerful.

What about the future?

So these students, whether from South America, North America, Europe, Africa, etc. are on quite good terms with Luo Feng.

.....

On the ninth floor of the Nine Grand Floors, six black students that just finished with their training in the training room and

gravity room were having a friendly match.

“Eh, Luo Feng, how come you’re here in the noon?” one of the black students that knew Chinese yelled. The other five black students didn’t know Chinese; very few students that came from Africa knew Chinese, even though Chinese is used quite often.

“I have stuff to do” smiled Luo Feng as he headed towards the training room. The training room scanned Luo Feng and confirmed his identity.

KA!

The door to the training room automatically unlocked and, with a slight push, Luo Feng entered.

“The training room? How could he enter the training room after 12?”

“There’s no way he could enter the training room” one of the black students spoke his native language quite fluently.

“Ah, that Luo Feng is a new student; April is his first month here. Every new student has the special right to take a tower of trials test during their first month”

“Don’t tell me he didn’t take his tower of trials test yet? It’s already the 26th!”

“There’s no other possibility. Students can’t enter the training room from 12 PM——1 PM”

“Holy, he didn’t even take his tower of trials test yet and he’s already around #120 on the black dragon ranking. After taking his test, how high can he go? Could he reach the top 100?”

“A rookie charging into the top 100 in his first month?”

“Hurry, let’s go to the black dragon ranking. It’ll update itself soon enough”

“Hurry, let’s go!”

“To the black dragon sculpture”

The six black students talked a bunch, all of them astonished. They went downstairs and headed towards the black dragon sculpture at the gate of the training camp. Keep in mind that a rookie in this training camp charging into the top 100 in his first month is virtually impossible. People capable of such a feat become astonishingly great people in the future.

Could it be that……

Another person like this just appeared and is going to charge into the top 100?

Chapter 23: Change in the Ranking

In the training room, Luo Feng turned on the lights.

Luo Feng lay on the sofa and picked up the dark blue helmet beside him. This brain computer interface ‘helmet’ let out a dark blue reflection under the shine of the light.

“The higher my ranking goes the better!” said Luo Feng softly. He kissed the helmet and then put it on.

BUZZ~~

******

The land here was an infinite silver, the sky was the infinite universe.

The only building here was the seven floored tower that wanted to pierce the sky——tower of trials.

“Name: Luo Feng

Gender: Male

Identity: Elite training camp official student

Tower of trials level: 1.6”

Luo Feng laughed. Under the virtual space’s reminder, Luo Feng swiftly put on his battle uniform set and equipped his weapon, shield, etc. After that, he directly stepped within the tower of trials.

……

On a large grass plain, Luo Feng appeared out of thin air.

“Luo Feng” an electronic sound reverberated around the entire plain, “You already completed the first floor’s B grade exam, Next, we’ll move on to the C grade exam. Your objective is to kill 200 raging bulls within 50 minutes. Within these 200 raging bulls, 190 of them are low level commander level while 10 of them are medium level commander level. Good luck!”

Luo Feng grinned; his gaze was as sharp as a blade.

Since he’s been in this training camp for a month already, Luo Feng was clear on what he would have to deal with on each stage of the tower of trials. When he took the B grade exam, he had to deal with 100 low level commander level raging bulls. This time, he has to deal with 200, and 10 of them are medium level commander level. And he just has his beginner level warlord level body.

Get rid of all of them within 50 minutes to pass!

“HU~~” 200 mighty raging bulls instantly appeared on the grassy plains. Some raging bulls within this horde were gigantic, flame-colored raging bulls.

“MOO~~”

The ground rumbled. Under the lead of the 10 medium level commander level raging bulls, the horde charged towards Luo Feng like a roaring tide! With Luo Feng’s body fitness level, he’ll probably lose the ability to fight after taking one direct hit, since he’ll be trampled by the horde as a result. So this time, no errors are allowed.

“Come!” Luo Feng held his hexagonal shield in one hand and his ghost blade in the other as he grinned and charged towards the entire horde!

******

When Luo Feng was taking his exam in the tower of trials, quite a few students learned about what Luo Feng was doing thanks to the broadcasting of the six students from Africa. This Chinese student who charged up to rank 126 right after entering the training camp didn’t even take his tower of trials exam yet.

He just started taking it today!

He didn’t take the test and is already rank 126. Is he going to charge up to the top 100 after taking the exam?

Quite a few students eating lunch quickly finished up and headed towards the black dragon sculpture. Each of them paid attention to any change that could happen on the black dragon ranking. Actually, this ranking changes extremely frequently, all the way until midnight of the 28th.

.....

At this time, on a ruined three story villa in the wilderness' 1001 city.

Candace※Paulinus, who was wearing a black battle uniform set, sat alone. He had his water bag in hand to rehydrate himself. Even though he was the successor of the 'Paulinus Family', one of the nine core families of the HR alliance, Candace never lowered his expectations of himself.

"My own strength is the most important thing. Everything else is meaningless!" Candace took a small sip of water, "It's already the 26th, so there's only two days left until the ranking is set. Looks like I can reach the top 50 with no problem"

As of now, Candace was already ranked 39.

"I'll see if I can get into the top 30" Candace's nose was straight and his gaze was cold, "Who would've thought that that Chinese kid could improve so quickly; he's already around 120". Ever since the staked battle between his good friend William and Luo Feng, a small group led by Candace frequently went to mess with Luo

Feng.

For example, stealing Luo Feng's prey in the wilderness.

Or getting in the way of Luo Feng's hunting.

The training camp only banned 'killing each other' and 'private trades'. Causing trouble wouldn't bring you any punishment.

"Hm?" Candace looked towards the tactical communications watch on his wrist.

"A phone call from William?"

"Redial!"

After William sent out his command, the call quickly went through.

"William, you're even calling me while I'm in the wilderness. Could it be that you miss me?" teased Candace.

"Candace, let me tell you something..... that Chinese kid just started taking his tower of trials exam today" William's voice carried out of the tactical communications watch.

"What does his tower of trials exam have to do with us" right

after saying that, Candace's face changed dramatically, "What did you say..... he, he just started taking his tower of trials exam today? Are you saying that he never took the exam these past 26 days? He didn't take the exam and was able to charge up to around rank 120? How is this possible? Impossible!"

Candace really disliked Luo Feng, so of course he wouldn't want to believe that Luo Feng was powerful.

"I don't want to believe either, but my brother, I have to tell you, this is the truth: Luo Feng is taking his tower of trials exam right now. And right now, a few dozen people in the training camp are watching the black dragon ranking right here waiting for the ranking to update. Quite a few teachers in the training camp came too" William's fluent English came out quickly, "If this Luo Feng really charges into the top 100 in his first month, then that'll be incredible"

"I don't believe this!"

Candace's eyes were like a poisonous snake's, "I don't believe that he'll be able to charge into the top 100"

"I don't want to believe either, but you'll know if you're here in the training camp" said William helplessly.

"Stare at the black dragon sculpture and don't hang up. Tell me right when it updates!" commanded Candace.

“Okay”

******

In the tower of trial’s first floor of the virtual space; the vast grassy plain.

Corpse after corpse of raging bulls were laying on the ground, their blood dying the grassy plain. Luo Feng’s body was full of blood as he stepped on the corpse of a raging bull; his face was pale and some blood trickled down the side of his mouth.

“Used 41 minutes 26 seconds to kill 190 low level commander level raging bulls, 10 medium level commander level raging bulls. C grade exam, you pass! Congratulations, you have passed the first floor of the tower of trials, student Luo Feng” the electronic sound rose. Along with it, the entire plain disappeared in a flash. The surrounding area became a desert!

An infinite, boundless desert!

This is the second floor of the tower of trials. According to what Luo Feng knows, each tower of trials is split into the different grades: A, B, and C. For example, after finishing the A grade exam of the second floor of the tower of trials, your level becomes 2.3. After finishing the B grade exam, 2.6. After the C grade exam, 3.0.

As of now, Luo Feng just completed the first floor’s C grade exam, so his current level is 2.0.

“Who would’ve thought that the 100 raging bulls in the B grade exam would become 200 raging bulls in the C grade exam, what a horrifying change” Luo Feng reminisced about the killing that just happened and was frightened, “With the 10 medium level commander level raging bulls, even though they weren’t that much of a threat themselves..... they divided up the other raging bulls and formed small groups that coordinated their attacks.”

Unlike the raging bulls in the B grade exam that just swarmed over Luo Feng.

The C grade exam has organized groups.

Unless Luo Feng’s blade technique was way better than before, he would’ve failed in one of the clashes with the horde.

“Luo Feng, congratulations on passing the first floor. Next, you’ll take the second floor’s A grade exam. Your objective is to kill 50 ‘low level commander level’ steel armored scorpions within 10 minutes, good luck” the electronic sound echoed around the entire desert.

Steel armored scorpions: an extremely common monster in the desert area, one of the most common scorpion type monsters.

“According to what the other students said, the bodies of these steel armored scorpions are quite small, so 10 or even over 20 of them can attack one person at the same time! The way they dodge is also quite peculiar, making them hard to fight against. The A

grade of the second floor is way, way harder than the previous exams!" Luo Feng was under a lot of pressure.

SHA SHA~~~

Within the infinite desert, dark red colored scorpions crawled out the sand one after another. Clearly, these scorpions could easily dig into the sand. The plating of each of these scorpions was dark red and its long, sharp tail was jet black; nobody would doubt the power of its tail.

Tower of trials second floor A grade exam, begin!

.....

In the wilderness' 1001 city, Candace was leaning against the wall as he chatted with William.

"Changed, Luo Feng's ranking changed!" William's surprised voice carried out from the tactical communications watch.

"How much did it change by?" Candace was shocked.

"It went from #126 to #108"

After hearing this, Candace took in a deep breath: it actually turned into #108. A rookie in this training camp charged to #108 within his first month. This was indeed quite shocking. At this

moment..... Candace was slightly regretful. From what Luo Feng has accomplished now, he'll surely become quite scary in the future.

But since they're already foes.....

"I guess I could just stop harassing him and stay away from him" Candace sneered, "Furthermore, he's just #108; he hasn't entered the top 100 yet"

Candace didn't know that Luo Feng's ranking only went from #126 to #108 because he passed the C grade exam; his tower of trials level went from '1.6' to '2.0'. This means that Luo Feng's score increased by 25%! The change was astonishing.

"It changed again!"

"Candace, the ranking changed again" William's voice carried out of the tactical communications watch.

"What is it?"

"It turned into #99! He's in the top 100!"

Candace's face changed.

******

In the training camp, in front of the black dragon sculpture at the main gate.

A few dozen students and around 10 wargod teachers were all excited and surprised when Luo Feng's ranking turned into NO. 99.

"A rookie charged into the top 100 within his first month, something like this only happened five times in the history of this training camp. All five of those people were absolute geniuses. The first time something like this happened was 20 years ago. Out of these five people, four of them are already advanced level wargods, while one of them passed the wargod level and became an existence surpassing the wargod level" a Russian white brute who had a huge moustache yelled passionately.

"Very good"

"This rookie named Luo Feng probably has superb technique, speed, and blade technique"

"Hurry, hurry and contact the investigators, tell the investigators about this!"

Chapter 24: Luo Feng's Rank

Jiang Fang was one of the most famous people in the circle of wargods.

She was born into a poor family around the few years that the Grand Nirvana period was going on. She was quite ill-fated: her husband died to save her in the wilderness. Because of this, Jiang Fang ignored all the power struggles between the organizations and relationships; she merely focused completely on her martial arts. And she actually managed to become someone great.

Nicknamed 'Moon Witch' Jiang Fang.

Her curved blades were god-like. Usually, she didn't like to get into arguments and didn't like the arguments and fights going on between fighters. She would rather be an instructor in the Dojo of Limits. This Jiang Fang has been in the elite training camp for nearly 10 years. Other than studying her blade technique, her only other hobby is——

to watch her students become great.

To watch her students surpass the students of the other teachers!

"Jiang, congratulations" said a bald, skinny black man.

"Luo Feng himself is talented" smiled Jiang fang. The white brute with a huge moustache said in accented Chinese: "It was

because of lady Jiang Fang's teachings. There's a quote in Chinese, what was it again? It was..... great students come from great teachers!". In the training camp, there were very few female teachers.

And Jiang Fang had many wargod students, so she had tons of connections. She was also extremely powerful herself and was beautiful.

There were really quite a few wargods that were chasing after her.

"Luo Feng's out"

After hearing this, Jiang Fang couldn't help but to turn her head. She saw Luo Feng in a simple casual outfit walk out of the Nine Grand Floors.

******

After walking out of the Nine Grand Floors, Luo Feng saw teacher Jiang Fang coming from far away. Teacher Jiang Fang was the flower of the training camp; even quite a few male students were chasing after this teacher. Since a wargod's life span is much longer than the average person's, the students didn't mind their 10 or so years of difference in age.

However.....

Luo Feng respected Jiang Fang. In this past month, Jiang Fang has helped him a lot.

“Teacher” said Luo Feng respectfully.

“Not bad, you’re #99 now on the black dragon ranking” Jiang Fang smiled as she complimented, “How did you do in the tower of trials exam?”

“I failed the second floor’s A grade exam” said Luo Feng helplessly.

He already knew that the steel armored scorpions would be hard to deal with, but he didn’t know how strong they actually were until he fought them. Each of these scorpions had sharp claws and a phantom-like tail. Even though he improved a lot, he was only able to kill 36 of the 50 steel armored scorpions after doing everything he could. Finally, he was surrounded by the scorpions, dragged under the sand, and then killed.

A steel armored scorpion horde in the desert is really scary.

In the end, his tower of trials level became 2.2.

“The steel armored scorpions are indeed a pain” encouraged Jiang Fang, “Keep at it! Right now, you’re ranked 99. There’s still around two more days until we reach midnight of the 28th. Work hard these two days and try to stay within the top 100. My reputation will increase as a teacher of someone who could charge

into the top 100 in his first month”

Luo Feng smiled.

He’ll work hard!

.....

Around 8 PM, private training camp cars came one after another as they drove to the gate of the training camp. The students that went to hunt in the wilderness came in one by one.

“I heard Luo Feng charged up to #99 in the afternoon?”

“I heard that too, Luo Feng sure is doing us Chinese seniors a favor, haha”

The first thing these students did when they entered the training camp was raise their head towards the black dragon ranking. Because these students handed in their monster materials and received battle points, quite a few of them rose in rank by one or two places. Only an extreme few didn’t raise, or even dropped.

“#101? Luo Feng fell to #101”

Candace just entered the training camp and heard this phrase. He couldn’t help but to let out a smile as he raised his head.

Indeed——

Luo Feng, who was still #99 in the afternoon, was #101 now.

“The closer it gets to the midnight of the 28th, the harder everyone works. Luo Feng, you want to get into the top 100?” Candace sneered, took up his backpack, and headed towards his building.

.....

Dawn of the 27th, Luo Feng left the training camp with 91 other students. When leaving the training camp, Luo Feng found out that his ranking was #102. Clearly, the 91 other students that returned last night caused quite a bit of change in the ranking.

For the entire day of the 27th, Luo Feng hunted monsters.

Only until nearing 10 PM did he return to the training camp.

“Luo Feng, your harvest today was quite good” on the training camp’s private car, a worker of the Dojo of Limits collected the materials and put the money in Luo Feng’s card. Luo Feng’s contribution points rose too..... at the same time, he received battle points for the training camp, “Your ranking should be able to raise by a few spots”

“Thanks to your blessings” smirked Luo Feng.

The main entrance to the training camp.

After getting off the car, he walked as he looked towards the huge black dragon sculpture. All of his attention was focused on the dragon scales. With ease, he found his name——

“NO.98 Luo Feng (570403)”

“Charged to #98?” Luo Feng smiled and then headed back to Jiang-Nan pagoda.

A group of white youths came and one of them said in fluent English: “That Luo Feng is smiling? Even though he’s #98 now, it’ll be the 28th tomorrow, which means he won’t be able to hunt monsters. When the 91 students return from hunting monsters, Luo Feng will probably be squeezed out of the top 100”

“Jason, you’re making fun of other people? If I recall correctly, you were #179 in your first month?”

******

April 28th, 10 PM.

Quite a few students were happily chatting on the floor next to the gigantic black dragon sculpture in the training camp. They worked hard for nearly a month and did everything they could. All

they could do now was wait here for the final results.

Outside the training camp, a residential apartment around 3 KM away.

“Hurry, get all the equipment set up”

“All of you hurry up. The boss gave you guys so much money to do this. Doing something like this is like being on vacation! The boss only told us to do a few things, so we better do them as best as we can. Got it?” howled a sturdy man with short, dyed blonde hair. The other five people swiftly set up the equipment.

“Got it”

“Captain, we’re done”

On a gigantic screen on the wall of the room appeared a ranking; it was indeed the black dragon ranking.

“Very good” nodded the sturdy man with short, dyed blonde hair nodded, “Wait until the ranking to set at midnight. Once that happens, we’ll notify the boss right away. Oh yea, the boss told us to especially take notice of our China’s Luo Feng”

“Got it”

The rest of the five happily responded.

.....

There were many other informants other than this squad in Hong-Ning city, especially near the training camp, paying attention to the black dragon ranking. Not only were students in the elite training camp paying attention to the ranking at midnight, but also many organizations all over the world.

These organizations have information on every single student on the ranking.

.....

April 28th, 10:18 PM.

Nine Grand Floors training room.

KA!

The door to the training room opened. Luo Feng, in a dark green training uniform, was laying on the sofa as he put on the helmet and entered the virtual space once again. On the other sofa was a black girl. In just one or two minutes later, the black girl took off the helmet and opened her eyes. She cursed once or twice before leaving the training room.

No more than one person can enter the tower of trials at the same

time!

So when one student enters, another student will leave.

Second floor of the tower of trials.

In the infinite desert, the 50 steel armored scorpions crawled out the sand and surrounded Luo Feng.

“Today I have one hour to play with you scorpions” Luo Feng was full of the will to fight.

“KILL!”

The battle instantly began!

.....

The tower of trials exam ends right when you die. That’s why when Luo Feng failed last night, his exam was over! However..... other than to take his tower of trials test, as rank 183 in March, Luo Feng had one hour to use the training room and the archaeological gravity room.

And Luo Feng decided to use his training room’s one hour from 10:20 PM——11:20 PM on the 28th.

In this one hour, Luo Feng can keep trying even if he fails. No matter how many times he fails, he can retry. However..... once time is up, whether pass or fail, he'll immediately be kicked out of the virtual space.

"KILL!"

The 50 steel armored scorpions, whether leaping or burrowing into the sand or charging, came from all directions. Luo Feng was phantom-like and the light from his blade was like a mist from a dream. He destroyed the steel armored scorpions formation and killed them one by one.

"PUCHI~~~"

The blade's light flashed past and three steel armored scorpions fell from the air.

Luo Feng, who had a wound on his face, couldn't help but to laugh: "Damn, after dying three times I finally passed the A grade exam of the second stage!". As long as time isn't up, he can retry no matter how many times he dies.

"Used 5 minutes 6 seconds to kill 50 low level commander level steel armored scorpions. Second floor's A grade exam, you pass! Congratulations, student Luo Feng" an electronic sound reverberated around the scorching desert. A light flashed and all the corpses of the steel armored scorpions corpses disappeared. Luo Feng's body was also returned to its best state.

Luo Feng was clear.

That the A grade exam of the second floor was basically his current limit. He died three times to pass this stage. As for the B grade exam, unless under special circumstances, he won't be able to pass it within a short amount of time.

"I'll just use it to train my technique and blade technique"

"Maybe my technique will step into the perfect level" Luo Feng held his ghost blade and continued his trials.

******

Around 10 into the night, a training camp's private car stopped outside the main gate. Two fully armed students walked in. One of the two students was Candace※Paulinus. The 28th was the day he went out to hunt.

"Candace!"

The blonde haired youth, William, greeted him as he smiled, "Congratulations, you're already #38"

"What rank is Luo Feng?" Candace and William walked side by side towards the black dragon sculpture.

"You see, rank 101. Oh, 102, it's 102 now" William pointed

towards the gigantic black dragon sculpture. Candace rose his head and looked at the black dragon ranking and nodded as he laughed: “To tell the truth, that chink’s strength isn’t bad. However, he’s dreaming if he wants to charge into the top 100 in his first month!”

“A rookie charging into the top 100 in the first month; it’s time for someone from the EU to do that. Today is the 28th, and Luo Feng hunts on the odd days, so he indeed has no hope left” smiled William.

Candace also laughed heartily.

Suddenly——

“It changed”

“Luo Feng’s ranking raised”

“Weird, today is the 28th so Luo Feng can’t hunt today, how did his ranking rise again?” a bunch of students spectating were astonished.

Candace and William, these two blonde youths, raised their heads and looked; they also froze in surprisement.

Luo Feng’s ranking actually went from #102 to #98.

“Today is the 28th, how did this Luo Feng raise his rank? Did

someone do a staked match with him with battle points as the wager?" Candace seemed like he just saw a ghost, "Impossible!"

"Impossible, how did he raise his rank today?" William couldn't believe this either.

It doesn't matter whether they believe or not, because this is the truth!

Actually, Luo Feng just passed the second floor's A grade exam, which caused his tower of trials level to raise from 2.2 to 2.3. Because of this, his ranking rose slightly.

Time passed minute by minute, the students were all discussing the ranking. Luo Feng's current rank was at #98.

10:56 PM.

"Damn!"

"omg!"

"Oh lord"

All the students were flabbergasted.

Candace and William were dumbfounded as they looked at the

new ranking——NO. 82 Luo Feng (570403), from #98 to #82, isn't this jump a bit too crazy. At that time, the nearly 100 students gathered there were all in an uproar: this jump was just too huge.

"Cheater!"

"I bet he did a staked match with someone and had battle points as the wager! Someone purposefully gave Luo Feng battle points through the staked match!" yelled a student immediately, "Cheater"

Some students just couldn't believe that Luo Feng, who didn't go to the wilderness today, could have such a gigantic increase in ranking.

"He didn't cheat, Luo Feng is in the training room right now!" a phrase of English rose.

"He's in the training room right now, we saw him enter"

said a group of white and black youths, male and female, that came from the direction of the Nine Grand Floors. The arguing genius students quieted down one by one. Actually, only an extremely small amount of people yelled 'cheater'; only a very small amount of these 180 or so geniuses are envious.

"Luo Feng entered the training room at 10:20 PM. Right when I finished, it was his turn" said a black youth.

“Rebecca, Luo Feng was after you?” a white youth walked over.

“Yes” the black youth nodded.

“Oh, so Luo Feng was in the training room. Looks like he raised his tower of trials level, which raised his ranking”

all of these students were looking forward to this, since only five genius students were able to charge into the top 100 within their first month in the history of the training camp. However, the earliest case was 20 years ago while the latest was 8 years ago. Something like this hasn’t happened in the training camp for a while.

And this time, it seemed like Luo Feng was about to make a miracle.

“In March, Luo Feng was last place on the black dragon ranking, so he only has an hour in the training room” laughed a yellow skinned middle aged man, “It’ll be 11:20 soon. At that time, no matter what, he’ll be kicked out the virtual space for sure. Fellow students, let’s see how the ranking changes at 11:20 PM”

It was currently 11:18.....

19.....

20!

Candace and William, the two blonde youths, stared at the ranking.

“It won’t raise, it won’t raise anymore” repeated Candace to himself in his heart.

Updated!

11:20 PM sharp, the ranking updated once again——

NO.68 Luo Feng (570403)

Chapter 25: Turmoil

Even during the night, the names on the black dragon sculpture that was around 20 stories high were clear.

And in this moment, the nearly 100 students and some wargod teachers under the black dragon sculpture all looked at that name with astonishment——"NO. 68 Luo Feng (570403)". Everyone knew that it was 11:20 PM right now, which was very close to midnight.

All the students that went out to hunt also returned, which means that the chances of this ranking changing were very, very small.

In other words——

It's basically a fact that Luo Feng will be #68 on April's ranking.

"This is huge!"

"Where did this messed up Luo Feng pop out of"

"Oh lord!"

Even the calmest people were stunned by this name: the ranking #68 itself isn't much, but it's different for a student that achieved the rank of #68 in his first month. The significance of this is way

greater than an old student that has been in the training camp for 4 or 5 years achieving rank #1!

"Impossible, #68?" disbelief filled Candace's dark eyes.

He didn't want to believe this!

"Candace" whispered William on the side.

"Bullshit!" Candace whispered, "From now on, don't mess with this Luo Feng"

"Okay" nodded William.

"What bullshit luck" cursed Candace. A chink that he disliked achieved #68 in his first month; how could he be happy? But no matter how unhappy he became..... logic told Candace that he was just letting his feelings get the better of him; he didn't have a huge grudge against Luo Feng that he would hold to the death.

He'll just hold in his anger, not mess with Luo Feng, and pretend Luo Feng doesn't exist!

"This Luo Feng is going to become great"

"He sure is" said a chubby yellow skinned youth, "Only five people in the history of the training camp charged into the top 100, and the most recent case of that was eight years ago. And Luo Feng

didn’t just simply charge into the top 100, he’s #68!”. Even though 98 and 68 are both in the top 100, the difference between them is gigantic.

Rank 68, compared to rank 98, is definitely way more powerful!

Everyone knew.....

That every country and powerful organization on earth paid attention to talented people. If someone like Luo Feng was ignored, then that would be weird! Luo Feng with his rank 68 is even more important than the person ranked first! Do we even need to explain how he’s going to be treated?

.....

In a residential apartment three km away.

“Holy shit!”

The eyes of the sturdy man with short, dyed blonde hair widened as he looked at the ranking on the screen. He stared at the name that was rank 68, ‘Luo Feng’, and widened his eyes even more. As the captain of this squad of informants, he clearly knew all the information about the students here. He knew exactly.....

about the significance of Luo Feng achieving rank 68.

“Hurry, contact the boss!” the sturdy man’s face was fierce.

“Captain, it’s not even midnight yet” giggled a girl wearing revealing clothes.

“Fucking hurry up and contact the boss! RIGHT NOW!!!” the sturdy man glared. All of a sudden, the girl that was just giggling realized the weight of the current situation and immediately started to contact their boss.

.....

“****!”

“This genius is from China. Contact the general, I want to speak with the general immediately”

.....

“#68?”

“He’s only 19 years old and came from a normal family; he didn’t even receive any special training when he was little”

“This Luo Feng is really messed up. Hurry, contact the head!” commanded a middle aged Chinese man.

.....

At this moment, all the organizations representing their respective country, major families, mercenaries, etc. in Hong Ning city were all reporting to their superiors after witnessing the latest update in the black dragon ranking in the training camp!

Someone who could place into the top 100 in a month is an absolute genius.

And #68 is even better.

And he's only 19!

.....

For the five great countries and the two powerful dojos, a fighter with a rapidly increasing fitness level are worthy to take note of, but by all means not someone to go out of their way for! For body fitness level, dragon blood and some other goods not revealed to the public.....

can all easily strengthen the body!

In other words, you can just use up large amounts of money to increase someone's body fitness level!

However, technique, fist strength level, etc. cannot be improved

like that. To improve those, you have to battle, train, and rely on your “experience” and “comprehension”! In terms of the elite training camp..... ‘battle ability amplifier’! Just a bit of your strength can be multiplied several times.

That is skill!

And Luo Feng clearly has a high battle ability amplifier!

******

Jiang-Nan headquarter city, main city sector.

Female dorms of Jiang-Nan university. One of the 602 rooms was Xu Xin’s. In this dorm was a public living room and four smaller rooms. One girl lived in each of the small rooms. A dorm like this in the Jiang-Nan sector is considered quite high class and you have to pay an extremely high amount of rent.

“Younger sis, I think that young master from the Wang family is pretty good. He’s also head over heels for you” said an extremely attractive mixed girl. She laughed as she lay on the sofa with a nice, hot cup of coffee in hand.

“Older sis, sister Xu Xin likes that Luo Feng, so don’t talk about that Wang family’s young master”

These four girls, including Xu Xin, were currently gossiping.

“Don’t talk about that anymore” frowned Xu Xin.

Xu Xin was clearly unhappy, so the other three girls just laughed and then didn’t say anything further. To be able to live in this dormitory shows that their families are special. However, Xu Xin’s family is still the best out of all of them.

“Hm!” Xu Xin randomly flipped through an economics textbook. However, her attention wasn’t on the book.

Xu Xin was annoyed!

She was annoyed because she’s at the age where she can get married already. In this age, many girls marry while they’re still college students. Xu Xin is from the Xu family and has a pretty high position. As a result, many people are chasing after her, and quite a few of these people were connected to the Xu family in some way.

Xu Xin has a tough personality but, especially the attitude of her family, there are too many things troubling her.

“Hm?” her phone rang.

“A call from brother?” Xu Xin held her phone with confusion. She entered her room and closed the door before picking up.

Xu Gang's figure appeared on the screen of the cell phone.

"Brother, what is it?" asked Xu Xin in a confused tone.

"Great news, GREAT NEWS!" Xu Gang was smiling brightly on the screen of the cell phone, "Hey, sister, your eye for people is really extraordinary..... this Luo Feng did something absolutely amazing"

Xu Xin was still confused as she asked: "What thing? Oh, you mean entering the top 100 of the elite training camp's ranking?"

"Not just a simple top 100, but #68!" Xu Gang was delighted, "This news spread like a hurricane; which HR alliance family doesn't know about this? All the five great countries and headquarter cities know about this too. At least for this moment, every major organization on earth is talking about Luo Feng!"

Xu Xin didn't hear what Xu Gang said after.

She only knew one thing——

Luo Feng is ranked 68.

Xu Xin wasn't a simple, normal girl; she knew a lot. So, she absolutely knew what this rank means!

"Sister, the family completely approves of the relationship

between you and Luo Feng. Not just our parents, but even our grandparents' generation completely approve of you and Luo Feng!" Xu Gang smiled as he said that. Naturally, the people who make the decisions in the Xu family are the people in their grandparents' generation.

Xu Xin didn't know whether to curse or to laugh after hearing this: this is what a major family is like!

"Oh, understood" Xu Xin nodded.

"Damn, not excited at all?" laughed Xu Gang.

"Hehe" Xu Xin squeezed out a smile, "Happy now, bro?"

The call was soon finished.

Xu Xin's smile widened: "Now there's nothing left to worry about!". Since her family completely supports the relationship between her and Luo Feng, Xu Xin can just ignore all of those young masters bothering her. Without the influence of her family, Xu Xin wouldn't even care about those people.

"The storm is over!"

"Yeah"

Xu Xin sat in front of her notebook and contacted Luo Feng.

……

Hong-Ning headquarter city, elite training camp.

Luo Feng ran back to his pagoda like a beaten dog after hearing what his seniors Zhao Ruo and Shi Jiang said.

“Holy shit, I caused such a commotion after charging to rank #68?” Luo Feng recalled the moment just now where right when he walked out of the training room and especially out of the Nine Grand Floors….. he was ‘attacked on all sides’. Students came to congratulate him and quite a few students representing their respective organizations came to send their invitations.

Invitation after invitation…..

Their conditions were amazingly great!

Virtually all of them offered over 10 billion per year! This is definitely an astronomical price only used when inviting an ‘advanced level wargod’. Right now, Luo Feng is enjoying better treatment than an ‘advanced level wargod’!

“Man, that training tower! It kicked me out the virtual space right when my one hour was up” Luo Feng sighed, “If I could stay in there for just a bit longer, then… hehe”. Truth be told, Luo Feng’s harvest in the tower of trials was immense.

The second floor of the tower of trials was extremely hard!

Initially, Luo Feng had no hope of passing the second floor's B grade exam: in just a short three minutes, he was killed three times! However, on the fourth time, Luo Feng managed to once again step into the state of the 'perfect level technique'. While in that state, Luo Feng coordinated his power and speed.

All of a sudden, he directly passed the B grade exam!

When that happened, Luo Feng's ranking jumped from #98 to #82! Jumped up by 16!

After that, the C grade exam!

When there was half a minute left from his one hour being up, an electronic sound suddenly reminded Luo Feng: 30 seconds remaining! With this reminder, Luo Feng was distracted for a slight moment..... PUCHI! Death! However, he can't just blame the virtual space's reminder, since the C grade exam was too hard.

Just a slight distraction ended up in his death!

However, Luo Feng still managed to receive a tower of trials level of 2.9, since Luo Feng was over half way done with the C grade exam.

When that happened——Luo Feng's rank jumped from #82 to #68.

“I maintained my perfect level technique state for the entire B and C grade exams, which is over 40 minutes. I guess I have finally entered the perfect level” Luo Feng was filled with joy inside. His true battle power would definitely multiply if his technique goes up by a level, or else how could he have easily passed the B grade exam and almost pass the C grade exam?

“BEEP BEEP!”

A sound carried over from the notebook; an invitation to video chat.

“Hm?” Luo Feng walked over and couldn’t help but to let out a smile as he sat down, “From Xu Xin?”

He immediately pressed ‘accept’.

A video appeared on the screen of his notebook, and it was indeed Xu Xin who was in it.

Chapter 26: Round Table Conference

Candace's pagoda, study room.

After taking a shower, Candace sat in front of his notebook, which has long received two video chat invitations. Candace took a glance: one invitation was from the Paulinus family's headquarters while another was from his aunt Venina※Paulinus who was currently living in China.

He pressed 'accept' on his aunt's invitation.

"Aunt" smiled Candace as he yelled.

"Candace, my precious, how are you?" said Venina passionately.

Candace and his aunt were quite close. His parents haven't been on good terms with each other ever since he was little, so they soon divorced. Venina was the one who raised Candace…… to Candace, Venina is more of a mother than an aunt. The only reason he has his current power is because of his aunt's guidance.

"Baby, it seems like you aren't doing that well?" said Venina.

"Yeah, kind of" nodded Candace.

"Because of Luo Feng, the family isn't very happy about you right now" smiled Venina. Candace couldn't help but to curse: "I knew

those old guys would pick on this. Towards the end of last month, the family asked me to invite Luo Feng. Yeah, I rejected this proposition. But even if I asked, I wouldn't have succeeded anyway; that Luo Feng already rejected every single invitation he received"

At the end of March, which was when Luo Feng just entered the training camp, the Paulinus family of the HR alliance initially wanted to invite Luo Feng.

However, Candace and William weren't on good terms with Luo Feng, so how could Candace agree to personally inviting Luo Feng?

"Those guys just want to make a big deal out of everything you do" Venina said carelessly, "You don't have to worry about that"

"All my brothers are staring at my position and are hoping that I make a big mistake so that they can raise their chances of becoming the successor" sneered Candace.

The internal struggles in large families like the Paulinus family were quite cruel.

"Baby, no worries. Your aunt is definitely supporting you" smiled Venina, "And there are quite a few people in the family supporting you too. You're already in the world's best training camp, so you are performing quite well. No worries baby, once you graduate from the training camp and gain some experience, you'll naturally be able to control the entire family"

“Okay” nodded Candace.

“Your ranking is quite high, so keep working at it and try to charge into the top 30 this year” encouraged Venina.

“I will try my best” nodded Candace.

Candace’s aunt and uncle were his biggest supporters.

“Your aunt has a request for you” Venina’s face wasn’t looking too good.

“What request?” asked Candace in a confused tone.

Venina sighed: “You know that your brother was killed”

“Yeah” Candace knew about that.

“I want you to try and pay attention to this Luo Feng while you’re at the training camp. If he turns out to be a spirit reader, tell me as soon as possible” said Venina. This Luo Feng’s performance attracted Venina and Li Yao’s attention too, which was why they asked Candace to help.

“Spirit reader?” Candace was astonished, “Aunt, you think Luo Feng might be the culprit?”

Of course Candace knew about the astronomical bounty.

“If he’s a spirit reader, then he’s probably the culprit” nodded Venina.

“The possibility of him being a spirit reader isn’t too big” frowned Candace, “However, aunt, don’t worry, I’ll pay attention to him”

******

For the first 28 days of April, competition was intense. However, now that the ranking was set, the students could relax on the last two days.

29th, 8 AM. In a small practicing hall on the second floor of the Nine Grand Floors.

“Senior”

“Senior”

Luo Feng already greeted three other students when entering the practicing hall and now two other students came in. In all, there were six people: four of them were Chinese and two of them were white. And there were three girls out of the six, taking up half the group.

Considering the male to female ratio in the training camp, it's quite astonishing that there were three girls in a group of six.

"Luo Feng, you actually charged to #68, nice bro!" a tall, buff Chinese youth laughed as he gave a thumbs up, "Just one word——nice"

An orange haired white girl smiled as she looked at Luo Feng and a bunch of fluent Chinese left her mouth, "In the entire training camp, tons of people were talking about you in the cafeteria this morning. In the past, I didn't realize how great you were. I want to learn from you, so can we train together this afternoon?"

"Janet, you've set your eyes on Luo Feng?" another white girl laughed, "Luo Feng, Janet is asking you on a date, don't miss this chance"

"So what if I have?" frowned Janet.

"Oh"

"Haha, Luo Feng, hurry up and grab your chance" the others were in an uproar. There were very few female students in the training camp and the male students were willing to marry the other female students. Everyone in the elite training camp is basically guaranteed to become a wargod. If two wargods marry, their children's future will be bright.

Luo Feng froze.

The girls from the West were even more bold than the ones from the East. Teacher Jiang Fang had six students total. Since she was Chinese, she usually only accepted Chinese people as her students..... occasionally, she would accept students from other countries or headquarter cities, but typically females only!

“Teacher”

“Teacher”

Jiang Fang, wearing a purple training uniform, smiled as she walked in from the door, “Today’s the 29th and all six of you are here. Hm..... Luo Feng, good job, really good job”

This blade technique class lasted until 10:30.

Everybody left one by one.

“Luo Feng, wait a bit” spoke Jiang Fang. The other five students left, so only Luo Feng and Jiang Fang were in the practice hall.

“Teacher” Luo Feng looked at Jiang Fang with confusion.

Jiang Fang smiled as she looked at Luo Feng; she smiled so much that her eyes became two lines. It truly is a joyful thing for a teacher to be able to teach such a great student. Jiang Fang spoke softly: “Luo Feng, you’re only 19 years old and yet you were able to

charge to #68 in your first month. You also came from a poor background and received no special training..... I can imagine that all the organizations around the world will offer you amazing things”

“Yeah” nodded Luo Feng.

“However, your teacher is going to remind you something” said Jiang Fang.

“Please” Luo Feng was curious, what would Jiang Fang remind him?

Jiang Fang said: “This elite training camp was started by the Dojo of Limits. Even though the HR alliance, the dojos, and all the countries have a deal that they can all fight over the geniuses fairly, the Dojo of Limits won’t easily allow them to join other organizations. So I’m also going to ask you to not join another organization and stay with the Dojo of Limits”

Even though Luo Feng was already a member of the Dojo of Limits.

There’s no saying whether or not he’ll stay in the Dojo of Limits forever. For example, he has the right to accept another organization’s invitation after entering the elite training camp.

“Why?” asked Luo Feng.

“Because the Dojo of Limits will offer you the best conditions” smiled Jiang Fang.

“The best?” Luo Feng was curious.

Smaller powers usually offer better conditions to try and get their target to accept.

And the Dojo of Limits has the best offer?

“Of course” nodded Jiang Fang, “Because our head is the world’s strongest fighter, he obtains the most treasures from the archaeological ruins! Also, the only supplier of the dragon blood in today’s market is our head”

Luo Feng blinked twice.

Listening to what Jiang Fang said.....

The head, ‘Hong’, is the richest man on earth.

“Just wait, in around a day or two, the higher ups will probably summon you” said Jiang Fang.

*****

Virtual space.

In a large conference room. The floor was silver, the wall was silver, and the gigantic round table was silver! Only the six chairs were pure black, a kind of black that seems as if it could swallow up all other colors. Right now, on the chairs encircling the table……

sat five people in white robes.

The ceiling of the conference room was an infinite, boundless starry sky.

Out of the five white robed men, three of them were Chinese, one of them was white, and one of them was black.

“Here is Luo Feng’s data”

“His tower of trials level is 2.9 and his fist strength level is 2.8, so his battle ability amplifier is 8.12, which is ‘superior'” said a white robed Chinese man. 1-2 is beginner, 2-4 is intermediate, 4-8 is advanced, 8-16 is superior. Luo Feng just stepped into the range of superior.

A white robed black man nodded: “His battle score from hunting monsters is comparable to the old students that have been in the training camp for three years already. His battle ability amplifier is superior; even though he just entered that range, it’s comparable to the average fourth year student. Combining the two, he’s ranked 68”

“Investigator Wang, I agree with inviting Luo Feng, but the conditions you’re offering.....”

“Vladimir, I think my offer isn’t high”

These five white robed men were discussing here.

If some wargods from the Dojo of Limits saw this, they would surely be extremely excited. Because this is the legendary discussion of the highest level——the round table conference! Only six people had the right to participate in the round table conference——the head, ‘Hong’, and the five big investigators. The five big investigators were all existences surpassing the wargod level!

The head and the five big investigators make up the highest level of authority in the Dojo of Limits.

Any one of them could make a country tremble in fear.

Usually, the five big investigators hold the round table conference together; the head himself rarely participates. Since the five big investigators are usually spread out around the world, they usually hold this round table conference in the virtual space. Naturally, other wargods have only heard of this round table conference but have never witnessed it.

“Five investigators!” an electronic sound rang.

Silence.

The five investigators raised their heads towards the sky. From the starry sky above the conference room, five documents floated down and one landed in front of each investigator. The electronic sound continued: “This is the head’s decision on Luo Feng’s matter. If you have any objections, you can report to the head. If there aren’t any objections, then carry this decision out”

“Any objections” asked the electronic sound.

“No” “No” “No” “No” “No”

The five investigators quickly flipped through the documents and swiftly gave their reply.

“Then, investigator Wang, please execute this decision immediately!” said the electronic sound.

Chapter 27: Summons

The last day of April, morning. There was a drizzle outside and it was a bit cool.

Hong-Nin headquarter city, a quiet, ancient-styled pagoda in the elite training camp.

Jiang Fang, who was wearing white clothes, sat cross legged in the training room. She breathed in and out deeply and slowly. In the process, Jiang Fang started sweating from every part of her body and her skin was slightly red. Suddenly, a long flute sound rang, causing Jiang Fang to open her eyes.

“Who would call at this time?” Jiang Fang got up with confusion and walked bare footed across the training room, towards her cell phone in the corner.

She looked at the name displayed on the cell phone.

Jiang Fang’s face changed and immediately changed her attitude by quite a bit: “Investigator Wang!”

“Jiang Fang, go contact your student Luo Feng and bring him to me” a slightly hoarse sound carried out from the cell phone.

“Yes” replied Jiang Fang.

After hanging up, Jiang Fang let out a smile: “Like I thought, the higher ups are going to find Luo Feng. Well yeah, we haven’t seen a student that charged into the top 100 in his first month for eight years already, and Luo Feng’s #68”. The summons from the higher ups were entirely in her predictions. After that, Jiang Fang dialed Luo Feng’s phone number.

“BEEP——BEEP——BEEP——”

This person is currently busy.

“Hm?”

“How come he’s not picking up” Jiang Fang frowned and put her cell phone away. She changed clothes and started to walk towards Luo Feng’s place.

******

Jiang-Nan pagoda, in Luo Feng’s underground training room.

Luo Feng was shirtless and barefooted; he was only wearing long pants. At this time, he was completely drenched in sweat and his hair was completely wet.

“CHOP!” In this five meter long and wide underground training room, Luo Feng’s feet moved and charged forward like lightning. At the same time, he chopped with his bare right hand. “CHI” The air made a paper tearing-like sound which was followed by a sonic

boom. And after chopping with his right hand, Luo Feng used the momentum to take a step back.

Luo Feng's spiritual force clearly felt his chop splitting the air like water, which caused a powerful sonic boom.

His hand was like a real blade and each chop surpassed the speed of sound.

In this alloyed training room, Luo Feng's figure was sometimes blurry and sometimes clear. Each of his steps were astonishingly fast and his hand attacked the air like a real blade. Each and every one of his attacks were exploding with 2.8x their original force.

After punching a thousand times, your technique becomes natural.

This is one of the phrases that Jiang Fang has said. Jiang Fang said that whether blade technique, technique, etc. the only way to improve is by practicing over and over again. If you just sit there and think, you won't improve no matter how much thinking you do.

Want to improve your technique?

Practice!

Want to improve your blade technique?

Practice!

Want to improve your fist strength level?

Practice!

Use your brain while practicing again and again over a long period of time. Only by doing this will you improve!

.....

Jiang Fang, who was wearing a black, loose training uniform made out of silk, held an umbrella as she arrived at Jiang-Nan pagoda.

“Luo Feng!” yelled Jiang Fang right when she arrived at the courtyard of Jiang-Nan pagoda.

A young girl with an umbrella in hand jumped off the second floor of the neighboring pagoda; she was precisely Zhao Ruo. Zhao Ruo giggled: “Teacher Jiang Fang, if you want to find Luo Feng, you could’ve just called. No need to personally come”

Whoosh!

In Luo Feng’s pagoda, a shadow appeared on the first floor and flew up the stairs: “Teacher, I’ll be down in a moment”

Zhao Ruo and Jiang Fang froze.

Both of them were experts with amazing vision. Of course they saw that Luo Feng was barefooted and only had long pants on.

“He sure is hard working; his body is drenched in sweat” praised Zhao Ruo, “His body is quite nice too, right teacher?”

“You little girl” laughed Jiang fang.

She actually got teased by this Zhao Ruo.

Zhao RUo made a funny face and giggled.

“Where’s Shi Jiang, he’s not here?” asked Jiang Fang.

“Senior Shi Jiang went to the Nine Grand Floors this morning. Unlike us, he gets a ton of time in the training room and archaeological gravity room” Zhao Ruo shook her head and purposefully sighed, “How sad. In one or two years, Luo Feng will probably charge into the top 10. When compared to them, I’m so pitiful!”

Jiang Fang laughed: “If you want to improve, then you better start thinking”

At this time, Luo Feng, wearing a casual outfit, charged

downstairs with an umbrella in hand: “Teacher”

“Come with me” said Jiang Fang.

Luo Feng obediently held his umbrella and left Jiang-Nan pagoda with Jiang Fang.

Walking in a fog filled training camp had a different taste to it.

Jiang Fang glanced at Luo Feng and smiled: “Luo Feng, investigator Wang wants to see you”

“Investigator?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Investigator: That’s the title of the absolute top of the Dojo of Limits. Rumors say that the head and the five big investigators make all the decisions in the Dojo of Limits! As the strongest fighter on earth, the head can’t involve himself with many things, which is where the five big investigators come into play.

“I told you last time that the higher ups want to meet you, didn’t I?” laughed Jiang Fang.

“Teacher, what should I be aware of when meeting this investigator?” Luo Feng was a bit nervous.

He’s an investigator after all!

An existence standing at the peak of humanity with extraordinary strength. Luo Feng has only took a glance of 'Zhu Xi' from far away back at wargod Xu Gang's memorial. At that time, all the big figures from the government and wargods were all extremely polite to him.

"Don't worry, you're not going to beg him for anything. And the Dojo is the one that wants to recruit you" Jiang Fang lightly described, "So, don't be too nervous. I believe that when investigator Wang sees you, even if he doesn't smile, he won't be acting like investigators usually do"

"You just have to watch your attitude a bit and don't get cocky. Just treat him like you would treat a senior or a teacher" said Jiang Fang.

"Oh" nodded Luo Feng.

As he followed Jiang Fang, he quickly arrived at the wargod teachers' residential area. While there, he discovered a seemingly normal, quiet villa. This villa had a Tang dynasty style to it. The only thing particularly different about this villa when compared to the other wargods' villas was..... it took up a bit more space.

"Teacher Jiang Fang, Mr. Investigator is currently waiting for you and student Luo Feng" at the gate of the villa, an old butler smiled as he said that.

After entering through the gate.

Luo Feng glanced and saw three women currently chatting in the lobby of the villa.

“Hey, it’s Jiang” one of the women that had nice skin and gave off an aristocratic aura smiled, “Old Wang is waiting in the guest room upstairs. Old Wang just said..... let that Luo Feng kid go up alone. Jiang, come and chat with us. We can play mahjong later?”

“Yea Jiang, don’t just train all the time” said another woman.

These types of women are usually the family of wargod teachers.

“You go up first” said Jiang Fang.

“Okay”

Luo Feng went up the stairs alone. When he arrived at the second floor, he smelled a faint, yet relaxing, smell of tea. Following the smell, he easily arrived at the guest room’s door.

The door was left open.

“Come in” a hoarse voice rang.

Luo Feng walked into the guest room and instantly saw the only other person in the room —— a skinny man that was sitting cross legged. He had a moustache and seemed to be around 40 years old. From his looks you could tell that he was quite handsome when he

was young. At this moment, this skinny man's eyes were closed and had prayer beads in one hand.

A tea cup was placed on the table in front of him.

"Mr. Investigator" Luo Feng slightly bowed.

The skinny man slightly opened his eyes. As he was being stared at, Luo Feng felt like his body left this world. The guest room was just this simple room, and this skinny man was like the 'spirit' of this room; the pressure he gave off was enough to suffocate Luo Feng.

"Sit!" the skinny man pointed in front of the table.

There weren't any chairs in this room, how does he sit?

Luo Feng could only copy investigator Wang and sit cross legged on the floor.

"Carefully look through the contract in front of you. If there isn't any problem, sign it" said investigator Wang quietly. After that, he closed his eyes again and rubbed his prayer beads.

On the table was a contract that was made up of three papers total.

Luo Feng took and carefully examined them.

Unlike normal contracts, this was an official recruitment contract of the Dojo of Limits. For example, when a regular fighter joins the Dojo of Limits, they receive no salary, just like Luo Feng from the past! Even though they have no salary, the Dojo of Limits doesn't request much from them.

However, this contract was different!

There was authority and money! But there was also responsibility!

"Five billion chinese dollars a year?" Luo Feng slightly frowned. This price wasn't high; in fact, it was quite low.

A beginner level wargod could make this much money in a year.

And Luo Feng is currently treated better than advanced level wargods. None of the other organizations that invited him offered a price lower than 10 billion chinese dollars.

"Huh....."

"According to this contract, only an extremely small amount of people in the Dojo of Limits have a salary?" in the contract, there were lots of information about salaries. Even the highest position, the 'investigator', only receives 10 billion a year.

The Dojo of Limits doesn't pay that much.

However, people usually don't join the Dojo of Limits for money!

"Huh?"

Luo Feng's eyes flashed when he flipped to the third page.

"If your battle ability amplifier reaches 12 by August 1, 2057, you will be eligible to receive a Q series battle uniform set, a full collection of weapons, any complete instruction manual, and one portion of dragon blood worth 80 billion"

"If your battle ability amplifier reaches 12 within the range of August 1, 2057——January 1st, 2058, you will be eligible to receive a Q series battle uniform set, a full collection of weapons, and a drop of chrysoprase worth 30 billion.

"If your battle ability amplifier reaches 16 by January 1st, 2060, you will be eligible to receive a SS rank battle uniform set, a full collection of weapons, any three complete instruction manuals, one portion of dragon blood worth 80 billion, and one set of 'Black God' from the archaeological ruins"

"If your……"

Chapter 28: Renewable

There were five rewards in total. Each of the rewards were quite attractive.

But the requirements for them were very high too.

“Battle ability amplifier of 12?” Luo Feng sighed, “Someone with a battle ability amplifier of 12 could easily stay within the top 20”. After reading the student notice file and talking with older students like Shi Jiang and Zhao Ruo, Luo Feng understood how difficult it was to raise your battle ability amplifier.

1-2 is beginner… 4-8 is advanced, and 8-16 is superior!

You can say that there are times where none of the students in the camp have a battle ability amplifier surpassing 16!

In other words, a battle amplifier of 14 to 15 is enough to get into the top 5.

Reach 13 and you normally can get into the top 10.

Reach 12 and you normally can get into the top 20.

This is an estimated standard.

“The rewards are astonishing but the requirements are strict!

This third line offers so many rewards if I can reach a battle ability amplifier of 16 before January 1st of 2060. If you translate it into terms of cash, the price would be incredibly high". Even existences surpassing the wargod level would be reluctant to spend that much money for those things!

"However, it expects me to reach a battle ability amplifier of 16 in just less than three years" Luo Feng felt pressured.

It's hard to say whether or not any student in the training camp has a battle ability amplifer of 16 right now.

However……

There were still students that graduated with a battle ability amplifier of 16 in the history of the training camp.

"The closest rewards to me right now are the ones requiring me to reach a battle ability amplifier of 12". The earlier he reaches that level, the more rewards he'll receive. If he can reach it by August 1st, he'll also receive a shocking amount of rewards. If he reaches it by the end of the year, the rewards will be a bit lower.

If he reaches it next year or even the year after that, there'll be no rewards at all.

"Finished reading yet?" the hoarse sound rose.

On the opposite side of the tea table, investigator Wang looked at

Luo Feng.

“Finished” Luo Feng nodded.

“Any problems?” said investigator Wang emotionlessly.

Luo Feng said respectfully: “Mr. Investigator, I have a question. Can I change one of the rewards to an elixir of life worth 30 billion if they are equal in cost?”

His brother Luo Hua needs an elixir of life to grow his legs out again, and he has no idea when the next auction will be for it.

He might as well try to get it from the Dojo of Limits.

“No changes!” investigator Wang shook his head slightly, “No changes to any part of this contract”

“No changes to any part of this contract?” Luo Feng was shocked.

They shouldn’t be this forceful when discussing a contract, especially when the Dojo of Limits is the one that’s inviting him. Since an investigator showed himself, the Dojo is clearly trying to show that they truly want him to join.

“Student Luo Feng, this contract was personally formed by the head himself. So, other than the head, nobody has the right to change it” spoke investigator Wang.

“Head? Hong?”

Luo Feng froze.

Luo Feng’s generation grew up listening to the legends of Hong: the #1 fighter, the richest man, the person who stands at the top of the world!

Hong actually was the one who made this contract; no wonder this investigator didn’t have the right to change it.

“You really want an elixir of life?” investigator Wang examined the young man in front of him.

“Yes” nodded Luo Feng.

“This isn’t hard. According to schedule, there should be an auction for the elixir of life in the second half of this year. At that time, you can just attend the auction” investigator Wang rubbed his prayer beads as he said that. His voice was hoarse and he spoke extremely slowly. Talking with him made one unknowingly fall into his meditative atmosphere.

“The second half of this year?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to be shocked.

Investigator Wang said expressionlessly: “This elixir of life isn’t

any rare thing in the first place. If it wasn't for the American army attempting to trick other people and organizations, there wouldn't be any reason for having an auction" in front of Luo Feng, investigator Wang didn't even attempt to keep this secret.

"Not something rare?" Luo Feng was flabbergasted, "Isn't the main ingredient for this the soul of the existence that surpasses the horde leader level——the emperor level 'Earth Dragon' and then....."

"Who did you hear this from?" asked investigator Wang calmly.

"The internet" Luo Feng froze.

Investigator Wang took up the tea cup in front of him and lightly sipped before saying, "How could they reveal the secret used to make the elixir of life? The American army is just using the internet to help raise the price of the elixir of life and to make everyone think that this thing is so rare. They intentionally created these rumors to make it seem more valuable"

"Rumors?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Remember" investigator Wang looked at Luo Feng, "Almost all the treasures on the internet that regular fighters know about can be produced; they all have a set price! Even if you purposefully auction them out, they won't reach any high price"

"Producible?"

Investigator Wang slightly nodded: “Producible, which means that these treasures can be produced if enough money is invested! For example, the ‘elixir of life’ is actually a potion. After putting in tons of energy and materials, it can be created from a piece of medical equipment that the American army retrieved from an archaeological ruin!”

Luo Feng froze.

So medical equipment from long ago could produce these types of medicine.

“As long as they invest a lot, they’ll be able to create another portion. So tell me, can this potion sell for an astronomical price?” investigator Wang slightly laughed, “For example, the dragon blood worth 80 billion, do you actually believe..... that it’s the blood from the heart of an emperor level ‘dragon’?”

“Right now, around the entire earth, fewer than 10 emperor level dragon monsters exist!”

“However, our Dojo of Limits is still selling them! As long as you have money, our Dojo of Limits can sell you some” said investigator Wang, “Even if you want to buy 10 portions, we can sell them to you. Tell me..... if there are less than 10 dragons around the world, where does this dragon blood come from?”

Yeah.

Even if you kill all of the dragons, you won't have 10 portions of dragon blood. But the Dojo of Limits is still able to sell them!

"This dragon blood, is still actually dragon blood"

"The dragon blood our Dojo provides could even be slightly more effective than the dragon blood from the blood of the heart of an emperor level dragon!" said investigator Wang, "However, only the head can create this dragon blood. This isn't much of a secret"

Luo Feng nodded in understanding. Things with a clear price label on them, even though they're precious, can be produced.

As long as you invest money and resources, they are producible!

"True treasures, like unique treasures that can never be created again, are the truly expensive things!" said investigator Wang, "However, you won't find information about such treasures on the internet. Things like that aren't even sold publicly and won't appear in auctions either. For example, there are around a dozen things on this world that can strengthen your body"

"But the only one with a price label on it is dragon blood"

"And even though some of the other body enhancing treasures aren't producible, they might not be as effective as dragon blood!"

“And some of them are even more effective than dragon blood!”

“Dragon blood allows someone’s strength to multiply by a few times. Some treasures can multiply your strength by three or four times, while some can multiply it by 10 times. However, a treasure like that has been consumed around 20 years ago; there’s none left on earth anymore”

Luo Feng was stunned as he listened.

So these treasures were divided into the categories ‘Producible’’ and ‘Non-producible’. The truly valuable, unique treasures will never appear in public auctions. Existences like ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’ have more money than they can spend. Whether with their fists or with cash, they’ll be able to get that treasure right away.

Who would sell them publicly?

“No wonder the rewards in the Dojo of Limits are so good”

“The dragon blood is from our Dojo of Limits. Instruction manuals? They seem extremely expensive, but the Dojo itself is selling them too. As for the battle uniform, the Dojo only has to pay for its cost”. Even though Luo Feng understood everything, the rewards were still quite high. Dragon blood definitely isn’t created out of thin air: you need to invest in it.

Battle uniforms, etc. need materials too. Just the cost to produce

them is extremely high.

“This contract is unchangeable. Are you willing to sign it?” investigator Wang let out a rare smile.

“Yes”

Luo Feng nodded and immediately signed the contract.

“Sign again here” investigator Wang handed over another identical contract, “Keep one for yourself. The Dojo will keep the other one”

******

After signing the contract, Luo Feng is officially a member of the core of the Dojo of Limits. For now, he’ll receive five billion a year.

As of now, his primary goal is——

To try and reach a battle ability amplifier of 12 before August 1st.

“If I succeed, I’ll receive a portion of dragon blood!”. Dragon blood can instantly multiply a person’s strength. Your training speed will increase too. What Luo Feng needs the most right now is a higher body fitness level. The stronger his body becomes, the stronger his spiritual force becomes!

Becoming an advanced level wargod level spirit reader is Luo Feng's true goal!

And dragon blood can speed up this process by many times!

.....

April 30th, night, first floor of the training camp's cafeteria.

Students of all skin color were split up into groups and sat with each other as they ate dinner.

"Luo Feng, seems like you're in a good mood" smiled Zhao Ruo.

"Not bad" grinned Luo Feng.

One reason is because of the contract, and another reason is because he found out that the 'elixir of life' is a renewable resource. If so, then he wouldn't have to worry about being unable to buy it with money!

"Everyone, everyone"

Suddenly, a deep sound echoed around the cafeteria.

All the students looked over and saw a Chinese wargod teacher yelling with a face full of excitement: "Here's a piece of good news

for you all. Before this year's 'Life and Death Adventure' begins, which is on August 1st, the head of our Dojo of Limits, the world's strongest fighter 'Hong', will personally come to the training camp"

"What!"

"omg!"

"It's Hong, it's Hong, Hong!"

The entire cafeteria went into an uproar. Students from all sorts of different places around the world started yelling with excitement, their faces filled with joy.

Hong!

As of now, Hong is like a god on this world.

No matter which country, which area, which fighter, and even regular people, they all knew this one name——Hong! Everyone knew the world's strongest fighter is 'Hong'!

"Hong"

"Lord"

Some black people even started dancing in excitement. All the students stood up and started discussing. Holy, even in the elite training camp, meeting 'Hong' is extremely difficult. Usually, Hong visits the training camp once every few years. Who knew that Hong will be coming this summer.

"Luo Feng, it's Hong" Zhao Ruo pulled Luo Feng and jumped with excitement, "I've never seen Hong in the three years I've been here"

"Yea, yea" Luo Feng was also excited inside.

He must personally see this #1 person on earth.

"August 1st, before the Life and Death adventure?" Luo Feng was excited, "Okay, I'll work hard and raise my battle ability amplifer to 12! I still have three months!"

Today: April 31st.

There were indeed still three more months until August 1st. If Luo Feng wanted to receive a portion of dragon blood, he won't have time to relax for even a moment in the next three months.

Chapter 29: Three Months

Luo Feng was ranked 68 on April's ranking, which means he can only hunt monsters in the wilderness on the even days and stay in the camp during the odd days in May.

May 1st, around 4 PM.

The elevator door opened with a "DING" on the first floor of the Nine Grand Floors.

"Hm, yea, Luo Feng, your blade technique has lots of hope. You just entered the second state, so what you need to do now is stabilize it there until it's almost perfect!" Jiang Fang walked out of the elevator door with Luo Feng, Janet, etc.

Luo Feng nodded as if he had his own plans ready: "Understood, teacher"

"Keep working at it!" Jiang Fang smiled as she encouraged.

After walking out of the gate of the Nine Grand Floors, Jiang Fang directly headed towards her living quarters. Luo Feng, Janet, and another Chinese youth also prepared to head towards their respective buildings.

"Janet"

“Janet”

The repeated yells caused the three to stop and turn their heads. What they saw was the blond youth Candace who had quite the feeling of a gentleman to him. He swiftly charged out of the lobby of the first floor and smiled as he looked at Janet: “Janet, do you have any time tonight? If so, we could eat dinner together”

Luo Feng heard and said to himself: so he’s just trying to pick up girls.

There were very few female students in the elite training camp, so tons of people were chasing after each one.

“Oh, sorry, I’m going to eat dinner with Luo Feng tonight” Janet smiled sweetly and wrapped around Luo Feng’s left arm.

Candace’s expression froze.

Luo Feng froze too.

“Senior” Luo Feng looked at Janet. Janet was indeed very pretty and had a nice body. Her skin was extremely white, like an angel’s. During class, Janet had hinted her intentions several times and even asked to go on dates. Even though he never accepted any of her invitations, this senior didn’t back down at all.

Western girls sure are brave.

But he already has Xu Xin.....

“Janet!” Candace was a bit angry.

“Sorry Candace” Janet smiled as she closely hugged Luo Feng’s arm and walked away.

Candace’s face was extremely horrible as he watched Luo Feng and Janet disappear at the corner ahead. At this time, another boy walked out of the lobby of the first floor: he was indeed William.

“Candace, I already told you but you aren’t willing to believe! Many students in the training camp already know that Janet is interested in Luo Feng; she even asks him to go on dates with her. It’s way easier for a girl to chase a guy. They probably already slept on the same bed together. Why are you still chasing after Janet!” said William with dissatisfaction.

“Bastard!”

Candace clenched his fists and his face was green.

There were barely any female students in the training camp in the first place, and beautiful girls were even rarer! Who knows how many male students have had their eyes on Janet ever since she entered the training camp. Candace was one of those guys too. First, he liked her looks. Second, if he had a wargod wife!

Then even more people in the Paulinus family would support him!

“This Luo Feng just had to have the same teacher as Janet. Since they’re together all day, there’s no helping the fact that they’ll end up together” William shook his head as he shrugged, “And teacher Jiang Fang usually only accepts Chinese people. Either that, or female students. Guys from the EU have no chance of becoming her students”

“I don’t believe that I won’t be able to get her!” Candace squinted and a cold light flashed across his eyes.

Anger!

If a regular student dared to fight with Candace, then he would naturally have his own tricks to use. And he has already been in the training camp for three years and is on his fourth. As an old student that has been here for four years, he’s considered quite special to be able to get to around rank 40! He is quite confident that he can get into the top 20 during his fifth year.

Candace really didn’t care about the average student.

“Luo Feng! Fighting over my woman!” Candace was green from rage.

“Hold it in! Hold it in!”

The Dojo of Limits intentionally spread around the information of Luo Feng joining them: this news has already spread to each major country and organization. Candace was clear that Luo Feng definitely will eventually become one of the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits. Even the Paulinus family has to be careful when dealing with such a figure.

So, Candace didn't dare to use his tactics.

"Hmph!"

Candace could only keep his anger to himself. Enduring is an ability a successor to a large family must learn!

"It's just fair competition. Janet will definitely become mine" mumbled Candace.

.....

Right when Luo Feng and Janet went around the corner, they split up.

"Senior, I already have a girlfriend" Luo Feng couldn't help but to admit that, in terms of looks, Janet was more beautiful than Xu Xin. In terms of strength and talent, Janet was a genius of geniuses.

"So what if you have a girlfriend. Even if you're married I'll still try to steal you over. Hmph, Luo Feng, your senior won't give up"

Janet smiled towards Luo Feng and headed towards her living quarters.

Luo Feng smacked his head.

Holy.....

How did he encounter such a senior.

“I’ll stop thinking about this. Yup. There’s around two more hours until dinner, so I’ll go back and work on my blade technique. My blade technique already has the feeling of a thunderbolt. According to what the teacher said, I should try to perfect my blade’s current state” Luo Feng immediately rushed back towards Jiang-Nan pagoda and studied his blade technique in his underground training room!

.....

To Luo Feng, the elite training camp was like a holy place to raise your strength. The best shortcuts to increasing your strength were here. Whenever you get confused about a concept, you can ask a teacher to clear things up. There’s even copied gravity rooms and training rooms designed to improve your blade technique, leading to a rapid increase in one’s skill.

Studying his blade technique, polishing up his technique, learning how to better control his power, working on the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》.

Every other day, he'll personally hunt monsters in the wilderness.

Luo Feng's every day was extremely helpful to him.

And Luo Feng always had a goal in mind: to reach a battle ability amplifer of 12 by August 1st! Although this goal was extremely, extremely difficult to reach. From the rewards given in the contract, one could understand just how difficult it would be to reach a battle ability amplifer of 12 in three months!

But no matter how hard it is, he has to go for it.

The only thing Luo Feng can do is make the most of his time and improve every day!

.....

Time flowed. With his entire body and mind immersed in the world of fighting, time passed quickly.

In a blink of an eye, it's already July.

In July, it was unbelievably hot, yet the nights had a hint of cold.

In Jiang-Nan pagoda, Luo Feng's study room.

A stick of incense was lit; the aroma that emanated around the quiet room was calming. Luo Feng himself was wearing a loose silk robe as he sat cross legged, Wu Xin Xiang Tian. He was currently absorbing energy for genetic energy to strengthen his body. Luo Feng's countless cells were swiftly working like a factory. After the energy went through the cells, it transformed into genetic energy.

The genes in the cells of a human change ever so slightly while absorbing genetic energy..... this change is extremely tiny, but it piles up over time. After a while, the body goes from fragile and weak to tougher than steel; its skin could even be firmer than diamonds. This is the amazing part of the human body.

After a while.....

Luo Feng opened his eyes.

"It's already July, July in just a blink of an eye" said Luo Feng to himself.

The Life and Death adventure begins on August.

The elite training camp allows the students to go home on January and February. For the other 10 months, nine of them are extremely safe, whether in the training camp or in the carefully watched #1001 city in the wilderness. In these nine months, deaths rarely occur.

The only dangerous month is August!

August is the month of the Life and Death adventure. At that time, all the students will have to leave the training camp, ride a plane towards a dangerous location, and adventure there for a month!

If these elite students don't train themselves on the border of life and death, they won't become great in the future. So the training camp especially took out the month of August to let all of these students train on the border of life and death! However, these students are quite powerful, so it'll be hard to kill them. Even so, there is still around a 10% chance of death for the students in the training camp.

"August is the Life and Death adventure, and it's already the first of July"

"I still have a month. However, my battle ability amplifier is only 8.96, still far away from 12!" Luo Feng frowned.

Actually, Luo Feng's improvement these two months was astonishing.

His blade technique 'thunderbolt' has completely formed already. His weapon is in the second state of 'expert' and almost perfect; even teacher Jiang Fang compliments him over and over!

His technique has completed stabilized in the perfect level.

The only thing that hasn't been making progress is his《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》's fourth stage. Even though Luo Feng is able to control his strength much more delicately, he still can't reach the fourth stage.

During May, Luo Feng's tower of trials level reached 3.0. As for the A grade exam of the third floor, Luo Feng couldn't even last ten seconds. Only until his blade technique formed and his perfect technique stabilized was he able to achieve a tower of trials level of '3.1' at the end of May.

June, also at the end of the month, Luo Feng's tower of trials level only reached 3.2.

So, Luo Feng's battle ability amplifier is 8.96.

To sum everything up, Luo Feng hasn't been able to pass the A grade exam of the third floor in these two months. Know that even wargod teacher 'Yang Hui' only has a tower of trials level of 3.2. To be able to reach this level is quite exceptional already. However, Luo Feng's greatest advantage is his fist strength level!

The《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》claims to be the world's best technique for force exertions.

Other instruction manuals, even rank SS or S ones...

even if you complete them, you'll only reach a multiplier of three

or four.

And a completed《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》gives a multiplier of seven! Right now, Luo Feng has reached a multiplier of 2.8, which is much stronger than many of the older students.

Even though Luo Feng isn't too satisfied with himself, he's quite famous in the training camp. Because in May, Luo Feng was ranked 56 on the black dragon ranking. In June, he charged all the way up to rank 48; the top 50! And Candace was only rank 40 during June.

Of course.....

For Luo Feng, his body fitness level was the thing that improved the most!

Chapter 30: Crazy Plan

Even though there were very few chances to use the archaeological gravity room in the training camp, its benefits were amazing! And every day, he had two hours to use the copied gravity room. Even though the copied gravity room could only go up to 3x gravity, you could use it for a long time.

So, Luo Feng's rate of improvement here was clearly faster than his rate of improvement in Jiang-Nan city.

At the end of March, Luo Feng's fist strength was 11,500 kg.

At the end of April, Luo Feng's fist strength reached 13,600 kg. In one month, it rose by 2,100 kg; he is clearly improving much faster than before.

At the end of May, Luo Feng's fist strength reached 16,500 kg. In one month, it rose by 2,900 kg. This was mainly because he had an extra hour to use the archaeological gravity room. With this one hour, he could split it into 20 minutes a day over three days. The effect of these three days is comparable to 15 days! This shows how helpful the archaeological gravity room is.

Of course, Luo Feng's increased body fitness level contributed to his faster training speed too.

The stronger your body becomes, the faster you'll improve.

At the end of June, which was yesterday, Luo Feng personally tested his fist strength: 19,600 kg. In one month, it rose by 3,100 kg. Compared to May, this improvement isn't too great.

Keep in mind that——

16,000 ——— 32,000 kg is the range of an intermediate level warlord. 32,000 ——— 64,000 kg is the range of an advanced level warlord. After 64,000 kg, it'll be in the range of a wargod.

Under the explosion of 2.8x, Luo Feng can reach roughly 55,000 kg; not too far from a beginner level wargod!

"I was ranked #48 last month, which means the time I'll have in the archaeological gravity room will multiply" Luo Feng was clear that 20 minutes a day over the course of three days in the archaeological gravity room was comparable to 15 days worth of regular training!

This month, Luo Feng had four hours: he could split it into 12 different sessions of 20 minutes.

After testing over long periods of time, this is the most efficient schedule that the students of the elite training camp came up with. The efficiency of 20 minutes over three days in the archaeological gravity room is practically double the efficiency of one hour in a day!

"Last month, I improved by 3,100 kg. This month, I should be

able to reach around 4,000”

“If it keeps going like this, my body fitness level will reach the beginner wargod level in 10 months. With my spiritual force, I’ll be in the advanced wargod level!” In 10 months, he’ll be invincible in the wargod level range..... Of course, this is assuming that the dark, golden ball has enough spiritual force.

Just keep hoping.....

Hope that the dark, golden ball will be able to last until he becomes an advanced wargod!

“If I could get a portion of dragon blood!”

“Then I could become an advanced wargod in just one or two months” Luo Feng really wanted to get a portion of dragon blood. The effects of the dragon blood will be different based off the user’s strength. The stronger you are, the weaker the effect. However, it’ll usually be able to multiply your strength! And it will increase a fighter’s training speed!

Dragon blood!

And right now, he has a chance to receive a portion of dragon blood, which is to reach a battle ability amplifier of 12 before August 1st.

“12! I’m only 8.96 now, what should I do?”

“It’ll be hard to make a breakthrough in just a short month via conventional ways of training” Luo Feng clenched his teeth, “There’s no other way, I’ll have to do that!”

Fight with his life on the line!

The best way to increase your strength is to fight with your life on the line.

These types of fights can be split into two kinds: fights against monsters and fights against humans.

Naturally, it’ll be better to fight against an intelligent human who is proficient with his technique! However, there won’t be a point in fighting with someone with a huge difference in skill. Either you beat them in one hit or they beat you in one hit; where’s the ‘battle to the death’ aspect of this? The best opponent——

is someone who has a similar level of skill!

But which fighters are willing to stake their life on the line? Thankfully, they have battle rooms. In the virtual space, they can fight to the death without worrying about anything.

However——

You need money for a staked match in the battle room! Or you

need points!

“It’s just money”

“I earned five billion from William last time and the Dojo is going to give me five billion this year too! I don’t believe that I’ll lose 10 billion in a month. Even if I lose 10 billion, it’ll be worth it as long as I can reach a battle ability amplifer of 12” Luo Feng’s final deadline was in a month.

And he decided to risk all his money!

.....

On the second day, Luo Feng returned to Jiang-Nan pagoda at around 8 PM after hunting monsters in the wilderness.

“WHAT, you want to have staked matches against so many people?” Shi Jiang looked at Luo Feng with astonishment.

Luo Feng nodded: “Yea. Senior, I don’t really understand the strength of the people here in the training camp. I want to have staked matches with people that are around my level, so I hope you can tell me which people have similar strength to me!”. If the opponent’s strength is way above his, then there’s no point in a battle to the death. He’ll also just be giving away free money that way.

“You sure are working hard” Shi Jiang shook his head, “Staked

matches: the lowest the virtual space system accepts is a billion Chinese dollars. One billion every match: this is a huge number”

“And, people weaker than you might not be willing to accept the challenge”

“Only those who are confident in beating you will accept the staked match. With so many battles, you’ll probably lose a ton of money” Shi Jiang shook his head and sighed, “Okay, some people in the training camp are better at hunting monsters even though their strength isn’t that high. And some people are strong but don’t really care about the ranking”

The black dragon ranking is a score ranking.

Even though it reflects each student’s strength to a certain extent, it can’t fully represent the entire student body.

Shi Jiang, as an old student and one of the strongest people in the training camp, indeed understands the strength of quite a few people.

“I’ll give you a list. On the list will be people whose strength nears you. Whoever performs better in the battle will win” after Shi Jiang said that, he opened up the ranking on his notebook. As he looked at the ranking, he swiftly tapped on his keyboard and typed out a list.

A total of 32 names!

Shi Jiang believed that these people weren't much stronger or weaker than Luo Feng.

"Thank you, senior" Luo Feng looked at the list: these people were primarily ranked 60————30. There were some exceptions: one person was ranked 91 while another was ranked 21.

……

Around 9 PM on the same day.

Kyoto Pagoda.

"Luo Feng, what brings you here? Please sit" three guys in Kyoto Pagoda were chatting. When they saw Luo Feng come, they all stood up and greeted him.

"Senior Wang"

Luo Feng said humbly, "I came to have a staked match against you". Wang Tao was ranked 36 last month.

"Staked match?" Wang Tao, who was on the receiving end of the challenge, frowned: When did he mess with this famous person in the training camp? The expressions of the other two youths changed slightly.

A staked match in the training camp is usually an act of provocation.

“Senior Wang, I just want a friendly match to test our skills against each other; there’s no other meaning to it. We won’t stake points, just money. And we’ll stake the lowest amount, one billion” continued Luo Feng.

Only until hearing this did Wang Tao smile.

The most important things to students are their points, since their points determine their ranking!

Either points or money can be the wager in a staked match. Sometimes, both of them are staked! You can stake, at lowest, 2,000 points. As for money, the lowest is one billion Chinese dollars! Luo Feng isn’t staking points and only the lowest amount of money possible: clearly, he just wants a friendly match with no ill intentions.

“Haha, alright! I’ll accept this challenge. When you go back, apply for a challenge and we’ll have a staked match tomorrow” said Wang Tao in a straightforward matter.

Only one billion, and Wang Tao has a higher chance of winning.

He also gives Luo Feng a good impression; why wouldn’t he accept this challenge?

.....

On July 3rd, Luo Feng and Wang Tao fought to the death in a tropical forest in the virtual space.

In the end, Luo Feng lost!

After losing the first round, Luo Feng continued to challenge other students! Luo Feng drew up a tide of battle in the training camp; students rarely challenge others like this. However, Luo Feng wasn't staking points and only staked the smallest amount of money possible. The opponents he chose were rarely weaker than him too.

So most of the students accepted his challenge!

Some people even heard about what was going on and went to challenge Luo Feng.

On every odd day, Luo Feng found an opponent and fought a battle to the death! You can say that Luo Feng fought the most matches in the month of July.

From the 3rd to the 27th, Luo Feng fought in 36 staked matches: he lost 19 and won 17. Each match had a wager of one billion, since the students clearly didn't want to make the stakes too high. In other words, he lost two billion!

******

28th, around 11 PM.

Candace※Paulinus returned to his living quarters.

“Luo Feng’s rank actually rose again this month, all the way up to #43. There’s not even an hour left until midnight, so his ranking probably won’t change again” William and Candace walked side by side to their living quarters. Candace yelled with a bad expression on his face: “Don’t mention Luo Feng in front of me!”

William looked at Candace.

Candace’s teeth were clenched: he was clearly enraged.

“I said a long time ago that you should give up on Janet” William sat on a chair, “Janet only has her eyes on Luo Feng”

“That chink” Candace was enraged.

Candace has been trying to make Janet happy for these past three months. Unfortunately, he failed again and again. Clearly, Janet was only looking at Luo Feng. While he was looking at the black dragon ranking tonight, he attempted yet again to get closer to Janet, but was rejected with just one phrase.

“Hold it in!” Candace motivated himself while he attempted to contain his anger.

Logic told him that he couldn't mess with Luo Feng: he could only hold it in!

Suddenly——

The sounds of footsteps rose.

"Hm?" Candace and William both looked over with confusion on their face. Shouldn't most people be at the black dragon ranking at a time like this? Who would come here?

A shadow entered the courtyard.

Candace's face changed slightly and William widened his eyes as he said with surprise: "How come he's here?"

The person who came was precisely Luo Feng!

"Hello, Candace" Luo Feng smiled. Candace's name was in Shi Jiang's list.

"Luo Feng, what are you here for?" Even though Candace wanted to eat the person in front of him, he still squeezed out a smile and had some basic manners.

Luo Feng smiled: "Candace, I want to have a staked match with you! I have no other intention, I just want to test our skills..... We

won’t stake points, oh, we won’t have any points tomorrow anyway. We’ll stake money, the lowest amount of one billion Chinese dollars. How about it?”

“Staked match?” Candace and William froze.

They have long heard about Luo Feng and his staked matches.

Who would’ve known that he would come to Candace today.

“This yellow skinned chink is always getting close to Janet!” Candace was enraged. Even though his stomach was filled with anger every time he saw the girl he liked get close to another guy, he could only hold it in. He held his anger in for three months, something a regular person definitely can’t do. “I never had the chance to mess with you, but you actually dared to challenge me today”

FUCK!

How could he give up such a chance? A chance for revenge with no drawbacks! And Luo Feng was the one who proposed this match!

If he doesn’t cruelly beat up Luo Feng a bit, he’ll never be able to unleash his anger!

“Staked match, sure. However, the stakes are a bit way too small. Luo Feng, you’re the famous guy of our training camp, so how

about 10 billion Chinese dollars?" Candace stared at Luo Feng. This was a huge amount of money, even for him. But the only way to make his opponent lose something is by raising the stakes!

"10 billion?" Luo Feng was shocked.

His previous battles all had stakes of one billion each; how did this one turn into 10 billion? A match like this will be hard to run into over the course of a year at the elite training camp! And whether skill or body fitness level, this veteran student Candace※Paulinus is way above him. However, Candace's battle ability amplifier isn't that much greater. How did this bet go out of control all of a sudden?

"What, scared?" Candace smirked as he looked at Luo Feng.

"Not scared, but I just want to have a friendly match with you, just for the sake of testing our skills. Why do we have to bet so much money?" said Luo Feng.

Candace sneered inside.

Luo Feng would barely lose anything if they stake just a billion. Unless he makes Luo Feng lose something, how would he quell his rage?

"Haha, Luo Feng, you didn't even blink when you took my five billion. How come you're so scared when staking with Candace?" William fanned the fires as he stared at Luo Feng, "Or, you're

certain that you'll lose the money to Candace? If so, then why did you even come all the way here to fight Candace"

Luo Feng frowned.

Candace and William were clearly provoking him.

"Could it be that you only staked five billion with William because you were 100% certain of your victory? The only reason you staked was to make a big buck for yourself? And now that you aren't certain of your victory, you're too scared to stake?" Candace looked at Luo Feng.

"Candace, you really want to stake 10 billion?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Of course, it wouldn't be interesting otherwise!" smiled Candace.

"Fine, as you wish!" replied Luo Feng.

Of course he understood his own strength well.

At the beginning of the month, he lost more than he won. However, he started winning more than he lost after a period of time. After every battle to the death, he improved. Luo Feng knew that he was much stronger than he was at the beginning of the month. Luo Feng was even able to charge up to a tower of trials level of 3.4 by the 25th.

His improvement was indeed great.

“Even though I’m not absolutely sure I’ll win, I have a 50% chance, maybe even a bit higher! The pressure brought by the 10 billion could make me fight even harder in this battle to the death” thought Luo Feng to himself.

There were only three days left until August 1st!

A battle with huge stakes was also a chance to boost his battle ability amplifier closer to 12.

“As I, wish?” Candace was struggling a bit with Chinese. After that, he looked at Luo Feng with amazement, “You mean, you accept the stake of 10 billion?”

“Yes, a staked match with 10 billion on the line” nodded Luo Feng, “I’ll go back and apply through the system”

“Very good” Candace smiled as he nodded. Yet, his eyes seemed to have a small flame in them; flames of revenge.

Chapter 31: Luo Feng vs Candace

July 29th, dawn was a bit hot and humid.

Inside Jiang-Nan pagoda.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng!” Zhao Ruo’s clear voice rang around the entire pagoda.

“Senior” Luo Feng appeared on the balcony of the second floor of the pagoda and looked at Zhao Ruo below, “yelling this early in the morning, do you need something?”

“Need something? How can you be so calm as if nothing ever happened?” Zhao Ruo’s eyes widened, “I just heard everything while eating breakfast at the cafeteria. You’re going to have a staked match with Candace this afternoon..... and, you, you actually dared to bring the stakes to 10 billion?”

10 billion was a large number even for a wargod.

Even though these geniuses were all rich from the stuff they received from various organizations and countries, they still have to spend money on instruction manuals, battle uniforms, etc. Unless they have absolute confidence, who would stake 10 billion?

“Hurry up and tell me, is this true?” urged Zhao Ruo.

“It’s true” nodded Luo Feng.

“FUCK!” Zhao Ruo looked at Luo Feng as if he was a crazy person, “Crazy, you’re seriously crazy”

“Senior, I’m going to calm my mind first to prepare for the battle to the death in the afternoon” right after saying that, Luo Feng headed back towards his room. When faced with this noisy senior who’s even bolder than a man, Luo Feng’s best course of action was to hurry up and hide.

In his room.

The scent of sandalwood emanated in the air. Luo Feng sat cross legged, his heart as still as water.

As a veteran who fought 36 matches in the month of July, Luo Feng was very clear that there was no way to determine who would win in a battle to the death when the two fighters are of similar skill. For example, if one of them isn’t in their best condition, they could be killed instantly by their opponent. If they are in their best condition, they could kill their opponent.

Condition!

The best condition is to have a heart as calm as water; completely empty. Well, we say that, but just how many people can completely clear their minds and be as calm as water?

.....

Two hours later.

The largest building in the elite training camp——the Nine Grand Floors. In the lobby of the ninth floor, roughly a hundred people were gathered here. There were only 183 students in the entire training camp; with wargod teachers added in there, the amount of people barely surpasses 200! And right now, there were around a hundred people gathered here; way more than the amount of people attracted to the battle between Luo Feng and William.

A staked match with 10 billion on the line!

A match like this would be hard to encounter over the course of a year in the training camp! And one participant was the powerful, veteran student, 'Candace※Paulinus', while the other was the rookie, Luo Feng, whose name recently swept through the training camp.

"Luo Feng fights amazingly well in these types of battles, so his chances of winning aren't small" on the Chinese side, Shi Jiang gave his assessment in a group of youths.

"Candace, will win" on the American side, a short black girl calmly announced her judgment like a saint.

"Candace has a 70% chance of winning. Luo Feng, has 30%!" on the Indian side, a bald brute who seemed like he was molded out of

steel spoke slowly like a monk.

.....

Legendary figures gave their conclusions one after another.

Even the weakest of these figures has the power to charge into the top 10. Any of them could easily defeat Luo Feng and Candace! Not many legendary figures were attracted to the match between Luo Feng and William, but many of them were attracted to today's match! Since Luo Feng and Candace were quite strong, and the stakes were high!

"Candace※Paulinus, Luo Feng, enter the battle room!" an electronic sound reverberated around the ninth floor's lobby.

Luo Feng, who was standing on the Chinese side with his eyes closed, opened his eyes.

"Luo Feng, go for it" encouraged teacher Jiang Fang on the side.

Luo Feng looked at Jiang Fang and then his fellow Chinese students, nodded, and directly headed towards the battle room.

Candace also walked out of the crowd and headed towards the battle room.

"KA!"

Luo Feng and Candace opened the door to the battle room and went in. After that, the door shut itself automatically.

Luo Feng lay on the sofa and picked up the dark blue helmet. He couldn't help but to glance at Candace. Candace also turned his head; his blue eyes stared at Luo Feng. If a gaze could kill, then he probably would have sliced Luo Feng into dozen pieces by now: "Luo Feng, don't lose too easily, or that'll be too boring". As he said that, Candace licked his lips like a venomous snake.

Luo Feng grinned and put on the helmet.

Candace also put on his helmet.

******

In the virtual space.

Luo Feng and Candace swiftly put on their battle uniforms and selected their weapons. After that, Luo Feng, who had a lower rank on the black dragon ranking, selected the scene of battle—— a stormy, ruined city.

PA! PA! PA! PA!

The storm raged: each drop of rain smashed onto the long abandoned city. The tall buildings have long been ruined and some

were already collapsed. On the street that was wide enough to hold four cars, quite a few cars were flipped over and covered in rust. At this moment, two shadows appeared on the street at the same time.

Luo Feng, Candace!

“You chose a stormy location?” Candace, who was in a black uniform, looked at Luo Feng from a distance of around a dozen meters away.

Luo Feng’s gaze was cold.

His technique, ‘thunderbolt’, was inspired from the lightning observed right before a storm. After that, he created it after training hard in the middle of a storm! Luo Feng also realized that he can execute his technique better in a stormy environment.

“Battle, begin!” the electronic sound echoed around the sky of the ruined city.

Whoosh!

Candace’s body turned into a phantom and, as if he had merged into the storm, rushed towards Luo Feng.

“CLANG!” Luo Feng unsheathed his blade like lightning and also charged forward.

Whoosh!

The ghost blade came in from the side like lightning and its cold light directly slashed towards Candace's neck. Yet Candace's gaze was cold, his body was like a snake in a storm and his blade was like a snake's tongue as it directly thrusted towards Luo Feng's head. At the same time, a sonic boom could be heard: a metal piece from one of the broken cars!

The metal piece shot towards Luo Feng's ghost blade.

And the blade thrusted towards Luo Feng's head!

"Retreat!" Luo Feng instantly made his decision. With his understanding of the environment thanks to his perfect level technique, he naturally understood that he was at a disadvantage when that metal piece came flying at him.

While retreating.

A white light flashed! Under 2.8x force, the light from the ghost blade was indeed amazing. Like lightning, it became even more dream-like in this storm. As it scraped past the metal piece, it weakened the quick yet powerful thrust of the blade!

Technique——Thunderbolt!

“Clang!” “Clang!”

With those two sounds, Luo Feng used all of his power to retreat to a distance of 30 meters away.

“Perfect level technique?” Luo Feng looked at the faraway Candace.

A “Hmph” rose. Candace, in his black battle uniform, said with a cold voice, “Surprised? As long as they don’t suck too much, most of the old students that have been here for four or five years have all reached the perfect level! No matter how strong you are, you’re still just a rookie”

After saying that, Candace came charging at him again!

Hu! Hu!

As Candace’s blurry figure approached, it instantly split into two shadows.

“PENG!” Luo Feng kicked the broken car to his side. The kick that held over 20 tons of force caused the broken car to instantly explode. Huge amounts of car components flew towards the direction Candace was charging from.

“Die!”

Luo Feng instantly charged forwards and caught up with the car components.

Whoosh!

After that, a light that was as white as snow flashed. For a time, light after light covered Candace. And Candace was like a venomous snake hiding in the darkness: he dodged peculiarly time after time and the blade in his hand easily blocked Luo Feng's wave of attacks. He even managed to counterattack time after time.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The car components and broken pieces in the area became tools that both sides used to distract their opponent. Each of their steps and movements could use their environment to assist them. While not allowing the car components to affect themselves, they'll use them to obstruct their opponent's movements!

Perfect level technique, versus perfect level technique!

Luo Feng's blade was like a never ending thunderbolt. And Candace's blade was constantly changing: at times it would softly defend against each attack, and at times it would suddenly attack out of nowhere.

"PUCHI!"

A shadow stuck itself to the side of the hexagonal shield, and the

long, thin blade actually curved and went around the shield as it lightly drew across the arm holding the shield!

PUCHI!

The arm that was holding the shield directly fell to the ground.

“Ah!”

As if teleportation, Luo Feng backed off to a distance of around a dozen meters away.

“My left arm has been cut off” Luo Feng had a bad expression on.

“Luo Feng, my fist strength level is 2.5, so you’re above me in power and speed” Candace sneered as he came closer one step at a time, as if a grim reaper in a storm, “Sadly, my technique is way above you” even though Candace’s Chinese wasn’t fluent...

Luo Feng’s face was pale, one reason was because of blood loss, and another was because he found out what went wrong.

Candace’s technique was at the perfect level, and his blade technique reached the ‘firm yet flexible’ state, one state higher than his blade. And..... Candace’s blade technique seemed like a peculiar, venomous snake. And his technique was also peculiar. Both his technique and blade technique were peculiar: the two of them combined perfectly!

“Without your shield, you’ll die for sure” Candace’s gaze had a bit of insanity within.

He can finally cruelly take his revenge.

“Hmph” Luo Feng retreated and ran to a store beside the street.

“There’s no use” Candace walked towards him one step at a time.

The roof of the ruined store was leaking under the the storm. There was a pond on the floor of the store and drops of water fell from the roof.

The surface of the pond reflected Luo Feng’s image. Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at himself in the pond. As the drops of water fell onto the pond, the normally calm, mirror-like surface rippled.

“Mirror, ripples?”

“Nine Stage Thunder blade force exertions?” Luo Feng frowned.

“Mirror! Mirror?” Luo Feng’s expression froze.

“Mirror!” Luo Feng let out a face of surprise.

At this moment, Candace walked into the store like a gentleman attending a banquet. He walked towards Luo Feng with his blade in hand as he smiled: “Luo Feng, I’ll be taking the 10 billion, so thanks in advance” as he said that, his body charged forward like a phantom as fast as lightning. The black, thin sword in his hand drew across an odd path as it went towards Luo Feng’s neck.

“You’re the one that’ll be giving me 10 billion!!!” Luo Feng roared.

And his body charged forwards!

Hu!

His speed reached an alarming level and actually dodged Candace’s horrifying blade. At the same time, the light that was as white as snow seemed to form a thunderbolt in this store, its speed was so fast that Candace wasn’t even given a chance to dodge it, “PUCHI!”. A head directly flew up.

However, Luo Feng’s charging figure appeared on the stormy street that was around 10 meters away from Candace.

PENG!

Candace’s headless corpse crashed down!

Chapter 32: Nine Stage Thunder Blade: Fourth Stage

In the battle room, Luo Feng and Candace's consciousnesses were basically kicked out of the virtual space at the same time.

"I lost?"

"I lost?" Candace still had his dark blue helmet on at this time; darkness was the only thing his eyes could see. However, he didn't take off his helmet, he just motionlessly sat there.

"How could I lose? There was no way I could've lost, no way! He only had one arm and I had the absolute advantage. His final attack..... his speed....." Candace sat on the sofa and his knuckles cracked until they turned white. Regret, he was really filled with regret!

From Luo Feng's speed at the end, Candace perfectly understood ————that Luo Feng's fist strength level went up by a huge amount!

"I actually let him make a comeback at the most important time?"

"How could this happen?"

"I actually encountered a case of someone making a

breakthrough during a battle?" Candace's body was trembling. One reason is because he lost a whole 10 billion Chinese dollars because of this battle. He was only a successor to his family, not the head, which means that this amount of money is a lot to him.

The second reason is because of the girl he was chasing after. Candace completely despised this 'rival in love', Luo Feng! He always held his anger in and was finally presented a chance to teach Luo Feng a lesson. Who would've known that not only was he not able to teach Luo Feng a lesson, he was the one that got beat up! This is humiliating!

Finally, the thing that Candace was most enraged at was the fact that.....

he wanted to cruelly beat up Luo Feng and make him lose a large sum of money. But not only did he let his opponent earn money, his opponent even had a breakthrough!

Candace definitely contributed to Luo Feng's breakthrough!

Of course, the most important cause for Luo Feng's breakthrough was the fact that Luo Feng had already finished the third stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》before he even entered the training camp. Every day, he would bitterly train without relaxing at all. As he was able to control his power more and more delicately, his foundation became more and more sturdy. Even without this breakthrough, Luo Feng would naturally reach the fourth stage in another three to five months.

However, it's a great thing for him to reach the fourth stage three to five months earlier!

This battle indeed contributed a lot.

How could Candace not be enraged after those three reasons? How could he be satisfied?

"Challenge, Luo Feng wins!"

The electronic sound echoed around the lobby of the ninth floor; it could be heard in the battle room too.

Candace's body slightly shook before he took off his dark blue helmet.

"Candace, thanks" Luo Feng was already standing at the door.

"Hmph" Candace 'hmphed' coldly as he also stood up.

Suddenly, a melodious tune carried out from the cell phone in Luo Feng's pocket, which made Candace's expression even worse. Luo Feng smiled as he took out his cell phone and read the message. As expected, it was a notification of the change in his balance sent from his bank..... a total of 20 billion arrived!

10 billion of that was what Luo Feng moved from his bank to the challenge system's special account while the other 10 billion was

what Luo Feng earned!

“KA!”

The door opened.

Luo Feng and Candace walked out. The two of them noticed with a glance that the lobby of the ninth floor was in an uproar. Quite a few wargods and legendary figures in the training camp were amazed since, from their point of view, Candace’s chances of winning were greater!

They were clear that Candace’s technique and his blade technique stacked onto each other!

This was also why even though Luo Feng had greater power and speed, he was still at a disadvantage and lost his arm.

“Luo Feng!”

“Haha, Luo Feng, nice” quite a few people, especially Chinese people, gave a thumbs up or cheered passionately. Luo Feng smiled as he walked over. In contrast to Luo Feng, Candace had such a bad expression that his face seemed to be black. In fact, he was barely able to say a few words to a few powerful students before he swiftly left towards his living quarters.

This time, Candace wasn’t able to vent; he just became even angrier!

He’s full of hate!

He hates Luo Feng, and he hates himself for losing!

******

Night of the same day.

Luo Feng was alone in his room. Even after chatting with his family, he still couldn’t contain the joy in his heart.

He seriously earned a ton this time!

10 billion isn’t even the best part. The most important part is that he actually completed the fourth stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》at the last moment!

“The fourth stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》is indeed difficult. I completed the first three stages relatively quickly, but I just couldn’t complete the fourth stage while I was in Jiang-Nan city. After coming to the training camp, my technique and control over my power improved a lot. But even so, I wasn’t able to complete it” Luo Feng was seriously thankful.

The scene with the ripples that formed on the pool in the virtual space during the battle.....

was really similar to the scene where he completed the second stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》!

"The droplets of water form the ripples! The most important thing isn't the ripples or the droplets, but the mirror! The mirror-like surface of water!" Luo Feng was thankful, "The calmer the surface is, the clearer the ripples become after the droplets fall". It was the same with force exertions.

The most important thing isn't how many times you exert the force.

But the fact that the force exertions have to carry out through the entire body! After understanding this fact, Luo Feng, who already became much better at controlling his power, directly completed the fourth stage!

"The fourth stage!"

"Now that I completed the fourth stage, my fist strength level is 3.5!" Luo Feng's eyes were shining, "And my tower of trials level is 3.4, almost..... 3.4 x 3.5 is 11.9! I'm so close. When my tower of trials level reaches 3.5, my battle ability amplifier will surpass 12"

According to the contract with the Dojo of Limits, as long as he reaches a battle ability amplifier of 12 before August 1st, he'll receive a 9th series battle uniform, a full set of weapons, any complete instruction manual, and a portion of dragon blood worth 80 billion.

This was a gigantic reward!

Not mentioning the dragon blood worth 80 billion, Luo Feng definitely wanted the complete《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》instruction manual. Keep in mind that..... the full《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》instruction manual is priced at 100 billion. Even half price is at 50 billion. Furthermore, the half price requirement is a four star contribution rank.

Four stars, when would Luo Feng ever reach that?

And now, he'll receive this instruction manual for free!

"An instruction manual, dragon blood, a battle uniform set, weapons. Even at half price, they would definitely cost over 100 billion! If I have to buy them, how long would it take for me to save up the money required?" Luo Feng was filled with confidence.

As of now, his speed and power has greatly improved!

It'll be impossible for his tower of trials level to not even go up by 0.1!

"I have two more times to enter the training room this month. One time is tomorrow night, while the other time is the night of the day after tomorrow!" Luo Feng thought to himself, "Tomorrow, on the 30th, my battle ability amplifier will surpass 12!"

Last month, Luo Feng was ranked in the top 50.

So in the month of July, Luo Feng had four hours to use the training room. He divided it into four sessions: he had an hour on the 9th, 25th, 30th, and 31st. He organized it like this because the deadline to raise your battle ability amplifier was 00:00 of August 1st. So of course, Luo Feng would schedule an hour on the last two days!

“A battle ability amplifier of 12!”

“I’ll definitely reach it!”

.....

On the second day, Luo Feng spent most of his time in the underground training room so he could familiarize himself with the fourth stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》. After dinner, he started meditating to prepare himself for tonight’s training room session.

Only until 9:35 PM did Luo Feng come to the ninth floor of the Nine Grand Floors.

“Luo Feng”

“Hello, Luo Feng”

Black, white, and yellow people all smiled as they greeted Luo Feng. Luo Feng was in a good mood, so he responded with a smile and some polite phrases as he entered the training room.

******

He lay on the sofa with the dark blue helmet in his hands.

“I’ll try to finish it today!”

“With a portion of dragon blood, I’ll be able to become an advanced level wargod level spirit reader in one or two months! An invincible existence in the wargod level!” Luo Feng silently encouraged himself. After that, he put on the helmet.

.....

In the virtual space.

The infinite, boundless silver alloyed ground. Far away was the tall, seven story tower: this was precisely the tower of trials.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng appeared on the ground.

“I want to take my fist strength level test” yelled Luo Feng. The

fist strength level test was taken in the virtual space. Whether in the virtual space of the battle room or in the training room, as long as you yell out these words to the system's AI, you'll be able to take your fist strength level test.

Because, this test was super simple.

Whoosh!

A fist strength tester appeared out of thin air in front of Luo Feng.

"Student Luo Feng, please swiftly proceed with the fist strength level test" the electronic sound echoed around the sky of the silver ground.

Luo Feng stood in front of the fist strength tester. In this virtual space, his regular fist strength was the standard 10,000 kg; his fist strength will differ by this standard by no more than 10 kg.

As he took in a deep breath, he squinted.

And deeply roared!

Luo Feng's right fist instantly split apart the air as four force exertions swiftly flowed into his arm and then his fist. This caused the speed of Luo Feng's fist to dramatically increase. As it brought a horrifying roar with it, his fist powerfully smashed into the tester.

“PENG~~” the fist strength tester made a sound as it shook violently.

A few numbers appeared on the display——”35080 kg”

“A fist strength level of 3.5. Congratulations, student Luo Feng, your battle ability amplifier is 11.9” the electronic sound had no emotion in it.

“11.9, so close to 12”

Luo Feng directly walked towards the far away tower of trials. The fist strength tester disappeared completely.

Third floor of the tower of trials.

A wasteland.

“B grade exam of the 3rd floor. Luo Feng, your goal is to kill 190 low level commander level golden vultures and 10 medium level commander level golden vultures! Good luck!” right when the electronic sound finished, a huge amount of flying monsters appeared in the sky.

Flying monsters. The vulture type monsters were known for their cruelty. Even the weakest golden vulture was at the low level commander level.

“Come on!”

Who knows how many times Luo Feng has died to this horde of golden vultures already on this third floor. Flying monsters are way more horrifying than the regular monsters on land. Because once a flying monster grabs onto you, it can directly lift you up. Humans have nothing to help them in the air, so they are sure to die to the horde of monsters!

So, you definitely cannot get caught by their claws!

“GA~~” an ear piercing sound rose.

The flying golden vultures came diving from the sky. The densely packed horde of flying monsters seemed to look like golden clouds as they covered Luo Feng. No wonder so many wargod teachers were stuck on the third floor. And no matter what, Luo Feng has to kill most of these flying monsters in the B grade exam to reach a tower of trials level of 3.5

“I must succeed” Luo Feng’s gaze was cold as he held his ghost blade.

RUMBLE~~

The flying monsters instantly covered Luo Feng, and the killing began!

Chapter 33: Enormous Reward

The golden vulture was a ferocious vulture type monster. The feathers on the top half of its body were black with a grayish silver glow to them, while the feathers on its lower half and below its wings were all golden colored. Its powerful talons and wings posed a gigantic threat to Luo Feng! Even with Luo Feng's increased speed...

he barely has the chance to use it while surrounded by the horde of flying monsters.

"Pu!"

"Whoosh!"

The blade that was as white as snow flashed over and over again in the horde of flying monsters. As golden vultures fell one after another, their cries rang across the skies. Meanwhile, the other golden vultures went forward and continued their attack. In terms of speed..... the golden vultures can fly way faster than land monsters of the same rank. It's common sense that flying monsters move faster than land monsters.

Because of this, Luo Feng couldn't shake off this horde of flying monsters: he could only kill the surrounding golden vultures like his life depended on it!

This blade was like a thunderbolt, each slash took a life!

“Not good” Luo Feng was picked up by the talons of a golden vulture. Once his feet left the ground, he was naturally unable to execute his technique.

Unable to use his technique, he was instantly shredded to pieces by the horde of golden vultures!

Luo Feng’s corpse disappeared, and so did the horde of golden vultures.

“Damn, that hurts” Luo Feng appeared in the wasteland again.

“What’s my tower of trials level now?” Luo Feng raised his head and yelled. Luo Feng didn’t dare to distract himself while he was killing, so of course he didn’t count how many golden vultures he killed. He only had a feeling that he lasted longer than before. But no matter what, he wasn’t able to succeed in the end.

The electronic voice rang: “Tower of trials level: 3.5!”

“It’s 3.5?”

Luo Feng let out a face of excitement. 3.5 x 3.5 means that his battle ability amplifier is 12.25, which is already past 12!

He did it!

Haha, he actually succeeded!

Ever since he came to the elite training camp, he didn't dare to relax even for a day. Because of that, he was able to charge up to rank 68 in a month and received the contract from the Dojo of Limits as a result. And after signing the contract, he pushed himself as hard as possible using the three month deadline!

No matter when and where, he has constantly been training himself.

While showering, the only thing in his head was his blade technique. Sometimes he would even think about his blade technique while chatting with his family and Xu Xin.

In the final month, he crazily challenged the students in the training camp. Time after time he battled to the death.....

and he even staked 10 billion on his final battle!

Finally.....

On the night of July 30th, his battle ability amplifier has finally reached 12!

"Haha, come on, continue the B grade exam of the third floor!" laughed Luo Feng loudly.

The flying horde of golden vultures appeared in the sky once again!

Luo Feng no longer had any psychological pressure, so he was able to focus entirely on training.....

.....

One hour of training was up!

Luo Feng's final tower of trials level was 3.6. He finally completed the B grade exam. However, Luo Feng was quickly killed in the C grade exam.

"Okay, my fist strength level has reached 3.5 and my technique is at the perfect level. My weakness is blade technique: it's only at the second state" Luo Feng understood that the higher your tower of trials level, the more the trials will expect out of everything about you. If your blade technique is weak, there'll be no way for you to instantly kill around a dozen monsters in a horde.

Tower of trials level 3.6!

Even in the circle of wargods, this was quite a good grade.

"My battle ability amplifier is 12.6!" Luo Feng let out a smile.

******

Jiang-Nan pagoda, Luo Feng's room.

Right when Luo Feng got back, he opened up his notebook. It was already 10:50 PM, but he couldn't care about anything else. Luo Feng swiftly opened up the contract that he signed with the Dojo of Limits. The document he opened was a scan of the contract he signed.

In the contract was a phone number. Once Luo Feng's battle ability amplifier reached the required level, he could call this phone number and ask for his reward.

"An enormous reward man" Luo Feng took in a deep breath.

The full price for a portion of dragon blood was 160 billion, half price 80 billion. The half price for a complete《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》instruction manual was 50 billion. The cheapest battle uniform and weapon set was also around 10 billion, whereas the half price was near 10 billion too. Even if everything was half price, the cost would still be astonishing.

Of course, the amount of money that the Dojo of Limits needs to provide these is quite low.

For the Nine Stage Thunder Blade, they're just selling permission to use it, so they don't need to pay anything there. The head, 'Hong', is probably the only person on earth who knows how much it costs to make dragon blood, since he's the only supplier. And it only costs a few billion to make the battle uniform and weapon set.

After adding it all up, the amount of money is around a couple billion.

However……

that is the cost to make them! Who would make the price equal to the cost it takes to make them? Even if you buy dragon blood from the governments of various countries, they'll still sell it at the price it's set at.

"BEEP——BEEP——" Luo Feng dialed.

"Hello" a low voice rose.

"Hello, I am Luo Feng from the elite training camp" at this moment, Luo Feng was surprisingly calm, "I previously signed a contract with the Dojo of Limits. On the contract were five provisions. Once I meet the requirements for one of them, I can dial this phone number and receive the reward from you, correct?"

"Yes!" said the low voice.

"My battle ability amplifier is above 12, which satisfies the first provision" said Luo Feng.

"Please wait a moment, I will check"

In just a moment, the tone of the voice slightly rose, “Ah, congratulations, student Luo Feng. Your battle ability amplifier is currently 12.6, and the current date is July 30th, 22:56 PM, which is before August 1st. As the contract states, your reward is..... a 9th series battle uniform, a set of weapons, any instruction manual, and a portion of dragon blood worth 80 billion”

Once Luo Feng heard these words, he couldn’t help but to clench his teeth and left fist out of excitement!

Success!

“Student Luo Feng, please tell me the details about the battle uniform and weapons you want. Also tell me the name of the instruction manual you want” continued the low voice.

“I need a 9th series battle uniform, the size.....” Luo Feng quickly reported the information about the size and type of the battle uniform, ghost blade, and hexagonal shield he wanted. He also spoke about the tactical communications watch, binoculars, a backpack, and other accessories. Of course, the throwing knives he wanted were included too!

“I also want a complete《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》instruction manual!”

“Finally, that portion of dragon blood” answered Luo Feng, “Oh yea, I want two of the ten 9th series throwing knives to be changed into SS grade throwing knives! I can transfer money over to purchase these two SS grade throwing knives”.

Throwing knives were small and didn't require much material to make.....

so even the price of a SS grade throwing knife is much lower than a ghost blade of the same grade.

"We can include those two SS grade throwing knives with the battle uniform set" the low voice clearly didn't care about two SS grade throwing knives, since the full price for one SS grade throwing knife was 400 million, half price 200 million. The cost to make them is even lower! For the Dojo of Limits, the provider of this enormous reward, this amount of money was nothing.

"The elite training camp is inside the headquarter city, so the rewards will be sent to the gate of the elite training camp in around an hour. You can go there to receive your reward" said the low voice.

"Within an hour?" Luo Feng let out a face of surprise.

Who would've thought that he would receive his rewards so quickly.

"Finally, congratulations, student Luo Feng, on receiving this reward. At the same time, keep working hard and try to get your battle ability amplifier to 16, student Luo Feng, to receive the other rewards" after the low voice finished saying that, the call ended.

After the call, the room was completely silent.

However, Luo Feng's heart was pounding.

"Dragon blood. The dragon blood will arrive soon"

"My strength can instantly undergo a dramatic change" even now, Luo Feng felt like he was in a dream..... just like that, the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》instruction manual and a portion of dragon blood was about to be his. Looking at how much fuss the astronomical bounty of 100 billion stirred up, one could know just how astonishing of an amount 100 billion is.

And even if you take the half price of the instruction manual and the portion of dragon blood, they still cost way more than 100 billion.

******

Excited, Luo Feng was extremely excited. He stayed in his room for 20 minutes before giving in to his urge to rush to the entrance of the elite training camp.

Main entrance of the elite training camp.

It was deep into the night, around 11 PM. It was a bit cool. Since it was already the 30th, there weren't any students at the main entrance at this time.

“Student Luo Feng, how come you’re here at such a time?” the middle aged manager of the security team at the main entrance smiled as he yelled; of course he knew this famous student of the training camp.

“I have stuff to do” smiled Luo Feng as he responded.

The manager of the security team knew the rules, so he didn’t continue asking.

And Luo Feng, under the winds of the night, paced back in forth alone in front of the main gate. To Luo Feng, seconds were like minutes. Occasionally a car would pass by the gate of the training camp. Luo Feng couldn’t help but to raise his head each time but, unfortunately, none of them were for him!

“BEEP!”

The sound of a horn rose; a gigantic truck headed towards the gate of the training camp.

“BEEP! ALLOWED!” an electronic sound carried from the security room. The patrolling soldiers and the other members were all shocked. Many systems in the elite training camp were controlled by an AI and not by humans. Usually, even private cars of the Dojo aren’t allowed to come in.

The door automatically opened.

A huge truck drove in.

“It’s probably that” Luo Feng walked to the side. As if the truck discovered Luo Feng, it directly drove over to an open area and stopped there.

HUALA!

The door to the back of the truck opened and a sound rose: “Student Luo Feng, please get in the truck”

Luo Feng ran over to the back of the truck. Before he was even able to get in, a blue light shone on Luo Feng. At the same time, an electronic voice rose: “Student Luo Feng, identity confirmed. Please get in the truck”

The truck’s interior was quite fancy. Inside of the truck were three people, who were all looking at Luo Feng with surprise.

“This is Luo Feng?”

“I wonder what HQ told us to escort. I can’t believe they called out the three of us” in the truck were two white people and one yellow person, who were all speaking Chinese. The language of Hong Ning city was Chinese, so most of the people from the HQ knew Chinese.

Luo Feng jumped onto the truck and, with a glance, noticed a gigantic, locked safe. The size of this locked safe was indeed big enough to store things like a shield and a ghost blade.

At this time——

A blue light like before shone onto the locked safe.

“Reward items, confirmed. Unscathed” the electronic sound rose, “Student Luo Feng, please accept your reward”

Luo Feng took a step forward.

A tall, white person of the trio picked up this locked safe and put it in front of Luo Feng.

“Student Luo Feng, what’s inside here?” smled the white person as he asked.

“A secret” smiled Luo Feng as he took the locked safe.

Finally.....

The enormous reward, and so is the dragon blood, is his!

Chapter 34: Dragon Blood's Miraculous Effect

With the locked safe in hand, Luo Feng swiftly returned to his living quarters.

Jiang-Nan pagoda, underground training room.

"CREAK~~" Luo Feng sealed the underground training room's alloyed door. Of course, the first thing he'll do after receiving a portion of dragon blood is use it up! If he doesn't use it, other students might find out, and when that happens, someone might even steal it. At that time, Luo Feng wouldn't even know where to cry! Using the portion of dragon blood is an extremely important thing. To prevent others from distracting him, he decided to use it in the underground training room.

The light shone across the entire sealed room.

Luo Feng put the locked safe in the corner. A fingerprint was required to open this lock. Luo Feng swiped his finger and, with a "KA", the locked safe opened.

The locked safe was extremely large.

It was divided into two sections: top and bottom. The top section contained the tidy battle uniform, ghost blade, shield, throwing knives, and other accessories. Luo Feng took all of these out and put them on the side. He then looked at the bottom section.

Only two wooden boxes were in the bottom section.

“One of these wooden boxes must be the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》instruction manual while the other one is the portion of dragon blood” Luo Feng carefully opened the first box. Inside the box was a thick instruction manual and a full stack of discs. On top of the instruction manual’s seal was indeed the four words————《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》.

The instruction manual is his.

“I won’t have to worry about saving money for this instruction manual anymore” Luo Feng closed the box and opened the other one.

KA!

The wooden box opened: inside was a vial stabilized by a bubbly foam. The vial was plugged in with a stopper. Inside the vial was golden blood, which took up a third of the vial’s interior.

“This is dragon blood, the dragon blood worth 80 billion?” Luo Feng carefully took out the foam and carefully picked up the vial. He was scared that it might break, but a vial containing dragon blood should be extremely sturdy. However, Luo Feng didn’t dare to take any risks. He raised the vial towards the light.

Under the light, the golden blood could make one’s heart skip a

beat.

If nothing was known about it, there's no way anyone would believe that this thing is worth 80 billion.

"Hm?" Luo Feng lowered his head and looked.

Below the wooden box that contained the dragon blood was a manual. Luo Feng picked it up, looked carefully, and couldn't help but to let out a smile: "I didn't know that using this dragon blood would be so simple!". According to the manual, you just have to spread some of the dragon blood on your body, and you don't even have to spread it around your entire body: just particular locations.

The dragon blood will naturally spread around to your whole body.

The only taboo————Do not drink it.

"On the night of the 28th, I tested my fist strength to be 25,100 kg at the Nine Grand Floors. I wonder how high it will reach after using this dragon blood". Actually, before June, Luo Feng's fist strength was only 19,600 kg, which means Luo Feng's fist strength rose by over 5,000 kg during the month of July!

This improvement is shocking!

But it makes sense. During July, Luo Feng had four hours to use the archaeological gravity room, which was split into 12 sessions of

20 minutes. He was able to use the archaeological gravity room for 20 minutes a day for 12 days. Three days is comparable to 15 days, so just these 12 days in the archaeological gravity room is comparable to two months of training!

So that's why he improved so much during July!

And actually, it's not because how talented Luo Feng is or anything. If someone is able to train in the archaeological training room for 2 hours a day for an entire month, that one month will be equivalent to 10 months worth of training!

"My fist strength is 25,100 kg. If it multiplies after using this dragon blood, it could reach 50,000 kg" thought Luo Feng to himself.

The more powerful you are, the smaller the effects of the dragon blood.

The weaker you are, the more obvious the effects of the dragon blood becomes. Because a warrior fighter is physically weak, his strength could quadruple after using dragon blood!

Rumors say that dragon blood can multiply one's strength, but that multiplication is just an estimate.

"My current body fitness level is at the intermediate warlord level! If I use this dragon blood, it might not just double, but even triple my strength" Luo Feng thought to himself expectantly. He

never used dragon blood before, and others who have used it before never shared their experience, so barely anyone knows the exact process.

He has to experience it for himself.

.....

In the underground training room, Luo Feng lay flat on the ground and, with the vial containing the dragon blood in his left hand, he lightly pulled out the stopper.

A special aroma emanated around the underground training room. Just by smelling this aroma made every part of Luo Feng's body slightly sore, as if he was training his genetic energy.

"Dragon blood!" Luo Feng slightly tilted the vial and poured the blood towards the area on his chest.

Dragon blood was viscous like mercury.

It slowly flowed. The vial wasn't that large and the dragon blood only took up a third of the vial, so this portion of dragon blood was indeed quite small. Even on his chest, it didn't take up much space. Soon enough, all of the dragon blood poured out. Luo Feng set the vial aside.

"There's barely anything" Luo Feng immediately wiped the dragon blood around his naked top half.

He also wiped some on his arms.

With this, Luo Feng felt his top half and his arms start to heat up.

“It’s taking effect?” Luo Feng was filled with expectation.

A warm current carried from where the dragon blood was to every part of his body: it swiftly headed towards his insides, his arms, hands, back, chest, head, and every other location. This warm current became stronger and stronger, and even the naked eye could tell that the dragon blood on his skin started swiftly disappearing, as if it went inside his skin.

The warm current kept becoming stronger!

The temperature kept increasing!

“The manual explained that the process would be painful; so painful that one might even faint. But he didn’t think that it would be this painful. “Ever since I was little, I’ve had to deal with my painful headaches, so I thought I could tolerate the pain. But who knew……” Luo Feng clenched his teeth and his entire body shook slightly. At the moment, he felt like millions of ants were biting every single part of his body. This pain made Luo Feng go pale.

And the pain kept increasing!

He was sore at first, and now he’s in pain!

Every single part of his body, and even his head!

Burning! He felt like he’s being burned to death.

The numbness made him feel like he’s being tickled to death.

Pain! The pain that even sank deep into his bones made him twitch.

“AH!” Sweat was flowing off of Luo Feng’s forehead. His entire body shook and his muscles twitched. His heart rate increased and his blood continuously flowed faster.

The sound of his heart beating.....

THUMP! THUMP! THUMP!

His heart beated like a heavy drum right next to the ear. The sound became louder, and louder, and louder until..... he lost consciousness! Fainted!

The dragon blood on Luo Feng’s body decreased continuously and was absorbed by Luo Feng’s body. What followed this absorption was the twitching of Luo Feng’s entire body: not just simply his body, but every single muscle in his body. Luo Feng’s muscles in his top half of his body twitched and turned like

centipedes. His skin seemed like it was burned and the veins on his body were sticking up and twisting; it was quite a horrifying sight.

CHICHI~~

What followed this horrifying process was that Luo Feng's cells crazily absorbed this weird energy and started their transformation! This was the first time that his body changed this much, even if you count the time where he awakened as a spirit reader!

The quality of the genes in his cell slowly transformed from useless ones to perfect ones under the transformation brought by the dragon blood.

Some useless cells and contaminants were directly removed and came out of the surface of Luo Feng's skin, as if it was filth.

Under this transformation that sank deep into his cells, Luo Feng's tendons, skin, bones, muscles, and all his organs were undergoing a gigantic transformation. The density of his bones continued to increase and the tenacity of his tendons were undergoing a dramatic transformation. The amount of dragon blood was enough to provide for such a transformation!

All of this happened swiftly!

Faster than regular training by 1,000 or even 10,000 times!

At the same time——

In Luo Feng's vast realm of consciousness.

In the center of his realm of consciousness that was covered with an infinite mist, the huge dark, golden ball no longer turned slowly and released spiritual force slowly like before. At this moment, as if the dark, golden ball made a huge decision, huge amounts of nearly liquid-like substance was instantly released, which soon evaporated into a mist. The huge amounts of mist swiftly emanated around his entire realm of consciousness.

Hu~~~

The amount of mist in his realm of consciousness continued to increase, and at an extremely alarming rate. The dark, golden ball was releasing a crazy amount of mist; it was releasing 1,000 or even more times faster than before.

.....

His body fitness level increased at a surprising rate!

The dark, golden ball was naturally restricted by his body fitness level, so it couldn't release as much spiritual force as it could. But now, it could release as much as it pleased! Luo Feng's level of spiritual force continuously increased. Starting from his "beginner wargod" level of spiritual force, it started increasing rapidly!

Slowly..... the density of the mist seemed to have reached its limit: it started turning into liquid!

One drop, two drops!

******

Slowly, Luo Feng's body started to calm down. The dark golden ball in his realm of consciousness also stopped crazily releasing spiritual force and started releasing at a slow rate like before. Many liquid drops were floating in the mist-filled realm of consciousness, and more drops continued to form.

Luo Feng's realm of consciousness was now at a gas-liquid state.

"Hm?"

"I, I fainted?"

Luo Feng's body slightly shook and he finally regained consciousness. With a twitch of his eyelids, he opened his eyes.

Right now, Luo Feng's body was covered in a layer of filth: his body and his face was completely black. After Luo Feng opened his eyes, he stood up and moved his arms around. His left hand ferociously rubbed his body and got all of the black stuff off of himself, revealing the copper colored skin below!

Yes, Luo Feng's skin color changed completely.

As if born from a forge, Luo Feng's skin color changed from the regular yellow color to a copper color. Clearly, this was caused by the dragon blood!

"What huge power!" Luo Feng felt the tremendous power in his body; it was way higher than before.

"3.5x, explode!"

Luo Feng ferociously smashed into the alloyed wall to his side. With a rumble, over half of Luo Feng's fist sank into the wall. After that, his left fist delivered blow after blow, causing the entire underground training room to shake. Each of his fists left a stunning hole on the wall.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

As if it was smashing on someone's heart, the blows continued one after another. After receiving such tremendous power, Luo Feng used this barbaric way to express his happiness.

"FEELS GREAT!" Luo Feng couldn't help but to yell.

Luo Feng turned and look towards his battle uniform.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Ten throwing knives swiftly pierced the air. In this 5 meter long, 5 meter wide, and 2.5 meter high alloyed training room, the throwing knives swiftly revolved around Luo Feng with an insane speed; the speed of the throwing knives instantly accelerated to mach 10, and continued to accelerate! With such horrifying speed, the throwing knives were even able to cut the alloyed wall to his side.

Luo Feng clenched his fists. He even had a feeling……

That even if he had to face off against the steel armored dragon from back then, he wouldn’t back down. In fact, he could even kill it!

Chapter 35: Luo Feng's Strength

Jiang-Nan Pagoda, Luo Feng's bathroom.

"HUAHUA~~"

Hot water washed Luo Feng's powerful body, cleaning off all the filth.

"GUGU~~" Only until all the dirty water drained out did Luo Feng plug in the plug. After that, he lay in the bathtub again and let the hot water spray onto his body. Even though he was just laying there, Luo Feng was experiencing a joy he had never felt before. Only after a long time did Luo Feng crawl out of the bathtub. He dried himself up and walked into his room naked.

He put on his battle boots and trousers, but only had a casual shirt on the top half of his body.

In his trousers were 10 throwing knives.

"I'll go to the Nine Grand Floors to test my strength!" Luo Feng swiftly descended the stairs and rushed towards the Nine Grand Floors in the darkness. As of now, it was already 2 AM!

******

At around 2 AM, only the ninth floor of the Nine Grand Floors

still had students on it. The ‘archaeological gravity room’ and ‘training room’ were open nearly all day in the elite training camp, with the exception of the one hour break at around noon. Other than that period of time, students were basically always using them.

However, nobody was training in the other rooms.

Nine Grand Floors, fifth floor, one of the small training halls.

“PA!”

The lights were turned on.

A yellow skinned youth appeared in the training hall. The training hall’s doors were closed from the inside. As for the windows..... the Nine Grand Floors was designed so that you can only see out of the windows from the inside and not the other way around. Luo Feng was pleased with all of this.

For now, he didn’t want others to learn about his identity as a spirit reader.

“My spiritual force makes my body fitness level raise by two!”

“Let me see what level my body fitness level has reached” Luo Feng walked towards a large fist strength testing machine in the corner of the training hall. This was one of the most advanced fist strength testing machines: even the strength of advanced level

wargods could easily be tested by these machines.

One can imagine how expensive a fist strength testing machine that could withstand a blow from an advanced level wargod would be.

After it was switched on, the fist strength testing machine's display lit up.

"Two days ago, my fist strength was 25,100 KG. Let me see what it is now!" Luo Feng stood in front of the fist strength testing machine. The fist strength of advanced level wargods are in the range of hundreds of thousands of KG. Even a fist strength of a million KG isn't enough to destroy this fist strength testing machine. The materials used to construct this machine isn't inferior to the scales of a high level horde leader monster.

Luo Feng made his move!

WIthout any special technique and using just his body's power, Luo Feng's right fist shot forward like a cannon ball. His fist brought a sonic boom along with it as it crashed into the machine.

PENG!

The machine shook violently and a low sound rang.

Luo Feng immediately looked towards the display, a number already appeared on it——"63,602 KG"

“So high?”

“How could it be so high?” Luo Feng’s eyes opened wide, as if he was just given an enormous gift. Luo Feng estimated that his fist strength would be no higher than 50,000 KG! If he’s lucky, then maybe a little over 50,000. If he’s extremely lucky, then maybe approaching 60,000!

But, 63,600?

That’s basically 64,000! The lower bound for a beginner level wargod!

“My body fitness level barely qualifies as a beginner level wargod! Doesn’t that mean..... with my spiritual force, I can barely count as an advanced level wargod level spirit reader?” Immense joy poured out of Luo Feng’s heart. He was clear that the range of a beginner level wargod was——64,000 KG to 128,000 KG.

His “advanced level wargod level” spirit reader title barely counts, and he’s definitely not at the peak of the advanced wargod level.

When his strength reaches 128,000 KG, he could reach the peak of the wargod level with his spiritual force.

However——

He’s a spirit reader!

Even if he has just stepped into the level of an advanced level wargod, it wouldn’t be hard for him to kill regular fighters that have reached the peak of the advanced level wargod level! Against normal advanced level wargods, he’ll definitely decimate them!

“Even if I search the entire world, other than existences that have surpassed the wargod level..... even the extremely powerful advanced level wargods would lose to me. Only an extremely small amount of them can fight against me evenly!” Luo Feng’s gaze was like lightning; his powerful strength gave him absolute confidence!

Strength, brings confidence!

Out of all the wargods, the only wargods that can make Luo Feng lower his head are the spirit readers that have reached the peak of the advanced level wargod level!

“Powerful!”

“Now this is true strength!” Luo Feng’s excitement poured out like a flood. Compared to his spiritual force, his body was too weak. His body fitness level barely qualifies for the ‘beginner level wargod level’. If he relies on his battle ability amplifier that has already surpassed 12, then he could attain the title of intermediate level wargod.

However, compared to his spiritual force, it’s nothing!

“25,100 KG to around 63,600 KG”

“My body fitness level didn’t just double, it’s 2.5x higher!” Luo Feng mentally calculated, “The effect of dragon blood is indeed astonishing!”

This time, Luo Feng’s wrong. With just a portion of dragon blood, the multiplier will barely surpass the value of 2.

This transformation was only possible thanks to the combined efforts of the dragon blood and Luo Feng’s spiritual force!

When Luo Feng awakened, his body fitness level increased by a huge amount, but his spiritual force only increased to the ‘beginner level warlord level’. This time, Luo Feng’s spiritual force directly jumped from the ‘beginner level wargod level’ to the bottom line of the ‘advanced level wargod level’.

If you just look at the numbers, the increase in spiritual force was 10 times greater than the increase from his awakening!

All of this spiritual force would naturally strengthen Luo feng’s body. However, since the spiritual force strengthened his body along with the dragon blood, it didn’t have such a major effect. Yet, it was enough to add another 10,000 KG to Luo Feng’s fist strength, thus raising his fist strength to the current 64,000 KG!

.....

Late into the night, in the empty training hall, Luo Feng stepped back step by step until he was a full 20 meters away from the fist strength testing machine.

“Let me see how powerful my spiritual force is” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed and two black throwing knives that had a silverish gray luster to them suddenly started floating next to him. These two throwing knives are indeed the SS grade throwing knives that Luo Feng received. With a thought from Luo Feng, the two throwing knives immediately turned 180 degrees.

The handles of the knives were pointed towards the fist strength testing machine while the tips of the blades were pointed towards Luo Feng.

“Go!”

Luo Feng’s powerful spiritual force controlled them.

Whoosh!

One of the SS grade throwing knives instantly turned into a black light. With the handle in front and the blade in back..... it shot towards the fist strength testing machine!

“PENG~~” The fist strength machine shook violently and let out a low sound that could stop the beating of one’s heart.

The numbers immediately appeared on the display——”218,606 KG”!

After seeing this number, LUo Feng couldn’t help but to shake his head in amazement.

“Messed up, messed up! No wonder spirit readers are invincible” Luo Feng was flabbergasted. According to the table..... 128,000 KG ———— 256,000 KG is the range of an intermediate level wargod level’s body fitness level. However, keep in mind that throwing knives value speed over power!

And even though these throwing knives value speed over power, their power already nears the enormous strength of an advanced level wargods!

Who would find it abnormal for an advanced level wargod to die after being pierced by this knife?

“I can control 10 throwing knives at the same time and make them attack from every single direction; all of them would be flying at mach 10 and can instantly change direction. No matter how powerful your advanced level wargod level body is, no matter how skilled your technique is, and no matter how adept you are at dodging, you won’t be able to escape death” Luo Feng couldn’t stop sighing after seeing this number.

This wasn’t even on the same level anymore!

Advanced level wargods have trouble dealing with attacks over mach 10, and spirit readers can control several throwing knives at the same time as they attack from every direction. This is way more horrifying than the monsters in the tower of trials; what kind of monster's speed can reach mach 10?

This is why spirit readers are horrifying!

With his spiritual force, he barely reaches the lower bound of the advanced level wargod level. However, his unique power allows him to dominate most advanced level wargods, with the exception of a small amount of extremely powerful wargods or other advanced level wargod level 'spirit readers'.

******

As of now, Luo Feng's strength could place him at the top of the elite training camp! However, Luo Feng was clear..... that there were tons of people around the world that were more powerful than he was. Not mentioning the existences that have surpassed the wargod level, he isn't even invincible in the wargod level! Right now, he's just nearing the state of invincibility.

August 1st, dawn.

193 Students were gathered on the lawn in front of the Nine Grand Floors; they formed groups and chatted amongst themselves. All of these students were fully equipped with their weapons, backpacks, etc. because..... today was the day that they begin their 'Life and Death Adventure'! However, before

departing, all of them were waiting for one person——

The world's strongest fighter, Hong!

"How come Hong still isn't here?" Zhao Ruo, Luo Feng, and Shi Jiang sat on the grass as they chatted. Zhao Ruo's face was flushed as she said, "Last night, I even dreamed about Hong, ah, ah"

"Stop fantasizing" joked Luo Feng.

"What did you say?" glared Zhao Ruo.

Luo Feng was startled and looked towards Shi Jiang as he changed the topic: "Senior Shi Jiang, you've met the head, what is he like?". When Zhao Ruo heard this, she also looked towards Shi Jiang, since Shi Jiang was the only person out of the three who had actually seen Hong before.

"The head, Hong..... how should I say this?" there was a bit of admiration and adoration in Shi Jiang's eyes, "Deity!"

"A deity?" Luo Feng froze.

"Yep, a deity you would only hear about in legends. I can't think of any better word to describe him" sighed Shi Jiang, "I've seen other investigators, existences that have surpassed the wargod level. However..... when compared to Hong, it's like comparing stars to the sun"

Luo Feng nodded to himself.

Shi Jiang laughed as he looked at Luo Feng and Zhao Ruo, “You two should be focusing on the life and death adventure that’s about to come. For this time’s adventure, we’ll be going to Australia! After the Grand Nirvana, the entire continent of Australia has become a paradise for monsters. Along with the Sahara Desert and the South American Amazon Rainforest, it’s one of the three hazardous regions of the world!”

Before the Grand Nirvana period, there were many animals in Australia and only had a population of around ten million.

After the Grand Nirvana period, the mutated monsters in Australia reproduced at an alarming rate. The number of monsters was so high that it seemed like they could take over the world. After that, there were no more humans in Australia. That entire continent is a monster hive, which is why it stands along with the Sahara Desert and the Amazon Rainforest as one of the three hazardous regions.

Occasionally, extremely large organizations would send in small squads to train in this continent.

And this time.....

Luo Feng and the others were headed towards Australia.

“Hm?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to look up towards the sky. Quite a few other students looked up too, since a sonic boom could be heard from that direction. Soon after, a blurry image appeared in the sky above the elite training camp. After the image came together, it appeared to be a blood red colored triangular fighter jet!

“The head is here!”

“Hurry, everyone up”

All the wargod teachers and all the students sitting on the grass stood up straight with a whoosh. All of them knew.....

The strongest fighter on earth.....

The richest man on earth.....

The most powerful man on earth, will soon appear!

Chapter 36: Hong's Arrival

The surface of this blood red colored triangular fighter jet was smooth and gave off a feeling of an aggressive flying monster. At this moment, the blood red colored triangular fighter jet was slowly descending from the air while each and every one of the students and wargod teachers of the elite training camp remained silent.

Nobody dared to make a sound.

The fighter jet landed, "HUA!" the hatch opened!

A yellow skinned man along with a white skinned man stepped out of the hatch at the same time. They walked on thin air, as if there were an invisible platform that nobody could see. Like that, they just walked towards the grass. This scene caused all of the students to widen their eyes.

"Two existences surpassing the wargod level, two of them!"

Luo Feng was also shocked, "Looks like these two are two investigators from the Dojo of Limits headquarters"

The two investigators stood on the grass silently as they waited for the head. Over 200 pairs of eyes were also staring at the hatch..... all of them were waiting expectantly for the world's legendary strongest fighter, the undisputed number one! Finally, a shadow came out the hatch.

Luo Feng didn’t even dare to blink, as he didn’t even want to waste a single second! He carefully examined the man coming from the hatch.

He was around 1.9 meters tall and was wearing black trousers and a black jacket. His lean, sharp hair..... his entire figure made one think of a sky-piercing spear! As for his age, not even a single wrinkle could be seen on his face: he seemed to be around 20 years old.

However, that aura was clearly an aura that a regular youth could not possess.

He took one step and, at the same time, scanned everyone in the training camp.

“RUMBLE~~”

Luo Feng felt like his mind went blank. The entire landscape and sky seemed to be twisting; the morning sun disappeared from his field of vision. All the students of the elite training camp shockingly discovered that the sky seemed to have transitioned from morning to night: not a single ray of light was shining, only darkness was left.

A completely black sky, and that black haired man seemed to be the bright center of all of this darkness!

He is a deity!

An invincible deity! Even the wargod teachers here didn't dare to resist; they couldn't even think about resisting! When faced with this black haired man's gaze, even Luo Feng, who recently became much stronger, felt like this powerful black haired man could kill him with just a look.

He, is Hong!

The world's strongest fighter! The two investigators beside Hong were completely blocked out by darkness. An investigator is an existence that surpasses the wargod level. Yet, in front of Hong, they pale in comparison.

"This wave of students in the elite training camp is quite good!" a cold sound rose.

Right when those words were said, the students and teachers who fell into the darkness realized that the black sky around them disappeared. The morning sun appeared yet again! Even so, everyone felt enormous pressure, like an ant facing an elephant.

In front of Hong, everyone felt their insignificance.

"Head, there are quite a few good seeds in this wave of students" said one of the leaders of this training camp, 'Investigator Wang'.

Basically all the students were watching Hong's eyes, as if they

were looking at their idol!

The leader of all fighters!

“Hm?” Hong took a step and virtually teleported to a student.

All the students, teachers, and even investigators turned their heads: the black haired man, ‘Hong’, was currently staring at a young student..... Luo Feng!

Luo Feng froze as he looked at the black haired man in front of him: the world’s strongest fighter is staring at him? Why is he staring at him?

“Hong is looking at Luo Feng!”

“Why is the head, Hong, looking at Luo Feng” within the group of students, Candace was filled with anxiety and dissatisfaction.

The three investigators weren’t surprised, since Hong was the one who personally created the contract for Luo Feng.

“You’re that Luo Feng?” even though he seemed gentle, a tough sound rose. This black haired man lowered his head as he looked at this young youth.

“Yes, head” Luo Feng responded respectfully.

The black haired man seemed to grin.

“The head is smiling?”

“The head is smiling?” The three investigators were shocked. They were clear of the temper of this world’s strongest fighter. Even when faced with other existences surpassing the wargod level, he rarely smiles.

The black haired man judged Luo Feng and couldn’t help but to exclaim: “What powerful spiritual force!”

Luo Feng froze!

The three great investigators froze!

All the students in the training camp were dumbfounded!

Such power spiritual force? Is he talking about Luo Feng? Luo Feng’s a spirit reader?

“I, I, I.....” Luo Feng was dazed.

His secret as a spirit reader was revealed by the world’s strongest fighter, ‘Hong’, in front of the three investigators and all of the students and wargod teachers! He didn’t even release the spiritual force hidden in his realm of consciousness. The other investigators didn’t find out, but who would’ve known that not only did the

head find out, he also revealed it!

“I didn’t think that you would have such powerful spiritual force, no wonder.....” the black haired man slightly nodded, as if he was quite pleased with Luo Feng.

After that, the black haired man, Hong, turned his gaze to the other students and said coldly: “You people, are the youngest geniuses of the world. Your goal isn’t to become wargods, but to become existences surpassing the wargod level! I hope that some of you can reach that point!” the head’s words seemed to have infinite magic as they sank into everyone’s hearts.

All of the students became passionate under this shapeless guidance.

After that, the black haired man, Hong, turned around and left.

.....

Only after Hong disappeared from their field of vision did the students enter an uproar. Even the wargod teachers were extremely passionate.

“The head, Hong, is way too powerful”

“Like a spirit, I felt like the head was the ruler of this entire earth just now”

“Yea, yea”

All the students used their native languages to excitedly chat with their best friends.

“Luo Feng, you’re a spirit reader?”

“You were actually hiding this, a spirit reader, man”

Quite a few Chinese students were amazed at Luo feng. However, they were all students of the elite training camp. The students of the elite training camp are all geniuses gathered from around the world. Even though spirit readers are rare and all the students were shocked, not many of them were jealous.

Of course, if they knew that Luo Feng’s spiritual force could wipe the floor with most advanced level wargods, they’ll probably faint.

“Luo Feng” a hoarse voice rang.

The surroundings immediately became silent.

Luo Feng turned his head: the person coming was indeed investigator Wang. Investigator Wang looked at Luo Feng: “Come, meet the head with me”

“Yes” Luo Feng was filled with suspicion, but followed

investigator Wang to meet the head anyway.

And right now——

Within the group of students, the tall, skinny blonde youth Candace was staring at the distant Luo Feng. His eyes were cold and he clenched his teeth: “Spirit reader? Who would’ve thought that you were actually a spirit reader. Looks like aunt and the others’ suspicions were correct. Yup, I need to tell my aunt about this immediately”

“William, I’m going back to my place for a bit” said Candace.

“Alright, hurry, we’re probably going to leave soon” nodded William.

******

In the quiet tearoom.

The black haired man, Hong, sat on the chair as he held his tea cup as he sighed: “Luo Feng has such an amazing amount of spiritual force at such a young age. Looks like he was born with quite a bit of spiritual force. He’s one of the most powerful spirit readers I’ve ever seen. He’s also extremely intelligent, which was why he could finish the fourth stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》so quickly”

“However, why is he hiding his spiritual force?” the black haired

man, Hong, suddenly thought to himself, “Maybe he’s in quite the dilemma because of what I said this time”

Indeed.....

Luo Feng was quite distressed.

While he followed investigator Wang, Luo Feng’s mind was full of worries. The head, Hong, suddenly revealed his secret, and Luo Feng couldn’t do a thing about it! As of now, he’s quite powerful, but the Vulture Scorpion couple isn’t weak either. He originally had a plan to safely take care of this step by step!

He’s in the darkness while the Vulture and Scorpion couple is in the light; everything was in his favor.

But now that his secret was suddenly revealed.....

“The Vulture Scorpion couple isn’t dumb, they’ll probably figure out that I’m the culprit” sighed Luo Feng.

“The head is inside, go in” said investigator Wang.

“Yes”

Luo Feng walked into the quiet tea room.

“Sit” the voice was still a bit cold, but interest could be seen within the black haired man’s eyes as he looked towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng followed his directions and sat down.

“Luo Feng, your spiritual force has probably reached the advanced level wargod level. There aren’t that many wargods that are more powerful than you, so why do you hide your strength? Do you have enemies that have surpassed the wargod level?” the head, Hong, looked at Luo Feng, “Let me make this clear. If this caused you trouble, don’t worry..... if you have enemies that have surpassed the wargod level, I guarantee that they won’t touch even a hair of yours”

Hong understood that his words might’ve caused Luo Feng trouble, so he made this promise.

To Hong.....

Nobody on this planet dared to go against his words.

“Surpassing the wargod level?” Luo Feng was dumbfounded. He wasn’t strong enough to anger such people yet.

“Head, I had a conflict with the son of the Vulture Scorpion couple in the wilderness area near Jiang-Nan headquarter city and killed him as a result. Because of this, the Vulture Scorpion couple offered up an astronomical bounty for the culprit” Luo Feng spoke truthfully, “My strength only increased recently due to the dragon

blood I received”

In front of the head, Luo Feng had no need to lie.

How much power does this head have?

To Hong, Luo Feng and the Vulture Scorpion couple, this conflict between wargods is like the conflict between ants! Hong’s words were clear just now..... even existences surpassing the wargod level can be calmed with just a phrase. Hong can guarantee that those existences wouldn’t even touch Luo Feng’s hair! How much power is this?

“Oh, I heard about that 100 billion bounty before” Hong slightly nodded.

As long as they aren’t stupid, anyone can understand.....

that a young fighter with no authority and no background wouldn’t kill the son of two advanced level wargods unless he was forced to!

“I’m sure that vulture Li Yao will soon enough hear of what I just said earlier” nodded the head, Hong.

Luo Feng was helpless.

Isn’t it all because of you..... because of a phrase from the great

deity, I'm scrambling right now.

However, who would dare to raise their complaints against Hong?

If he has to face the Vulture Scorpion couple, then so be it. He isn't afraid of them anymore anyway. However..... his family!

"Head" requested Luo Feng sincerely, "I'm not afraid of the Vulture and Scorpion, but my family....."

"Relax, your family will be fine" spoke the head, Hong.

Once he heard this, Luo Feng was completely relaxed. Whose words on this planet can compare to the words of the head, 'Hong'? Presidents and prime ministers can make a speech today but end up being forced to do other things tomorrow. But with Hong, you can say that he is the 'golden rule': nobody is allowed to infringe upon it.

"From my understanding of vulture Li Yao's personality, he'll probably find a chance to attack you during our life and death adventure in Australia" said the head, Hong, "You and him are both fighters, so I won't stick my hand into this"

Hong is way above!

Unless he has to, he's too lazy to deal with the things going on between fighters.

“If vulture Li Yao comes to Australia, it’ll be hard to say who will die” Luo Feng’s gaze was determined.

The head, Hong, slightly nodded: “Luo Feng, you are one of the members of the Dojo of Limits. Here’s a reminder—— this vulture Li Yao recently successfully came out of an archaeological ruin and found a set of ‘Black God’. This Black God set can transform into any defensive armor at will. It can even cover the entire body, including the nostrils and any other place”

Luo Feng froze.

“Once he’s completely covered, your throwing knives won’t be able to pierce through the Black God set” the head, Hong, glanced at Luo Feng’s pockets, “Of course, nobody can always have their mouth and nose covered all the time. The eyes too, since you won’t be able to see anything once they’re covered”

Luo Feng was shocked.....

This so called Black God set can transform into defensive armor at will, how amazing.

“So, you have a chance to kill him if you ambush him”

“Basically, he’s better at defending while you’re better at fleeing”

“His attack power is high while your attacks are unpredictable!”

.....

After leaving the tearoom, Luo Feng became calm.

If it weren’t for the Black God set, Luo Feng could probably defeat vulture Li Yao in a front-up fight. However, now that Li Yao has the Black God set, he’s virtually invincible! He’s not weaker than Luo Feng at all.

“Hong clearly doesn’t want to interfere in this matter”

“Well, my strength isn’t too different from vulture Li Yao’s, so Hong is probably treating this as a test” Luo Feng thought to himself. Indeed, to the head, ‘Hong’, Luo Feng was like a raw, uncut diamond. Raw, uncut diamonds need to undergo planning, cutting, and polishing to reveal its true worth.

If he even needs the Dojo to help with vulture Li Yao.....

then he would disappoint Hong too much.

“Li Yao, hmph, maybe you’re more experienced, and maybe you’ll bring a lot of people with you”

“But I’ll be waiting for you in the continent of Australia” Luo Feng immediately took large steps as he walked towards the

gathering area of the training camp.

.....

And far away in China, Jiang-Nan headquarter city.

Main city sector's Jiang-Nan mountain water sector, inside the villa on top of Marvelous mountain. Li Yao and blonde haired Venina had gloomy faces on as they stared at Candace's image on the large screen.

"It's like that. Aunt, uncle, I'm going to go to the gathering area, since we're departing to the continent of Australia soon" Candace's image immediately disappeared from the screen.

Li Yao and Venina were enraged to the extreme.

"It was him"

"IT WAS ACTUALLY HIM!!!"

Li Yao said solemnly, "He kept his identity as a spirit reader hidden. Unless he's feeling guilty, why would he hide his identity? Hmph, student of the elite training camp? Even if it's the emperor, I, Li Yao, will split your body into tens of thousands of pieces and make you regret ever being born into this world!"

Chapter 37: The Continent of Australia

Li Yao's face was horrifying, his eyes gave off a fierce glow, and he exhaled heavily through his nostrils, "LUO FENG, LUO FENG, LUO FENG!!!"

"Kill him, he must die" Venina's Chinese had an accent to it, but her tone was clearly conveyed. Venina's gaze was venomous and her voice was sharp, "Isn't he going to Australia for the life and death adventure? This is a great chance. Take advantage of this opportunity to kill him!"

The Vulture Scorpion couple. From their nickname, it was easy to tell that.....

They were cruel and sinister. Usually, they were the ones that domineered over others. But this time, someone killed their only son; how could the Vulture and Scorpion couple not go insane?

"Kill him. Not only are we going to kill him, we'll also kill his entire family!" Li Yao clenched his teeth, "He killed my only son, so I'll kill his entire family..... after that, I'll make sure that even Luo Feng's ashes are eradicated!!!"

Scorpion Venina also nodded. After that, she frowned as she looked towards Li Yao, "Yao, the Dojo of Limits definitely won't allow anyone to mess with the family members of their fighters! Once discovered, the consequences will be serious. 'Blood Blade' from back then was chased by fighters from all over the world and had no place to hide"

“You think I’m an idiot like Blood Blade?” Li Yao scoffed, “The best way to deal with regular people is with authority! With the HR alliance’s information network, manpower, and authority, we’ll definitely be able to quietly erase Luo Feng’s family with no evidence!”

Fighters were powerful.

But the HR alliance and all the various organizations of the world had many ways to deal with regular people.

“If something goes wrong, you will have to take all responsibility” frowned Venina.

Behind her was the Paulinus family.

As one of the nine core families of the HR alliance, they definitely couldn’t go against the Dojo of LImits.

“Don’t worry, nothing will go wrong. Even if something unexpected happens, they won’t be able to trace it back to me. And even if they do manage to trace it back to me, I’ll take all responsibility!” Li Yao’s face was cold. After that, he looked towards Venina, “Venina, I’ll prepare to personally depart to the continent of Australia. With me, I’ll bring a few elite members and ride on a passenger plane from China. Can you organize that?”

Venina was the director of the HR alliance in China, so she had

an astonishing amount of power.

“Not a big problem, I can make you guys seem like a fighter squad going to train. When the airplane flies over the continent of Australia, you’ll have a chance to disembark” nodded Venina.

“I want to prepare some special machines to bring with me” continued Li Yao.

“Machines? Are you thinking.....” Venina shook her head, “Impossible. The army of the Chinese government has too much power. At most, I can get you guys onto a passenger plane. There’s no way you’ll be able to bring those machines..... First, you won’t even get past the security check!”

Li Yao frowned, he knew that this was a difficult task too.

“Yao, it’s impossible if you’re leaving from China” said Venina seriously, “Those machines you want to bring are absolutely forbidden. Our HR alliance in China only has influence over the economy and regular people”

“Okay, Yao, first, take a plane to Europe”

Venina continued, “the EU is where our HR alliance has the most power. From there, I can organize a passenger plane that you, your elite fighters, and your special machines can all get on. Our HR alliance is responsible for the security checks in the airport”

“Okay, that’s the only way” nodded Li Yao.

China wasn’t like the EU.

Places like the EU and America were mainly capitalist countries. Old, powerful families had extraordinary amounts of authority and power in those countries: even political candidates were supported by them! They were also responsible for creating and overseeing weapons, passenger flights, etc.

China was different.

Passenger flights, the creation of weapons, etc. were ran by the country. Nobody else was allowed to participate! So……

Even with Venina’s identity, there’s no way she can get those special machines past the security checks in the Chinese airports.

“This way is good too. If I go to Europe, I’ll be able to find more helpers” nodded Li Yao, “Also, Venina, help me check if any of those mercenaries are willing to help…… None of the people I’m bringing are at the wargod level, so see if any wargods from the mercenary groups are willing to help”

“I’ll try” nodded Venina.

There were actually quite a few mercenary groups. The best mercenary groups had existences surpassing the wargod level and were even invited to station at a few weaker headquarter cities! As

of now, Li Yao and Venina were unaware of the promise of the head of the Dojo of Limits, the world's #1 fighter, Hong: nobody would touch even a hair of Luo Feng's family. Li Yao didn't know that..... so he's still trying to organize people before he departs to Europe.

※※

Hong-Ning headquarter city, the 153 students of the elite training camp and 10 wargod teachers were separated into six large buses as they left the training camp and headed towards the airport.

9 AM, almost 200 people got on the plane.

The plane left Hong-Ning headquarter city and flew straight towards the continent of Australia.

The entire passenger plane was reserved by the training camp and its three layers could hold 200 people. There was plenty of space and each layer of the plane had a movie playing, so the students weren't too bored on their trip. Luo Feng sat with Zhao Ruo and Shi Jiang in the middle layer.

"Hm? The movie stopped playing?" Zhao Ruo looked at the display in front of her with shock.

In the center, three screens that were pointed at different directions were playing the same video.

“Everyone finished lunch, so start preparing!” A middle-aged Chinese man stood beside the display and pointed towards it, “This is the current continent of Australia. It’s one of the areas with the highest monster population density. Since Australia is disconnected from the rest of the world, the monsters on this continent are quite different from the monsters on other continents”

“For example, many rat type and badger type monsters are quite different from the ones in Asia and Europe”

“Before the Grand Nirvana period, the continent of Australia was famous for its diverse and large amount of animals. So before the Grand Nirvana period, there were already all sorts of animals here. The mutations caused many horrifying monsters to appear. I believe you guys have looked through a lot of information before coming here”

“Diversity is just one portion”

“After that, the high number of monsters led to….. the birth of an emperor level monster! As of now, it’s virtually instant death for you if you encounter an emperor level monster. So keep in mind to avoid places with large monster population densities. If you see large amounts of horde leader level monsters, run as far away as you can”

All the students listened carefully. Even though they were all geniuses and the death rate wasn’t that high…

people still die!

And this is under the condition that everyone is super cautious. Whoever underestimates Australia, one of the three hazardous areas of the world, will die.

“Of course, the emperor level monsters can’t be bothered to deal with you guys, unless you anger it”

“So, the largest threat are the monster hordes and horde leader level monsters”

“In places like Asia and Europe, the high population of people led to a smaller amount of monsters. But in Australia..... the large amounts of monsters led to the formation of many monster hordes! So while you’re here, pay attention to the monster hordes and horde leader level monsters” the middle-aged Chinese man pointed at the display, “These, are all sorts of monster hordes and horde leader level monsters that are commonly seen in the continent of Australia. Look carefully!”

On the screen, a video played.

Many students observed carefully.

“Senior Shi Jiang, Luo Feng, how about us three form a group while we’re at the continent of Australia?” whispered Zhao Ruo.

Shi Jiang slightly frowned.

Shi Jiang was way more powerful than Zhao Ruo. To Shi Jiang, the monsters in Australia are probably over 10 times more powerful than the ones in Asia, and there were way more horde leaders in comparison too. This is a chance for him to train himself. If he brings Zhao Ruo along..... it'll definitely affect him.

"This time, I'm going alone" said Luo Feng.

"Hmph" Zhao Ruo rubbed her nose.

"Zhao Ruo, when the time comes, there'll definitely be people looking to form groups" smiled Shi Jiang as he comforted.

Suddenly——

The entire plane shook violently and the students' drinks flew out. Some students who didn't have their seatbelt fastened flew out their chairs.

"What happened?" exclaimed Zhao Ruo in surprise.

All the students in the plane were in shock.

"Every student, every student" a bright sound carried from the broadcasting system, "Our plane has already entered the skies of the continent of Australia. However, around 40 more minutes are needed to reach our destination. The continent of Australia is

famous for its high number of monsters, so there are also an astonishingly high amount of flying monsters. Since very few passenger aircraft fly past this area..... a horde of flying monsters just tried to attack our plane. Our plane has already left the horde of flying monsters way behind, so no need to worry”

The interior of the plane went into an uproar.

Flying monsters caused that shaking!

“Only flying monsters with low intelligence attack planes” said Shi Jiang to Luo Feng and Zhao Ruo, “If the monster was powerful, it wouldn’t dare to come near the plane”

“If they come near, they’re giving up their lives” laughed Luo Feng.

Planes had laser cannons on them.

Even an emperor level monster can’t dodge the horrifyingly fast attack of a laser cannon under short distances. Once they get hit, they die.

40 minutes later.

The plane landed and the hatch opened. The many students and wargod teachers on all three floors swiftly exited the plane.

“Whew” once he came out, Luo Feng’s field of vision broadened.

This was an abandoned wilderness covered in green. Large amounts of plants grew everywhere and the shadows of monsters could be seen in the distance.

“There aren’t even any buildings here!”

“The whole place is a wilderness!”

“It’ll be hard just to find a place to rest at night” quite a few students were discussing amongst themselves.

A black wargod teacher spoke Chinese loudly: “All students, record the current coordinates through your tactical communications watch. Right now, it’s 3:15 PM, 8/1/2057. Your mission is to survive in the continent of Australia for 28 days. Our plane will be here at 12 PM of the 29th. We’ll pick up all the students right here and then return to Hong-Ning headquarter city.

“Now, your life and death adventure, officially begins!”

Chapter 38: Chairman

All the wargod teachers swiftly returned to the passenger plane. After that, the plane slowly ascended and transformed into a blue light as it disappeared into the horizon.

On the wasteland, only 183 students remained.

All the students split up into groups as they attempted to invite some powerful fighters to join them. This was especially the case for the weaker students that just joined the elite training camp, since surviving alone in the continent of Australia would be an impossible mission.

“Luo Feng” a voice rose.

Luo Feng turned his head and saw senior Shi Jiang. Shi Jiang sighed: “This is the backcountry of the continent of Australia. Before the Grand Nirvana period, most of the population was gathered on the eastern and south eastern side of the continent. As for the area we’re in, it’ll be lucky just to find a small town!”

Luo Feng nodded.

Ruined cities served one purpose for fighters: shelter! Large amounts of apartment buildings made it easy to find a hidden location to rest. But..... this endless wilderness in the continent of Australia would cause many headaches.

“In the wilderness, it’ll be hard to rest if you’re alone. Once you’re asleep, a monster might eat you while you’re in your dreams” Shi Jiang looked at Luo Feng, “How about, us two form a team? We can help each other and raise our chances of survival”

“You and me?” Luo Feng slightly frowned.

If it weren’t for vulture Li Yao, partnering up with Shi Jiang would be a nice idea. However….. he has to deal with not just the monsters this time, but also with vulture Li Yao himself!

“Senior, I have a few complicated matters to deal with while I’m in the continent of Australia, so….. I have to go alone” said Luo Feng seriously.

“Complicated matters?” Shi Jiang was a bit surprised.

“Excuse me, but I can’t tell you right now. However, I’m sure you’ll know soon enough” said Luo Feng.

Witnessing this, Shi Jiang smiled as he nodded; he didn’t mind.

Actually, since Luo Feng was ranked around #40, Shi Jiang normally wouldn’t invite him to form a team. But because the head, ‘Hong’, complimented Luo Feng’s spiritual force, Shi Jiang wanted to team up with Luo Feng….. even if they can’t team up, with Shi Jiang’s identity and power, other students would be fighting over him.

Soon enough.....

Out of the 183 students, there were groups of two, three, and even up to six.

There were also five people who were alone.

“If something happens, contact us”

“See you in 28 days”

Luo Feng bid his farewells to his friends and, with his backpack, shield, ghost blade, and the ten throwing knives in his pockets, walked openly into the neverending wilderness alone.

“Oi, Wei Tong, that Luo Feng is alone?” Candace stood beside a Chinese youth.

“Yea, we invited him just now, but he declined” the Chinese youth named Wei Tong shook his head as he laughed, “Those who would dare to go alone in one of the three hazardous areas are usually the ones with a lot of confidence in themselves..... this time, out of the five that decided to go alone, four of them are in the top 20. As for this Luo Feng, his true identity is a spirit reader, so he must be quite powerful too”

However, Candace squinted as he looked towards the direction that Luo Feng was headed towards. After that, he lowered his head and looked at the map on his tactical communications watch and

started his confirmations.

"Candace, it's time to go!"

"Candace"

Three white youths of both genders yelled.

"Coming" Candace recorded the general direction where Luo Feng was headed towards, turned his head, and assembled with his squad. They then headed towards down the path they previously decided on.

Australia's atmosphere was completely different from China's. Right now, it was early August, which was precisely when China's temperature is the hottest. However, Australia was already at the end of its winter season and it was already around 4 to 5 degrees. However, for Luo Feng who has already reached a body fitness level of 'beginner level wargod', he can stay stay naked even if it's around negative 10 degrees.

The winds blew and the grass bowed in response, revealing quite a few herbivorous monsters.

There were carnivorous and herbivorous monsters, both of which shared one thing in common: they were highly aggressive.

Whoosh!

A swift image rushed past these relaxed monsters: that image was precisely the unaccompanied Luo Feng.

“According to the map, there are a few mountains 300 KM away. I’ll set up a temporary point there” thought Luo Feng to himself, “If my guess is correct, Candace of the elite training camp is a link to the Vulture and Scorpion couple”. As long as they aren’t dumb, anyone can figure out that Venina is probably Candace’s aunt!

“He’ll probably tell the Vulture and Scorpion where I’m headed towards” Luo Feng shook his head as he laughed.

When he left the other students, he purposefully went about a huge circle. If vulture Li Yao follows the directions that Candace gave him, he’ll probably waste a lot of time.

“I’ll set up a temporary point so I’ll have a place to rest”

“After that, I’ll start hunting horde leader monsters” Luo Feng thought to himself. “They don’t count points this August anyway, so the Dojo won’t check! I’ll take advantage of this chance to earn some money”. For other wargod level fighters, the continent of Australia is an extremely dangerous place.

However, for Luo Feng who is approaching invulnerability in the advanced wargod level……

Australia, the world of infinite monsters, is his ATM!

As long as he doesn't get cocky and starts aggravating emperor level monsters, there's basically no danger for someone with Luo Feng's level of strength! It's no surprise, since wargod level fighters rarely die in the wilderness of China. And if one happens to die, the entire country would pay their respects to them! However, even though the three hazardous regions are more dangerous for regular wargod level fighters, its actually safer for advanced level wargods.

And for Luo Feng, there's almost no danger.

"It'll be hard to kill powerful horde leaders. I'll first use my strength as a fighter to attract the horde leader, and then use my spiritual force to control my throwing knives to get rid of it!"

"The more horde leaders I kill, the more money I make"

Spirit readers are usually the richest fighters. And this time..... other than dealing with Li Yao, all of Luo Feng's time will go into hunting horde leaders! As for commander level monsters, Luo Feng couldn't be bothered to kill them. To Luo Feng, commander level monsters' materials just take up space in his backpack. There's no helping it..... he only has one backpack.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Luo Feng's swift image moved forward like wind. At a speed of 300 m/s, the monsters on the wilderness didn't even seem to exist.

※※※※※※

Europe, Paris headquarter city.

Paris headquarter city was the richest headquarter city out of the six headquarter cities in Europe. It is at the center of the Île-de-France region and many island countries suffered heavy damage during the Grand Nirvana period, so many rich Englishmen escaped the UK. Regular people who were able to escape the UK also entered Paris headquarter city.

Paris headquarter city, main city sector. The traffic was heavy.

In an elegant, long limousine.

“I know”

Venina hung up and looked towards Li Yao helplessly as she shook her head, “Yao, after the mercenaries learned of Luo Feng’s identity, they rejected our requests”

“Not surprising” Li Yao’s eyes were half closed as he sat on the comfortable couch inside the car, “All those mercenaries wouldn’t dare to mess with the Dojo of Limits, and Luo Feng’s already a part of the Dojo of Limits. It’s okay….. I’m already quite satisfied, since three wargods accepted our request using their private identities”

“Yeah” Venina also nodded.

All of their requests to the mercenaries were rejected, but there were also wargods within the mercenary groups that accepted the requests using their personal identities. Wargods need to make money too, and wargods are divided into the advanced level, intermediate level, and the beginner level! There was one intermediate level wargod and two beginner level wargods that decided to accept this request.

1.5 billion euros for a beginner level wargod and 3.0 billion euros for an intermediate level wargod.

This amount of money was comparable to an entire year’s worth of income for their respective levels. All they had to do was fight once, and this time’s target was a 19 year old rookie. They also believed..... that the Dojo of Limits wouldn’t trouble the wargods of their respective mercenary groups.

“Chi!”

The limousine stopped and the doors opened. Venina and Li Yao both got off.

“HUALA!”

A large bus and a truck were parked behind. The doors opened and around 50 people swiftly got off the large bus. People got off from the inside of the truck too, each of them carrying a box with

them. The couple Li Yao and Venina came over.

“Careful, lift it carefully and place it down lightly” commanded Li Yao.

“Yes”

The elite members that were carrying the boxes were as careful as careful can be. They were clear as to what was inside the boxes they were carrying..... the ultimate weapon humanity uses to fight against monsters—— the laser cannon! The laser cannon is a large directed-energy type weapon. It is extremely complex, made out of many parts, and very big.

So usually, only passenger planes and trains could carry them.

Headquarter cities had them too, since laser cannons usually form part of their defense system! Once you assemble a laser cannon, especially for the high frequency ones, they take up tons of space! It can’t be moved around once assembled. So right now, the laser cannon was split into pieces and will be assembled when the parts reach their destination.

“I had to go through so much to get this set, even though it isn’t of the highest grade” Venina lowered her voice, “However, its highest frequency setting should be able to heavily damage an emperor level monster. Against horde leader level monsters, 100% chance to kill them! If you use it against Luo Feng, there will definitely be no problem. However, the most important thing is..... energy! With the energy that’s being brought along with

this, it will have enough to shoot at the highest frequency three times. For the next setting, it can shoot nine times. Use it conservatively”

Li Yao slightly nodded. They went through quite a bit to get this thing in their hands.

Thankfully, the EU is where the main headquarters of the HR alliance is. And the Paulinus family was originally an arms dealing family. But even so, they had to use quite a bit of energy to get it.

“Li!”

A passionate voice carried from the side. Three men walked towards him, two white people and one yellow skinned man. These three people were the wargods that Li Yao hired this time.

Li Yao smiled as he greeted them. Suddenly, his phone rang.

“Hello” Li Yao answered his phone.

“Mr. Li, the higher ups have ordered us to stop all operations. Sorry!” The voice in the phone was low but full of apology.

Li Yao’s face changed dramatically and became a bit fierce: “Stop? Who gave the order? Who?”

“A direct order from HQ” said the voice in the phone.

Li Yao had a bad face on.

“Yao, what’s wrong?” asked Venina. Li Yao’s face was livid as he said lowly: “The people I organized in China stopped what they were doing”

“Stopped?” Venina was quite surprised.

Suddenly, Venina’s phone started vibrating too. Venina walked to the side as she picked up her phone.

“Venina!” a very loud sound rose.

Venina’s face changed and she instantly became super polite: “Chairman!”

The part that manages the entire HR alliance is the allied assembly, which is also the legendary underground assembly!

And the chairman is the person with the most power in the assembly! As the head of the entire HR alliance, one can imagine just how high his position would be! What kind of identity does the head of the HR alliance, which controls half of the world’s economy, possess? There were quite a few existences surpassing the wargod level that were willing to accept the chairman’s invitation to work for the assembly!

“Venina, listen well” the resounding voice became serious, “You are absolutely not allowed to touch Luo Feng’s family! If that happens..... your entire Paulinus family will be punished by the entire alliance!”

Venina’s face changed dramatically.

“Hmph!”

The call hung up.

“What happened?” Li Yao came from the side and looked at Venina with a confused face on.

“The chairman, the chairman personally called” Venina’s face was pale white. She wasn’t dumb..... to enable the biggest person of the entire HR alliance to personally make this call and to warn her of a possible sanction against one of the core families of the HR alliance... the chairman of the HR alliance must’ve received pressure that the alliance was never faced with before——

Pressure, from one person!

Hong!

Chapter 39: Laser Cannon

“Phone call from the chairman?” Li Yao’s face changed too.

Even though he was one of the most powerful people in the circle of wargods, he is on a completely different level when compared to the head of the entire HR alliance.

The chairman is the emperor of the underground world!

“You come here” Venina dragged Li Yao far away and lowered her voice as she said seriously, “The chairman just called to warn us not to touch Luo Feng’s family. If that happens..... our Paulinus family will receive a sanction from the entire alliance!”

“What?” Li Yao frowned, “Impossible. Your Paulinus family is also one of the core families of the alliance. Even though he’s the chairman, he has to gather a meeting and go through a discussion to get the entire alliance to punish one of the core families. Just a phrase from him can’t cause this much to happen”

Venina lowered her voice: “Which means that the chairman believes that if the assembly is convened, they’ll definitely be able to pass this decision”

Li Yao was shocked.

He understood now.....

Only the two most powerful fighters ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’ can cause the entire HR alliance to shake with one phrase. And the one sticking out for Luo Feng is probably Hong!

“Bastard!”

“Fucking bullshit luck” cursed Li Yao. He wanted to slice Luo Feng into thousands of pieces. Initially, he wanted to unleash his anger onto Luo Feng’s entire family, but clearly..... after Hong gave his words, the HR alliance would probably send people to protect Luo Feng’s family before Hong can even send his own people.

Now, Li Yao has no way to send anyone.

“Hmph, since the head, Hong, is interfering, I’ll let his family off the hook” sneered LI Yao, “Hong knows about this and yet isn’t stopping me from getting Luo Feng..... he probably wants to use me as a tool to train Luo Feng” Li Yao was also a man with a lot of power, so it was easy for him to guess Hong’s way of thinking.

“Train? Hmph, if this training fails, it’ll end in Luo Feng’s death”

Li Yao’s gaze was cold, “Venina, you stay here in Paris headquarter city. We’ll contact each other by phone”

“Okay” Venina nodded.

※※

On the passenger plane.

This passenger plane left Paris headquarter city at 11:45 AM and was headed towards the continent of Australia. There were only around 60 passengers on the plane. These 60 people are the people that Li Yao has gathered to bring with him. Within this group were also professionals to assemble and use the laser cannon.

“What, Mr. Li, is this a laser cannon in here?” the yellow skinned man was shocked.

“Oh, Lord”

The other two white men were freaked out.

“The laser cannon is a banned weapon” said one of the large moustached white man, “The world alliance bans the transportation of laser cannons and nuclear weapons”

“They’re banned, but aren’t people still transporting them?”

Li Yao said with disregard, “Every year, laser cannons and nuclear missiles are transported from smaller headquarter cities! The world alliance can only pretend to ignore such things. Furthermore, the world alliance is comprised of the five powerful countries. All the power is in the hands of the five powerful countries; the world alliance is just their puppet”

The three wargods beside him couldn't help but to laugh.

The laser cannon and the nuclear missile are the two ultimate weapons of humanity!

The nuclear missile has a large blast radius and is extremely powerful. Its only downside is that it emits large amounts of radiation, which can trigger mutations in monsters.

The laser cannon attacks a single target and is comparable to a 'death ray'. As of now, it's humanity's favorite weapon.

"Mr. Li, you sure have tricks up your sleeve. I'm impressed" the yellow skinned man snickered, "If I want to buy this laser cannon, I wonder if Mr. Li has any way to get another one?"

"That won't do"

Li Yao shook his head, "After I use this laser cannon, I'm going to put it back! If it goes missing for too long, then they'll find out. When that happens, I'll be in trouble. Bei Hou Gang..... shouldn't you Japanese people have some connections to get a laser cannon?"

Japan, an economic power before the Grand Nirvana period.

Sadly, they were an island country. They hunted down too many large fish like sharks..... after the Grand Nirvana period, all the monsters mutated. Large fish like sharks became extremely

powerful after mutating. There were quite a few horde leader monsters in the sea, and even some emperor level monsters! Horde leader and emperor level monsters have an intelligence level comparable to a human's.

So they had their revenge!

They gathered up and surrounded the Japanese archipelago!

Defending an island was already quite troublesome. The endless waves of monsters ripped apart the land as they flowed in through the rivers and coordinated with the flying monsters in the air to deliver pincer attacks... when faced with that and the arrival of an Emperor level monster, the Japanese could only struggle. They couldn't defend against the attack at all and all the citizens were only thinking about how to escape!

At the start of the Grand Nirvana period, the monsters didn't mutate too much and most of the people with authority already escaped. Even though there were only a few hundred thousand people left in the end, Japan can now count as a small nation after a few dozen years of rest.

"Those connections are too expensive" Bei Yuan Gang said seriously, "Mr. Li, if you are able to get me a laser cannon, I'm willing to pay 20x the cost!"

"20 times?" Li Yao's eyebrow rose.

The laser cannon was extremely costly to make and, because of some special features, money usually isn't enough to get one.

"I'm tempted but, sadly, I don't have the ability"

.....

The passenger plane entered the continent of Australia.

However, Li Yao left the passenger compartment and headed towards the bathroom alone.

"Hello, Venina" Li Yao contacted Venina, "Where's Luo Feng right now?"

The HR alliance could track a fighter's position via their tactical communications watch.

"Can't confirm" a slightly anxious voice carried from the tactical communications watch, "I'm trying to think of another way"

"What do you mean can't confirm?" Li Yao's face changed.

The HR alliance could confirm positions through the tactical communication watch.

Back then.....

They used this method to track all the fighters surrounding Li Wei's corpse.

"The position his tactical communications watch is returning is the elite training camp!" Venina's voice was restless.

"The elite training camp? No, he's in the continent of Australia" Li Yao was confused.

"Of course it's not right. This means..... that Luo Feng changed tactical communication watches!" The voice coming from the tactical communications watch was very soft, "He left his other tactical communications watch in the training camp. As for the one he's using right now, there's no record of it in the HR alliance!"

This was indeed what had happened.

On the first of August, Luo Feng received an enormous reward for raising his battle ability amplifier to 12. The reward contained a battle uniform set, weapons, binoculars, a tactical communications watch, and many other various little gadgets. Luo Feng changed to the new tactical communications watch, which was produced by the Dojo of Limits; only people of high authority could wear them.

Since the HR alliance didn't make it, there were no loopholes: there obviously wouldn't be any record of it in the HR alliance's records.

“The tactical communications watch that Luo Feng is currently using was probably created by the Dojo of Limits, so we can’t track it” said Venina.

“Then what’re we going to do?” Li Yao was extremely anxious.

If he couldn’t locate Luo Feng, then searching for someone in the continent of Australia is like searching for a needle in a haystack.

“There’s only one way now: call Luo Feng’s tactical communications watch! Once the call goes through, we can track his position” said Venina. This was nothing out of the ordinary; all regular phones had this function. Once you call someone’s number, you’ll be able to confirm their position whether or not they accept your call.

“Then call him” followed Li Yao.

“But——he’s using a new tactical communications watch, so I haven’t found his number yet” said Venina helplessly.

If she doesn’t know his number, how will she make the call?

Truth be told, Luo Feng just got his new tactical communications watch on August 1st. The only people who know his number are his friends from China in the elite training camp.

“Search, his number must be found” Li Yao was anxious.

“He just changed his tactical communications watch, so very few people know his number. Some of his friends in the training camp probably know. The elite training camp itself probably has the means to contact him too” Venina said helplessly, “But, there’s no way I can sneak into the insides of the Dojo of Limits”

“Hurry and find it! The plane is about to land soon. We can’t just fight against monsters while carrying all these boxes can we? Once we encounter a horde and the delicate parts of the laser cannon get damaged just a bit, the entire laser cannon will fail to operate” said Li Yao urgently, “Hurry up and confirm Luo Feng’s position!”

“Okay, I’ll let Candace try again”

After hanging up.

When Li Yao returned, the rest of the people in the passenger compartment were quite relaxed.

“Klein” said Li Yao to a white middle-aged man, “If we carry these boxes around a few hundred km on land, will they be okay?”

Klein respectfully responded: “Mr. Li, even though all the parts are properly protected in each box, normal impacts will not cause a problem. However..... this an extremely delicate optical amplification weapon. Once a single part is damaged, the entire laser cannon might not be able to function, so we cannot risk this”

Li Yao couldn't help but to clench his teeth.

He was in a rush!

"What's the range on this laser cannon?" asked Li Yao again.

"There is not an exact answer for the range" said Klein seriously, "Even though the laser cannon is the ultimate weapon, it has its weaknesses..... First, it shoots in a straight line! But the earth is a spheroid, so the surface of the earth isn't perfectly flat, but curved!"

"So if the target is so far that we can't see it from the ground, then the laser cannon naturally wouldn't be able to hit it!"

"So the laser cannon must be placed on high ground to increase its range!"

"Of course, the target is a spirit reader. If he flies up into the air, we will be able to see him from a faraway distance. If nothing is obstructing the path between the laser cannon and the target, then the target will be destroyed instantly" smiled Klein, "There is no need to worry about the power of the laser cannon. Now, the hard part will be making him fly up into the air"

"If he is on the ground, then once he is a bit far, we will not be able to attack him" said Klein, "Also..... pay attention to the weather. If there is a lot of mist or rain, the laser cannon will not

be able to attack”

“The laser cannon focuses light, and the particles in the rain and mist will cause light to refract, which would greatly reduce its power.

“”So.....”

“The laser cannon has to be placed on high ground near the target! That way, it will be easier to find a chance to kill the target” said Klein.

Li Yao nodded.

He knew that..... but he doesn’t even know where Luo Feng is right now, so where is the plane going to land?

—

google translate says Bei Hou Gang is Kitahara Tsuyoshi in Japanese, but I’m just gonna leave it in the Chinese pin yin.

Chapter 40: Base

“Mr. Li” the captain of the passenger plane personally came to the passenger compartment.

“Yes?” Li Yao looked towards him.

The captain followed: “Mr. Li, our plane still has to fly towards Washington headquarter city from Paris headquarter city tonight. So we can only stay here for at most another half an hour. If Mr. Li cannot tell us the precise landing coordinates within half an hour, then we can only.....”

Li Yao frowned: “I understand!”

Every passenger plane is extremely expensive and is an important weapon of every country; there’s no way Li Yao can keep one for an extended amount of time!

As Li Yao was extremely flustered, Luo Feng was extremely relaxed. Actually, even though Li Yao headed towards Paris headquarter city on August 1st, he spent a bit of time getting a laser cannon and three wargods to join his party. So by the time he actually departed, it was already August 5th.

In the center of the continent of Australia.

A mountain range.

“The largest monster horde in this mountain range are those shrewdness of apes” in a dark cave, Luo Feng tidied up the monster materials in his backpack, “Today, I’ll get rid of their leader! Hehe, just what I’d expect from one of the three hazardous regions: there are tons of monsters and tons of horde leaders!”

It has already been four days since he came here.

However, he only successfully killed one horde leader level monster, and it was a low level one too!

“No wonder people say that it’s hard to defeat a horde leader and even harder to kill one” Luo Feng was helpless. He is a mighty spirit reader who had more tricks up his sleeves than a regular fighter. In the past three days, he already found 11 horde leaders, but each of them were extremely sneaky.

Once they feel like the situation isn’t right, they’ll run!

And Luo Feng’s throwing knives are restricted in range. They’re strongest within a 50 meter radius and don’t use up a lot of spiritual force. 100 meter radius, it can barely keep its highest power, but because of the distance, more spiritual force is used up. As for any greater distance, the throwing knives’ power sinks.

Just a single movement from the horde leader monster can move itself 100 meters away.

“Out of 11 horde leader level monsters, only one was successfully

killed”

“And that was thanks to my spiritual force!”

“No wonder wargods are all yelling money is hard to make. They would rather kill high level commanders than fight against horde leaders” Luo Feng lifted up his water bag and drank a bit. After that, he packed up and put on his backpack and shield. WIth his ghost blade in hand, he carefully departed.

.....

Luo Feng jumped off the cliff of a mountain and directly soared past 70 to 80 meters as he arrived on another mountain. After that, he continued to sprint forward. Sometimes he jumped, sometimes he ran, and sometimes he would do all sorts of amazing movements. This mountain range was like a flat surface.

“Hm?” Luo Feng suddenly stopped as he stooped on top of a cliff.

“I’m here” Luo Feng heard the noisy yells.

He lowered his head and looked down!

The canyon below was filled with all sorts of ape type monsters. All that could be seen was a densely packed group; there were definitely hundreds of thousands of them. According to Luo Feng’s experience from hunting monsters these few days, this ape horde is the strongest power in this mountain range! This ape horde had

three horde leader level monsters, and its leader was an advanced level horde leader!

They were the number one horde in this mountain range! Luo Feng named this nameless mountain range: Ape Mountain Range.

“Hm, how come the leader of this shrewdness of apes, the high level horde leader golden ape, isn’t here today?” Luo Feng carefully observed. The two apes that stuck out the most in the shrewdness of apes were gigantic apes with purple fur. They were precisely the strongest type of apes within the ape type monsters: the demonic ape!

Even though the demonic ape was #1 out of the ape type monsters, these two demonic apes were only low level horde leader level.

“ROAR~~” an ear piercing roar seemed to pierce the sky.

Suddenly, the entire ape horde came noisy and rowdy.

Below, a gigantic ape that was covered in golden scales and around 20 meters tall was dragging a silver python that was over 30 meters in length with one hand. All of the ape monsters moved out of the way and the two demonic apes came to greet it as if they were kissing ass.

“HOWL~” The gigantic ape walked in front of the smoothest platform and sat down. It then ferociously ripped apart the python

whose head was already completely shattered.

HUALA~

The python was forcefully ripped into two and its fresh blood spilled everywhere. Suddenly, the millions of ape type monsters yelled excitedly.

The gigantic ape casually tossed aside one half of the python's corpse, which the two demonic apes on the side immediately started to eat excitedly. The gigantic ape sat on the side and happily ate. It didn't seem to mind that the blood from the corpse of the python was dripping all over its scales.

"It's that lightning python!"

"I didn't manage to kill it, but this golden ape managed to" on top of the cliff where Luo Feng was looking down from, Luo Feng was filled with shock.

This low level horde leader level lightning python was precisely one of the 11 horde leaders that Luo Feng faced off against. However, this lightning python was too sneaky and had too many pythons under its control, so Luo Feng wasn't able to succeed. Who would've thought that this high level horde leader level 'golden ape' killed it.

"I need to let them think I'm a regular fighter at first so I can unexpectedly kill them" thought Luo Feng to himself.

The golden ape ranks 2 out of the ape type monsters.

Actually, ape type monsters are mainly divided into two categories: apes with long hair and apes with scales. Demonic apes are the most powerful long-haired apes, while golden apes are the most powerful scaled apes. If they're on the same level, the demonic ape is slightly stronger than a golden ape.

However, a high level horde leader golden ape has limitless power, is extremely quick, and has an astonishing level of defense.

He's not easy to mess with!

"My killing blow will be my throwing knives controlled by my spiritual force"

"But if I'm not able to kill it and it realizes its life is in danger, it'll escape for sure. Once it escapes, I won't be able to catch it" Luo Feng understood that he only had one chance!

And once he misses that chance, the golden ape won't give him another one.

.....

In the canyon, the cries of countless apes shook the skies. The three horde leaders were eating the corpse of the lightning python.

Suddenly——

A black image shot down like a panther from the sky and directly stomped onto the body of an ape monster. With a ‘peng’, the body of that ape type monster directly blew apart; its blood flying everywhere. Using the force of this stomp, Luo Feng charged towards the center of the ape horde like lightning!

Over there, were three horde leaders!

“HOWL~~” “HOWL~~”

The two demonic apes roared angrily. Instantly, the large amounts of commander level apes and many more soldier level apes crazily surrounded Luo Feng.

“OUT OF THE WAY!”

Luo Feng’s gaze was sharp and his body was like wind as he swiftly moved forward.

The ghost blade in his hand instantly turned into streams of lightning. As the light of his blade flashed, body after body was split open. Blood flew everywhere and bodies were tossed around. In the tower of trials, Luo Feng could face off against a horde of large amounts of monsters with equivalent strength. Now, when faced with commander and soldier level monsters, they were destroyed like weeds.

Every location he stopped at was filled with blood and corpses.

His battle uniform drenched in blood, Luo Feng stepped on the back of an ape and directly leaped towards the center.

“HOWL~~”

On the platform in the center, the golden ape randomly picked up a rock beside him and then ferociously threw it at Luo Feng!

BOOM!

With the size of the golden ape’s palm, the rock had a diameter of around a meter. A rock as big as this was like a cannon, which arrived in front of Luo Feng within a blink of an eye. The huge rock brought about great pressure, causing the air around it to rumble. Technically, Luo Feng could use his spiritual force to give this rock a “boost” towards the side, which would make the rock fly off course!

But Luo Feng didn’t want to reveal his spiritual force!

“Hu!” Luo Feng tried to bend his body in mid air and then put the shield to his side.

The huge rock scraped the shield and then flew out.

And Luo Feng landed in the ape horde below. Once he landed in the horde, another storm of blood began again. Luo Feng instantly decimated around 10 ape monsters surrounding him. After that, his body flashed and appeared on the platform in the center.

“BOOM!” “BOOM!” “BOOM!”

Three huge rocks were thrown by the golden ape.

And Luo Feng revealed his perfect level technique. As if he was smoke, just a simple shake of his body avoided two of the huge rocks. He then used his strength to dodge the third one.

“HU!”

The air shook violently and even formed shockwaves visible to the naked eye.

“Fist!” at the exact instant Luo Feng avoided the third huge rock, he saw a fist covered in golden scales arrive in front of him. That golden ape was sitting on the platform just now, but its fist instantly appeared in front of Luo Feng. It was extremely fast!

The eyes of the golden ape were ice cold!

Human?

It hasn’t killed a human for a very long time. But to all powerful

monsters, humans are their common enemy! And it believes that, with its calculated timing, the human in front of it won't be able to dodge its fist and can only face off against it directly.

However……

Even an advanced level wargod fighter wouldn't dare to take a fist from a high level horde leader level golden ape head on! Right when this human attempts to do so, even if he doesn't instantly turn into bits and pieces, his organs will be shattered!

"I waited for you so long, who would've thought that you would come to me yourself!" however, Luo Feng simply laughed loudly when faced with this fist.

Hu! His body shook in a weird matter.

This human, with no external forces, seemed to dodge like a leaf being blown by wind, directly avoiding the golden ape's horrifying fist!

"Hm?" the golden ape was surprised: how could this human avoid that?

Could it be…… the most special type out of the humans…..

Not even giving the golden ape a chance to think, in the exact instant when Luo Feng used his spiritual force to dodge——

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six black throwing knives!

Two SS grade throwing knives and four 9th series throwing knives!

Six flashes of lightning!

They flew violently! Their target, the head of the golden ape!

“ROAR!” The eyes of the golden ape widened with fury. The fist that was smashing towards Luo Feng opened. The huge palm directly slapped towards Luo Feng! At the same time, its left hand appeared next to its face like lightning, and its body slightly tilted towards the side!

Pu! Pu! Pu! Three throwing knives hit the palm of the left hand; they only pierced the surface. A hint of golden blood dyed the palm.

Pu! Pu!

Two throwing knives shot towards the head of the golden ape. One of them only went in halfway before getting stuck in the muscles in the face. The other one only pierced the skin and was then blocked by the tough skull.

Pu!

The final throwing knife slashed across the neck of the golden ape, drawing open a gigantic wound. Blood sprayed out like a fountain, causing the golden ape to roar with fury!

Chapter 41: The Meeting

When the huge hand slapped towards Luo Feng, Luo Feng felt like the entire sky went black. Immediately, he stomped the ground and used his spiritual force on his shield, causing his entire body to quickly dodge sideways, thus avoiding that horrifying palm! Buzz~~ the platform rumbled when the golden ape's palm hit it and directly split apart.

"Hu!" "Hu!"

The golden ape's right hand wasn't satisfied as it quickly swung twice towards Luo Feng like lightning. The horrifying sonic booms were earsplitting. The shockwaves formed by the hand affected some of the apes and the nearby wall. Rocks and boulders rumbled as they tumbled, and quite a few ape monsters were killed by the shockwaves; blood flowed out of their every orifice.

Under these two attacks, Luo Feng's figure became blurry and frequently dodged in a way that no normal person could.

"This human!" after those two attacks, even though the golden ape was unwilling, it immediately decided to run!

"Too late!"

"Die!" Luo Feng stared at the golden ape. When the golden ape attacked twice, the six throwing knives pulled away from the golden ape's body to a distance of around 10 meters, and then instantly started accelerating!

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six throwing knives transformed into six streams of black light, all headed towards the neck of the golden ape, the place with a huge wound.

“HOWL~”

The golden ape howled angrily, but the six peculiar throwing knives instantly reached mach 10. The golden ape had no time to run away, so it could only attempt to dodge. But all that could be heard was “puchi” “puchi” over and over again. With a flash of its body, the golden ape was 100 meters away, where it then fell and rolled on the ground, killing many other ape type monsters as a result.

Dead!

The golden ape leader is dead!

The entire ape horde went silent. All of the ape monsters stared at the gigantic being on the ground—— that used to be their leader.

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

The two demonic apes turned into two flashes of light as they swiftly ran away. Within a blink of an eye, they already disappeared from the canyon. Only after that did the sonic booms rise. “YAYAYA!” countless apes made weird noises as they broke down and escaped in every direction. Soon enough, not a single living ape was left in the canyon.

“Those two demonic apes sure run quickly” laughed Luo Feng. With a lightning-like leap, he arrived next to the golden ape’s corpse.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

The six hovering throwing knives returned to Luo Feng’s pockets.

“I sure am lucky. This golden ape’s defense almost allowed it to escape”. The life force of a golden ape is quite strong. Its body is full of scales and its muscles are tight. One could imagine just how high its defensive capabilities are after seeing Luo Feng’s throwing knife get stuck in its face.

Unless you attack through its nostrils, mouth, eyes, or through the head, it’ll usually be hard to kill it.

Only its neck isn’t too heavily defended. Luo Feng drew open a wound the first time and then guided a throwing knife through that wound the second time. The throwing knife went inside the wound and directly made its way to the golden ape’s head, where it furiously slashed and killed the golden ape!

Otherwise——

Even if he pierces the throat, the size of the throwing knife isn't big enough to deal a killing blow to the large body of a golden ape; it'll cause a heavy injury, but it won't kill it!

"The golden ape, a high level horde leader level golden ape! Hehe, there probably aren't that many advanced level wargods that can successfully kill it" Luo Feng felt great. He couldn't help but to take out his SS grade throwing knife and start dissecting the golden ape, starting from its chest. The most valuable part of the golden ape are the scales right at the center of its chest!

A golden ape with a height of over 20 meters lay dead on the ground.

And yet, here he was, dissecting it for materials..... Luo Feng was amazed at this scene.

"I still remember during high school, when I was going back home with Wen, the black crowned golden eagle flew across Yang-Zhou city and shattered tons of glass with its cry! Back then, I was thinking to myself: I'll definitely become an extremely powerful fighter that can kill a black crowned golden eagle and a demonic ape" Luo Feng shook his head as he laughed, "And just now, when the two demonic apes saw me, they ran away in fear"

Life was this unpredictable.

He was so weak back then, and now, he's a powerful fighter!

Last winter, he was being chased around by a steel armored dragon.

And now, he just killed a golden ape that was almost as powerful as a steel armored dragon!

Getting all those scales out was quite a pain, but Luo Feng wasn't hasty at all. Instead, he hummed to himself while he kept dissecting with his SS grade throwing knife.

"A pain?"

"If I sell this high level horde leader level golden ape to the HR alliance, I can sell it for 12 billion Chinese dollars. It's just dissecting for materials, who would be impatient with this?" Luo Feng was extremely happy. A regular high level horde leader level monster was worth around 5 billion——20 billion chinese dollars. Since the steel armored dragon has the title of 'dragon', it can sell for 18 billion. The golden ape, priced at 12 billion, was considered as a large amount of money within the high level horde leaders.

While Luo Feng was dissecting without worry, suddenly——

His tactical communications watch started vibrating.

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s eyebrows raised and he lowered his head.

“Senior Shi Jiang?” Luo Feng immediately picked up.

“Hey, Luo Feng” Senior Shi Jiang’s familiar voice carried from the tactical communications watch.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to smile: “Senior Shi Jiang, how are you doing these days?”

“Not bad. I just found a city and I’m resting in the same ruined apartment every day. Sometimes I’ll come out to hunt monsters..... Yesterday, I even encountered a horde leader level monster, a low level one. However, that monster ran too quickly. Horde leader level monsters sure are hard to hunt” said Shi Jiang, “Oh yea, Luo Feng. Someone just asked for your new phone number from me”

“Oh?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Didn’t you say that, once someone asks for your phone number, I should contact you immediately?” laughed Shi Jiang.

“Yea, thanks” laughed Luo Feng, “Who asked for it?”

“Wei Tong” said Shi Jiang, “I asked him, did someone ask you to do this, but this kid wouldn’t admit it. He claimed to want the phone number for himself”

“Wei Tong?” Luo Feng slightly nodded.

Not out of expectations……

From Luo Feng’s anticipations, Candace would ask his Chinese friends to help ask for the number.

“Alright, be careful. We’ll chat when we have time” Shi Jiang then hung up.

Luo Feng let out a smile as he sat on the arm of the gigantic golden ape: “As expected….. they want to find my location via my phone number!”. His tactical communications watch was new, and his number was new too! The Scorpion, Vulture couple want revenge, so they’ll probably have locate him via his phone number.

And he didn’t even tell his family members his new phone number. Only a few people in the training camp and the managers of the training camp know his phone number.

“Great!”

“Looks like they’re on the move” Luo Feng didn’t mind at all, because he was absolutely clear: there was no way that he could make Vulture and Scorpion give up their quest for revenge. Since they have to fight, why doesn’t he take control of the grand scheme? With the tricks of Scorpion and Vulture, it probably wouldn’t be impossible for them to get his phone number from the

training camp given enough time.

So Luo Feng already told Shi Jiang, Zhao Ruo, and the others that if someone wants his phone number, then give it to them. However, they have to contact him when that happens!

.....

After around five minutes.

Luo Feng took off all the scales at the chest of the golden ape's corpse and put them into his backpack. While he was sitting on the side resting, his tactical communications watch vibrated.

"Hello" Luo Feng picked up.

"Little Gan, hurry up and come home to eat, everyone's just waiting for you" a voice of a housewife rose.

"I'm not little Gan" Luo Feng asked in response, "Didn't you call the wrong number?"

"Wrong number? Uh..... sorry" the call quickly hung up.

Luo Feng let out a smile: "Nice acting, wrong number?". Dialing the wrong number does indeed happen often, "My number is from Hong-Ning city, and Hong-Ning city's primary language is Chinese. That housewife was also speaking Chinese. If I was at the

training camp, I probably wouldn't suspect anything."

"Sadly....."

"After not too long, they'll probably come to this mountain range" Luo Feng swiftly got up and walked towards the lightning python not too far away, "Alright, after I harvest the gallbladder of this snake, I'll go meet the Vulture Scorpion couple!"

Dissecting the lightning python's corpse was 100 times easier than dissecting the golden ape's.

Luo Feng was quite lucky; the corpse was mostly eaten up but the gallbladder wasn't.

"Time to go!" Luo Feng ferociously stomped on the floor and directly leaped up to a height of around 80 meters. He stepped on a rock on the side of the mountain and then swiftly jumped again into the distance. With a third jump, he disappeared deep into the mountain range.

On the passenger plane.

The captain was anxiously sitting on the side: "Mr. Li, I'll give you at most five more minutes"

"Don't worry, don't worry, it'll be soon" frowned Li Yao.

Suddenly, Li Yao's tactical communications watch vibrated and Li Yao immediately picked up.

"Yao, I already sent Luo Feng's coordinates to you" Venina's voice rang.

"Very good!"

Li Yao's eyes flashed and then checked the coordinates he received, "It's only around 300 km from here. It's in a mountain range?"

"Captain, depart, to here. Stop at the plains below the mountain" commanded Li Yao.

"Okay" the captain who has long been restless immediately gave his command.

The passenger plane immediately headed towards the mountain range that Luo Feng was in. With the passenger plane's astonishing speed, it only took a few minutes to cover a distance of around 300 km.

.....

In Ape Mountain Range, Luo Feng was currently observing every direction on top of the highest mountain in the range, which was over 1,000 meters high.

After not too long……

“The passenger plane should be fast” mumbled Luo Feng.

“Hm? It’s here!”

Luo Feng smiled.

In the distance to the north, an image was slowly descending; it was precisely a large passenger plane. As the passenger plane’s hatch opened, person after person jumped out of the plane. The person who was leading them indeed matched the photo that Luo Feng saw online——advanced level wargod level vulture ‘Li Yao’.

“Vulture is here? What about scorpion?” Luo Feng looked carefully through his binoculars, “Oh, hehe….. quite a few people came huh”

“Huh, there are quite a few crates too”

“The hatch closed? Looks like scorpion didn’t come”

“One, two…… yup, 59 people total!”

Each and every action of Li Yao’s group in the distance was under Luo Feng’s observation.

“Vulture Li Yao, you came to hunt me down..... so I need to go give you my greetings!” Luo Feng’s gaze turned cold.....

Kill!

He has to get rid of vulture Li Yao as fast as possible!

— demonic apes were mentioned in vol 1 ch 1, but I used “Devil gorillas”. however, I like demonic apes more so I’ll use that from now on.

Chapter 42: Kill!

“They are probably around three km away from the bottom of the mountain” Luo Feng hid on top of the mountain as he observed the wastelands below him. Nobody has cleaned up these wastelands for dozens of years, so tons of weeds were growing around. If someone hid within these weeds, they probably wouldn’t be discovered as long as they weren’t too close to their target.

Luo Feng let out a smile; his plan was already formulated in his head.

“I’ll lay and stick to the ground and then slowly approach them! They shouldn’t be able to find out”. If he sticks to the ground and uses his spiritual force to move himself forward, he won’t make too much noise. This is definitely the best way for him to move while sticking to the ground.

However……

Once he gets down, his backpack will show. It’ll give him away! Before he put in the scales of the golden ape his backpack wasn’t that big, but now it was bulging. That golden ape was a huge ape that was over 20 meters tall. Even if you just take the scales from its chest, once you stack them together, they’ll take up lots of space.

“I’ll do that!” Luo Feng immediately turned around and jumped down the mountain.

While he was still in midair, he turned and stuck to another mountain. He slowly moved forward on the mountainside and quickly entered his hidden base.

In his base.

In a dark cave, a throwing knife immediately drew across the ground next to a boulder in the corner. Under Luo Feng's spiritual force, the boulder flew up and Luo Feng dug out another hole beneath it. He threw his backpack into the huge hole and then sealed it with the gigantic boulder.

Some sand and rocks rolled, covering up the sides.

This cave was dark, so even if someone came, it would be difficult for them to discover the hidden underground backpack.

"I probably wouldn't even need half an hour to deal with Li Yao. No monsters have entered my base these four days, so it would be impossible for a monster to enter and be able to discover my backpack within the next half hour. I'm sure my luck isn't that bad yet!" laughed Luo Feng as he turned his head and quietly left.

The weedy wasteland.

Luo Feng's body was against the ground. Well, to be precise, his hexagonal shield was between him and the ground!

“Go!” Luo Feng thought to himself.

His spiritual force immediately controlled the hexagonal shield. Luo Feng’s entire body was basically stuck against the ground of the wasteland as he swiftly headed towards the direction of Li Yao’s group in the distance. The distance from Luo Feng’s back to the ground definitely didn’t exceed 40 cm. Even herbivorous monsters in the wilderness will have trouble discovering Luo Feng.

At first, Luo Feng was advancing quickly, but once the distance between the two sides reached 500 meters, Luo Feng slowed down.

“Hm?” within the gaps of the weeds, Luo Feng saw Li Yao and his group, “This vulture Li Yao, how come his armor changed?”

Before, when he observed with his binoculars, vulture Li Yao’s armor was a black battle uniform, but now….. this vulture Li Yao’s originally unclothed arms and hands also became black. His neck became black too. He was even wearing a seemingly cool black helmet!

You could say…..

Other than his face, vulture Li Yao’s entire body was covered with black. He was also wearing his battle uniform at the same time!

“This must be the Black God set” thought Luo Feng to himself. It was exactly the same as the head described!

“This vulture Li Yao sure is cautious” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to curse to himself, “They just got off the passenger plane and he already used his black god set. He has his Black God set in the inside and his battle uniform on the outside. Even if his battle uniform isn’t SS grade, it’ll be at least a 9th series one!”

Two layers of protection!

One battle uniform and one Black God set.

It’ll be hard to harm Li Yao! And don’t even mention killing him!

“Once he discovers the threat I pose to him, he’ll probably cover his entire face and only leave his eyes, nose, and mouth open” Luo Feng slightly frowned, “Hmph, I have to succeed on my first attack! When he’s not paying attention, my throwing knives will go straight for his face!”

In the wasteland filled with weeds, Luo Feng slowly hovered across the ground.

The distance between the two became shorter and shorter.....

400 meters, 350 meters, 300 meters.....

Within a blink of an eye, they were only 100 meters apart!

“The closer I get to him, the harder it’ll be for him to react to my throwing knives” with a thought, Luo Feng’s six throwing knives, including the two SS grade throwing knives, silently flew out of Luo Feng’s pockets. After that, the six throwing knives directly pierced the ground and started heading towards vulture Li Yao’s group underground.

Luo Feng also stopped, not making a single movement as he lay on the ground.

.....

Vulture Li Yao’s group was currently carefully moving forward on the wastelands, hoping they wouldn’t aggravate any monsters.

“Everyone move faster” Li Yao walked while he carefully observed every direction.

The three wargods behind him, two white people and one yellow person, also carefully looked around..... actually, with the strength of their group, they weren’t really afraid of monsters. However, each of them were clear: once they attract some monsters and are attacked by a horde, they’ll cause a huge commotion.

When that happens, maybe Luo Feng will notice them. Once Luo Feng notices, then everything will become a bit more complicated.

“Around, come this way! Don’t mess with the group of monsters

in front” commanded Li Yao quietly.

The three wargods were also cautious.

The elite fighter with weapons and the people carrying the boxes were also cautious.

.....

“They actually went all the way over there?” Luo Feng slightly frowned and then immediately got closer again.

His throwing knives are most powerful when they’re within 100 meters. Once they get farther than that, their power lowers dramatically! When they’re within 50 meters, not only are they powerful, but the amount of spiritual force required to control them isn’t large either. And now..... the two sides are over 100 meters apart.

Closer, closer.....

120 meters, 100 meters, 80 meters. When Luo Feng was 80 meters away from Li Yao’s group, he stopped.

As of now, the six throwing knives underground were less than 20 meters away from vulture Li Yao! The throwing knives needed some distance to accelerate.

“Time to start!” Luo Feng’s gaze turned cold.

.....

Advanced level wargod level vulture Li Yao and his subordinates, the intermediate level wargod level Bei Yuan Gang and the two beginner level wargods ‘James’ and ‘Isaacson’ all moved forward carefully.

Hu!

The wind blew and the weeds bowed in response.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six throwing knives directly bursted out of the ground around five meters away from vulture Li Yao’s position like black flashes of lightning. Within a thousandth of a second, the first contact between the six lightning flashes and vulture Li Yao began!

“Li!”

“Li Yao!”

The other three wargods behind all reacted and were shocked.

In the bushes in the distance, Luo Feng stared at vulture Li Yao in

the distance. He witnessed vulture Li Yao's face flash with a black light the instant that the six throwing knives shot towards him. Four of the six throwing knives hit Li Yao's face, but Li Yao's face was completely black at the moment.

"How is this possible?" Luo Feng's eyes widened.

In the distance……

On Li Yao's face, four of the throwing knives stuck against his black skin, and two of the throwing knives weren't able to pierce through his throat's black skin!

Whoosh!

Li Yao leaped towards the sky; he directly leaped to a height of 50 to 60 meters. In mid air, only his eyes were showing from his black skin covered face. He looked down. From this height, he's naturally able to see everything in the surroundings. With a glance, he discovered Luo Feng that wasn't even 100 meters away from their group!

"I don't believe it" Luo Feng and Li Yao's eyes met, both of their gazes were ruthless.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The six throwing knives danced over once again, turning into six flashes of light. They instantly shot towards vulture Li Yao in

midair. Yet, vulture Li Yao's cold expression didn't even change in the slightest. When the throwing knives shot towards him, he slightly twisted his body, causing three of the throwing knives to hit nothing but air while the other three throwing knives hit his body!

The black lights covered vulture Li Yao!

But not even Li Yao's skin was pierced by the throwing knives!

"This is the Black God set?" wargod Bei Yuan Gang let out a face of admiration. Li Yao's elite fighter squad also looked at the deity-like Li Yao with praise.

Luo Feng was also shocked.....

This Black God set was too powerful. It has been said that it can ignore all wargod level attacks.

"Luo Feng!"

Li Yao clenched his teeth, his eyes were going mad.

"Kill him!" Li Yao immediately descended rapidly.

When Li Yao looked towards Luo Feng's direction, the other three wargods understood where the enemy was. So..... whoosh! whoosh! whoosh! The three figures surpassed the speed of sound

and have surrounded Luo Feng literally within a blink of an eye! Bei Yuan Gang's shield and curved battle blade could be seen.

As for the two white people, the mustached white man held a battle axe while the tall, skinny one held a shield and a thin blade.

"Hmph!" Luo Feng scoffed and his figure moved in a weird matter. With that, he already avoided the three wargods. After that, with a stomp on the floor, he leaped into mid air like lightning.

While in midair, Luo Feng sneered as he looked below!

The three wargods below, vulture Li Yao, and the other 50 elites couldn't help but to raise their heads towards Luo Feng.

"Death, has come!" Luo Feng looked coldly below.

The four throwing knives beside him immediately charged down. The six throwing knives that were attacking Li Yao also split up immediately! Ten throwing knives in total. As of now, he can control six throwing knives at maximum power; any more and the power drops.

However.....

When dealing with these elite members who aren't even wargods and three other wargods, he doesn't even need to keep his throwing knives at maximum power! The most important thing is

efficiency, so Luo Feng used ten throwing knives. When they saw ten throwing knives floating in the air, fear could be seen in the eyes of every single one of those elites. Even the faces of the wargods changed slightly.

Li Yao even roared ferociously and flew towards the sky.

“No!”

“Don’t!”

All of those elite fighters were scared and started running away.

“All of you die!” Luo Feng’s gaze was cold as he looked down.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Ten throwing knives!

Transformed into ten bloody lights of death! From different directions, they shot towards the densely packed group of people like a meat grinder.

“No!” a black brute yelled loudly as a bloody light shot out of his chest.

“Ah!” a white elite fighter’s head blew up.

Fresh blood instantly sprayed around, dyeing this ancient wasteland.

Chapter 43: Raging Anger

“Isaacson!” the moustached white brute yelled in fear.

Two deathly rays of light instantly shot towards the tall, skinny white wargod fighter. Luo Feng was controlling these 10 throwing knives. As for the three wargods, Luo Feng of course gave them some “special service”. Two throwing knives headed towards the white wargod named ‘Isaacson’, who deeply howled in response.

“CLANG!” The sword in his hand barely managed to block one throwing knife.

“PUCHI!” The other throwing knife scraped across his neck and he only lost a bit of flesh.

“I’m not dead” Isaacson let out a sigh of relief to himself.

“Careful!” the moustached brute yelled as he charged over.

“PUCHI!”

A third throwing knife came from behind and pierced Isaacson’s head. Red and white liquid went flying! The moustached white man on the side couldn’t help but to widen his eyes: “ISAACSON!”

One wargod, down!

“The power of each throwing knife decreases by quite a bit when I control 10 throwing knives at the same time. Dealing with a beginner level wargod takes so much effort” Luo Feng thought to himself. When he controls six throwing knives at the same time, he can maintain them at maximum power. Starting with the 7th throwing knife, their power starts to decrease. Every time he adds on a throwing knife, the overall power drops by quite a bit.

10 throwing knives made killing beginner wargods quite troublesome.

“CLANG!” “CLANG!” “CLANG!” the three throwing knives surrounding the yellow skinned man all failed! An intermediate level wargod is indeed much more powerful than a beginner level wargod.

“Idiot!”

Bei Yuan Gang roared and got cocky after easily blocking three throwing knives.

.....

As Luo Feng was slaughtering the people below with his 10 throwing knives, vulture Li Yao left an after-image behind as he shot towards Luo Feng. Seeing this, Luo Feng sneered to himself: “He’s going to fight against a spirit reader in midair? Hmph, how stupid!”

With a thought, the shapeless spiritual force worked on the shield below his feet, causing Luo Feng to immediately dodge towards the left, easily evading vulture Li Yao!

This is the biggest advantage of spirit readers!

“Die!” vulture Li Yao’s face was cruel and his eyes were filled with ferocity. As Luo Feng dodged away, he roared as he swung the blade in his right hand!

Whoosh!

As he swung, vulture Li Yao’s arm instantly stretched to a length of around 10 meters. A human fighter with a 10 meter long black arm, such a peculiar sight! This 10 meter long arm that bursted out of nowhere was holding a blade and directly, fiercely slashed towards Luo Feng!

“This, what!” Luo Feng was unbelievably shocked. The blade is already in front of his face, there’s no time to dodge!

“Descend!” with a thought from Luo Feng, his spiritual force worked on the armguards on his arms, pushing him down and causing him to descend rapidly! Of course, no matter how quickly he descends, his speed would never compare to a blade of an advanced level wargod. The blade that surpassed the speed of sound by several times meant that Luo Feng could only use his ghost blade to defend!

RUMBLE~~

An unbelievable amount of power transferred through the blade. No matter how hard he tried to defend, he still felt his hand hurt despite the fact that he was already descending. After that, his entire right arm instantly became numb and he shot towards the ground like a cannonball.

BOOM!

As if an asteroid fell, a 7 to 8 meter wide crater formed on the surface of the wasteland. The 10 throwing knives that were slaughtering the crowd immediately flew towards the gigantic crater. Only until this happened did the crowd calm down, all of them turning their heads towards the crater. The yellow skinned man named Bei Yuan Gang yelled “Idiot!” as he charged towards like lightning.

Li Yao, who was still in midair, also descended.

“What an odd blade” Luo Feng leaped out of the crater like lightning. His face was pale and some blood trickled out the side of his mouth.

“How could his arm suddenly become longer?” Luo Feng felt like his organs were displaced and felt horrible. Clearly, the impact from before was too great!

Keep in mind that.....

An average advanced level wargod's fist strength can surpass 256,000 kg. Vulture Li Yao's fist strength, as a veteran advanced level wargod, has already reached the 400,000 – 500,000 kg mark. With his force exertions, he can definitely surpass the 1 million kg mark!

Which is over 1,000 tons!

What horrifying power!

Thankfully, the attack just now was from the stretched black god set. Since the arm was stretched to around 10 meters, there was only half of the original power left in the attack! However, even though only half of the power was left, Luo Feng's organs rumbled in response and he spit out of mouthful of fresh blood.

"Idiot!" Bei Yuan Gang charged forward.

"This spirit reader is only a beginner level wargod, hm..... not bad for a 19 year old youth to reach the beginner wargod level. Unfortunately, he will fall to the hands of Bei Yuan Gang today!" Bei Yuan Gang easily blocked three throwing knives just now, which made him extremely confident. Also, the small group of Japanese left on earth today held envy towards China.

Throughout history, Japan has always been fighting with China.

However, the Grand Nirvana period delivered Japan a

destructive blow. China is huge, so they weren't affected as much. Also, many powerful fighters popped out of China, like the world's strongest fighter 'Hong'. Even though Hong's position is special, one thing that cannot be denied is……

Hong, definitely favors China in his heart.

So right now, China's position on earth is extremely high! Before the Grand Nirvana period, Japan, which was virtually equal to China, is now barely surviving. The Japanese are spread out around the world through several headquarter cities. They don't even have their own form of government anymore.

How could they not be jealous of China?

How could they not hate China?

To be able to kill a genius of China with his own hands, Bei Yuan Gang could feel his blood boiling.

"Die!" Bei Yuan Gang's eyes were like lightning, his aura emanating to the sky.

"Japanese?"

Luo Feng looked at Bei Yuan Gang in front of him and frowned. Even though it was 2057, as an excellent student that graduated high school, Luo Feng was clear about the history before the Grand Nirvana period….. when faced with the intermediate wargod Bei

Yuan Gang who appeared in front of him in an instant, Luo Feng simply sneered: “Idiot!”

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six throwing knives!

The number of throwing knives that Luo Feng can keep at maximum power.

“Not right!” Bei Yuan Gang’s eyes widened and he yelled to himself, “The speed of these throwing knives isn’t right. How come they’re much faster than before!”

Bei Yuan Gang, who was extremely confident because he easily blocked three throwing knives before, was now trying to wave the shield in his hand as fast as possible. But the six throwing knives were too fast..... Keep in mind that Luo Feng can defeat most advanced level wargods! Even vulture Li Yao, if he didn’t have his black god set, would be at a disadvantage.

Against an advanced level wargod?

PUCHI!

The first throwing knife directly pierced Bei Yuan Gang’s mouth, causing his head to burst. The five other throwing knives didn’t do a thing.

Intermediate level wargod ‘Bei Yuan Gang’, down!

Vulture Li Yao, who just reached the ground, witnessed Luo Feng kill Bei Yuan Gang and became even more enraged. He ferociously stomped on the ground, ripping apart the air in front of him, and reached mach 2. With just a movement of his body, he was already right in front of Luo Feng!

“Retreat, retreat!”

Luo Feng’s face changed and the power in his body exploded: explosion of 3.5x! His speed was over 400 m/s!

Powerful spiritual force, support! Accelerate!

His speed was over 500 m/s!

Even though Luo Feng’s spiritual force was approaching the ‘advanced level wargod level’ and the resulting acceleration was great, the greater your speed becomes, the harder it is for it to raise. Air resistance multiplies exponentially when your speed increases, so even though Luo Feng’s spiritual force should have made him 2 to 3 times faster, his speed only increased by not even a third.

When compared to Li Yao’s speed of mach 2, the difference was huge.

“Die!” both blades in Li Yao’s hands came slashing crazily.

“Can’t dodge this anymore”

Luo Feng clenched his teeth.

His spiritual force wrapped around one of the approaching blades, but right when it touched the blade, Luo Feng felt as if his spiritual force was up against a gigantic mountain, which instantly crumbled against it! The amount of power in this one blade was just too great. And vulture Li Yao’s face slightly changed, since he clearly felt that his attack was affected.

“Rumble~~”

The blade slashed against Luo Feng’s hexagonal shield.

As if struck by lightning, the horrifying impact caused the hexagonal shield to smack against Luo Feng’s body, throwing Luo Feng into the air.

“CRACK!”

The left arm that was holding the hexagonal shield twisted.

“Fractured? Hope it’s not broken” Luo Feng felt the piercing pain in his left arm and immediately used the force that threw him into the air to soar into the sky.

“Luo Feng!” vulture Li Yao roared.

RUMBLE!

He soared into the air, instantly approached Luo Feng, and ferociously slashed with his arm!

Whoosh!

His arm instantly became longer and that 10 meter long black arm flew towards Luo Feng, as if it was going to trap him!

“Hmph!” Luo Feng’s body created a curve in the air and immediately charged towards the sky. He flew up 100 meters and then swiftly flew towards Ape Mountain Range in the distance, thus disappearing from vulture Li Yao’s field of vision.

.....

In the wastelands, vulture Li Yao’s underlings were panicking. They didn’t think that a 19 year old Chinese youth would be so horrifying. In just a short moment, they lost one intermediate level wargod, one beginner level wargod, and 18 elites. 16 elites were heavily wounded.

“Bastard!” vulture Li Yao looked at the corpses on the wasteland. His face looked horrifying and it seemed as if there were two

raging balls of fire in his eyes.

"Li Yao, how is this Luo Feng so powerful, it's not like what you told us at all!" the white moustached brute, James, carried his brother's corpse as he roared.

"SHUT UP!"

Li Yao glared at James with anger, his killing intent soaring.

James' heart skipped a beat..... if this Li Yao killed him here in the wasteland and blamed Luo Feng for it, nobody would know at all. When he thought of this, James didn't dare to show Li Yao his anger anymore.

"Bei Yuan Gang!" as Li Yao walked towards that Japanese person's corpse, his face became more and more horrifying. He couldn't help but to kick at the corpse in anger. With a 'peng', Bei Yuan Gang's corpse blew up, his blood spraying everywhere. This scene caused everyone's hearts to go cold, and James even cursed: "This vulture is as cruel as they say. Why did I agree to come and earn some of his money back then!"

Silence.

Everyone was shocked by vulture Li Yao's cruelty. After destroying Bei Yuan Gang's corpse, Li Yao cursed, "Piece of trash!!!"

Anger!

A stomach full of anger!

Vulture Li Yao looked at his surroundings and became even more angry. He didn't think that his arrival would give Luo Feng a huge present! He lost so many men.

"LUO FENG!!!" vulture Li Yao clenched his teeth and seethed out these two words.

Chapter 44: Laser Cannon, Aim

Vulture Li Yao, whose armor only exposed his eyes, nose, and mouth, stood on the wastelands like a demon. Everyone was stunned by his cruelty.

The scent of blood emanated.

“Who would’ve known that this Luo Feng became this powerful. If it weren’t for the Black God set, even I might not be able beat him” vulture Li Yao squinted, his gaze was cold, “He took two attacks from me and yet he’s still alive. Now that he knows the power of the Black God set, he probably won’t allow me to get near him next time”

Vulture Li Yao was anxious.

“There’s only one way left!”

“Chase him and then force him into the air. When he’s in the air..... he’ll be an open target for the laser cannon!” vulture Li Yao sneered.

“Oh shit, the laser cannon!”

Vulture Li Yao’s face changed. He saw Luo Feng’s throwing knives go crazy in the crowd, which caused a lot of people to die. At the pinnacle of human technology, vulture Li Yao would have no way to operate it unless there are professionals here to assemble

the parts.

“Klein!” Li Yao quickly turned his head.

A white man with a large moustache came running over as he respectfully said: “Mr. Li”

“How are the casualties on the squad you brought along?” followed Li Yao.

Klein’s face turned pale as he respectfully answered: “We brought nine people: two people died and two are injured”

“Can the laser cannon still be assembled and operated?” continued Li Yao.

“Hm.....”

Klein slightly frowned.

Li Yao’s heart couldn’t help but to skip a beat. This large scale laser cannon could easily eliminate horde leader level monsters and could even harm emperor level monsters! It’s the most powerful weapon that mankind possesses! Naturally, its operations are very sophisticated. There are specialized personnel in charge of operating and maintaining certain parts. If someone crucial is missing, then the laser cannon cannot be operated.

“About assembling… it’s just that…..” Klein was a bit hesitant.

“I’m asking you, if you can assemble it?” said Li Yao in a low voice.

Klein saw Li Yao’s cold expression and couldn’t help but to get nervous. He clenched his teeth as he said: “If the seven of us work together, we can”

“Good” Li Yao nodded, “Assemble immediately”

“Right here?” Klein was flabbergasted.

“Yes, right here!” sneered Li Yao, “I don’t have time to move these into the mountains. I believe that Luo Feng isn’t satisfied, and that he’ll secretly climb up the mountain and look towards us. Once he reveals his head, the assembled laser cannon can fire at him and kill him!”

Li Yao was clear…..

Since Luo Feng already discovered their tracks, he might catch them assembling the laser cannon in the mountain. With Luo Feng’s tricks, he might not be able to defeat Li Yao himself, but he definitely can destroy a laser cannon with the peculiar powers of a spirit reader.

Klein nodded: “Yes!”

Klein headed towards his squad members. Li Yao also went to watch the specialized personnel open up the crates. At the same time, he commanded: “Everyone else, watch the surroundings closely. Monsters are absolutely not allowed to disturb us”

“Yes!” a few dozen people heeded command at the same time.

Suddenly, a commotion started in the squad of specialized personnel, which caused Li Yao to look over with question.

“Mr. Li, Mr. Li” Klein came rushing over with anxiety.

“What’s wrong?” asked Li Yao.

“Mr. Li, just now..... just now.....” Klein’s face was pale and his body was shaking.

“Speak!” Li Yao glared.

Klein said with a wavering voice: “The spirit reader’s attack just now caused quite a few people to run in panic. In their panic to avoid the throwing knives, they bumped into the crates. And one of the crates..... was pierced by the flying throwing knife”

“What” Li Yao’s face changed dramatically.

Bumping over a crate isn’t a problem, since the crate itself has

some protection for the parts.

However, the part inside the crate is definitely ruined if a throwing knife pierced through the crate.

“Hurry, open the crate now” Li Yao rushed over.

Klein hastily rushed over too. At this time, all the other squad members had bad looks on their faces as they stood beside the crate. Li Yao saw clearly too: this crate had an obvious hole that went through the entire crate. A few pieces of glass that could be seen to the human eye were laying around. Clearly, the part in this crate is destroyed!

“BASTARD, BASTARD!!!” Li Yao’s eyes turned red.

He ran into such a huge problem right when he came out.

However, Li Yao didn’t know that.....

Luo Feng was only concerned with killing people and didn’t pay any attention to the crates. However, three throwing knives were deflected by the intermediate wargod “Bei Yuan Gang”. With the amazing speed of the throwing knives, they’ll naturally remain powerful even after being deflected. And one of those deflected throwing knives pierced this crate.

“Mr. Li, this, if this part isn’t a core component, then there won’t be a big problem” said Klein.

“Open it” howled Li Yao as he glared at these people.

These specialized personnel also knew.....

With the temper of their boss in front of them, if this laser cannon isn’t able to be assembled, there would only be one result left for these useless people —— they’ll be killed by this boss!

These specialized personnel started opening the crate.

“HUALA!” the crate opened.

Klein stared: “Energy?”

“Energy?” the specialized personnel on the side stared too.

“What?” Li Yao stared at Klein. Klein carefully looked at the crates and excitedly said to Li Yao beside him, “Mr. Li, we are in great luck. The crate that was destroyed held the energy to the laser cannon. Even though two energy components were damaged, we still have one more left. In other words, with one energy component, we can fire the laser cannon at maximum power once. At a lower setting, it can fire three times”

Li Yao let out a sigh of relief to himself.

Good thing it’s just energy. Even three times for a lower setting is

good enough. These three attacks can easily wipe out the the most powerful wargods and horde leader level monsters.

"Begin assembling" commanded Li Yao.

"Yes" all the specialized personnel realized they dodged a bullet and immediately started to swiftly assemble.

.....

Ape Mountain Range, Luo Feng's base.

In the dark cave, Luo Feng sat on the ground with his back against the cave wall, his face was pale.

"Phew, it's not broken" Luo Feng softly rubbed his left elbow as he recalled the scene that previously unfolded. Luo Feng was still a bit shocked, "This vulture Li Yao is already an experienced advanced level wargod fighter. His strength probably ranges from 400,000 to 500,000 kg. With a 3x to 4x multiplier, his blade's power was definitely over 1 million kg!"

Even after his spiritual force's obstruction and his shield's defense, vulture Li Yao's slash still caused a crack*!

And in mid air, vulture Li Yao's slash via his lengthened arm also managed to make Luo Feng spit out blood and cause his right hand to split open a bit. Since this blade was slashed through the Black God set, it only had half of its original power.

These two slashes.....

Vulture Li Yao, wasn't able to attack with all his power.

But even so, Luo Feng had no way to fight back!

"He's faster than me"

"He's stronger than me"

"His defense is way greater than mine too"

"My advantage lies in the unpredictability of my attacks, and that it's easier for me to escape" Luo Feng frowned, "That Black God set is too special. It can extend based on the user's will. Not only can it cover the wearer's entire body, it can also extend to a length of around 10 meters. This means that he can easily attack me even when I'm in midair.

When he was escaping at the very end, Li Yao actually tried to tie him up with his extending arm!

Once he's tied up, he's probably finished.

"Next time I battle against this Li Yao, I have to stay at least 20 meters away from him" decided Luo Feng to himself.

……

While Luo Feng was resting in his base, Li Yao demonstrated his unbeatable power on the wastelands, scaring the leader of a horde, a ‘horde leader level monster’, away. After that, no monster hordes dared to harass these humans again.

“Mr. Li, assembling complete!” said Klein with excitement.

“Oh?”

Li Yao went over.

In front of him was an apparatus that looked like a ‘satellite’. This apparatus was around 10 meters long. In the middle was a cylinder-shaped device that looked like a turbine. On the two sides of this huge cylinder were two smaller cylinders.

“Has Luo Feng’s position been tracked?” asked Li Yao.

“Yes”

Li Yao pointed to the radar display, “This Luo Feng is within 5 km of us, so our radar can barely manage to locate him. However, these types of radar are usually used to search for large beings. The human body is too small, so once the distance increases….. it’ll be hard to lock-on again. If that happens, we can only do a laser lock-

on”

“Laser lock-on?” frowned Li Yao.

“Yes”

Klein nodded, “The advantages of a laser lock-on is that it is extremely accurate and can lock-on to targets far away. However, the disadvantage is..... there can be absolutely nothing in between the laser cannon and the target. For example, there is a huge mountain obstructing the target right now, so there is no way to use a laser lock-on”

“Of course, we are close right now, so there is no need for that. The radar can lock-on to the target with no problem” said Klein with confidence.

“Can you kill him now?” asked Li Yao.

“No” Klein shook his head, “The target is deep inside the mountain range inside one of the mountains. There is over 300 meters of rock blocking the target from our current position! If the laser cannon was to shoot through such thick rock, all of its power would be used up”

300 meters of rock.....

Even the most powerful of wargods can’t reach a depth of 300 meters when punching a huge mountain once.

“However, as long as he shows himself from the mountain range”

“Or, as long as the thickness of obstructing rock is within 10 meters, it can shoot through and kill him” Klein said confidently.

“Very good” Li Yao’s eyes glowed, “Keep Luo Feng targeted. For sure..... with this kid’s sneakiness, he’ll definitely sneak a look through his binoculars! Once the target is able to be shot down, kill him directly!”

“Yes” Klein responded loudly.

Li Yao looked at the faraway Ape Mountain Range and let out a cruel smile on his face: “To be able to die to the laser cannon, you should be proud of yourself”

Chapter 45: Escape Plan

Li Yao and the others waited very patiently, as if they were snipers lying in wait, ready to use the laser cannon for a one shot kill at any time.

.....

Ape Mountain Range, Luo Feng's base.

In the dark cave, Luo Feng was in his Wu Xin Xiang Tian position as he absorbed the cosmic energies into his body and transformed it into genetic energy. Luo Feng intentionally guided the genetic energy to his left elbow. A numbing feeling spread about and, in a moment, Luo Feng stopped only when the injured part of his body couldn't absorb any more genetic energy.

"The dragon blood sure is effective"

"Even though my body fitness level raised by a lot, a lot of the dragon blood's energies are still hidden in my body. I just trained for a bit and a lot of the energy merged into my body. My elbow is much more comfortable now. In two or three days, it'll be perfectly fine" Luo Feng moved his elbow a bit and couldn't help but to let out a smile.

An increase in a fighter's strength is an evolution to their life.

After reaching the beginner wargod level, Luo Feng's immunity

system and recovery rate became much more powerful than before.

“Alright, let’s see where Li Yao and his group are and what they’re doing!” Luo Feng put on his backpack and swiftly dashed out of the cave.

.....

On the wastelands.

“Moved, Luo Feng moved” yelled Klein with excitement.

Li Yao’s eyes flashed on the side, but he continued to watch the radar in silence.

.....

In the mountain range.

Luo Feng was in the mountain range, his eyes were cold: “Hm, if I have a chance, I’ll cruelly punish them again. I killed quite a few people just then. Oh yea, they seemed to have brought a bunch of crates with them. They came all the way from Europe to kill me and even brought so many crates with them. Those crates must be something valuable, so I’ll destroy them too”

“WAIT!”

Luo Feng suddenly stopped as he stooped on the mountain, his face changing dramatically.

“Crates?”

“Crates? They came here from tens of thousands of km away and brought a bunch of crates with them? And they treated those crates with extreme care?” as Luo Feng thought to himself, all the hairs on his body stood up, “If, if I was Li Yao, and I wanted to kill a spirit reader..... what would I do to raise my chances?”

“As long as spirit readers can fly, Li Yao wouldn’t be able to kill them no matter how powerful he is”

“Only two weapons can threaten a wargod level spirit reader..... Nuclear bombs and laser cannons” Luo Feng’s face changed dramatically, “This, this Li Yao actually, actually brought a laser cannon here?”

Luo Feng was only a 19 year old youth.

Even though China’s education broadened one’s horizons, Luo Feng subconsciously thought..... that the ‘laser cannon’ and ‘nuclear bomb’ were the two ultimate heated weapons of humanity, their last resort against monsters. How could he have thought that Li Yao would use a laser cannon against himself?

However——

When Luo Feng thought about how to deal with a spirit reader from Li Yao's point of view, he deduced—— it could only be a laser cannon. With all the crates he saw, this is an accurate guess!

"According to what I learned in physics class, laser cannons are restricted in many ways. Usually, laser cannons can only attack freely when they're on an aircraft"

"And when they're on the ground, the spheroid shape of the earth causes the surface to be curved too"

Various information about the laser cannon quickly appeared in Luo Feng's mind. Keep in mind that when Luo Feng was still in school, his strongest subject was science..... If he didn't faint in the middle of his math exam during his high school exams, Luo Feng's test scores would probably be high enough for him to get into the best school. Adding to that, countless men are curious about the laser cannon, so many of them know a lot about it.

"Now....."

"I definitely can't show my head!"

"Thankfully, this large mountain is blocking, so they can't do anything for now. But once I show my head, they'll probably kill me instantly!" a cold sweat appeared on Luo Feng's forehead.

Fear!

The laser cannon was too powerful. First, the speed. The laser cannon attacks at the speed of light! Under the speed of light, Luo Feng would probably be blasted to smithereens before he can even attempt to conjure up the thought of dodging. Next, is power. After the laser cannon's power rose to the extreme through research, humanity has been able to fight equally against monsters.

"This Li Yao, sure is insane"

"He brought so many crates. What could it be, if not a laser cannon? Other machines are useless against spirit readers and in wargod level battles"

"Escape!"

"The thing I need to do now is to run away as far as I can. Laser cannons are restricted by distance, so once the distance becomes too great, they won't be able to locate me" Luo Feng didn't want to reveal himself to check them anymore. It's not a check..... it's a risk! Who knows whether or not Li Yao has the laser cannon aimed at him right now?

Once he reveals himself, he'll be killed!

"Where should I go?" Luo Feng immediately looked at the tactical communications watch on his wrist and brought up a satellite mapping of his surroundings.

Through the mapping, Luo Feng clearly understood the geography of his surroundings.

“Li Yao and his group are north of the mountain range, so I should run towards the south as fast as possible! Since a huge mountain is in between us, they won’t be able to attack me for a moment’s time”

“This….. around 3 km away from the mountain range is a river!”

“Water can refract light, and when the attack of a laser cannon blasts on a river, it’ll evaporate lots of water and become refracted. This will use up a huge amount of its energy….. once I’m deep into the river, I’ll be safe” Luo Feng was clear, that the laser cannon was most afraid of weather conditions like rain and mist. And he was going to be under a river.

Against a laser cannon, water would do a much better job of blocking than rock and steel.

“Along this river…. 260 km, a huge lake can be reached”

“This lake, according to the satellite mapping, has an area of around 100 km squared” said Luo Feng to himself with happiness. The continent of Australia always had many large lakes. Especially because of the sea type monsters invasion into the continent, many large lakes were formed. These large lakes are usually the home of various sea type monsters.

“In the middle of this lake is an island that’s around 20 to 30 km squared”

“Yup, I’ll go along the river and enter the lake. Then I’ll go through the lake and reach the island!” thought Luo Feng to himself, “a distance of 200 km, there’s no way the laser cannon can hit me when I’m that far, unless I fly up to an extremely high altitude. And the lake surrounding the island poses no threat to me. But Li Yao can’t fly, so he can only swim through the water……”

After thinking about that, he proceeded to——

Run!

Luo Feng swiftly jumped down and went along the valley below as he quickly headed south.

…..

Wasteland, Li Yao’s group.

“How come he’s not moving?” elite members of all skin colors were all surprised. Even Li Yao frowned. Before, they were extremely excited when they saw the little bright dot rush up the mountain in the radar’s display. After all, every single person here probably wants to kill Luo Feng!

If they kill Luo Feng, they will have money to earn, and they will be able to avenge the dead.

“He turned back!” exclaimed Klein.

“He’s not turning back, he’s escaping towards the south” wargod James’ face changed as he followed.

Indeed, the bright dot on the radar display was swiftly headed south.

Li Yao stayed silent.

Slowly.....

“Mr. Li, the target has already escape the mountainous region and is continuously headed south!” said Klein hurriedly.

“This sly kid” Li Yao squinted.

Li Yao started to suspect..... that Luo Feng guessed that he brought out a laser cannon. Even though the usual person can’t make such a guess, but with Li Yao’s understanding of Luo Feng..... the youth named Luo Feng is extremely cautious and sly. It seems like killing this Luo Feng will be no easy task.

“James” said Li Yao in a low tone.

“Li” James looked at Li Yao, his face changing slightly.

Could it be.....

That this Li Yao wants him to go deal with Luo Feng? That horrifying kid instantly killed his partner and Bei Yuan Gang, which caused James to lose all will to fight and oppose him.

“Bring my men and carefully transport this laser cannon to a mountain in the mountain range over there. Pick a location that can aim towards the south!” commanded Li Yao, “Remember, be careful. Do not let the laser cannon get damaged no matter what”

James couldn’t help but to let out a sigh of relief.

“No worries, this distance is basically nothing. And we also have so many people here” said James confidently. Moving a laser cannon across a distance of hundreds of km is a difficult task, but the distance they’re moving it across is only a few km. For a wargod and many warlord level fighters, this task is nothing difficult.

“Good” Li Yao looked towards Klein, “Klein, remember, once you get the chance, kill Luo Feng. As for the safety here..... James will be responsible for it”

“No worries” nodded James.

“Klein, you contact me about Luo Feng’s position” commanded

Li Yao.

“Yes” responded Klein.

With a movement of Li Yao’s body, he transformed into a blurry, black image as he disappeared into the distance. With his horrifying mach 2 speed, it only took him a few seconds to reach the Ape Mountain Range that was a few km away.

.....

Luo Feng wasn’t as fast as Li Yao, but once he goes all out with his spiritual force’s support, his speed was over 500 m/s. After charging out of the mountain range, Luo feng entered the large river that was around 10 meters wide.

Since it’s only 10 meters wide, the monsters in the river aren’t powerful.

The truly powerful water type monsters live in large lakes or in the sea.

“Whoosh!”

Luo Feng lay on his hexagonal shield in the water as he controlled the buoyancy. At the same time, his spiritual force worked on his battle boots, producing a powerful propulsion force of over 200,000 kg!

Whoosh!

Luo Feng swiftly zipped through the river faster than a torpedo

.....

Li Yao, who just charged out of Ape Mountain Range, howled towards his tactical communications watch: “Where is Luo Feng?”

“Mr. Li, there is a river 3 km ahead of you. Luo Feng is swiftly headed towards the south along that river!” while that sound still rang, Li Yao used his astonishing speed to rush towards the river. Sonic booms could be heard everywhere he ran by, scaring away quite a few monsters as a result.

He charged towards the river and swiftly sprinted towards the south along the river bank.

In just a moment, Li Yao and Luo Feng have both advanced dozens of km.

“Where is Luo Feng?” asked Li Yao again.

“Mr. Li, the target is too far. The radar can’t even detect Luo Feng” Klein’s voice carried from the tactical communications watch.

Li Yao couldn’t help but to stop.

“What? Can’t be detected anymore?”

Li Yao looked at the sparkling, flowing river in front of him. How should he know where Luo Feng is. As he clenched his teeth, he dialed his wife Venina’s number, “Venina, quick, give Luo Feng’s new phone number to me”

And around 8 km away from Li Yao under the river.....

Luo Feng, like a torpedo, swiftly moved forward in the river.

Chapter 46: Unforeseen Event

“What do you want his phone number for?” Venina’s voice carried from the tactical communications watch.

“Hurry, don’t waste time” urged Li Yao.

Venina’s voice had a bit of anger tied within: “Yao, you better not mess around. If you want to confirm Luo Feng’s position, you should do it through me. Even if you can confirm his location by dialing Luo Feng’s number, Luo Feng will be able to discover your location too!”

“And if you call him, it’ll raise his suspicions” Venina was unamused, “I’ll figure out a way to get his location to you”

Li Yao frowned, he knew his wife was right.

“Alright, hurry” urged Li Yao.

.....

Paris headquarter city, a large room.

Three laptops were opened at the same time, and two men and one woman were each sitting in front of them. Venina stood on the side as she commanded: “Use Luo Feng’s home number to call Luo Feng”

“Yes”

Through their software, it was easy for them to make Luo Feng’s tactical communications watch display the number they want it to.

“Madam, coordinates confirmed” said the black woman.

“Send it to the mister” commanded Venina.

.....

Li Yao, who was standing on the riverbank, couldn’t help but to sneer as he looked at the coordinates he just received: “So he was only a few dozen km away from me”

For wargods, a few dozen km is nothing.

Fighters like wargods, especially powerful ones whose bodies are who knows how many more times tougher than diamond, have fist strengths of hundreds of thousands of kg. Not even bullets fired from a sniper rifle can pierce their skin. Advanced organisms like them..... are definitely human weapons who pose a greater threat than an entire army.

Whoosh!

Like lightning, he chased towards Luo Feng’s position.

While he was chasing, Luo Feng was also advancing under water.

With Luo Feng's beginner wargod fitness level, he could hold his breath underwater for nearly half an hour. Even normal people can hold their breath underwater for a few minutes, so it is normal for Luo Feng to be able to handle half an hour.

"Hm?"

"My tactical communications watch vibrated?" Luo Feng glanced at his tactical communications watch with confusion. This is a tactical communications watch that came with his 9th series battle uniform, waterproof is but a tiny function, "the display shows that this call is from home?"

"That's not right, I didn't even give my family my new phone number?"

Luo Feng was confused.

Luo Feng was using this new phone number as bait to catch the Vulture Scorpion couple, so he didn't tell his family members. He communicates with his family via the cell phone he bought!

"My parents are normal people. If they wanted to contact me, they could just call my cell phone. How could they go through so many steps to get my number from the elite training camp and then call me?" Luo Feng was clear, that it wasn't hard for someone

else to get a certain phone number to show on a tactical communications watch's display.

"Trying to find me through my phone number?"

"Sorry"

Luo Feng grinned and pressed the off button. He held it down——

Beep!

The tactical communications watch directly turned off.

To prevent others from calling his number to find out his location, there are two ways—— 1. Throw away the tactical communications watch and separate it from the user. They can find the tactical communication watch's position, but not the owner's. 2. Take out the battery or turn it off.

Power it off! Once it's off, the tactical communications watch is just a piece of metal.

.....

On the riverbank.

"Coordinates?"

“I’m asking you, where are the coordinates?” Li Yao couldn’t help but to roar, his face was fierce.

The tactical communications watch’s display showed Venina as she shook her head, “Yao, that Luo Feng already turned off his tactical communications watch”

“What do you mean?” Li Yao’s eyes seemed like they were about to shoot out flames.

“Can’t locate Luo Feng anymore” Venina shook her head.

Li Yao clenched his fists in anger, can’t locate? He hurriedly crossed tens of thousands of km from Europe with a group of people and, right when he arrived, his men were killed by Luo Feng. And now, Luo Feng turned off his tactical communications watch. Now that he can’t locate Luo Feng, he can’t even locate him, and don’t even mention killing him!

All for nothing!

ALL FOR NOTHING!

“BASTARD, BASTARD” Li Yao was so mad that the veins on his forehead were bursting.

When Li Yao lost track of Luo Feng, it was already night time.

The sky was dark, and a triangular fighter jet was flying in the skies of Australia at an alarming speed.

In the fighter jet was one pilot and two passengers.

“That Li Yao sure is cruel. He got a laser cannon out just to deal with Luo Feng” out of the two passengers, a tall, large brute laughed loudly. Beside him was a skinny Indian with slightly curly hair, who said in his accented Chinese: “He’s completely crazy, so he doesn’t care about the method”

“Hehe, Puka, you can speak Chinese?” complimented the large brute.

The Indian slightly smiled and said nothing.

“Hehe, laser cannon. Truthfully, even though I have reached this level already, I haven’t actually seen a laser cannon after all these years” the brute couldn’t help but to sigh, “I guess the Paulinus family aren’t arms dealers for show. Through their control over weapons, they even got a laser cannon”

“Hmph”

The Indian said with a hmph, “They privately sell out quite a few nuclear bombs and laser cannons”

Suddenly, the fighter jet’s speed decelerated rapidly.

“We’re here” the large brute stood up, “Puka, get ready to get off”

“Ok” the Indian nodded slightly.

.....

On a mountain in Ape Mountain Range, James and the elites from the Paulinus family were currently resting. At this time, a black, triangular fighter jet appeared in the sky.

When he saw this fighter jet, James’ face changed.

“It’s the Dojo of Limits’ fighter jet” exclaimed James.

“Dojo of Limits” quite a few other elite fighters recognized it.

As of now, fighter jets were usually disc shaped. Triangular shaped fighter jets were usually less effective than disc shaped ones. However..... only the triangular fighter jets manufactured by the Dojo of Limits possess an extremely high level of attack power. They were the best fighter jets on earth.

The American government, European government, etc. all wanted the Dojo of Limits to make their fighter jet manufacturing techniques public.

Sadly, Hong ignored them.

So, these types of fighter jets have basically become a symbol of the Dojo of Limits.

“Isn’t that James?”

The hatch opened and two figures jumped down from midair, landing on the mountain.

“Puka? Tie Zong?” James was astonished. Wargods all join the Palace of Wargods, so James, a wargod, recognized these two famous people.

“James, who are they?” the other elite fighters were in a panic.

It seems like these two people weren’t regular people.

“The world alliance bans people from using the laser cannons against other people” the large brute scanned the crowd. The crowd of elite fighters felt like a laser hit their eyes and were in extreme pain, “Following the command of the head, we’ll be taking away this laser cannon!”

“What” Klein’s eyes widened as he yelled, “This is our Paulinus family’s.....”

“Bullshit”

The large brute's eyes were like lightning as he roared, "Ask James".

Klein turned towards the only wargod on their side, James. James also scolded: "Hurry up and follow their command. Do you know who these two people are? They are wargods of the Dojo of Limits. Directly tell Li Yao the names Puka and Tie Zong and Li Yao will definitely stay silent"

Klein froze.

"Hurry, disassemble the laser cannon and put them in the crates" commanded the large brute.

"Us?" Klein froze.

Not only have they come to take away their laser cannon, but they also want them to disassemble it.

"If not you then who?" scolded the large brute with dissatisfaction.

Even James was helping the opponents, so Klein and his group had no choice but to follow their demands..... at the same time, they swiftly contacted Li Yao about this.

.....

Li Yao, whose stomach was filled with anger because he couldn't find Luo Feng, received Klein's call.

"Sir, the laser cannon was taken away!!!"

"By two people named Puka and Tie Zong!"

After hearing the first phrase, Li Yao was about to start cursing, but after hearing the second phrase, the curses that were half way out of his throat were forcefully swallowed back into himself. However, his face was purple from anger: "Puka and Tie Zong? The special forces of the Dojo of Limits? And led by squadron captain Puka?"

As a veteran advanced level wargod, Li Yao really didn't care about Tie Zong's strength.

However, Puka.....

The genius fighter of India who graduated within the top three of the elite training camp.

As a genius who also possesses the Black God set, he has extraordinary skill and power and is even one of Hong's students. Li Yao has even fought with Puka twice in the virtual space, and he lost both times!

“As expected, Luo Feng, a 19 year old who can already compare to an advanced level wargod with his spiritual force, is valued highly by the Dojo of Limits..... Of course, the Dojo of Limits probably kept track of everything Luo Feng was doing via satellite” Li Yao squinted.

“He found out that I brought a laser cannon and was preparing to kill Luo Feng with it, which wouldn’t help Luo Feng train at all. In response, they directly dispatched their special forces to take it away!”

“Damn”

“Using me as a tool to sharpen Luo Feng?”

Li Yao stood there motionless, but his eyes were horrifying. As if a vulture who has starved for 10 days already, he was pushed to the border of insanity!

“My son, died! My only son died! And they want to use me as a tool? Haha..... Hong, Hong, just watch, I’ll make you regret this decision!” said Vulture Li Yao lowly. After that, he headed towards the river.....

He, Li Yao!

Will not give up his mission to kill Luo Feng!

.....

After turning off his tactical communications watch, Luo Feng casually advanced in the river. Occasionally, he would pop his head above the surface to breath a bit, and then continue advancing in the water.

He wasn't in a rush.

Luo Feng arrived at his destination at night time, a lake that had an area of around 100 km squared.

The lake was grand, and a weird sound occasionally carried out from the water. Right now, Luo Feng had his feet on his shield as he hovered above the surface of the lake. He watched the center of the lake with a face of surprisement: "How could this be? This lake.....". The lake in front of him was completely covered with an unending mist.

The closer to the center, the thicker the mist!

Even with the vision of a wargod, one could barely see past 100 meters. The weird part is..... the mist at the border of the lake was thin, and there was no mist at all on the surrounding land.

"What place is this?" Luo Feng felt invisible pressure.

Chapter 47: Invitation

This lake was already quite strange, and the night just made it even more mysterious.

Luo Feng subconsciously felt pressure.

“Hm, it’s night right now and the mist obstructs my vision. I’ll check properly in the morning tomorrow” Luo Feng was calm. He would rather wait until day than go in blindly right now.

Tonight, Luo Feng went around the lake.

Since the lake was 100 km squared, a lot of time was needed to go around. However, with Luo Feng’s speed, not even 1 hour was needed to walk most of the distance while observing the lake at the same time. As he walked, Luo Feng didn’t discover anything special. After that, Luo Feng sat cross legged and closed his eyes.

The night passed quickly.

Dawn of the second day, the sun was rising.

Luo Feng sat on the grass as he looked towards the lake. The lake in front of him was still covered in a layer of mist, which got thicker towards the center. And, on the land surrounding the lake, there wasn’t any mist at all.

“Like I thought, the mist is there whether or not it’s day or night”

“Visibility in the day is way better than at night”

Even with Luo Feng’s wargod level vision, Luo Feng could barely see past 100 meters last night. It would be amazing for a regular person to see past five meters. Now that the sun has risen, Luo Feng could see past around 200 meters..... Truthfully, for wargod level fighters, a distance of 200 meters just needs a simple wave from their body to cover.

“I’ll go in and see” Luo Feng jumped onto the hexagonal shield floating beside him.

With his feet on the shield, he swiftly flew deep towards the center of the lake.

The mist emanated; aquatic plants were abundant on this wide lake. At times, weird noises could be heard, and surface of the water would ripple as a result. The human eye couldn’t see below the surface of the lake.

“Just what you’d expect from a lake that was 100 km squared, there are definitely a lot of water type monsters here” thought Luo Feng to himself. Rivers of the width he was moving forward in before definitely couldn’t be home to any powerful water type monsters, so Luo Feng had an easy ride underwater.

But for large lakes like these……

Hard to say.

And water type monsters are known for being difficult to deal with, because the sea is their heaven. The vast sea gives birth to many odd, yet powerful monsters. So even wargods aren't willing to go to sea, and won't easily enter large lakes like these either.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng swiftly flew forward, causing turbulence in the lake water below him.

"Hiss!"

A large, blue light made of electricity ferociously lit up.

"Hiss!"

Densely packed blue lights instantly lit up the area of the lake. The blue lights curved like snakes. Luo Feng, who was completely unprepared, was completely hit by the densely packed lights after just dodging the first light! Not because Luo Feng's dodging abilities aren't good enough, but because these lights freely curved in midair with no order to them at all!

"Not good" Luo Feng felt his entire body go numb and his mind

becoming shaky.

His body started falling from midair!

The time it took for him to fall was quite long; a wargod could move faster. Around two seconds is required to fall from a height of 20 meters.

“Hm?” Luo Feng was alarmed.

When there was only a distance of six to seven meters left between him and the lake below, weird monster howls could be heard. At the same time, long, cylinder shaped monsters with green scales ferociously leaped out from the water. Electricity was encircling the scales of these monsters, and some of them had horns on their heads. These monsters opened their mouths wide open right when they came out of the water!

“Get out” roared Luo Feng.

Six lights of death bursted out with Luo Feng as their center.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The six throwing knives instantly drew across the water type monster horde. They even went in a circle, piercing through many monsters. These monsters all let out cries of pain, and monsters that were lucky enough to survive all let out streams of electricity in rage.

Whoosh!

However, while controlling the throwing knives, Luo Feng stood on the shield to his side and swiftly flew back up. Thankfully, the attacks of these water type monsters weren't as organized as before, which allowed Luo Feng to escape.

"Phew, almost died here"

After flying up to a distance of 50 meters above the lake, Luo Feng found that his forehead and back were drenched in a cold sweat. He's been in tricky situations before and even dared to fight against high level horde leader monsters up front..... but he didn't think he would almost die here! If he woke up slightly later, those monsters definitely would have chewed his head up!

"Eel type water type monsters?"

"Steelwire electric eel"

"Horned electric eel"

With a glance, he discovered the various eel type monsters below him. There were over 100 fish type monsters that could discharge electricity on this world. However, monsters form hordes, so the monster horde that attacked Luo Feng was an electric eel type water type monster horde. Monsters that could discharge electricity were always feared by human fighters.

Powerful water type monsters capable of discharging electricity, especially when they do it together, can instantly knock out powerful wargods. When they're knocked out, even wargods can do nothing against the electric eels!

They can't do anything about it!

"I need to be careful. There are millions of different types of monsters, and many of them have special abilities. I might lose my life if I'm not careful" Luo Feng flew up to an altitude of 50 meters and then carefully flew forward.

While flying, he could hear all sorts of weird noises carrying from the lake.

Clearly.....

There was an alarming number of monsters in the lake.

"HOWL~"

A horrifying howl boomed next to Luo Feng's ear. At the same time, an incredible force instantly landed on Luo Feng's body, causing Luo Feng to helplessly fall.

"Fuck! Can't believe another water type monster attacked me" Luo Feng desperately controlled his spiritual force to make himself

hover.

But his body helplessly fell.

“Huhu~~”

An incredible whirlpool was forming in the lake below him. The center of the whirlpool was a “black hole”. Under the white mist, the black hole was blurry, and the black hole was crazily swallowing everything above it. Its powerful suction power prevented Luo Feng from flying away for a bit. Keep in mind that Luo Feng’s spiritual force was virtually at an advanced level wargod level.

“Big guy!” Luo Feng lowered his head and laughed.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Two SS grade throwing knives rapidly shot downwards, straight towards the large black hole.

Chi! Chi!

“YA!”

An ear piercing cry that sounded like a baby’s instantly rang across the sky. The sound was enormous and ear piercing, causing Luo Feng to subconsciously cover his ears. In the raging waters

below, a dark red colored blood was mixed within. And that ‘black hole’, with its suction power, completely disappeared.

Whoosh! Whoosh! The two throwing knives landed in Luo Feng’s pockets mid air.

“What a powerful monster, my throwing knives only barely managed to scratch the surface of its skin before they were blocked by its bones” Luo Feng was controlling the throwing knives, so of course he was clear that his throwing knives only injured the monster slightly.

“It usually roars, but when it’s startled, it cries like a baby? Its suction power is startling? What kind of water type monster is this?”

In terms of the number of species, the number of monsters on land barely make up a portion of the number of monsters in the sea.

There were over 10,000 different species of monsters on land. One could imagine how many different water type monsters there were. Adding to that, fighters spend most of their time on land. As a result, Luo Feng, like other fighters, didn’t know much about water type monsters. He only knew some common, famous ones.

“I’ll continue forward. I want to see for myself how strange this lake is” mumbled Luo Feng to himself. But at the same time, six throwing knives hovered around him. He also flew up another 30 meters, reaching an altitude of 80 meters.

.....

Finally, Luo Feng landed on a beach.

“Finally reached the island at the center” balls of sweat appeared on Luo Feng’s nose. He was startled quite a bit on his way. Other than his near-death experience from the attack of the electric eel horde, Luo Feng also saw two large water type monsters killing each other. He also saw a dragon, at least 100 meters long, eating.

Anyway.....

The number of powerful water type monsters in this lake were unexpectedly many. Quite odd!

Normally, it would be amazing for a lake that was around 100 km squared to be the home of two or three powerful water type monsters. But this lake..... Luo Feng already saw 7 or 8 extremely powerful water type monsters on his way here. And don’t even mention the even more powerful ones hiding below! The density of powerful monsters was too great!

This goes against common sense!

“There must be a cause behind all of this” Luo Feng walked on the beach and looked at the thick forest ahead of him.

The island in the center of the lake was like a primitive forest. There were many large trees standing and plants were abundant everywhere.

“Hm?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to start ascending, and he flew higher and higher.

He looked at the island below him. This mysterious island was covered in mist like always. And the lake surrounding the island..... contained large amounts of powerful water type monsters.

“Not right, not right.....”

Luo Feng’s face changed.

“This island, why is this island so quiet?”

Yes, quiet!

After coming to the continent of Australia for such a long time, Luo Feng has never discovered a place as quiet as this one. Even if it’s in the wilderness, there should be large amounts of monsters. But this island covered in mist.....

didn’t even have a single monster!

No flying monsters, no land type monsters. This island covered

in mist was abnormally quiet. However, the lake surrounding the island had an alarming amount of powerful, horrifying water type monsters.

“This island is weird”

“Not right”

Luo Feng has never felt so afraid before. He didn’t know why..... this place that was just too quiet and still, made Luo Feng fearful.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng landed on the beach. He didn’t dare to go deeper into the island.

“The lake is peculiar and the island is peculiar too” Luo Feng suddenly let out a smile. He stretched out his right hand and pressed the button on the tactical communications watch on his wrist. Pressed——

Beep!

The tactical communications watch turned on.

“My tactical communications watch is on now. Li Yao..... time for you to come” mumbled Luo Feng to himself. Even though Li Yao was powerful, he had no choice but to swim through the lake

since he can't fly..... but the water type monsters in this lake were so powerful, that even Li Yao would have a lot of difficulty passing through the lake without dying.

.....

Paris headquarter city, in a large room.

One of the three people sitting in front of laptops, a handsome, white youth, suddenly exclaimed: "Madam, it's through. We called the target's phone"

"What?" Venina, who was originally frowning, said out of surprise.

"We finished calling, the target's coordinates have been confirmed" continued the handsome, white youth.

"Transfer it immediately" commanded Venina.

"Yes" the white youth excitedly transferred the coordinates to Li Yao, who was in the wastelands of the continent of Australia.

Chapter 48: Pitiful Li Yao

Monsters could be seen killing each other everywhere on this vast wasteland. Their goal was to kill their opponent and eat them to fill up their own stomachs! However, compared to a monster's body, a tiny, skinny human fighter was travelling alone on the wilderness. This fighter didn't even avoid any of the monsters.

He charged straight forward!

He treated those monsters like ants. Quite a few monsters have attempted to attack this human fighter, but that just resulted in thickening the scent of blood on this fighter's body. With such a startling scent that clearly had some powerful monsters' blood mixed in, the monsters avoided this human right when they saw him.

"Luo Feng!"

"Luo Feng!" mumbled li Yao to himself like a beast.

"Just hide, keep hiding. You can hide, but you can't hide forever!" Li Yao never would have thought that hunting down this 19 year old youth would be so troublesome. However..... he would never give up his quest to avenge his son! If he doesn't kill Luo Feng, he probably wouldn't even be able to sleep at night.

"Hm?" Li Yao felt the tactical communications watch on his wrist vibrate. He looked carefully and was startled, "Luo Feng's coordinates?"

At the same time, he received a call.

“Hello” said Li Yao.

“Yao, it’s me, you received Luo Feng’s coordinates right” Venina’s voice carried from the tactical communications watch.

“You got these coordinates? Are you sure?” asked Li Yao hurriedly.

“Yao, we just received these coordinates. No idea what happened with that Luo Feng..... we were suddenly able to call his tactical communications watch! This means that he probably turned it on himself. I’m scared that this is one of Luo Feng’s tricks and that he’s luring you on purpose” said Venina.

“Trick, trap?” Li Yao couldn’t help but to let out a crazy laugh.

His laugh echoed around the wasteland, and not one monster dared to approach this scary human.

“I have a ‘Black God set’ from the archaeological ruins, so no wargod can kill me. Unless it’s an emperor level monster, an existence surpassing the wargod level, or a laser cannon..... but Luo Feng, hmph, I really can’t think of anything powerful he has hidden up his sleeves” Li Yao was confident.

“Okay, whether or not these coordinates are real or fake, I’m going to go take a look” said Li Yao.

“Ok” Venina wasn’t against the decision.

She was also an advanced level wargod and clearly understood how powerful her husband was.

There were only three things that could threaten Li Yao:

1. Laser cannon? How could Luo Feng get a laser cannon and operate it.

2. Existences surpassing the wargod level. But if Luo Feng could get someone like that, why would he need to use a trick like this?

3. Emperor level monster. There should be many horde leader level monsters surrounding the emperor level monster. Once he finds out something is wrong, Li Yao would retreat. Why would he go mess with an emperor level monster?

“Still 120 km from here” Li Yao looked at the map.

“Luo Feng, hope you’re there”

Whoosh!

A horrifying sonic boom rose. Li Yao transformed into a black stream of light as he rushed southwest. Within a blink of an eye, he disappeared into the horizon. With a speed of mach 2, he was indeed a horrifying existence.

……

A flowing light slowly became visible as it stopped beside the mist covered lake. It was indeed the black armored, cold faced wargod vulture Li Yao.

“This Luo Feng sure can hide, picking a mist covered lake”

“With so much mist, the laser cannon is useless” Li Yao couldn’t help but to let out a mocking smile, mocking Luo Feng’s efforts…. to Li Yao, the laser cannon was already taken away by the Dojo of Limits. If he doesn’t even have the laser cannon, then wouldn’t it be futile for Luo Feng to hide in a mist covered island?

Whoosh!

Li Yao leaped dozens of meters into the air and crossed a distance of over 100 meters, as if he was launched like a cannonball.

“CHICHI~~” Li Yao’s feet quickly extended and formed something like a rubber raft. This rubber raft formed by the ‘Black God’ set used the force from Li Yao’s leap to swiftly move forward on the lake!

While he sat on the rubber raft, Li Yao held a blade in each hand and used them to paddle.

With Li Yao's astonishing strength, huge amounts of driving force was produced with each paddle.

"HOWL~~" "QUACK~~" "HISS~~" All sorts and types of weird monster noises carried from the bottom of the lake, but Li Yao's face was cold as he ignored all the sounds below. For an advanced level wargod, water type monsters in most lakes aren't threatening at all to him.

Sadly, Li Yao didn't know that this lake was special.

With the rubber raft's amazing speed, it swiftly moved forward as it split the water of the lake.

"What" Li Yao's faced dramatically changed.

He saw a large cylinder shaped snake-like being that was over 30 meters long and covered in purple scales. It bursted out of the lake like lightning, drew across an arc, and covered the raft with its gigantic purple scaled tail within a hundredth of a second.

Whoosh!

The rubber raft below Li Yao's feet disappeared and, other than his eyes, mouth, and nose, his entire body was well protected by a black color. Li Yao stepped on the gigantic tail like lightning and

used that force to leap into the air: “What a long tail, and what horrifying power! This attack definitely has the power of an high level horde leader. There were actually such powerful water type monsters in this lake?”

Li Yao was stunned!

And right in the instance when Li Yao fell from midair and touched the surface of the water.

“HISS!”

Blue electricity bolt after blue electricity bolt curved around like snakes as they instantly covered the entire area. Li Yao’s dodging abilities on water were worse than they were on land, so he was unable to dodge the electrical attack!

“Hmph. Good thing my Black God set is completely resistant to electricity” and right when Li Yao let out a sigh of relief.

“CHICHI~~”

A white string virtually instantly wrapped around and pulled back on one of his legs with an extraordinary level of power. “Not good” Li Yao’s face changed greatly and with a splash, Li Yao’s entire body sank into the lake.

※※

On the misty beach.

Luo Feng sat cross legged like a statue. Splash~~ the water from the lake occasionally charged at the beach. Weirdly enough..... not one water type monster dared to crawl up onto the beach.

After a while.....

Luo Feng, who was quietly sitting cross legged, opened his eyes.

“How come that Li Yao still isn’t here?”

“Could it be.....”

“He died while trying to pass through the lake?” Luo Feng let out a smile, “if he really died in the lake, then that’s nothing weird. Even though it’ll be hard to kill him because of his Black God set, once he gets stuck under the lake by water type monsters, he won’t have any oxygen to breath. Since he’ll be struggling a lot, he’ll use up all his air very quickly and suffocate to death”

Luo Feng turned around and looked at the island.

Silence!

The entire island was quiet. Only the wind and leaves could be heard.

“Even within advanced level wargods, I’m almost invincible”

“Unless an emperor level monster appears, it’s not likely for me to get killed in most circumstances”

“Yep, I’ll go take a look inside”

Luo Feng couldn’t control his curiosity. He was also quite confident in his own power, so Luo Feng, while being as alert as possible with his hexagonal shield and ghost blade in hand, and also ready to control his throwing knives at any time..... carefully entered the island and disappeared into the emanating mist as he began his exploration.

.....

After a long time, on the beach on the other side of the island.

“GO DIE!”

An enraged roar rang and the water in the lake beside the beach ferociously exploded with blood flying everywhere. A black image flew into the air and then landed on the beach.

“I’ve finally reached it” the black image directly softened up on the beach.

Only after a while did he get a hold of himself.

“Horrifying, what a horrifying lake” Li Yao’s face was full of fear and shock as he looked at the huge lake in front of him. When he, Li Yao, was young, he went all around the world, venturing into lakes even larger than the one in front of him. He even fought with monsters in the sea before!

However.....

Li Yao has never been so beat up, never been so close to death before. As he crazily escaped under water just now, he saw over 10 high level horde leader level water type monsters! And there were even more horde leader level monsters of other levels!

In other words, most of the water type monsters in the lake were extremely powerful.

There were countless commander level water type monsters, but there were barely any soldier level monsters.

“This lake, just what is this lake? How come I’ve never heard that such a horrifying lake exists on this earth” Li Yao’s face wasn’t looking good, “I’ve ran into over 10 high level horde leader level monsters in a 100 km squared lake. There are probably nearing 100 high level horde leader level monsters in this entire lake!”

“Even China’s #003 city, the den of monsters, isn’t much worse than this”

In terms of dangerousness, this lake is worse than former Shanghai, #003 city.

Because the water type monsters here are more densely packed and fighting in water lowers a human fighter's capabilities.

cough, cough Li Yao coughed two mouthfuls of fresh blood.

"The water really heavily impacts my strength. If I was on land, even if I couldn't handle 10 high level horde leaders, I could at least escape. But this..... was horrible" Li Yao couldn't help but to spit out another mouthful of fresh blood. He sat cross legged on the beach as he started to rest. He knew how heavily injured he was this time.

His right arm and two of his ribs were broken.

His organs were heavily injured!

Even though the 'Black God set' has powerful defensive capabilities, it isn't as effective against impacts. In the water, Li Yao was trapped and almost strangled to death. Even though he got out with his life on the line, his ribs were still broken and his organs were damaged.

"Now I need to heal up. If I fight again, I'll just damage my body even more" Li Yao had no more arrogance left.

He was completely scared because of this lake.

Thankfully he had his Black God set, or even 10 lives wouldn't have been enough.

"Venina" Li Yao connected to his wife, "Confirm Luo Feng's current coordinates". As he said that, Li Yao gasped for breath, his ribs in immense pain.

Chapter 49: The Secret of the Island

Li Yao looked at the coordinates on the map in his tactical communications watch sent by his wife: “Hm? He already entered the island?” Li Yao was not mad, but happy. If the coordinates didn’t change at all, Li Yao would’ve suspected that Luo Feng just left his tactical communications watch there.

And now, the target is moving.

Which means that Luo Feng is probably wearing it.

“I’ll rest up first. With my body’s regeneration speed, I should be able to heal up in two days. It’ll take me around half a day to stabilize” Li Yao couldn’t be bothered to continue chasing after Luo Feng. He first sat cross legged on the beach as he rested.

The mist emanated on the island.

“How weird” Luo Feng, who was fully equipped, slowly and carefully moved forward in the forest on the island. He looked at the plants around him and became even more confused, “I’ve already advanced two to three km into the island and I still haven’t seen any sign of any monster’s presence. It looks like there really aren’t any monsters on this island”

“The only peculiar thing is——”

“It should be winter right now in the continent of Australia, but

the temperature on this island is high. The trees and flowers seem to be blossoming like it's spring or summer" Luo Feng was confused.

Just what secrets did this island behold?

Trees were abundant, flowers were colorful, vines were everywhere..... the forest seemed to be full of life.

But there just weren't any animals.

Luo Feng carefully advanced step by step.

Around 100 meters away from Luo Feng was a pink flower. This flower was actually even larger than a sink, much larger than the flowers near it. It was also much more bright. At the moment..... Luo Feng slowly advanced towards that flower step by step. As he became closer and closer, he finally arrived.

"What a bright flower. It's quite rare to see such a bright flower in such a season in the continent of Australia" Luo Feng observed a bit and then turned his head as he continued on.

And right when Luo Feng took two steps——

Whoosh!

The bright, pink flower that was larger than a sink ferociously

opened up wide. With its now three to four meter wide diameter, this gigantic flower explosively shot towards Luo Feng like lightning. As if a cover that fell from the sky, it directly covered Luo Feng as it tried to swallow him whole.

After entering this misty island, Luo Feng has never let down his guard and was always at his utmost state of cautiousness.

“Hm?” a cold light flashed through Luo Feng’s eyes.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Three black lights instantly shot towards the gigantic flower from Luo Feng. Each of these throwing knives held incredible force and astonishing piercing power. As if three rays of death, they instantly pierced through the gigantic pink flower headed towards Luo Feng. The three black lights rotated several times and the flower was instantly sliced into pieces.

One of the throwing knives directly sliced off the extended blood red colored root of the huge flower!

CHI!

As if cutting through metal, it cut through the root.

“Man eating plant?” Luo Feng looked at the flower pieces and the remaining root on the ground. Gugu~~ red blood kept pouring out from the inside of the root, quite peculiar.

“Man eating plant mutations are extremely rare”

“And most of the man eating plants on earth are in South America’s amazon” Luo Feng frowned in confusion, “How could a man eating plant appear on this island?”

The Grand Nirvana period is the period of mutation in animals.

Humans are a type of animal.

When large amounts of monsters were born, powerful human fighters were born too! However, plants remained unaffected. Trees were still trees, flowers were still flowers..... the only plant that mutated was—— the man eating plant. There were already several species of man eating plants and, after they mutated, there are now over a few dozen species.

Since the man eating plant was the only plant that mutated, many scientists even declared the man eating plant as, “special organisms”.

“Weird, weird, can’t believe a man eating plant appeared here”

Luo Feng shook his head and continued forward.

To a powerful spirit reader like him, this man eating plant really posed no threat at all.

.....

After experiencing the attack of the man eating plant, Luo Feng became even more careful and advanced extremely slowly. However, this “slowness” is relative; he still walked much faster than normal people.

Half an hour later.

“Eh?”

“Willow tree!” Luo Feng looked at a willow tree in the distance and couldn’t help but to let out a smile..... Many of the trees on this island were rare, but Luo Feng was too familiar with the willow tree. For the afforestation projects on the streets of Yang Zhou city, willow trees were used! So Luo Feng was happy to see some willow trees. Maybe because nobody has been here for a very long time, these willow trees grew up to amazing heights.

“One, two, three, four..... nine in total!”

“Nine willow trees, what huge willow trees”

Luo Feng walked over.

The nine willow trees in front of him were indeed very large. Even the thinnest willow tree had a diameter of around a meter.

The thickest willow tree had a diameter of three meters..... it was rare to run into even one large tree like these. Since plants were abundant on this island, the tens of thousands of branches of these nine willow trees swayed in the wind.

Hu~hu~

Nine super willow trees. Each of these willow trees had millions of branches dancing in the wind.

“This island sure is amazing, being able to grow such huge willow trees”

“And the other plants here are full of life too, not just the willow trees. Even though it’s winter right now, the trees here still have their leaves” Luo Feng was amazed.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Right when Luo Feng was thinking to himself beside the nine huge willow trees, in an instant, all the branches on the willow trees crazily danced and swiftly wrapped towards Luo Feng like cruel wires! They were extremely fast, way faster than the speed of sound. Because of the short distance, even Luo Feng couldn’t dodge the branches that covered the sky!

“What is this thing?” Luo Feng’s face changed. Even the smallest willow tree reached a height of 30 to 40 meters, which is comparable to a 10 story building! As for the largest willow tree

that had a diameter of three meters, it reached a height of nearly 100 meters..... with such tall willow trees, the branches they had also reached an extraordinary number. Each of their branches were over 100 meters long, and they spread out and covered the entire sky!

"BREAK THROUGH!" Luo Feng ferociously charged forward. At the same time, six throwing knives encircled his body like a flaming wheel; they rotated as they crazily sliced the branches in the area! Luo Feng's throwing knives can kill many advanced level wargods, so, with their attack power, the branches were swiftly cut. However, cutting through the branches felt like cutting through steel.

With Luo Feng's understanding of his spiritual force and his throwing knives, he observed that each of these branches could probably withstand an attack from an advanced level warlord's blade! At such a level, even a homing missile will have trouble destroying these branches.

Of course, the branches couldn't do anything against Luo Feng's throwing knives.

Under Luo Feng's charge and his throwing knives' high speed rotation, large amounts of branches were cut into two.

Right when it seemed like Luo Feng was about to charge out, "BOOM".

The largest, super willow tree king in the middle with a diameter

of three meters suddenly shot out several light golden branches. There were tons of them, almost 10,000 branches! Each of these branches were several hundred meters long and virtually instantly covered Luo Feng. They charged straight into Luo Feng's throwing knives.

"CHICHI!"

The rotating throwing knives barely cut through a single light golden branch.

"Not good" Luo Feng's face changed dramatically.

Retreat! He swiftly retreated backwards and dodged the light golden willow tree branches.

"It's so hard for me just to cut through one of the light golden branches. If I get surrounded by millions of light golden branches..... I'll be in trouble". Even though he can still cut through the branches..... he can't take the risk. Because, failure means death! When faced with the dancing, light golden branches that were approaching him, Luo Feng ferociously drilled into the ground at the same time he retreated! PU!

Three throwing knives rotated as they instantly went through the ground and Luo Feng directly plunged into the hole. His spiritual force worked on his feet and made him like a drill as he swiftly went through the ground.

“CHICHI”

Large amounts of light golden branches swiftly entered the ground. However, the golden branches were only several hundred meters long, so they couldn’t go in too deep. And the main function of these branches were to tie and strangle their target to death..... the tip of these branches were forked, so their digging abilities couldn’t compare to Luo Feng’s throwing knives!

The light golden branches danced a bit and then returned to the super willow tree king. As for the other willow branches, they danced in the wind like usual.

.....

Deep underground, rocky layer. Luo Feng blew open a small hole here.

Luo Feng was dirty and lay against the rock behind him.

“Drip, drip!” The water remaining in the layer constantly dripped down.

“I sure was roughed up” Luo Feng laughed at himself.

“Now I know why there aren’t any flying monsters or land monsters in this misty island now” Luo Feng recalled the scene that previously unfolded and was still amazed, “Incredible, incredible. Even willow trees can attack. If the news of this

spreads, the entire world will be startled”

The plants on earth never mutated, except for man eating plants. However.....

Luo Feng wasn’t startled when discovering the man eating plant on this misty island, but he was completely flabbergasted when he was attacked by the willow trees.

“Especially that willow tree king, normal advanced level wargods aren’t even its opponent”

“If the willow tree can attack, then most of the plants on this island can probably attack too. If any monsters came, they would be killed by these plants” Luo Feng thought to himself.

After the Grand Nirvana period, nobody lived on the continent of Australia.

This, was a paradise for monsters.

Monsters probably knew that this misty island was special, so not a single one dared to venture in.

Only occasionally do fighters come here to train.

But the number of fighters that came to the continent of Australia were way too few. The gigantic continent of Australia

was millions of km squared and fighters have only had a few dozen years to explore this place, so many places remain unexplored by fighters. This misty island..... is one example. In the past, nobody knew about its secret. But now, it was discovered by Luo Feng!

"That Li Yao doesn't have the various abilities of a spirit reader. He can't fly and his digging speed is too slow"

"First not mentioning whether or not he can survive on this misty island, if he runs into trouble, I'll deliver the finishing blow" Luo Feng didn't mind that his methods were cruel.

While he was underground, he was pretty free.

Suddenly, he took out his cell phone from his backpack.

"Expensive cell phones have their advantages too. Even when I'm underground, it still has such good signal" Luo Feng smiled as he made a call.

"Hello"

"BRO!" brother Luo Hua's excited voice rang, "How are you doing in the continent of Australia?"

Previously, Luo Feng used his cell phone to tell his family that he'll be in the continent of Australia and therefore won't be able to call them much.

“How am I doing?”

Luo Feng looked at the rocks around him and the incessantly dripping water as he smiled, “Good. The place I’m at right now is quite safe. Hehe, there’s even water”

Chapter 50: Struck Gold

In the black, dark, underground cave, Luo Feng smiled as he chatted with his brother.

“It’s good as long as you’re safe”

“Oh yea, bro, about the continent of Australia. I’ve been researching it recently and read online that the continent of Australia is one of the three hazardous regions on earth. There are countless powerful monsters there, and I even watched some videos about the continent of Australia. All the monsters that appeared in the videos seemed so powerful.....”

As he listened to his brother, Luo Feng laughed as he said: “No worries, to your brother, killing those monsters is like cutting through some vegetables”

When he was hunting in the wilderness, his parents and brother were extremely worried about him. And now, he even came to the continent of Australia..... Luo Feng didn’t want his family to worry too much about him, so he made himself sound extremely powerful.

Of course.....

In reality, those monsters really are just like vegetables to him though.

“Luo Hua, how’ve you been doing with your girlfriend recently?” followed Luo Feng.

“I’m doing ok” his brother’s voice that carried from the cell phone was a bit helpless, “I just can’t meet with Nan”

“Don’t rush, be patient” comforted Luo Feng.

His brother knew too: “I know. Actually, Nan is under more pressure than me”

After Luo Hua fell into the lake, Luo Hua and Nan began to treasure each other’s feelings more than before. However—— one thing remained the same: Zhen Nan’s parents still forbid Zhen Nan and Luo Hua’s relationship. Zhen Nan’s parents definitely won’t allow their daughter to marry a handicap who can only sit on a wheelchair.

However, Nan was in the most pain.....

On one side, she had to follow her parents’ will!

On the other side, she has to comfort Luo Hua. She’s scared that Luo Hua might do something dangerous again.

“Luo Hua” said Luo Feng.

“Hm?” his brother’s tone was a bit down, since the stuff with

Nan is the cause of his worries.

“By the end of this year, I’ll be able to get an elixir of life” said Luo Feng

.....

All the way in Jiang-Nan city, Yang Zhou city’s Ming-Yue sector.

At this time, Luo Hua was in his room alone on his wheelchair as he talked with his brother on the phone.

“What?” Luo Hua froze.

“By the end of this year, I’ll be able to bring back an elixir of life. When that happens, you’ll be able to stand up again”

Luo Hua froze.

Be able to stand up?

Stand up?

“I can stand up again?” Luo Hua couldn’t help but to shake as he sat on his wheelchair. His face became red and he became super excited as he said, “Bro, you said this year? Didn’t you say that this elixir of life only appears in an auction occasionally? And that it’s

not something you can get with just money? Now you can get it?”

Luo Feng’s voice carried from the phone: “Luo Hua, the elixir of life isn’t as rare as you think”

Luo Hua froze.

“The only reason why the elixir of life is so rare is because of a cheap trick employed by the American government. Don’t worry, I’ll definitely be able to get an elixir of life” Luo Feng’s voice was full of confidence, “Just leave it to me!”

“Cheap trick employed by the American government?” Luo Hua was speechless.

America? That’s one of the five countries on earth, a powerful country comparable to China and Russia. However, this powerful government was spoken of so lightly from his brother’s mouth; his brother seemed to be full of confidence.

“You can tell Nan too” Luo Feng’s voice continued, “Just tell her..... that you’ll be able to have two legs soon, and that you’ll be able to walk like a normal person”

“Bro, didn’t you say that I have to keep that a secret?” Luo Hua was startled.

Luo Feng said before.....

That if the elixir of life's gigantic cost is revealed, Luo Feng's life could be in danger.

"There's no need to keep that a secret now" said Luo Feng. Right now, Li Yao already brought people to the continent of Australia to kill him, so why is there any need to keep the elixir of life a secret? And once his brother tells Zhen Nan this news, then..... Zhen Nan won't feel so pressured anymore. And Luo Feng is also worried about——

Zhen Nan having a change of heart!

Maybe his brother falling into the lake would move Zhen Nan so much that she would give up everything to stay beside his brother Luo Hua.

But this feeling won't last for too long. After a while, Zhen Nan might have a change of heart due to the constant pressure from her parents! Of course, this is just a possibility..... but Luo Feng didn't want such a thing to happen. With his understanding of his brother, Luo Hua, his brother probably wouldn't be able to handle another shock like this again!

So, might as well let Zhen Nan know that his brother can stand up again. This way, Zhen Nan won't be shaken easily.

As of now in China, many girls from low-cost apartments hope to marry someone rich, someone who can buy a home for them! So the best way for a man to keep their girl is to—— make enough

money. This way, their girlfriends won't be swayed by money, since their boyfriend already has money.

With respect to this.....

Letting Zhen Nan know about Luo Hua's bright future will stop her from wavering.

"Luo Hua, tell Nan that you'll be able to take her hand and walk to her parents together" encouraged Luo Feng.

The phone hung up.

Luo Hua sat in front of his laptop for a while. After that, he started a video chat with Nan.

"Nan, Nan"

Luo Hua sat in front of his laptop. A window on his laptop's display appeared, which contained an image of Nan. Since it was August and currently summer break, Nan usually stayed home. Naturally, she'd have lots of time to chat with Luo Hua.

"What's got you so excited?" Zhen Nan's smile was extremely sweet.

"Nan, my brother said..... that by the end of this year, I'll be able to have my own legs to stand with" said Luo Hua excitedly.

“WHAT!” Zhen Nan froze.

“I said, I’ll be able to stand up by the end of this year, stand up like a regular person. I can walk like a regular person, I can bring you to the park, I can bring you shopping, to eat at restaurants” said Luo Hua excitedly. His eyes couldn’t help but to start tearing up.

“Really?” Zhen Nan couldn’t believe this.

“Yes” followed Luo Hua, “My brother even talked to the world’s strongest fighter, ‘Hong’, face to face. There are always some special treasures on this earth”

Zhen Nan couldn’t believe this at first, since today’s technology wasn’t advanced enough to allow two legs to grow out again. But she knew..... that her boyfriend’s brother was a mysterious figure. Now she heard that her boyfriend’s brother even met the world’s strongest fighter, ‘Hong’.

Maybe he actually does have some special methods.

“When the time comes, I’ll hold your hand and walk to your parents” said Luo Hua.

“Yea, yea” Zhen Nan nodded, her tears almost coming out.

Who knew..... about how much pressure she had to deal with these days.

When Luo Hua fell into the lake, her relationship with Luo Hua spread out around the area. People have always been pointing fingers behind her back. Even though her heart was solid, it was still tough to deal with everyone talking behind her back! Finally..... she'll be able to straighten her back.

.....

Luo Hua silently sat in front of his laptop, his video chat with his girlfriend has long ended.

"My fate has changed just like this" Luo Hua's ears could still hear the distant honks from the cars outside. This is a headquarter city, a bustling, crowded, flourishing, and safe headquarter city. And his brother was in the far, yet dangerous continent of Australia, one of the three hazardous regions!

Two brothers in different locations, as if they were in different worlds.

And now, his brother stood at the top of the world. He directly says "American government" and whenever he talks about money, billions are used as the counter.

"Bro! Thank you!" said Luo Hua to himself in his heart.

※※

One of the three hazardous regions on earth— the continent of Australia. An extremely mysterious place in the continent of Australia— the misty island.

In a cave in the rocky layer under the misty island.

The cave was dark as dark could get and the only light source was the dim light coming from Luo Feng's tactical communications watch's display. This dim, green light was almost unnoticeable in the dark cave. With this light, one could barely see the blurry image of someone sitting cross legged. Luo Feng was currently training his genetic energy, and after who knows how long.....

In the dark cave, Luo Feng opened his eyes.

"Yup, my arm is much better" Luo Feng waved his left arm, his injury from before has mostly recovered.

"I wonder if that Li Yao died in the lake or came to this misty island"

He took a look at his tactical communications watch, it was already 3 PM.

"I'll go up and take a look, I can't just stay here forever" with a thought from Luo Feng, three flowing lights immediately started rotating. As if they became a drill, they directly pierced the rocks

above him. Luo Feng put his hands together above his head and charged upwards!

Chichi~~

As of now, Luo Feng's skin was even tougher than diamond. He has just stepped into the body fitness level of a beginner level wargod, so even armor piercing bullets fired from a sniper rifle can't pierce his skin. Luo Feng's hands were even better than a steel drill and with the three throwing knives in front of him, digging became even easier.

Going straight up ahead!

Of course, Luo Feng purposefully took a different path from before when he dug down. Luo Feng didn't want to get attacked by the willow tree king right when he pops his head out of the ground after all.

"AH!" a voice of pain carried from the surface of the ground. Dirt was a good medium for sound to travel through and wargods had amazing hearing.

"This is someone's voice?" Luo Feng's eyes flashed, "There are people on this misty island?"

"Li Yao!!!"

Luo Feng immediately connected that voice to Li Yao!

Whoosh!

Luo Feng, as usual, didn't dare to move too quickly. The closer he got to the surface, the more he slowed down. At the same time, his spiritual force has already spread out to a 80 meter radius. After that, Luo Feng silently popped his head out, which happened to be in the middle of a bush.

"Eh?" Luo Feng immediately saw Li Yao, who was completely covered in black, in the distance.

As of now, Li Yao's face was pale and some blood could be seen at the sides of his mouth. However, his eyes were full of light.

"PU!"

"PU!"

Li Yao coughed out two mouthfuls of fresh blood as he stared at the largest willow tree in the distance. When Luo Feng saw this, he couldn't help but to think to himself: "Looks like Li Yao has experienced the special part of this willow tree and got beat up"

"It's me, Venina!" Li Yao said full of excitement to his tactical communications watch.

"Yao, what is it?" asked Venina.

“We’ve struck gold, we’re going to be rich! Right now, I’m on an island that’s full of countless wealth and treasure. I’ve already discovered over 12 spirits of nature” Li Yao couldn’t contain his excitement.

Chapter 51: Spirit of Nature

“What did you say!!!” even Venina’s voice changed tone.

“No doubt about it, spirit of nature!” followed Li Yao.

“Oh, God! You said that you already discovered 12 spirits of nature? You’re not joking are you?” Venina, all the way in Paris headquarter city, was already so excited that she could barely contain herself. She clearly understood what this ‘spirit of nature’ was, and clearly understood just how much it was worth. This thing was definitely more attractive than a floor covered in gold.

Hiding in the distance, Luo Feng, whose head barely above the ground, also frowned as he heard this: “What’s a spirit of nature?”

He’s never heard of this before.

“Venina, this misty island is extremely peculiar. There aren’t any monsters living on it, but there are spirits of nature. Just before, I’ve already discovered three plants that seemed to resemble ‘spirits of nature’. Those plants almost heavily injured me. And just now, I discovered nine spirits of natures in willow trees. Just like this, I’ve already discovered 12 of them, and I definitely believe that there are over 12 spirits of nature on this entire misty island. There’ll definitely be more” followed Li Yao, “Once we move all of these spirits of nature away, we’ll be rich”

Just one spirit of nature is worth a ton.

Don’t even talk about its price, talking about its price is insulting the spirit of nature.

This treasure.....

No power is willing to sell it!

“Spirits of nature in plants like willow trees are special. The “thousand year willow heart” that everyone knew about back then, was actually the core of a willow tree’s spirit of nature” followed Li Yao, “According to what I know, that willow tree only had a diameter of one meter. And here, there are nine willow trees, with the thinnest one having a diameter of one meter. The biggest one has a diameter of over three meters”

Even regular willow trees with large diameters exist.

But once a willow tree develops a spirit of nature, they are different from regular ones. These spirits of nature have “spirits”, so they are capable of simple attacks and defense. The more powerful the spirit of nature is, the more its worth.

“If I was just a bit slower just now, I would’ve died to the biggest willow tree’s spirit of nature. Thankfully I had my Black God set’s transformation powers” continued Li Yao, “That thousand year willow heart back then has two benefits after using it. 1. It can greatly improve the life force of one’s cells, increasing the body’s regeneration speed by many times. 2. Body fitness level will also leap up”

“And that’s just a thousand year willow heart. I estimate..... that the willow tree in front of me that has a diameter of over three meters, has a “ten thousand year willow heart”"

Just this one willow tree king is a priceless treasure.

“I’ve been an advanced level wargod for a long time now. If I use the ten thousand year willow heart, I might be able to make a breakthrough with its miraculous powers and therefore become an existence surpassing the wargod level” Li Yao was extremely excited, “However..... I am not this willow tree king’s opponent”

Of course, to obtain the “willow heart”, you have to cut down the willow tree!

And these willow trees with “spirits” will definitely resist..... Li Yao already felt threatened from his previous, short engagement.

“Nine willow trees with spirits of nature, and a willow tree with a diameter of over three meters?” Venina was completely stunned.

“This cake is too big, we can’t finish it ourselves” said Li Yao seriously, “And I feel like this misty island is extremely mysterious. For nine willow trees possessing spirits of nature to be born in one location, too incredible. This misty island..... definitely has more spirits of nature! Some might be even more powerful than this willow tree king”

Venina in Paris headquarter city also understood..... that this cake was indeed a bit too big.

The two of them can't finish it!

"Venina, tell your family of this news and find some strong people to come" requested Li Yao, "It would be best if you got some powerful people with Black God sets or powerful spirit readers. The weakest of them has to at least be a regular advanced level wargod! The others aren't even qualified to participate"

The reputation of the Vulture Scorpion couple was too infamous.

Other than a few people who they risked their lives with back in the day, they don't have many friends. Instead, they have many enemies.

So.....

When faced with this incredible island of treasure with so many spirits of nature, they have to rely on the Paulinus family for help! The Paulinus family, one of the core families of the HR alliance, has their own powerful wargods and have good relations with other powerful wargods.

Naturally, the Paulinus family possesses much more power than the Vulture Scorpion duo.

"I understand. But Yao, I'll give the credit to Candace" said

Venina.

“No problem, the credit is useless for me anyway. Or would the Paulinus family allow me to become their head?” scoffed vulture Li Yao. An outsider has no way of gaining any sort of power in the Paulinus family, so there’s no point in giving him the credit.

“OH YEAH!” gasped Venina, “Would that Luo Feng be able to recognize the spirits of nature? And contact the Dojo of Limits?”

“Nope!”

Li Yao sneered, “That Luo Feng arrived at this misty island way earlier than I did. If he was able to recognize the spirits of nature and then contact the Dojo of Limits, the people from the Dojo of Limits should’ve arrived ages ago! Furthermore..... how many spirits of nature have appeared in history? Most of them are forcefully taken away by Hong, Thunder God, and the five great countries. Because of that, very few people know about spirits of nature. Only a few experienced wargods know about this. Regular fighters don’t have a clue about this at all. How old is that Luo Feng? All he does is train, so how would he ever learn of such obscure information?”

.....

After seeing vulture Li Yao hang up, Luo Feng, who was a few hundred meters away, silently went back underground.

“Li Yao, oh Li Yao. I didn’t know before”

“But, you just told me yourself”

Luo Feng returned to the black cave under the rocky layer. With a little light from his tactical communications watch and his amazing eyesight, Luo Feng was able to clearly see everything in the cave.

“Thousand year willow heart? Two functions: increases regeneration and body fitness level greatly” Luo Feng was surprised. Just this bit of information was quite stunning.

A portion of dragon blood can raise body fitness level too! It’s hard to say which one is more effective..... dragon blood, or a thousand year willow heart.

Increased regeneration?

Just this is enough to make people go crazy. Your entire body benefits from regeneration. Take for example one of the emperor level monsters, the Earth Dragon. Even if someone cuts a part of its body off, it’ll swiftly grow back at a rate visible to the naked eye.

This is regeneration!

For those with powerful regeneration capabilities, even if their organs become heavily damaged, they can completely recover in half a minute. If their arms break, they’ll quickly become

unscathed in a short bit.

The livelier your cells are, the faster your regeneration becomes!

“The thousand year willow tree, sure is amazing”

“According to what Li Yao said, that willow tree king could be containing a “ten thousand year willow heart”. Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch. Through his tactical communications watch, he got on the web and quickly entered the fighter discussion boards in the “Home of Limits”. Luo Feng wanted to enter the warlord discussion boards to look up information.

“Hm? How come the wargod discussion boards are lit up? I can enter the wargod discussion boards now?”

Since he has been bitterly training for the past few months, Luo Feng didn’t know that..... ever since he entered the top 50 for the first time on the black dragon ranking, the Dojo of Limits automatically gave him more permission, thus allowing him to enter the wargod discussion boards! Actually, the chief instructors of the Dojo of Limits headquarters in various headquarter cities also can enter the wargod discussion boards.

Some people aren’t wargods, and yet have the right to enter the wargod discussion boards.

Luo Feng now had permission too!

“I’m surely able to find lots of information in the wargod discussion boards” after entering, Luo Feng quickly inputted “spirit of nature” via voice and then searched the threads!

Beep!

With its cellphone-like display, the tactical communications quickly listed a few threads. There were actually 28 threads all describing the spirits of nature! Even though very few people knew about spirits of nature, a few introductions about it can still be found in a wargod discussion board.

“It seems like people have differing viewpoints about the origin of the spirits of nature” Luo Feng browsed each of the 28 threads one by one.

Some people said.....

That the spirit of nature is a special mutation.

Other people said, spirits of nature came to be by absorbing the natural energies in space.

And some people even said..... that there were spirits of nature in the past. But after industrialization destroyed nature too much, the spirits of nature disappeared. Now that the monsters are spread across the world as a result of the Grand Nirvana period, the natural environment is in a much better condition. The sky

was blue and the clouds were white, and spirits of nature were born.

Of course—— these viewpoints aren't the same!

"However, one thing is certain. After a plant develops a spirit of nature, it isn't threatening as long as you don't approach it. And every spirit of nature contains nature's essence, which has special functions" Luo Feng looked at a few boards introducing spirits of nature.

Thousand year willow heart, emerald grass dew, armored spirit jewel.....

However, all of these treasures are taken up by the five powerful countries, the two dojos, and the HR alliance. Barely any wargod fighters have these.

"According to what it says here, the thousand year willow heart is even better than a portion of dragon blood at raising body fitness level. And it also increases regeneration speed" Luo Feng sighed. A portion of dragon blood is worth 80 billion, so what about that thousand year willow heart? No wonder the five powerful countries and the two dojos are all fighting over it.

And right now, there are spirits of nature on this misty island, and a lot of them!

Holy!

※※

Paris headquarter city, a wide, technologically advanced meeting room. The floor was made out of black marble and the golden conference table was around 10 meters long. There were a total of five black chairs with extremely delicate engravings on them. And right now, on these five chairs, sat five old people! Four old men and one old woman.

Suddenly——

The sound of someone's footsteps echoed around the conference room, like water dripping from a fountain. The five people looked towards the main door.

"They're here" the white, old man with silver hair smiled as he sat on the main seat.

A mysterious person who was covered in a black robe walked forward step by step. And beside him was a savage, burly brute who was carrying a shield on his back and a gigantic blade in one hand. The other person beside him was a man who was extremely pale and skinny. He had two daggers on his waist.

The three of them entered the conference, making the entire room a bit gloomy.

The leading black robed man's eyes were as deep and dark as the

sea……

The five old men immediately stood up from their seats as they welcomed these three powerful people.

Chapter 52: 10% Profit

“Catalan, my child, we’re going to have to bother you this time” the silver haired, white old man who held the Paulinus family’s power, smiled as he spoke.

The black robed man in front slightly bowed: “Uncle, after hearing the message you sent, I immediately brought my two good friends here. This guy here..... is the world famous ‘Blood Shadow’ Ethan” as he spoke, the skinny white man to his side slightly bowed.

“And this one here, is also my good friend, ‘Great Bear’ Keita!” said the black robed man.

The savage brute slightly bowed.

“We’ll have to trouble you two” smiled the silver haired old man, “Catalan, do you still need some other people? The people in the family.....”

“Anyone else will just come to die!”

The black robed man interrupted the Paulinus family’s chief’s sentence as he said discontented, “Hmph, even vulture Li Yao couldn’t get the spirit of nature on that misty island. The danger of this trip is obvious. The wargods the family is paying and the wargods in the family aren’t good enough!”

His words were arrogant! He clearly looked down on the other wargods in the family.

But the one speaking these words were..... ‘Phantom Demon’ Catalan!

Out of all the powerful wargods on earth, ‘Phantom Demon’ Catalan was definitely one of the most powerful ones. Even the Dojo of Limits and the Thunder Dojo have tried everything they could to get Phantom Demon Catalan to join them. However, Catalan was part of the Paulinus family, so of course he couldn’t join them.

However, one undisputable fact is that ‘Phantom Demon’ Catalan is a major reason why the Paulinus family has their current position in the HR alliance.

“Uncle, there’s no time to waste. 12 minutes have already passed since I received your message!” said the black robed man, “I’ll depart to Australia immediately”

“Alright, I’ll be waiting for the good news here in Paris” said the silver haired man. The other four old people all had smiles on their faces.

Whoosh!

Catalan immediately turned towards the exit and walked out with the other two super powerful fighters! If it wasn’t for

Catalan's relationship, it would be extremely difficult for the Paulinus family to invite 'Great Bear' Keita and 'Blood Shadow' Ethan!

As they watched Catalan and the others leave, the five old people stayed silent for quite a long time.

"Chief, Catalan is only bringing his two good friends there. This way, we won't even know how many spirits of nature they'll obtain in the misty island. When that happens..... Catalan might take most of them for himself and only give a portion to the family" a bald old man couldn't help but to say.

The silver haired old man's eyes were dark as he said indifferently: "Take them for himself? Catalan is our family's most brilliant child! The stronger he becomes, the stronger our Paulinus family becomes! If he wanted to become the chief, he could've became the chief three years ago"

"Remember, don't hold anything from Catalan. Doing so..... would just hurt a powerful person's pride" said the silver haired man slowly.

The other old people remained silent.

.....

In just a moment——

Whoosh!

A completely black, disc-shaped fighter jet swiftly ascended and departed Paris headquarter city. It quickly became a flowing black light as it disappeared into the horizon.

One of the three hazardous regions, the continent of Australia. The misty island.

The cave under the rocky layer deep underground.

“It’s about time”

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch, “Around an hour and 30 minutes has passed since Li Yao contacted Venina”

“90 minutes!”

“Li Yao, I gave you guys a whole 90 minutes, that should be enough. It’s time to contact the Dojo of Limits!” Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch. He had a special number which he used to communicate with the inner part of the Dojo of Limits. He retrieved his rewards through this number, and he also uses this number if there’s anything important to tell them.

Indeed.....

He’s going to contact the Dojo of Limits!

Initially, when he heard Li Yao’s conversation, he thought about taking all the treasure for himself. However, after reading the threads underground, Luo Feng understood one thing.

Even if he can obtain the spirits of nature, he doesn’t have the power to keep them!

An advanced level wargod isn’t able to hoard such an incredible amount of spirits of nature. If he’s too greedy..... the consequences will be dire!

Furthermore, he isn’t even vulture Li Yao’s opponent in an upfront battle. Once Li Yao finds someone even more powerful to help him, Luo Feng’s chances lower even more. Not only does he not have the ability to get the treasure, he might lose his life when faced against so many powerful fighters! So after thinking carefully, the best course of action is to——

Notify the Dojo of Limits!

The Dojo of Limits is one of the largest powers on earth.

Once they send some fighters, they’ll definitely be able to get the treasure on this island. And the Dojo of Limits is extremely fair, so they’ll definitely give Luo Feng a bit of the treasure, since he was the one who found the misty island and gave them the

information. Otherwise..... how would the Dojo of Limits convince the public?

Although he has decided to contact the Dojo of Limits, the timing is extremely crucial.

If Luo Feng notifies the Dojo of Limits straight away, the fighters of the Dojo of Limits will arrive earlier than the helpers from the Paulinus family, since the Dojo of Limits headquarters is in western asia's Hong Ning headquarter city. If that happens..... not only will the HR alliance receive nothing, they also wouldn't dare to fight with the Dojo of Limits.

And when that happens.....

Li Yao will definitely escape in fear, which means Luo Feng wouldn't be able to use the Dojo of Limits!

The best situation is!

Let the people from the Paulinus family arrive first and allow them to search hard for the spirits of nature on this misty island. The spirits of nature aren't so easy to obtain. As shown by Luo Feng and vulture Li Yao's struggle with the willow tree king, obtaining the spirits of nature is extremely difficult.

The people from the Paulinus family will struggle and fight with the spirits of nature!

And during that time!

The people from the Dojo of Limits will arrive. When that happens, the Dojo of Limits will definitely make the Paulinus family give up some stuff!

“90 minutes?”

“Is 90 minutes not enough time?” Luo Feng looked at the number on his tactical communications watch, “I can’t let the fighters from the Dojo of Limits arrive earlier than the fighters from Europe”

Just to be safe, Luo Feng waited another 30 minutes.

“It’s about time”

“This entire island is covered in thick mist, so searching the entire thing will be quite troublesome. One day might not even be enough for such a task” Luo Feng lightly tapped a button on his tactical communications watch——he made the call!

Two hours after Li Yao’s phone call, Luo Feng dialed!

“Beep——Beep”

“Hello” a low voice carried over.

“Hello, I’m Luo Feng from the elite training camp” said Luo Feng.

“What do you need?” the low voice was absolutely emotionless.

Luo Feng reported: “It’s like this. I discovered large amounts of spirits of nature on a mysterious island in the continent of Australia! Twelve spirits of nature have been discovered on this island so far. There’s also a willow tree with a diameter over three meters that also has a spirit of nature”

“Spirit of nature?”

The low voice gave a slightly surprised “eh”, and then said, “Very good, finding a place like this. According to the distribution rules of the Dojo of Limits, the person who discovers the location of the treasure, once confirmed, can go to the Dojo and receive 10% of the profit. The people who go to fight and harvest, according to the rules, earn a total of 30% of the profit. The rest of the 60% goes to the Dojo”

“Please send me the coordinates of the misty island” continued the low voice.

.....

The call soon ended after Luo Feng answered some questions.

“Who would’ve known that rules were formed for these kinds of

situations already. 10% goes to the person who discovered the location? 30% to those who come and get it? The rest to the Dojo?" Luo Feng nodded his head, "10%, is good enough! Just 10% of those nine willow trees would get me a thousand year willow heart, and I'll probably end up getting even more"

One hour later.

Luo Feng quietly popped his head out from a bush: "Hm? Where's Li Yao?"

It was currently night time, the thick mist was everywhere. Even though the nine willow trees' spirits of nature caused the mist in the area to lighten up a bit, even Luo Feng could barely see past a distance of 200 meters. And the image of Li Yao was not within that distance.

"I'll just wait slowly, since they definitely will come back here" half of Luo Feng's head was above the ground as he watched the nine willow trees in the distance.

Slowly waited……

His spiritual force spread out to a 100 meter radius, cautiously watching his surroundings.

…..

After a while——

RUMBLE!

Sonic booms rang in the sky, and Luo Feng quickly turned his head towards the sky.

At this time, a disc-shaped fighter jet was hovering in the skies of the misty island. As it hovered, its hatch directly opened.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Black robed Catalan, the savage man Keita, and the skinny man Ethan. The three of them directly jumped down from midair, and they swiftly fell towards the ground.

“The Paulinus family’s people are here” Luo Feng let out a smile.

And when the Paulinus family’s people arrived at the misty island, a purplish red triangular jet fighter was currently soaring through the night sky at an unbelievable speed, leaving behind a mixed up stream of air in its path.

Inside the triangular jet fighter.

There were only two people in this jet fighter, and both of them were passengers.

Out of the two people in the plane, one of them was extremely

handsome. Even though he was wearing his battle uniform, he seemed to be out of this world. His face seemed to reveal that he was only around 30 years old, but his two eyes were as deep as the sea. He always had a smile on his face and seemed to be quite relaxed.

He, was one of the five big investigators, investigator Liu!

“The head actually sent you out too, looks like he’s really taking this island seriously” investigator Liu looked at the person beside him.

The mysterious person beside him also had a battle uniform on.

But he was wearing a golden mask.

“Investigator Liu, if you take all of the spirits of nature on this island away, you can take all of the 30%” the golden masked person’s voice was low, “I don’t care about these. Unless I really have to..... I won’t do anything. But once I have to take action, we’re going to have to split that 30%”

Investigator Liu couldn’t help but to be overjoyed as he heard this.

He’s actually willing to give him all of the 30% if he doesn’t do anything, isn’t that too foolish..... those are spirits of nature, something even Hong takes seriously.

“Haha, no worries, I doubt there’s anything I can’t deal with on that island” smiled investigator Liu.

He, an existence surpassing the wargod level!

After following Hong for so long, he has many tricks. There are barely any places on earth that can give him any kind of trouble.

.....

BOOM!

The fighter jet headed towards the continent of Australia with alarming speed with two of the strongest fighters on earth riding in it.

Chapter 53: Thousand Year Willow Heart

Luo Feng listened closely and indeed heard a rumbling noise.

“That’s probably the sound of the Paulinus family’s people landing on the ground after jumping out the plane” assumed Luo Feng. At the same time, he retracted his spiritual force, shortening it from a 100 meter radius to just a 30 meter radius. Powerful fighters like advanced level wargods can sense the spiritual force that scans across them.

Suddenly——

Luo Feng heard a faint sound of people talking coming from the mist far away.

“Catalan, up ahead is where the nine willow trees’ spirits of nature are” Li Yao’s voice carried out of the mist as he spoke english fluently.

“Spirits of nature usually aren’t that powerful. Li Yao, how come you can’t deal with them?” a gloomy sound rose.

As they talked, they walked out of the thick mist.

Luo Feng squinted as he looked through the gaps of the grass.

In front of the group was someone in a black robe. He looked

quite peculiar.

Li Yao was talking beside him, and he was clearly being respectful! Behind the black robed man was a big savage brute and a white, skinny man. The savage brute and the skinny man didn't lower their heads in front of Li Yao at all, which clearly showed that they weren't afraid of Li Yao.

"Looks like the black robed man is the head of these four people" thought Luo Feng to himself.

The images of the four people in the distance became clearer and clearer.

"Deal with it? That willow tree king has a diameter of three meters. Back then, the willow tree that had the "thousand year willow heart" only had a diameter of one meter. This willow tree king is much more powerful than that willow tree. In particular, its dark golden branches are extremely tough. Once someone gets caught in it, even if it's me, they'll definitely die!" Li Yao pointed to the nine willow trees that had the spirits of nature in the distance, "Over there!"

Li Yao and the others, at around a distance of 120 meters away from Luo Feng, walked towards the nine willow trees.

Since it was nighttime, there was lots of mist.

And Luo Feng only popped half of his head out of the ground and

was in a bush, so even Li Yao, Catalan, and the others didn't notice Luo Feng's presence.

"Only the four of them are going to go up against the willow tree king?" Luo Feng watched silently.

These four people want to cut down the willow tree king... probably not too realistic!

.....

When Li Yao and the others were around 50 meters away from the nine willow trees, the savage brute said lowly: "Li, you said all of these willow trees have spirits of nature?"

"If you don't believe me you can go closer" sneered Li Yao.

"Catalan" said Li Yao seriously, "Look there, at the willow tree in the center of those nine trees..... it's the largest and also the most powerful one. Its dark golden branches are long enough to cover all of the other willow trees. Because of that, I couldn't even attack the other willow trees"

Catalan examined closely: "Where are the dark golden branches?"

"Look, they're tied around the trunk" pointed Li Yao.

“Oh” Catalan also felt that this willow tree king was unusual.

“This willow tree only has one type of attack: it strangles its target to death with its branches! Its tree trunk can’t move and its roots are absorbing nutrients underground, so they can’t attack” said Li Yao, “Same as that willow tree that had the thousand year willow heart from back then”

Catalan nodded: “There are two ways to kill this willow tree king”

“The first way, is to get rid of all of its roots”

“The second way, is to cut apart the trunk”

Li Yao also nodded as he heard this: “Yea, but..... its dark golden branches are 200 to 300 meters long and can sink into the ground to protect its roots! And such a large willow tree probably has tons of roots, so getting rid of all of them is probably harder than cutting down the trunk”

“200 to 300 meters long?” Catalan slightly frowned.

Catalan stayed silent for a bit.

HUA!

Catalan’s black robe instantly disappeared and revealed a black

battle uniform set within. Many daggers were placed on the trousers of his battle uniform set, 12 of them in total! And on his back was javelin after javelin!

There were six javelins on his back, as if he was wearing a shield made out of javelins.

“He has a Black God set?” Luo Feng, who was observing from afar was shocked. There’s only explanation for Catalan’s black robe’s sudden disappearance..... the black robe was made out of a transformed Black God set. The Black God set can transform into all sorts of different shapes based off of the user’s will.

“His weapons are the javelins and daggers?” Luo Feng slightly frowned.

.....

At the moment, Catalan’s face was ice cold. The sight of the silver javelins and the black daggers caused one to shiver. Even Li Yao slightly squinted his eyes on the side.

“Leave the willow tree king to me!” Catalan’s voice was cold as he commanded, “I’ll attack the willow tree king. Li Yao, Keita, Ethan, you three go in from the side and attack the other willow trees..... Remember, your safety is the most important thing. After I get the willow tree king’s full attention, you guys give everything you have and cut down the other willow trees”

“Understood” the savage brute licked his lips.

“Ok” Ethan slightly nodded.

“Alright” Li Yao nodded.

Catalan slightly smiled in response.

Chichi~

His entire body was swiftly covered in a black coating. Instantly, the black coating instantly covered his entire body, including his face! In other words, Catalan’s face was completely black too. His eyes, nose, and mouth were all sealed! You can say that Catalan isn’t afraid of any piercing attack from anyone below the level of existences surpassing the wargod level.

“Spirit readers don’t even need their eyes to fight” Li Yao sighed as he witnessed this scene.

“Alright, let’s begin!”

Catalan’s voice carried out.

Whoosh!

Catalan rushed towards the willow tree king like lightning. He

was so fast that he was within 10 meters of the willow tree king in a blink of the eye. The willow tree king started angrily attacking..... the large number of willow tree branches that virtually covered the sky and ground crazily swarmed around Catalan, and the dark golden willow tree branches quickly joined the battle.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Vulture Li Yao, Blood Shadow Ethan, and Great Bear Keita left behind afterimages as they teamed up and charged towards a willow tree that had a diameter of around 1.8 meters. A black, flowing light extended on Li Yao and Ethan's bodies, covering them completely. Clearly, the both of them had Black God sets. Because they had Black God sets..... the two of them didn't use any shields.

"Three of the four have Black God sets?" Luo Feng was shocked as he watched from a distance.

It's not that Black God sets are common on earth, but that the wargods who dared to come here are all at the top. Even Li Yao was heavily injured, so would anyone inferior to Li Yao dare to come? There are barely any people on this earth that own Black God sets, and each of them have astonishing strength.

"Is that Catalan a spirit reader?" Luo Feng's eyes were completely widened.

All that could be seen.....

Was a dagger in each of Catalan's hands and, at the same time, there were nine daggers hovering behind him!

"Chichi~~"

The branches were breaking quickly.

The flying daggers easily cut through branch after branch. Soon enough, large amounts of dark golden willow tree branches covered Catalan. Catalan, whose entire body was covered by the Black God set, didn't use his eyes to fight. Rather than his eyes, he uses his spiritual force that was spread out to a 100 meter radius to observe his surroundings.

"The dark golden branches aren't easy to mess with" thought Luo Feng to himself from afar.

Indeed!

"Chichi~~" the hovering nine daggers struggled to cut through the dark golden branches.

"Hmph"

Catalan used the daggers in each hand and his extraordinary speed, PU! PU! PU! ..... and cut a few dozen dark golden branches in one breath. Right when he did that, he instantly charged out of the encirclement. This scene shocked vulture Li Yao, and completely and absolutely stunned Luo Feng in the distance!

“Those dark golden branches are extremely tough. After I cut through one, I immediately retreated and went underground” Luo Feng was stunned.

He knew exactly how tough those dark golden branches were because he fought with them before!

“Even Li Yao can’t cut through a few dozen in a moment”

“How powerful are those daggers in his hands?”

“Oh yea, the daggers controlled by his spiritual force seemed to struggle with those dark golden branches. It looks like his spiritual force isn’t much stronger than mine” thought Luo Feng to himself, “But, those two daggers in his hands are way more powerful! This shows that he probably can bring out an astonishing amount of strength through his force exertions”

Advanced wargod levels, especially those at the peak of the advanced level, have fist strengths of around 400,000 to 500,000 kg.

With force exertions of 2x to 3x multipliers, their fist strengths can reach a million kg.

And what if the multiplier reaches 5x to 6x?

“His fitness level is probably at the advanced level wargod level, and his force exertions are high. Adding his spiritual force to that ——” Luo Feng nodded to himself. With his body’s power and his spiritual force added together, stunning results can be produced!

At the exact instant he charged out the encirclement and approached the willow tree king.

“OPEN!”

The daggers in his hand cruelly slashed into the trunk of the willow tree king. Chichi~~ the daggers were only able to slash through six to seven cm before stopping. Little drops of green fluid slowly seeped out of the trunk’s wound.

“BOOM~~”

The originally spread out dark golden branches that were after the other people were finally enraged. Nearly 10,000 willow tree branches crazily danced as they surrounded Catalan from every direction.

“Whoosh!”

Catalan ferociously charged outwards as he swung his hands at the same time!

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The two black arms suddenly enlarged, giving Catalan a pair of seven to eight meter long black arms. Both of his black hands held daggers as they swung towards the willow branches! As if they were opening a door, the seven to eight meter long black arms directly split apart the willow tree branches into two sides!

Whoosh!

Catalan instantly dashed out. Even though the dark golden branches immediately wrapped around the black arms, the black arms instantly slipped out of the large amounts of dark golden branches like noodles.

“Alright, the trunk is quite tough!”

Catalan stood around 100 meters away from the willow tree king. He walked around the other willow trees and, while doing so, a silverish gray javelin appeared in his hand.

“Break through!!!”

Catalan’s face was fierce as he let out a roar. He held the silverish gray javelin with one hand and his entire body instantly turned into the shape of a bow. His right arm’s biceps bulged through the black skin. On the tip of the silverish gray javelin were some screw threads. He then threw it like lightning while sprinting!

Whoosh!

A stream of lightning!

A rotating stream of lightning! That javelin was indeed rotating as it flew!

The large amounts of dark golden branches wanted to block it, but the javelin was way too fast, probably surpassing mach 10. Only three dark golden branches managed to touch it, and then the stream of light stabbed into the willow tree king's trunk.

"BUZZ~~" as if drilling through a wooden plank, it blew up ferociously.

Chichi!

The entire javelin sank into the willow tree king's trunk, and a little bit of the tip of the javelin even popped out of the other side.

"Catalan's Phantom Eye and Phantom Strike, just what you'd expect from his two world famous ultimate moves" Li Yao couldn't help but to tremble a bit, "Combining his body's power and his spiritual force to create an attack like a phantom demon..... incredible. The power of this attack might even barely reach the level of the existences surpassing the wargod level!"

Luo Feng gasped as he watched from afar.

He never would've thought that.....

Such powerful wargods could exist. Catalan's slash with his dagger just now couldn't even cut through 10 cm, and the willow tree king's diameter is 3 meters. But now, Catalan's javelin actually managed to pierce through the entire trunk!

Messed up! Too terrifying!

"RUMBLE~~" the entire willow tree king started shaking crazily and, at the same time, the dark golden branches started crazily dancing as they surrounded Catalan.

"Attack the other willow trees" roared Catalan.

"Okay"

Vulture Li Yao, Great Bear Keita, and Blood Shadow Ethan all surrounded a willow tree on the side. Without the help from the willow tree king..... this willow tree with a diameter of only 1.8 meters had no chance against these three powerful fighters. Only after a few seconds, BOOM, the gigantic willow tree fell.

"Take the thousand year willow heart" Li Yao, Keita, and Ethan simultaneously smashed the trunk.

BOOM~~~

Woodchips flew up and a heartmoving green piece flew up with them.

“It’s the thousand year willow heart” Li Yao and the others were overjoyed.

.....

Luo Feng also saw that green thing. Since Li Yao and the others weren’t attacking the trunk anymore and were charging at the green thing, one could conclude—— that’s the thousand year willow heart! Furthermore, Luo Feng had already seen a photo of the thousand year willow heart on the wargod discussion boards.

“A thousand year willow heart that can raise fitness level and regeneration, and it’s a spirit of nature from a willow tree with a diameter of 1.8 meters”

Luo Feng’s eyes let out a light that has never been let out before.

“That’s mine!!!”

Whoosh!

The formless spiritual force instantly extended. It extended so quickly that its speed was comparable to teleportation. The spiritual force instantly wrapped around the thousand year willow heart! As it wrapped around..... Luo Feng’s spiritual force naturally invaded the area where Catalan’s spiritual force was spread out, so

Catalan found out.

Whoosh!

With the spiritual force, it instantly retracted! The green thing instantly flew towards Luo Feng.

“Spirit reader!” Catalan’s spiritual force discovered Luo Feng’s spiritual force. However, it still took him a very short time to react to the fact that there’s a spirit reader here.

And right in that short instant——

The green light was only 80 meters away from Luo Feng.

“Retract” Catalan also tried to pull it back using his spiritual force.

“Peng!”

The two formless spiritual forces collided.

Whoosh!

The green light immediately flew into the bush where Luo Feng was, and Luo Feng immediately dug underground as fast as possible.

“Thousand year willow heart!” Li Yao, Keita, and Ethan all charged over.

Catalan also flew over.

The four powerful fighters stood on the grass as they looked at the inconspicuous hole in front of them.

“The thousand year willow heart was stolen” Keita and Ethan were enraged.

“How come there are still people here?” Catalan looked towards Li Yao with anger, “And he’s a spirit reader. His spiritual force is probably nearing the advanced level wargod level”

“It’s Luo Feng, it’s Luo Feng” followed Li Yao.

“Luo Feng, he’s..... that Luo Feng from the elite training camp?” asked Catalan.

“Yes, yes, it’s him. He has a grudge with me. Truthfully, I came here to chase after him, but I didn’t think I would be able to discover all of these spirits of nature” replied Li Yao.

Catalan’s face wasn’t looking good at all.

“Catalan, you’re a spirit reader too. You can probably catch

him?”

“Go underground to chase after a spirit reader who’s basically an advanced level wargod?” Catalan sneered as he glanced at him, “You think that spiritual force is that easy to train? All these years, my body fitness level has been at the peak of the advanced level wargod level, but my spiritual force has been improving extremely slowly”

When Catalan was young, he had his growth period as a spirit reader. When Catalan reached the ‘beginner wargod level spirit reader’ level, it stopped.

After that, he had to train by himself.

Sadly……

Training spiritual force is many times harder than training the body. After all these years, Catalan’s fitness level has already reached the peak of the advanced level wargod level, but his spiritual force is only at the peak of the intermediate level wargod level! However, his spiritual force and his strength combined gives him incredibly horrifying strength.

Which is how he got the name Phantom Demon!

“Go underground to chase a advanced level wargod level spirit reader? Even existences surpassing the wargod level won’t say such a thing” Catalan commanded, “Now, Keita, patrol the area

and don't allow that person to come near again. Li Yao and Ethan, you two and me will swiftly get rid of these spirit of natures"

Yes"

Everyone nodded, and Li Yao could only clench his teeth as he held his anger in.

"Not good" Catalan's face changed, "That Luo Feng must've heard what we said before, so he knows that these are all spirits of nature..... he'll definitely contact the Dojo of Limits!"

"Dojo of Limits?"

Everyone's face changed dramatically, and Catalan glanced at Li Yao with anger.

"Hurry, the Dojo of Limits will probably need at least three hours to get here. But to be safe, let's all hurry up and gather the spirits of nature and leave within two hours" commanded Catalan, "No matter how many we get, we definitely have to leave within two hours"

"Yes"

At this time, Li Yao didn't dare to say anything more; everyone was in a panic.

.....

Luo Feng, who was digging underground with astonishing speed, continued to dig past the rocky layer!

“Thousand year willow heart” Luo Feng grasped the thousand year willow heart with extreme passion and excitement.

Chapter 54: The Dark Golden Ball, Shattered

Luo Feng pierced through layer after layer of rock as he continuously dug down, completely surpassing the depth of the original cave where he originally rested. He kept digging down as if his life depended on it..... after Luo Feng digs past an area, the dirt and rock that was separated will automatically close itself. Because of this, it was hard to discover Luo Feng's tracks.

"That Catalan is extremely powerful. I should keep digging deeper so it'll be harder for him to find me" Luo Feng kept digging down.

"Wait"

"When I fought over the thousand year willow heart, my spiritual force met with Catalan's spiritual force. His spiritual force seemed to be slightly weaker than mine" after Luo Feng thought of this, his speed unconsciously slowed down.

PENG!

Around 2,000 to 3,000 meters underground above an underground river, an image broke through the boulders and directly fell into the dark, underground river.

"PU!"

Luo Feng leaped up and landed on a rock beside the dark river.

“There’s actually a river like this so deep underground” Luo feng stood on the rock as he looked around the dark river..... it was quite black and turbulent. The river was around 15 to 20 meters wide and there was basically nowhere to stand on in this entire tunnel where the river flowed.

“There doesn’t seem to be any water type monsters in this underground river” Luo Feng didn’t find any.

“I wonder where this river leads to?”

Luo Feng stood on the rock as he looked around and then shook his head. He then smashed into the rocky wall beside him. To Luo Feng, those rocks were as soft as tofu. After smashing open a huge hole, three black throwing knives led the way in front and Luo Feng quickly opened up a cave that was around 20 to 30 meters away.

This cave was only 20 to 30 meters away from the underground river.

“Thousand year willow heart” Luo Feng opened up his clenched left hand and looked at the green egg-shaped crystal. This green crystal’s structure was quite odd. It seemed as if there was a green liquid rippling inside the crystal. The sight of this thousand year willow heart was stunning.

Luo Feng felt refreshed as he held this crystal.

The thousand willow heart can increase regeneration and fitness level.

For Luo feng right now, this is probably the best treasure. Even if you give him something even better..... it'll be a waste to Luo Feng, because Luo Feng isn't that far away from the peak of the wargod level! Even if you give him a ten thousand year willow heart..... Luo Feng will still stay at the peak of the wargod level.

From the peak of the wargod level to an existence surpassing the wargod level.....

To cross over this one step!

Extremely difficult. This is also why quite a few people are stuck at the advanced level wargod level.

"How do I use this thousand year willow heart?" thought Luo Feng to himself, "That post said you eat it, but..... is that really true? Maybe that post was lying"

The thousand year willow heart itself was extremely tough.

Even a sharp blade would have trouble destroying it; you can eat something like this?

"If you consume dragon blood, you'll die. And what about this

thousand year willow heart?" Luo Feng slightly frowned. It's a good thing he got this treasure, but he at least needs to know how to use it. If he uses it incorrectly, then he might bring about a disaster instead of a blessing!

After hesitating……

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch and then called a number.

"Beep——Beep——Beep——"

Suddenly——

"Hello" a low voice rose.

"Hello, I am Luo Feng from the elite training camp" replied Luo Feng. This number is indeed the number he used to contact the insides of the Dojo of Limits. Whether to just contact them or to ask for his rewards, he used this number. And now that he doesn't know how to use the thousand year willow heart….. after thinking a bit, he decided to ask.

After he uses it, his strength will fly up, so the dojo will definitely know he used it.

If so, then there's no need to hide it, since he stole it from someone else anyway.

“What do you need?” asked the low voice.

“I want to ask, how are you supposed to use the thousand year willow heart?” asked Luo Feng.

The other side went silent.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to worry.

After a while, the sound came: “The crystalline outside of the thousand year willow heart is extraordinarily tough. The liquid inside is the thing you want. To use this, you pierce through the outside and then drink the liquid inside. Beware….. do not swallow the crystal part”

Luo Feng let out a sigh of a relief, good thing he asked.

The post in the wargod discussion board only said consume it, but didn’t say how to consume it….. if he foolishly swallowed the entire crystal, he would’ve been in trouble.

“You’ll feel extremely comfortable while consuming it and there will be no pain at all. As for how much your strength improves and how long it takes to improve, it’s different for everyone” the low voice slowly continued, “Anything else?”

“No, thanks mister” said Luo Feng.

“Mister?” the low voice let out a rare laugh.

Beep!

The call ended.

“Yay!” under the weak light coming from the tactical communications watch under the dark cave, Luo Feng’s eyes were flashing like never before.

“My current strength isn’t too far away from Li Yao with his Black God set”

“However, after using the thousand year willow heart.....” Luo Feng was extremely excited. Ever since his astronomical bounty was released, he never dared to relax. The pressure caused him to bitterly train, and he never relaxed for even a bit in the elite training camp.

Maybe, the vulture scorpion couple is one of the reasons why he was able to get into the elite training camp and receive a gigantic reward like a portion of dragon blood.

If they didn’t give him any pressure, why would Luo Feng train so hard?

“Vulture, Scorpion, in the future, you two will fear me like I once

feared you!” with a thought from Luo Feng.

Hu!

The green egg-shaped crystal floated in the air in front of him. At the same time, Luo Feng’s SS grade throwing knife drew across an arc as it directly stabbed into the surface of the green egg-shaped crystal. “PUCHI!” The tough crystalline outside was directly pierced through under Luo Feng’s deliberate attack.

Gugu~~

The liquid inside slowly flowed out from the crystal. However, this green liquid that was full of life was controlled by Luo Feng’s spiritual force and made to hover in front of him.

“Come”

Luo Feng opened his mouth, whoosh! This heart-moving essence of the thousand year willow heart that was filled with limitless vitality directly flew into Luo Feng’s mouth under the control of his spiritual force. Even though the entire crystal was about the size of an egg, the essence inside could probably only fill up a small cup.

He swallowed it all in one gulp. The essence flowed down his esophagus, which brought about a ‘cool, relaxing’ feeling around his entire body. It felt so good that it even seemed like his soul was shaking.

Feels good!

“The mysterious guy from the phone call said that there won’t be any pain at all when consuming the thousand year willow heart and will instead feel great. Looks like it’s true” Luo Feng lay in the rocky cave without moving as he clearly felt the changes undergoing in his body..... Luo Feng definitely won’t be able to forget the pain he went through when using the dragon blood.

Of course Luo Feng would be extremely happy when he can raise his strength without going through a painful experience.

“So comfortable”

“I can feel the changes in all the tendons, muscles, and bones in my body” Luo Feng lowered his head and, using the small amount of light coming from his tactical communications watch, saw the small yet startlingly fast vibrations on his skin with his naked eye. During this vibration, black stuff seeped out of the pores of his skin.

This feeling was quite magical.....

His entire body felt cool!

At the same time, it felt like all his skin and muscles have left their bones and went out of control. He could only feel the slight, incessant vibrations, as if it was a massage.

.....

And in Luo Feng's body, the limitless vitality in the essence of the thousand year willow heart virtually instantly combined into every single part of Luo Feng's body. This vitality caused amazing changes in the cells of Luo Feng's bones and muscles. It was as if a small seedling was growing into a tree that could reach the sky.

At this moment——

The countless number of cells in Luo Feng's body were undergoing startling changes. His genes were soaring to perfection as they abandoned the useless parts and recombined themselves. This process was extremely fast, and the genes that absorbed a bit of the thousand year willow heart changed in a special way.

Their liveliness was increasing rapidly.

With this liveliness, Luo Feng's entire body was improving extremely quickly.

His tendons seemed to have completely transformed, and his skin and muscles were still changing dramatically. And yet, this process didn't give Luo Feng even the slightest bit of pain. Luo Feng only felt relaxed, very relaxed, as if he was receiving a massage.

.....

In his realm of consciousness.

In his limitless realm of consciousness, the dark golden ball was currently rotating rapidly as it let out energy. The realm of consciousness was filled with mist and, in this neverending mist, large amounts of liquid were being produced, as if they were drops of dew. This rate of improvement has never been heard of before.

Luo Feng's fitness level was improving!

And, as a result, his spiritual force crazily increased as his body was able to handle more!

Luo Feng's fitness level went from the lowest level of a beginner level wargod level (fist strength of around 64,000 kg) ..... average beginner level wargod level (fist strength of around 96,000 kg) ..... peak of the beginner level wargod level (fist strength approaching 128,000 kg) ..... intermediate level wargod!

Going up step by step!

Right when his fitness level reached the 'intermediate wargod level', the dark golden ball in Luo Feng's realm of consciousness rapidly expanded, and then "CRACK CRACK CRACK~~" the entire dark golden ball cracked open. Countless amounts of spiritual force directly flowed out as it filled the entire realm of consciousness.

A fitness level of intermediate level wargod level can practically

withstand the maximum amount of spiritual force available to wargods!

His spiritual force increased rapidly!

Luo Feng's fitness level continued to rise.....

After his transformation finally ended, Luo Feng quietly lay in the cave beside the underground river that was around 2,000 to 3,000 meters below the surface.

"The dark golden ball..... shattered....."

Ever since his awakening, his future as a spirit reader was limitless!

He has always been worrying about how long his dark golden ball will last for..... keep in mind that many spirit readers end their growth period when they reach the advanced level warlord level or the beginner level wargod level. Spirit readers with growth periods that can sustain them to the advanced level wargod level can practically be counted on one hand.

"My realm of consciousness!" Luo Feng sank into his realm of consciousness. Before, when he was barely an advanced level wargod level spirit reader, his realm of consciousness were filled with a few droplets.

And now——

In the infinite realm of consciousness.....

The mist spread all the way to the horizons.

“RUMBLE~~” a raging liquid current was flowing in Luo Feng’s realm of consciousness like a galaxy. The amount of spiritual force contained within it was absolutely amazing. A few dark golden pieces could be seen within this “spiritual force liquid” galaxy.

Chapter 55: Wargod Luo Feng

In the cave that was 2,000 to 3,000 meters below the surface, Luo Feng opened his eyes as he lay.

“This transformation only took around half an hour” Luo Feng lowered his head and checked the time on his tactical communications watch. His face full of filth couldn’t help to let out a smile. Half an hour ago, he was an extremely powerful fighter in the circle of wargods, but there were still people like ‘Phantom Demon’ Catalan who were more powerful than him.

But now!

“BOOM!” Luo Feng randomly threw out a punch and caused the air to explode.

“A random punch is comparable to my punches in the past with force exertions. My body fitness level is at least intermediate level wargod level right now, and maybe even advanced level wargod level!” Luo Feng could only rely on his hazy feeling. He’s sure that he’s at least an intermediate level wargod, but would need a machine to test whether or not he’s at the advanced level wargod level.

He can’t be too sure about his fitness level.....

But, he can be absolutely and positively sure about his spiritual force.

“Peak of the wargod level!”

“A spirit reader at the peak of the wargod level” Luo Feng didn’t doubt this at all. His flowing, roaring galaxy in the realm of consciousness contained way more spiritual force than he had before. Keep in mind that he was already at bottom of the ‘advanced level wargod level’ before. After improving so much, of course he’ll be at the peak of the wargod level!

Powerful!

A feeling of unrivaled power!

“One thing that’s known by all is that spirit readers at the peak of the wargod level are invincible in the wargod level” Luo Feng let out a smile, “Alright, I’ll wash up first and then check out Li Yao, Catalan, and the others..... I’ll also end my grudge that I’ve been having with Li Yao all these years”

Whoosh!

Luo Feng went along the tunnel as he charged towards the rock beside the underground river. He used his spiritual force to float a gigantic ball of water in front of him as he swiftly cleaned his entire body and his battle uniform set!

“Time to go!”

In just three minutes, Luo Feng ferociously soared up.

RUMBLE~~ He broke past layer after layer of rock as he swiftly charged towards the surface.

It was still night time in the misty island; mist emanated everywhere.

“PU!” after charging out the surface.

“There are sounds of people fighting over there”

Luo Feng smiled as he walked over step by step, he was indeed headed towards the direction of the nine willow trees, “Who would’ve thought that they still haven’t been able to cut all the willow trees down in half an hour”

The place where he popped out of was at least 1,000 meters away from the nine willow trees.

However, on the extremely silent island, the crazy attacks of Catalan, Li Yao, etc. produced sonic booms, which made it easy for Luo Feng to find them.

“Oh!” Luo Feng looked closely.

As of now, eight out of nine willow trees have fallen and the ‘thousand year willow hearts’ have been taken out of their split

trunks. The only one remaining was the willow tree king! The willow tree king with a trunk that's over three meters in diameter. There were already six javelins stuck in the main trunk of the willow tree king.

The willow tree king had hundreds of dark golden branches surrounding the six javelins.

"Catalan's six javelins are all inside the willow tree king's trunk" Luo Feng watched from afar. After his transformation, his sight improved by a lot, at least 2x better than before, "The javelins are stuck in the trunk and are wrapped around by the dark golden branches, so it'll be hard to retrieve them"

And the three people with Black God sets, Catalan, Li Yao, and Ethan, were currently crazily attacking.

"The willow tree king's trunk is damaged and weakened, hurry!" Catalan, who had some traces of blood on the side of his mouth, yelled. The daggers in his two hands crazily danced. The dark golden branches were much slower than before, so Catalan slashed through a huge amount of dark golden branches. However..... there were just too many.

"BREAK!" roared Li Yao.

"YAYAYA!" Ethan crazily howled. As if a whirlwind was closing into the willow tree king, large amounts of dark golden branches broke!

The trunk was damaged and the speed and power of the branches were clearly weakened by around 60 to 70%. Only their toughness remained!

After weakening so much, Catalan, Li Yao, and Ethan just need time to break all of those dark golden branches! Even though these branches are long, liquid will leak out of them once they're cut. When this happens, their power lowers and become even weaker than regular branches.

"Hurry, while we still have time" Catalan's eyes flashed as he yelled in a hurry, "After cutting down this willow tree king, we still need to go get the other spirits of nature"

"Ok"

"Understood'

Li Yao and Ethan were giving all they had as they cut down branch after branch. As for Keita, he was still patrolling the area..... but because of the night and the mist, Keita had a difficult time discovering Luo Feng, who was hiding in a bush over 200 meters away.

"Haha, broke them, broke them all"

"Haha"

There was lots of laughter. Even though there were so many dark

golden branches, they couldn't stand against the crazy attacks of three advanced level wargods. Finally, all of the dark golden branches were broken, liquid leaking out of each of them. The damaged dark golden branches were weakened greatly, so they no longer posed a threat to the advanced level wargods.

"Attack the trunk"

"Cut it down!"

Catalan, Li Yao, and Ethan crazily charged.

"Keita, come" yelled Catalan.

"Coming" the savage brute Keita also excitedly charged over to help.

The gigantic willow tree king with a trunk of over three meters in diameter couldn't fight back at all. Since it couldn't move, it could only let the four humans attack it! After pulling out the six javelins, Catalan started crazily cutting at the places the javelins pierced. Clearly, attacking from the inside makes it easier.

After they cut over and over again, the toughness of the willow tree king's trunk seemed to lower.

"Chichi~~" the large amounts of willow branches started withering swiftly. The entire trunk of the willow tree king started rapidly losing its vitality. Even the naked eye could see how

quickly it was losing its life. As it lost its life, its defensive capabilities clearly weakened.

BOOM!

The entire willow tree king slowly fell over. The gigantic willow tree king smashed into some trees and plants beside it, and with a rumble, it fell onto the ground of the misty island.

“Haha, finally succeeded”

“Hurry, find the ten thousand year willow heart” Catalan and the others were extremely excited. They spent over 10 times more effort to cut down this one willow tree king than to cut down all the other eight willow trees combined!

Luo Feng has already observed for over 10 minutes in the distance.

“Hehe.....”

“Good thing my transformation only took 30 minutes so I could see them cut down the willow tree king in time” Luo Feng let out a smile, “The people from the Dojo of Limits haven’t arrived yet, but no problem!”. After his transformation underground, Luo Feng’s strength improved greatly. Right now, he desperately wanted to test his skills.

The rumbling wouldn’t stop!

Those group of people were currently slashing at the trunk of the willow tree king.

“Hurry, hurry and find it” Catalan and the others wanted to find the ten thousand year willow heart in the trunk.

“Hm?” Catalan’s spread out spiritual force felt someone enter. He couldn’t help but to be shocked as he turned his head. What was seen 100 meters away was Luo Feng in his battle uniform carrying his shield and holding a ghost blade. He slowly walked out of the mist of the night as he headed towards them.

Keita, Ethan, and Li Yao also discovered this.

“LUO FENG!!!” Li Yao’s eyes immediately bursted with ferocity.

“Long time no see” Luo Feng smiled as he looked at Li Yao.

Catalan looked at Luo Feng as he sneered. With his accented Chinese: “Luo Feng? If you hid underground, with your abilities as a spirit reader, even I wouldn’t be able to catch you. And yet you surfaced, how foolish”. Great Bear Keita and Blood Shadow Ethan also sneered.

Nobody in Catalan’s trio is weaker than Li Yao!

The three of them with Li Yao, would this combination of

four..... fear Luo Feng?

"Or could it be that you used the thousand year willow heart and became a spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level?" sneered Catalan. He was a spirit reader, so he was clear: Spirit readers were rare in the first place, and most spirit readers' growth period only lasted them to the advanced level warlord level.

It would be quite good to last until the beginner level wargod level.

Intermediate level wargod level spirit readers were quite rare.

As for advanced level wargod ones, they could be counted on one hand.

A spirit reader that rapidly grew until the peak of the wargod level? Even if you look across the entire world, you would find one? or two? Nobody knows.

"Thanks for helping me cut down the willow tree king" smiled Luo Feng, "That saved me a lot of effort"

BOOM!

He left behind an afterimage as he charged towards the willow tree king.

“KILL HIM!” roared Catalan.

“LUO FENG!!!” Li Yao roared as he charged first with his blades in both hands. There seemed to be a burning fire in his eyes.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six throwing knives!

Like six black lightning bolts, even Li Yao couldn’t dodge them under this distance. But why would Li Yao dodge? He was completely covered in black and only his eyes and nose were slightly revealed. With his ability, he definitely wouldn’t allow anyone to hit such a small target.

The Black God set!

Even emperor level monsters have difficulty piercing through the Black God set! The only way to kill a wargod wearing a Black God set is with impacts. Even if you can’t pierce through the Black God set, the force of impact can shatter the target’s organs.

“RUMBLE~~~”

Six throwing knives all hit Li Yao!

Luo Feng, who was at the peak of the advanced level wargod

level, possessed incredible and horrifying strength. After using the dragon blood back then, the fist strength testing machine displayed that his throwing knives had a force of impact of around 220,000 kg. And now—— the force of impact of one throwing knife surpassed 500,000 kg!

One throwing knife, over 500,000 kg!

Six throwing knives!

Added together, is over 3,000,000 kg! Spirit readers' advantage reside in their peculiar attacks. However..... at the peak of the advanced level wargod level, just the pure force of impact has reached an incredible point! This is basically the strength of someone with a fist strength of 500,000 kg with a 6x multiplier of a fighter at the peak of the wargod level.

"BOOM!"

Li Yao was blown off his feet and flew backwards at a startling speed. At the same time, he smashed into Blood Shadow Ethan behind him and even tumbled a few times in the air as he flew a few hundred meters away.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The six throwing knives that were as fast as lightning and as heavy as mountains smashed Phantom Demon Catalan, whose face was full of shock, away.

“Hmph!”

Luo Feng landed beside the willow tree trunk and his six throwing knives crazily smashed the trunk. The trunk already lost most of its vitality and was extremely weak, so it quickly blew up. A green thing with hints of gold flew up and was immediately wrapped around by Luo Feng’s spiritual force as his spiritual force retrieved it.

Chapter 56: Attacking a Turtle

This was an oval shaped crystal that was as large as a fist. Inside the crystal flowed some green stuff with hints of gold in it. Just looking at it would move one's heart. "Ten thousand year willow heart!" Luo Feng slightly smiled as he swiftly put the ten thousand year willow heart into the pockets of his battle uniform.

"Li Yao! You're not getting away!" Luo Feng laughed loudly.

BOOM!

The sound of a sonic boom rose, and Luo Feng charged at an incredible speed towards the place where Li Yao landed! As of now, Luo Feng's maximum speed was around 500 m/s. Once he adds his spiritual force that's at the peak of the wargod level, Luo Feng's speed can reach up to 700 m/s!

In the distance.

Li Yao, Catalan, Keita, and Ethan were running like mad.

"That Luo Feng is chasing after us" Catalan's face changed.

"Luo Feng" Li Yao was extremely regretful. He never would've thought that Luo Feng, who he could've squished like an ant in the past, would grow to such a point so quickly. Li Yao hurriedly said while sprinting: "Catalan, the four of us can cooperate and get rid of this Luo Feng!"

“Sorry”

Catalan slightly smiled and then signalled with his eyes towards Keita and Ethan. The three of them have been through who knows how many battles together, so of course they understood what Catalan meant.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Phantom Demon Catalan, Blood Shadow Ethan, and Great Bear Keita. These three powerful fighters made a sharp turn to the left at virtually the exact same time as they sprinted away. They split up with Li Yao in an instant! Keep in mind that their speed is over 600 m/s, so by the time Li Yao even reacted, the distance between them was already over 500 to 600 meters.

And Luo Feng was already coming!

“Bastards, bunch of idiots” Li Yao cursed in his heart. And Luo Feng was approaching extremely quickly.

“This Luo Feng, this Luo Feng’s speed..... is actually a bit faster than mine” Li Yao grieved as he clenched his teeth.

.....

Catalan and the others started slowing down after splitting up

with Li Yao.

"Phew" Catalan let out a sigh of relief.

"That Luo Feng really did go after Li Yao and not us" Catalan looked behind him and spoke in English. His spiritual force strived to release to a distance of 150 meters and discovered nothing. Blood Shadow Ethan sneered on the side: "That Li Yao was looking for it!"

The sonic booms in the quiet night were especially obvious.

"Catalan, how come we aren't helping Li Yao?" frowned Great Bear Keita.

"Help him, why would we help him?" scoffed Catalan. After that, he became serious, "Keita, even if we wanted to help him, we can't. You need to understand that Luo Feng is definitely a spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level, an invincible existence in the advanced level wargod level!"

Great Bear Keita and Blood Shadow Ethan looked at Catalan with surprise. Ethan couldn't help but to say: "Catalan, even you aren't his opponent?"

"For my Phantom Strike, a spirit reader just has to slightly push my javelin to the side with his spiritual force, thus breaking the move. As for my Phantom Eye..... this is a type of attack using spiritual force. Luo Feng's spiritual force is stronger than mine, so

not only will I not be able to injure him, I'll just end up injuring myself" Catalan's face wasn't looking good.

"Then if we work together?" followed Great Bear Keita.

"Yea, let's all go for it" Ethan's gaze turned cold.

"Against a spirit reader, numbers don't mean anything" Catalan slightly shook his head, "I've already confirmed that this Luo Feng is a spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level. Don't mess with him in the future"

"Okay" Keita and Ethan slightly nodded.

"Let's use our time to get some more spirits of nature and then leave with our fighter jet" said Catalan quietly, "Remember, we don't have to walk too quickly. Don't make too much noise, or else Luo Feng might come after us when he hears us"

Keita and Ethan nodded seriously.

Catalan sighed to himself: "Another invincible wargod has appeared in the circle of wargods"

An invincible wargod.....

Is a special title given to a powerful fighter in the circle of wargods. Catalan's position in the circle of wargods is extremely,

extremely high, much higher than Li Yao's. However, he hasn't received the title of 'invincible wargod'. And even though vulture Li Yao has a Black God set, that's only good for defending.

If your attack power is lacking, you don't have the right to be named 'invincible wargod'.

"RUMBLE~~" Plants shattered in the places Li Yao passed, who was sprinting as fast as he could.

Escape!

There was only one word on Li Yao's mind—— escape! Ever since he suffered the attack of Luo Feng's six throwing knives, Li Yao was clear of the distance between him and Luo Feng..... Even Phantom Demon Catalan ran away from Luo Feng, so what can Li Yao do other than run?

"Li Yao!" Luo Feng's body was like a mirage and his eyes were like lightning.

"Die!"

Six black lights instantly shot out from Luo Feng and flew way faster than Luo Feng and Li Yao's sprinting speed. These six black lights instantly covered the distance between them, which was less than 50 meters. Before Li Yao even had the chance to dodge, the six throwing knives smashed into him.

Each throwing knife was like a small mountain!

Each throwing knife had an astonishing amount of piercing power!

The black membrane on Li Yao's body slightly sank, but wasn't pierced by the throwing knives. However, the horrifying force of impact from the six throwing knives wasn't to be taken lightly.

"RUMBLE~~" Li Yao was blasted away but swiftly started sprinting away again. He actually used this force of impact to increase the distance between him and Luo Feng.

"What's going on?"

Seeing how the distance between them just increased, Luo Feng's face changed, "Adding the first time I attacked him, this is the third time. Three attacks..... how is this Li Yao not dead? Or at least on the ground from his injuries?". Six throwing knives, each one with a force of impact of over 500,000 kg!

Six throwing knives, over 3,000,000 kg in total!

And he attacked Li Yao with this horrifying force three times!

Even the most powerful wargods would turn into a pile of meat after getting hit with such a force three times. Yet, vulture Li Yao was still sprinting as fast as he could, his speed not even dropping in the slightest.

“Could it be..... could it be because of his Black God set?”

“Is the Black God set that great?” Luo Feng frowned.

.....

“Thankfully I have my Black God set, or else I would’ve died already” a bit of blood could be seen at the side of Li Yao’s mouth as he sprinted as fast as possible. However, his powerful body was swiftly recovering. Li Yao only needs a bit of time to recover most of the injuries he receives from Luo Feng’s attacks, so all the way until now——

Li Yao only spit out a few mouthfuls of blood.

“The defensive capabilities of the Black God set is incredible. No wonder even emperor level monsters can’t pierce through it and can only rely on impacts” thought Li Yao to himself.

The Black God set was extremely mysterious.

The material it’s made out of is extremely tough!

Its toughness means that no matter how sharp a weapon is, it’ll never be able to pierce through! And not only this..... any force of impact, after being transferred through the Black God set, will weaken by 90%! In other words, after going through the Black God

set, only 300,000 kg of the original 3,000,000 kg actually hits Li Yao's body.

And this 300,000 kg is spread out across Li Yao's entire body.

If a force of impact of 300,000 kg was focused on a single spot, it would gravely injure an advanced level wargod. But once it's spread out across the entire body, then Li Yao doesn't care anymore!

There is a saying——

Other than existences surpassing the wargod level, emperor level monsters, and laser cannons, there is nothing that can kill a wargod wearing a Black God set! This is praising the miraculous defensive capabilities of the 'Black God set'..... of course, there are some exaggerations here. For example, Li Yao almost died when he was stuck under the lake because he couldn't breathe!

In conclusion, the defensive capabilities of the Black God set is incredible!

.....

The six throwing knives hit Li Yao once again. This time..... Li Yao didn't use the force of impact to run in a straight line, but used it to make a sharp turn instead! And Luo Feng, who has been chasing for a while, thought that Li Yao would keep running in a straight line, so he continued to charge forward.

By the time he came back, the distance between the two of them has already surpassed Luo Feng's spiritual force's range because of their amazing speed.

"Hmph!" Luo Feng was mad.

But Luo Feng was clear..... he landed six blows on Li Yao but wasn't able to kill him!

"This Black God set sure is amazing. Even though I can beat this Li Yao, killing him is trouble" thought Luo Feng to himself.

"I'll make a net when I go back! A SS grade net!"

"I'll use my spiritual force to control the net and catch this Li Yao. Hmph, if I can't kill him, then I'll tie him up! When that happens, I won't give him anything to drink or eat! I'll even throw him into water and kill him like that!" thought Luo Feng to himself. There was no other way.....

He could only rely on this simple method!

Tie him up and either starve him to death or suffocate him.

As for killing a wargod with a Black God set upfront, even Luo Feng can't do that unless they take off their Black God set.

“This Li Yao sure is sneaky, not making any sound at all” Luo Feng listened carefully and tried to find his tracks via sound.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng leaped into the air and stepped onto his shield. He instantly flew up to an altitude of 100 to 200 meters.

He looked down from above and spread out his spiritual force while listening closely.

“BOOM!”

A weak sound carried from afar.

“Hm? There’s a sound!” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed and, with a thought, instantly flew over there.

He drew across an arc as he landed.

At this moment, Phantom Demon Catalan, Great Bear Keita, and Blood Shadow Ethan were currently surrounding two golden yellow weeds as they swiftly dug the dirt beneath them.

“Hey, what’re you guys up to?” a sound rose.

Phantom Demon Catalan and the others’ faces changed. They

turned their heads..... Luo Feng, who was standing on his shield, slowly descended as he smiled at Catalan and the others. Phantom Demon Catalan and the others cursed in their hearts, wasn't this Luo Feng supposed to be chasing that Li Yao? Even if they made some sounds, they shouldn't have attracted Luo Feng.

They didn't want to make any sounds at all, but how can you not make any sounds when fighting with spirits of nature?

"Go!" howled Catalan.

The three of them immediately sprinted away.

"Hmph, that Li Yao has a Black God set, so I can't attack a turtle with its head tucked in. Two out of the three of you have Black God sets, but after all..... one of you don't" Luo Feng's gaze locked onto the savage brute—— Great Bear Keita, and let out a smile.

Whoosh!

He directly chased after Great Bear Keita!

Chapter 57: Existence Surpassing the Wargod Level

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng!” This large, savage brute Keita yelled in his accented Chinese.

“Whoosh!”

Luo Feng also stopped out of surprise as he stood beside him. He looked at this famous Great Bear Keita with interest: “You’re not going to run away?”

Great Bear Keita laughed helplessly as he said in his accented Chinese: “Luo Feng, my, my strength, isn’t comparable to yours. I, admit defeat! I, am willing to give, all the, spirits of nature, to you!”

“Hehe” Luo Feng smiled out of surprise.

This Great Bear Keita sure is interesting!

But Great Bear Keita was laughing bitterly inside. When he talked with Phantom Demon Catalan, he learned that Luo Feng was already a spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level, a fighter worthy of the title ‘invincible wargod’. A fighter at this level..... can shake the higher ups of any area with just one word.

And if he wanted to kill Keita?

Six throwing knives can instantly blast Great Bear Keita into mush; Keita didn't have a Black God set.

"Good, I know that you have two spirits of nature in your bag. Hand them over" smiled Luo Feng, "I won't kill you"

"Okay" Great Bear Keita wasn't shocked that Luo Feng knew how many spirits of nature he had.

With his spiritual force, could Luo Feng not know what treasures Great Bear Keita had?

"Catch" Great Bear Keita took out the 2 thousand year willow hearts and directly tossed them towards Luo Feng.

"Good" Luo Feng smiled as his spiritual force wrapped around both thousand year willow hearts and placed them next to his ten thousand year willow heart..... in the pocket of his battle uniform.

Great Bear Keita slightly smiled: "Then I'll be going first. If you ever go to Europe and need something, you can come find me. We better have some drinks next time in the virtual space's Palace of Wargods" after saying that, Great Bear Keita swiftly left.

"Quite passionate aren't you?" Luo Feng laughed.

“The virtual space’s Palace of Wargods?” Luo Feng knew..... that anyone with the title of wargod on earth can join the Palace of Wargods. This Palace of Wargods was built by fighters like Hong and Thunder God back then. Now he learned that the Palace of Wargods is actually in the virtual space.

Wise Keita handed him both of the thousand year willow hearts he had, so Luo Feng was in quite a good mood.

Above the misty island.

Luo Feng stood on his shield at an altitude of 200 meters in the sky as he looked down on the entire misty island. At the same time, his spiritual force extended and tried to find Li Yao.

“This Li Yao sure can hide carefully. He isn’t making any sound at all. My spiritual force can’t find him either” Luo Feng frowned as he stood on his shield, his face was quite helpless.

Suddenly——

“Hm?” Luo Feng turned his head over.

In the distance, a blazing red light swiftly flew over from the horizon, as if it was an asteroid. In the dark night, this blazing red light was quite conspicuous.

Whoosh!

The blazing red light stopped in front of Luo Feng, and it turned out to be a white man with curled, brown hair in a battle uniform set. While this white man hovered in the air, the air around him seemed to twist. A bit of fire was burning on his body. The man in fire looked at Luo Feng and spoke in English: “Who are you?”

Luo Feng was shocked.

Fire on his body? Flying? This is definitely an existence surpassing the wargod level!

“I’m Luo Feng, from the Dojo of Limits” Luo Feng stood on his shield and slightly bowed in midair to show his respect.

“Luo Feng?” This man in fire slightly nodded and then ferociously yelled, “Catalan, the four of you come out!” His vigorous voice swiftly carried around the entire island.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

A bunch of sonic booms immediately sounded around the entire misty island. Soon enough, Luo Feng’s spiritual force discovered the four people gathered below—— Phantom Demon Catalan, Vulture Li Yao, Blood Shadow Ethan, and Great Bear Keita.

“Representative Farr!”

“Representative Farr!”

The four people below respectfully gave their greetings. Phantom Demon Catalan and the others looked towards the fighter coated in flames in the night sky and were startled..... right after Luo Feng stole the thousand year willow heart, Phantom Demon Catalan immediately contacted his teacher! His teacher contacted existences surpassing the wargod level!

But who would’ve thought.....

That someone would arrive so quickly.

“I just happened to be training myself in the continent of Australia. Right when your teacher contacted me, I rushed here as fast as possible” representative Farr, who was coated in flames, smiled as he said, “How goes your spirit of nature harvest?”

“Representative Farr”

Li Yao yelled in English, “The most valuable ten thousand year willow heart we found was stolen by this Luo Feng. He also stole 3 thousand year willow hearts!”

.....

In the night, Luo Feng’s face slightly changed as he hovered in midair.

“Luo Feng” representative Farr looked towards Luo Feng and his eyes became cold, “Hand over the ten thousand year willow heart and the 3 thousand year willow hearts”

Whoosh!

Luo Feng turned and ran!

“Want to run?” representative Farr instantly turned into a flowing red light as he chased. Even though representative Farr was an existence surpassing the wargod level, all wargods and existences surpassing the wargod level were members of the Palace of Wargods! There are rules in the Palace of Wargods. One of those rules is that, unless they have a good enough reason, existences surpassing the wargod level are not allowed to kill wargods.

Furthermore, Luo Feng comes from the Dojo of Limits!

Existences surpassing the wargod level all over the world wouldn’t easily mess with the Dojo of Limits. Even though he won’t kill anyone..... representative Farr definitely needs to retrieve the ten thousand year willow heart.

“Hm?”

The face of representative Farr, who transformed into flames, suddenly changed as he accelerated. However, the distance between him and Luo Feng didn’t shorten, but lengthened instead.

“As I thought!”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to let out a smile as he rapidly flew forwards and turned his head back, “This representative Farr’s flying speed isn’t as fast as mine! When he flew over here just now, I felt that his flying speed was around half of my maximum speed. And now, it seems that even when he goes all out, he’s still slower than me by quite a bit”

.....

BOOM!

Representative Farr, whose body was surrounded by flames, rapidly descended to the misty island. Li Yao and the others were shocked..... looks like representative Farr wasn’t able to catch Luo Feng.

“Hurry, we’ll split up and search for spirits of nature. If you can’t deal with something, contact me immediately” yelled representative Farr.

“Yes”

Catalan and the others immediately sprinted into the depths of the misty island.

While sprinting, Li Yao couldn't help but to ask: "Catalan, how come representative Farr couldn't catch up to Luo Feng?"

"Existences surpassing the wargod level are way more powerful than wargods" said Catalan lowly, "However..... in midair, they have nowhere to use their power! If they sprint on the ground, they are astonishingly fast. As for flying..... even though existences surpassing the wargod level can fly, their flying speed is way slower than their speed on land"

Li Yao, Keita, and Ethan came to a realization.

Back when Luo Feng stole the first thousand year willow heart, Catalan has already said..... even existences surpassing the wargod level wouldn't chase an advanced level wargod level spirit reader underground.

Indeed——

Existences surpassing the wargod level are extremely powerful. But within reason!

If they were on land, they could catch Luo Feng in an instant.

But in the air? Their powerful legs have nothing to run on, so they can only rely on their special ability to fly. Even though they fly quickly, even faster than some spirit readers, they're still slower than spirit readers at the peak of the advanced wargod level.

Luo Feng turned back and hovered at an altitude of 300 to 400 meters above the misty island, his spiritual force spread out.

BOOM!

The air suddenly shook and a purplish red light stopped in the air above Luo Feng in a blink of an eye. It was indeed a purplish red triangular fighter jet. In terms of appearance, this streamlined triangular fighter jet was virtually the same as the one Hong rode on last time, only the color differed.

HUALA! The hatch opened automatically.

Two shadows flew out and the fighter jet's hatch automatically closed as it just hovered in midair.

"The Dojo of Limits' fighter jet" Luo Feng's face let out some joy.

"You're Luo Feng?"

The two shadows hovered beside Luo Feng. One of them had long, flowing hair and always had a smile on. He gave off a feeling of a calming, nice breeze. As for the guy hovering beside him, he was as cold as ice and as steady as a mountain. He had a golden mask on.

"Luo Feng greets the two investigators" Luo Feng bowed.

“How’s it going down there?” asked investigator Liu.

Luo Feng replied: “Investigator, one of the existences surpassing the wargod level from the HR alliance—— representative Farr, just arrived a few minutes ago. As for the willow tree heart…… there are 9 thousand year willow hearts and 1 ten thousand willow heart. Six of the thousand year willow hearts are in their possession. I consumed a thousand year willow heart earlier and took 2 thousand year willow hearts and 1 ten thousand year willow heart”

Investigator Liu let out a smile as he slightly nodded: “Ten thousand year willow heart? Not bad!”

BOOM!

At this time, a flowing red light approached from below, it was indeed representative Farr.

“Representative* Liu” Farr looked at investigator Liu. When he saw the golden masked man on the side, he let out a face of surprise.

“Representative Farr, all the spirits of nature on this misty island…… will go to the Dojo of Limits. You don’t have any objections right” said investigator Liu calmly.

The flames on Farr’s body bursted ferociously as he yelled with anger: “Investigator Liu, don’t cross the line! We discovered this

misty island first……”

“You guys didn’t discover it first, I did” Luo Feng cut in, “You can ask Catalan, Li Yao, and the others to confirm”. Indeed, Luo Feng was actually the first one to come to this misty island. After that, he purposefully turned on his tactical communications watch to lure Li Yao here. If Li Yao didn’t come, then Luo Feng wouldn’t have recognized those treasures.

“Haha, hear that?” smiled investigator Liu, “Our side discovered it first”

“Hmph” investigator Farr sneered, “Nobody owns this misty island. Why would we hand it over to your Dojo of Limits. If you guys aren’t all talk, then lets fight over them fairly. Whoever finds a spirits of nature, gets to keep it!”

Investigator Liu smiled at representative Farr as he heard this. He went silent for a moment and then nodded, “I accept”

Chapter 58: Huge Commotion

Representative Farr froze.....

Luo Feng was surprised too. Keep in mind that this entire misty island was full of mist and visibility was low here. And for things like spirits of nature, there are times where it would be hard to recognize one even if it was right in front of you. Whoever finds more gets to keep more? Why would this investigator Liu accept such conditions?

“It’s up to you” Investigator Liu looked towards the golden masked man.

“Ok” the golden masked man slightly nodded.

Whoosh!

He flew into the distance and hovered above the misty island. Afterwards, the mysterious golden masked man extended both of his hands and closed his eyes. A formless, special power spread towards every direction with him at the center, as if a radar was emitting radio waves.

This process lasted about five to six seconds.

Whoosh! Like a bolt of lightning, the mysterious golden masked man directly flew into the misty island.

.....

This scene shocked Luo Feng and representative Farr, who were still in midair. Usually, searching for spirits of nature with all this mist was an extremely difficult task. If the spirits of nature don't attack, then they would be hard to recognize even if they're right in front of you! So there isn't much of an advantage for existences surpassing the wargod level in searching for spirits of nature.

But why……

Does investigator Liu seem so confident in letting this mysterious golden masked man take action?

"Representative Farr, just keep me company here. It'll be easier for you and it'll be easier for me" investigator Liu glanced at him. Representative Farr just sneered as he continued to hover in midair. Representative Farr didn't have any special methods to help him search for spirits of nature, so it would be better for him to just stay here and keep investigator Liu with him.

Suddenly——

Four shadows raced below and one of them even soared into the air.

Luo Feng observed carefully and saw that the one who flew up was indeed Phantom Demon Catalan. A black light extended below Catalan's feet and seemed to take the shape of a pedal. Phantom

Demon Catalan's feet stepped on those black pedals as he hovered in midair.

"Representative Farr, representative Farr" Catalan said out of anger and resignation, "We were digging up an unknown spirit of nature, but it was stolen right at the most important moment. The opponent was too fast and powerful. He was probably an existence surpassing the wargod level, so the four of us couldn't fight back at all"

Representative Farr's face changed as he heard this.

"As for the spirits of nature that Li Yao discovered earlier, they were already taken by the time we arrived" yelled Catalan again.

"HAHA……" investigator Liu laughed loudly as he heard this.

Representative Farr's face turned green as he heard this.

And Luo Feng was absolutely flabbergasted. Damn, that mysterious golden masked man has an ability where he can easily find spirits of nature in all this mist? Usually, spirits of nature are extremely hard to identify if they don't attack.

"Investigator Liu, I wonder which of the three royal guards he is? Ice Mountain?" representative Farr's face was green, "Who would've thought that the head of the Dojo's three royal guards have such special abilities"

“You’re quite smart. He is indeed Ice Mountain”

Investigator Liu slightly smiled, “However, is this worth getting surprised over? Everyone has different abilities after breaking through the wargod barrier and becoming an existence surpassing the wargod level. Your ability is just fire. And Ice Mountain of the three royal guards has an ability you would never even dream of”

There are five big investigators under ‘Hong’ of the Dojo of Limits.

But, other than the five investigators, few people know..... that Hong has three royal guards. These three royal guards have been following Hong with all their body and heart since a long time ago! They are absolutely loyal. Hong also guides these three royal guards and assists them as much as possible..... all three royal guards are existences surpassing the wargod level!

People say that the five big investigators are horrifying.....

But more fighters are afraid of these three royal guards! Other than Hong, nobody knows who they are. People only know their nicknames, which are: “Beast” “Ice Mountain” “Allure”.

“Royal guards?” Luo Feng was stunned, “Not investigators?”

“Young man” investigator Liu smiled as he glanced at Luo Feng, “Hong is not as simple as you think he is. The three royal guards below him are all existences surpassing the wargod level. And each

of the royal guards, under Hong's teachings, have extraordinary strength. Otherwise..... why would the world's powerful countries and organizations all fear Hong so much?"

Luo Feng froze.

One person, single handedly raised three existences surpassing the wargod level.

Holy!

"RUMBLE~~"

"HU!"

It was all black below. Sonic boom after sonic boom carried from the mist covered island below. The sounds of attacks landing on a plant. Clearly, these sounds were caused by that royal guard.

In midair.

A shield created out of a breeze covered Luo Feng and investigator Liu.

"Investigator?" Luo Feng looked at investigator Liu with shock.

"Just a small trick so representative Farr won't be able to hear

us” smiled investigator Liu, “Let me introduce myself. I’m Liu He. The head’s rating of you is quite high, saying that you’re one of the top spirit reader geniuses on earth. After consuming a thousand year willow heart..... what level did your spiritual force reach?”

Luo Feng hesitated.

“Peak of the advanced level wargod level” said Luo Feng.

Investigator Liu took in a breath as he looked at Luo Feng with disbelief on his face. He couldn’t help but to say: “How old are you?”

“19 years old!” answered Luo Feng.

“19 years old, peak of the advanced level wargod level spirit reader?” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to shake his head as he started laughing, “I’ve always heard how powerful the geniuses from the legends are. During the Grand Nirvana period, the head and chairman Thunder God only took a few years to become existences surpassing the wargod level. I’ve also seen a few that only took a short 2 to 3 years to become wargods at the peak of the advanced level wargod level”

“But..... it’s my first time seeing a 19 year old peak of the advanced level wargod level spirit reader” investigator Liu’s gaze towards Luo Feng softened quite a bit.

Why is the Dojo of Limits powerful? Unity!

Raise up geniuses to strengthen the Dojo and not worry about the young ones surpassing the old ones. On Luo Feng's path of a fighter..... he's been taught and helped by instructor Jiang Nian, chief instructor Wu Tong, envoy Yang Hui, teacher Jiang Fang, and others. They tried their best to guide and advise Luo Feng, which was why he was able to grow so successfully!

His talent is important, but so is his environment.

"Very good" investigator Liu smiled as he nodded, "With your strength, you can already be nicknamed 'invincible wargod'. A spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level, hehe, this is quite a challenge. They seem to fly quickly and are quite peculiar underground, making it hard for people to chase after them"

Luo Feng couldn't help but recall the scene that previously unfolded.

Representative Farr, couldn't catch him in midair!

"But don't get too cocky. You're invincible within wargods, but once you encounter an existence surpassing the wargod level..... it won't be so easy! Every existence surpassing the wargod level has a special ability" investigator Liu lightly smiled, "And everyone has different strengths. For example, I fly much faster than representative Farr"

Luo Feng nodded. That mysterious golden masked man is one of

Hong's three royal guards, 'Ice Mountain'. He's actually able to easily find large amounts of spirits of nature.

Investigator Liu carefully reminded Luo Feng that he can't let his guard down. There are tons of existences surpassing the wargod level that can get rid of Luo Feng.

"Show me the ten thousand year willow heart" said investigator Liu.

"Investigator" Luo Feng took out the ten thousand year willow heart.

Investigator Liu took it and looked at it. The flowing green essence with hints of gold inside the oval shaped crystal caused investigator Liu to squint. He nodded, "This ten thousand year willow heart is definitely something special. I have a feeling that this one ten thousand year willow heart is more important than 10 thousand year willow hearts". Luo Feng let out a smile as he heard this.

Isn't that right?

Cutting down nine willow trees is who knows how many times more easier than cutting down a willow tree king. The 'ten thousand year willow heart' in the willow tree king is definitely something special.

"But a treasure like this cannot be consumed without care. We

have to show the head to figure out how to use it properly" said investigator Liu seriously, "If a treasure isn't used properly, it'll take lives. One year there was a guy who consumed a certain treasure and his body directly blew up because of it"

Luo Feng nodded.

You can die from eating too much food. This ten thousand year willow heart is much better than a thousand year willow heart so, without absolute confidence, Luo Feng wouldn't foolishly eat it.

"Anyways, Luo Feng, you've done something big this time" said investigator Liu, "Reporting the location of the misty island gets you 10%. And you also obtained the ten thousand year willow heart, so that counts as helping us get the treasure. When the time comes, we'll give you more"

"And now you're a..... spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level. The head will probably organize something for you. There's no need for you to stay in the elite training camp" smiled investigator Liu, "Why would the head not use someone as talented as you? There might be a huge reward for you. The head isn't a stingy person"

"Investigator....."

Luo Feng was a bit worried.

"Hm?" investigator Liu looked at Luo Feng, "speak"

“I just want to ask the investigator... I don’t know if the head would be willing to reward me with a Black God set” asked Luo Feng.

Investigator Liu froze, this kid sure doesn’t hold back.

After the battle on this misty island, Luo Feng really wanted a Black God set. The effect of this Black God set is too amazing, way better than a SS grade battle uniform set. Actually, Luo Feng still hasn’t officially obtained the title of wargod. The law says he still isn’t a wargod. Technically, Luo Feng can continue to stay in the elite training camp and get first place over and over again..... wouldn’t he obtain gigantic rewards this way? And also obtain the Black God set?”

“If I stay in the training camp, I’ll have a chance to get it” clowned Luo Feng.

“You kiddo, you’re already invincible in the wargod level and you still have the face to fight over with those kids?” investigator Liu didn’t know whether to laugh or cry, “However, I really can’t decide over the Black God set. We’ll have to see what the head says when we return!”

Investigators rarely interact with students.

Investigator Liu took the initiative to introduce himself and to talk to Luo Feng. He wanted to get to know Luo Feng. Who would’ve thought that Luo Feng would act like a kid even though

he’s an invincible wargod, a figure that can shock an area of the earth. Oh wait..... Luo Feng is only 19, so he actually is a kid.

***

“BOOM~~”

In the night, the entire misty island shook, which shocked Luo Feng, investigator Liu, and representative Farr.

“Let’s hurry up and go!” a loud sound rang.

The golden masked man came back in a rush, “whoosh!”. In the distance, a black purplish vine that had a diameter of 20 cm shot towards him..... with just a glance, you couldn’t tell how long the vine was. With just the light coming from representative Farr’s fire, the naked eye could see a length of 500 to 600 meters; there was still an unknown length in the distant mist.

As if a vine that stretched across the heavens and the earth!

This vine was like a tentacle that stretched across hundreds of meters, and was still rapidly extending as it wrapped towards the golden masked man. The golden masked man’s bag was completely bulged up as it clearly held large amounts of spirits of nature.

Chapter 59: Return to the Headquarter City

“This vine!” Luo Feng was absolutely shocked when he saw it. The black purplish vine that extended from the distant mist seemed infinite. It was like a rumbling, gigantic python that chased after the escaping golden masked man.

PU! PU!

The golden masked man had blades that were as thin as a cicada’s wing in each hand, as if they were transparent ice blades. They cruelly collided with the approaching black purplish vine.

Immediately, shockwaves visible to the naked eye flew in every direction. The trees below that seemed to touch the sky were all smashed into pieces by these shockwaves. Even Vulture Li Yao, Blood Shadow Ethan, and Great Bear Keita were running in a panic. If they accidently get caught up in this fight, they’ll instantly die!

“What!” Luo Feng was shocked.

Under the attack of the two ice blades, the black purplish vine that had a diameter of 20 cm was barely cut open a depth of 1 cm. However, this wound instantly healed in virtually a blink of an eye.

“Let’s go” investigator Liu pulled Luo Feng.

Luo Feng didn't resist and immediately flew into the distance with investigator Liu..... as for that black purplish vine, it was busy chasing after the golden masked man with everything it had, so it didn't have time to chase after Luo Feng and the others.

"Get on the fighter jet" yelled investigator Liu.

Whoosh!

The purplish red triangular fighter jet that was hovering in the distance directly flew over and opened its hatch.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Investigator Liu and Luo Feng flew into the triangular fighter jet like two lights.

Inside the triangular fighter jet was darkness.

Luo Feng and investigator Liu looked out the hatch while the fighter jet flew away, creating distance between them and the black purplish vine.

HUALA! The hatch closed.

"Display Ice Mountain's battle" ordered investigator Liu.

CHI——

A video instantly appeared in the dark cabin, which was indeed displaying the battle that was currently happening above the misty island. This video was much more clear than what the naked eye could perceive. In the video, the golden masked man was the only person left in the air above the misty island. And he was still being chased by that vine!

The golden masked man was as fast as lightning as he escaped.

“PA!” a sky shattering sound.

The vine actually whipped like a whip. That dark purplish vine that was over 1,000 meters long whipped ferociously. When it retracted and then extended, it caused an amazing sonic boom! Even after the sound went through the hatch of the plane, Luo Feng felt like a bomb just blew up next to his ears.

“Such a long vine can whip people?” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to sigh, “If Ice Mountain gets whipped, it’s over”

“Investigator Liu, are we just going to watch?” asked Luo Feng.

They’re all part of the Dojo of Limits. Are they just going to watch their ally get attacked?

“Luo Feng, royal guard Ice Mountain’s strength is even a bit higher than mine. And his escaping abilities are much better than

mine! He's a royal guard of the head, so the head has taught them various methods to keep their lives. If I go? I'll just make things worse" investigator Liu wasn't in a rush at all, "Don't worry, this one vine still can't——NOT GOOD!"

Investigator Liu's face changed dramatically.

Luo Feng also took in a deep breath as he stared at the display!

"RUMBLE~~"

In the video, the entire misty island rumbled. Another black purplish vine that you couldn't see the end of swiftly extended out of the mist. Now there are two black purplish vines..... no! The entire misty island rumbled as a third black purplish vine that seemed to stretch across the land extended out of the mist.

A fourth vine! A fifth vine!

The naked eye couldn't tell how long each vine was, but they were definitely over 1,000 meters long. And each vine had a black purplish color and had a diameter of 20 cm. They were all extremely tough. Even existences surpassing the wargod level..... can't do anything against them.

"Big trouble" investigator Liu's face turned green.

Above the misty island, the vines that pierced through the heavens were like the tentacles of the misty island. They crazily

danced from every direction as they surrounded the golden masked man! The golden masked man was extremely fast. One movement of his body could move him across a distance of a few hundred meters. With this, he should be able to shake off the vines easily.

However, the vines themselves were too peculiar!

They could freely twist and move! They moved so quickly that they left behind tons of afterimages, not allowing the golden masked man to escape at all.

At this moment——

In the video, the six vines crazily danced in the air above the misty island. The golden masked man barely dodged each of their attacks.

“According to the computer’s calculations, each of these vines..... has a length of over 1,600 meters! Their extending, retracting, and moving speeds are over 1,000 m/s” investigator Liu’s face wasn’t looking good, “Their toughness is comparable to an average emperor level monster. The worst part is, they have extraordinary regeneration capabilities, their wounds can heal instantly”

Luo Feng silently watched.....

The six vines in the video were working together perfectly. As they attacked over and over again, they naturally and quickly

forced the golden masked man into a corner.

“BOOM!”

“WHAT” Luo Feng and investigator Liu were both flabbergasted.

Under the attacks of the six black purplish vines, the extremely tiny golden masked man instantly transformed into a white light. He was extremely fast….. and virtually instantly escaped the area where the six vines were attacking. This white light was currently flying towards the triangular fighter jet with amazing speed.

HUALA! The hatch opened!

The white light slowed down and became a human’s image. It charged into the hatch, which closed right after.

“Return to HQ” yelled investigator Liu.

WHOOSH!

The purplish red triangular fighter jet immediately turned into a purplish red light as it disappeared into the horizon. The only things left were the black purplish vines that were crazily dancing above the misty island, as if they were enraged.

…..

Inside the cabin.

“Ice Mountain, are you okay?” investigator Liu assisted the golden masked man.

The golden masked man sat on the chair with his eyes closed, his breath was weak. He said lowly: “No worries, Liu He, I’m not going to die yet! I just used my forbidden essence move, which damages the body too much. I need to go back and rest for a while this time”

Investigator Liu finally let out a sigh of relief.

“Ice Mountain, what forbidden move, can you teach me?” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to ask. It’s not that he doesn’t understand the rules, but the speed royal guard Ice Mountain displayed when escaping was just too startling. Even though he doesn’t have any strength to fight back afterwards..... this move is definitely a lifesaver.

“You?”

“I spent nearly five years giving various treasures and wealth to the head. Only after that did the head spend quite a bit of time creating a life saving move for me based off of the characteristics of my essence” Ice Mountain glanced at investigator Liu, “The characteristics of your essence isn’t the same as mine, so you can’t learn it”

Investigator Liu shook his head helplessly.

He understood too……

If you supply enough wealth and treasure to the head, the head will help his subordinates create a special move. However, something like that takes up a lot of energy and time, so the payment required is also startling.

“I just got this ‘Universe level’ auto jet, which costed me quite a bit of money” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to shake his head.

“Auto jet?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to say, “This fighter jet doesn’t need any crew members and can move by itself?”. Way too advanced, he’s never seen any fighter jet like that. Furthermore, Luo Feng completely experienced how advanced this fighter jet’s AI was just now.

“Yea. This is the ‘Universe level’ auto jet. Just the materials required to build this is uncountable” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to get a bit proud, “During crucial times, I can control it to block emperor level attacks. Even an emperor level monster can’t destroy this fighter jet! The materials it’s made out of are way better than the ones in a SS grade weapon”

Luo Feng was dumbfounded.

Isn’t that too much? A fighter jet’s materials are better than a SS grade weapon’s? Luo Feng has finally experienced for himself how extravagant the ‘existences surpassing the wargod level’ are.

“However, that vine attacks by wrapping around its target, so my auto jet won’t be able to do much against that” investigator Liu shook his head. After that, he smiled as he glanced at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, according to you’ve done this time, you’ll definitely receive a huge reward, which would be enough to buy a Universe level auto jet. Maybe..... you can even buy the highest level ‘Prehistoric level’ auto jet. A prehistoric level auto jet, got that? That’s the jet that the head rides on. Its defense is incredible and it even has a laser cannon on it”

Luo Feng remained silent.....

He’s not that dumb.

This time’s harvest is clearly gigantic. A thousand year willow heart is more valuable than a portion of dragon blood, and what about a ten thousand year willow heart? Adding to that, ‘royal guard Ice Mountain’ has a huge bag of spirits of nature. He’ll definitely receive an incredible amount of money. Would he waste all of that money to buy a fighter jet?

“Ice Mountain, how’s this times harvest” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to ask.

As if he’s feeling slightly better, Ice Mountain opened his eyes and took a glance: “Huge, very huge”

Investigator Liu couldn’t help but to ask: “I count as a contributor this time too right?”

“Hmph, all you did was hold back that representative Farr” said royal guard Ice Mountain lightly, “The harvesters of a spirit of nature mission only receive 30% of the total wealth. If I sugarcoat it, you’ll barely be able to get 5%. Luo Feng got the ten thousand year willow heart and 2 thousand year willow hearts, so he’ll barely get 5% too probably. I get 20%”

Investigator Liu said nothing. He indeed didn’t really do anything.

“A ten thousand year willow heart and 2 thousand year willow hearts only gets 5%?” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to ask.

“What do you know!”

Royal guard Ice Mountain laughed lightly, “Just from what I harvested, there are 92 spirits of nature. Over six of them are more valuable than the ten thousand year willow heart”

Luo Feng and investigator Liu both took in a breath.

That amount of wealth is staggering. This misty island sure is a treasure island, giving birth to so many spirits of nature.

“The most valuable thing is that vine” royal guard Ice Mountain brought his voice down, “I first sensed how much energy that vine had before attacking it, but who would’ve thought that I only sensed a small portion of it. The entire vine is over 2,000 meters

long. Furthermore..... I estimate that the vine is only a part of a certain spirit of nature, since there were six vines chasing after me in the end”

“So——”

“There is an incredible spirit of nature on that misty island” said royal guard Ice Mountain quietly, “That’s where the largest treasure is. When I ran away, I sent the scene of battle to the head. The head will probably personally move out for this”

“The head will personally move out?”

Investigator Liu and Luo Feng both nodded.

Indeed, if those six black purplish vines were merely a part of a certain spirit of nature, then the misty island’s most powerful spirit of nature..... isn’t a presence that’s easy to mess with.

Chapter 60: Hong and the Long Vine

On the wasteland beside the lake surrounding the misty island.

Vulture Li Yao, Phantom Demon Catalan, Great Bear Keita, and Blood Shadow Ethan. The four of them looked towards the misty island with a bit of fear in their hearts. Representative Farr, who was hovering in midair beside them, also looked towards the sky above the misty island where the six black purplish vines that pierced the heavens danced crazily.

“Just what are those things? How are they so powerful”

“Way too horrifying. Even an existence surpassing the wargod level can’t beat it”

Vulture Li Yao and the others talked quietly. They were all stunned and scared. If representative Farr didn’t bring them away and if the black purplish vine wasn’t only concerned with chasing after that royal guard “Ice Mountain’, the four of them probably wouldn’t have been able to escape.

Whoosh!

Representative Farr landed.

“Thank you, representative Farr” Li Yao came up and thanked. The other three also thanked him.

Representative Farr looked towards the four and commanded without emotion: “Give me the spirits of nature you guys found!”

Catalan, Li Yao, and the others froze.

Hand over the spirits of nature?

Catalan and the others worked hard to get these spirits of nature together. However, since they were afraid that Luo Feng would call the people from the Dojo of Limits, they also requested for existences surpassing the wargod level! Once they ask for help, the spirits of nature they obtain will naturally be divided.

Just like how Luo Feng handed over his ten thousand year willow heart and his thousand year willow heart.

However, one difference is..... that royal guard ‘Ice Mountain’ basically got all of the spirits of nature on the island. And representative Farr didn’t even get one. This way, Catalan and the others are at a disadvantage.

“Hm?” representative Farr frowned.

“Bring them out” commanded Catalan. Even though they didn’t want to, Li Yao and the others could only hand out the spirits of nature they had.

6 thousand year willow hearts and two spirit herbs.

“Don’t worry, I’ll redistribute them based on contribution” said representative Farr coldly, “The fighter jet you guys came in is over there. Are you guys going to go back to Europe or..... wait here for the other representatives?”. Catalan invited quite a few representatives through his teacher.

All existences surpassing the wargod level are representatives of the Palace of Wargod’s committee.

“We’re not in a rush” smiled Catalan.

“Yea, no rush” followed Li Yao. How could they miss a chance to watch a few existences surpassing the wargod level battle against spirits of nature?

...

After a long time.

A flowing light finally appeared in the sky as it swiftly approached. It hovered in the air not too far from representative Farr. This was a disc shaped fighter jet that was completely black, and its hatch just opened.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Three images flew out. Judging from their skin color, two of

them are American or European while one of them had slightly darker skin, like someone from South America. The three of them smiled as they flew towards representative Farr. The four of them..... were indeed four existences surpassing the wargod level!

“Teacher” Catalan flew over.

“Look, behind”

“Behind”

Li Yao, Catalan, and Keita, who were still on the ground, were all shocked as they pointed towards a blood red colored triangular fighter jet that was hovering behind the disc shaped fighter jet.

HUALA! The hatch opened.

“What”

The four existences surpassing the wargod level were all stunned as they looked at the person who arrived.

The stars scattered across the night sky seemed to have all disappeared. In this point of time, only one person seemed to exist —— a man with black, short hair, a black jacket, and black trousers. After meeting his gaze, one’s heart completely freezes up and gives up all thoughts of resisting. He, is the only deity in this entire world!

Including representative Farr, the hearts of these four existences surpassing the wargod level were all shaking.

“We greet the first chairman!” representative Farr and the three others slightly bowed as they hovered in midair.

The person who came was indeed Hong!

The world’s strongest fighter, the first chairman on the Palace of Wargods! The indisputable number one on earth!

“I discovered your fighter jet previously and guessed you guys were coming here, so I didn’t rush to get ahead” the black haired man’s voice was calm, “I won’t bully you guys. I’ll give you guys one chance. You guys can attack that misty island however you want and keep what you get! If you guys fail, then hurry up and leave”

Hong’s voice was cold.

It had a sense of superiority in it. But indeed, Hong’s position since the Grand Nirvana period has been at the indisputable peak! If the presidents and leaders of the five great countries get their power from the country themselves, then Hong’s power comes completely from himself!

Just him, is comparable to an entire country, and maybe even more!

His authority has already surpassed the restrictions of the normal world.

So.....

He was glorified. All the countries on earth cooperated with him and helped him expand his Dojo of Limits. Truthfully, Hong actually can count as a deity-like existence. One huge reason why humanity has been able to last until now is because of Hong's uncoverable efforts.

"Thank you, first chairman" the four existences surpassing the wargod level slightly bowed.

And then——

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The four of them turned into four flowing lights as they flew towards the distant misty island. The black haired man just hovered in midair as he silently waited.

"This is Hong?" Catalan, Li Yao, Keita, and Ethan all looked towards Hong with passion.

The existences surpassing the wargod level they so praise like representative Farr and the others remain completely calm, and

even a bit prideful, in front of the chairman of the HR alliance! However, in front of ‘Hong’, these four representatives become extremely respectful and behaved like children.

Praise!

Catalan, Ethan, Li Yao, and Keita adore Hong from the bottom of their hearts. Hong represents the limits of humanity, the peak!

.....

Five minutes later.

The rumbling noises sounded continuously on the misty island. Four flowing lights swiftly flew back as they hovered below Hong. Each of the four of these existences surpassing the wargod level seemed to have been slightly injured. Either that, or their face was pale, or had a bit of blood trickling out the side of their mouths. All of them were scared. If they didn’t listen to representative Farr describe how horrifying those vines were and, as a result, carefully went along the edge of the island, then one or two of them might have died instead of just receiving some small wounds.

“First chairman” the four of them slightly bowed.

The black haired man glanced at them.

The four of them bowed again and then directly flew towards the disc shaped fighter jet. No matter what, they won’t approach that

misty island anymore.

That vine's vitality is too much!

"Whoosh!"

The black haired man directly flew towards the misty island. The blood red colored triangular fighter jet behind him also followed.

Above the misty island.

The black haired man looked down from above like a deity.

The eight endless vines that were just ambushed by the four existences surpassing the wargod level were dancing in fury, causing the entire misty island to shake, as if an earthquake was happening.

"Oh?" the black haired man's eyes flashed.

Whoosh!

He directly descended, which caused the black purplish vines to sweep towards him, hoping to strangle the black haired man to death.

"Hm?" the black haired man extended his right hand, his

powerful right hand.

PU!

As if someone was grabbing onto a pair of chopsticks, the black haired man actually grabbed onto the endless vine. Even though the vine had a diameter of 20 centimeters, it couldn't escape the black haired man's grasp no matter how much it twisted and turned.

"BUZZ~~~" the gigantic black purplish vine crazily turned.

Sadly..... to no avail.

"Black purplish, with such power" the black haired man's left hand took the shape of a blade and lightly drew across. A wound with a depth of 10 cm was instantly cut open on the black purplish vine, but just after two or three seconds, the wound completely disappeared.

"RUMBLE~~"

It couldn't escape, so the entire misty island shook ferociously. Vine after vine extended out of the mist, each of them over a length of 2,000 meters. One, two, three..... eight, nine.....

"There should be 16 total" the black haired man let out a smile. He let all the black purplish vines charge at him. The surrounding 100 meter radius of the black haired man suddenly sank into an

infinite darkness. Once the black purplish vines entered this dark area, movement became extremely difficult, as if they were in mud.

“Yep”

The black haired man grabbed a vine and observed it like a studying scientist, “It matches the information in the archaeological ruins perfectly, the cloud contact vine!”

“Our earth actually has cloud contact vines too?”

The black haired man let out a smile, “This Luo Feng sure is a star of luck. I’ve earned a ton this time. I guess I’ll give him some good stuff when we’re giving him a portion of the spirits of nature”

※※

Paris headquarter city.

In a quiet bedroom, Li Yao grabbed a bottle of red wine and lay on the sofa as he gulped it down. Soon enough, over half the bottle was finished.

“Yao, you don’t have to be so depressed just because of this time’s failure” anxiously said Venina in Chinese on the side.

Li Yao ignored her and finished the bottle in one breath. After

that, he grabbed towards another bottle of red wine.

“Yao, Yao” Venina hurriedly took away the bottle of red wine.

“There’s no hope, no hope” Li Yao glanced at Venina and then laughed at himself like he was drunk.

“What do you mean no hope? You just failed this time. Failed to harvest the spirits of nature, failed to kill Luo Feng, stop yelling about no hope” Venina was enraged, “Yao, we’ve been through so much together, but I’ve never seen you lose your morale like this. How come this time you’ve become like this?”

Li Yao’s voice was low as he said powerlessly, “That Luo Feng, he’s already a spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level.

“WHAT!” Venina was shocked.

Venina only knew that this time’s operation was a complete failure from the phone call. She didn’t know that Luo Feng became so powerful.

“Peak of the advanced level wargod level, so what?” Venina clenched her teeth, “We’ve been through more difficult situations. As long as you can become an existence surpassing the wargod level, wouldn’t dealing with him become an easy task?”

“It’s not the same”

“It’s not the same” Li Yao shook his head, “The Dojo of Limits has earned a ton of spirits of nature. I personally saw the golden masked man carrying a bulging backpack. Luo Feng will definitely get quite a bit! At that time, he can exchange the spirits of nature for some treasures. Adding the Dojo of Limits’ support to that..... barely any people on earth are willing to help us deal with him”

“As for killing him, he can just dig underground with his spiritual force. Even if I become an existence surpassing the wargod level, I might not be able to catch him”

“Furthermore, am I even able to become an existence surpassing the wargod level?”

Li Yao’s face was looking bad.

Authority, power..... he’s going to be completely surpassed by Luo Feng!

Chapter 61: Reward

Hong Ning headquarter city, elite training camp's Jiang-Nan pagoda.

Dawn, the day was bright. Luo Feng was standing on the balcony and facing East.

"A few days ago I was on the wastelands of the continent of Australia and being chased after Li Yao. Now I'm casually waiting here alone, awaiting the summons of the head" Luo Feng let out a smile. After Luo Feng came back with investigator Liu, investigator Liu arranged for Luo Feng to live at the training camp.

All the other students in the training camp were undergoing their Life and Death adventure, so Luo Feng was the only official student left in the training camp.

What Luo Feng had to do now.....

Was wait for the head's summons and receive his gigantic reward.

The Dojo of Limits had a very startling harvest this time. Even investigator Liu was quite excited just to get 5%, so one could imagine what a startling amount of wealth Luo Feng would receive.

"Towards the sun" Luo Feng looked east.

Right now, the clouds in the sky were colored in a fiery red. Even though the sun hasn't shown itself yet, the rays of light shining through the clouds were heart movingly beautiful.

"I thought I could live here for up to two or three years, or maybe even longer" Luo Feng leaned against the railing of the balcony as he sighed, "Looks like, I'll be leaving"

.....

Evening.

A man and a woman in black swiftly arrived at the courtyard of Jiang-Nan pagoda.

"KNOCK, KNOCK, KNOCK!" they knocked.

"Who is it?" Luo Feng came out of his room and opened the door.

The man and woman in black outside seemed to be around 30 years old. Both of their eyes were full of life, and the slightly short woman with layered hair smiled: "Student Luo Feng, the head has summoned. Please follow us". The man on the side looked towards the youth in front of him with curiosity.

A personal summons from the head is quite rare.

“The head?” Luo Feng was joyful. So fast, he just came back for a day and the head already wants to see him. Looks like it’s time to receive his reward.

“Okay, let’s go” Luo Feng nodded and followed the two.

They quickly arrived at the main entrance of the elite training camp as they walked along the familiar road. A black, elegant limousine with a length of over six meters was parked there. A woman in black went forward and opened the car door: “Student Luo Feng, please get on”

Luo Feng got in the car. The car’s interior was as spacious as a space shuttle, it was extremely elegant and comfortable.

The car slowly moved.

The people in the car could barely feel any shaking. The man in the black uniform sat beside the driver’s spot while the woman in the black uniform sat next to Luo Feng.

20 minutes later.

“CHI!” the car stopped.

“Student Luo Feng, we have arrived at HQ” smiled the woman in the black uniform. Luo Feng got off the car and couldn’t help but to take in a breath as he looked at the building in front of him.

Holy!

What was in front of him was a gigantic spaceship-like structure that was at least 10,000 meters long. It was around 100 meters high and there was a huge door that was a few dozen meters wide for people to go in. And surrounding this gigantic spaceship structure were..... large amounts of armed forces. Security here was clearly strict.

“This is the real headquarters of the Dojo of Limits?” Luo Feng gasped as he looked at the spaceship in front of him. Very few people have seen the Dojo of Limits’ HQ and there aren’t any relevant photos online either.

A blue light shot out from the spaceship and surrounded Luo Feng.

“BEEP!”

“Student Luo Feng, please enter” rang the electronic sound.

The woman in the black uniform beside Luo Feng said: “Student Luo Feng, only the higher ups with huge amounts of authority are authorized to enter. If you do not have permission, you will be killed by the defense system. Student Luo Feng, you should hurry and enter”

Luo Feng nodded as he walked over!

The huge door to the spaceship that was a few dozen meters long was silverish white.

“How come I feel like this spaceship-like structure is an actual spaceship?” thought Luo Feng to himself, “But a spaceship that’s over 10,000 meters long? I really haven’t heard of anything like this before”. Without thinking any further, he swiftly passed through the door and entered the interior of the headquarters.

In the hallway, a man and a woman both in blue robes smiled as they greeted: “Student Luo Feng, please follow us”

Basically everyone in the interior of the headquarters were wearing blue robes while a rare few were in red robes.

“This is the resting area. Student Luo Feng, please rest here for now. The head will summon you later” smiled the white woman in the blue robe as she spoke fluent Chinese. After that, she obediently left.

There were already two people in the resting area.

“I greet investigator Liu” Luo Feng slightly bowed, “Mr. Ice Mountain”

“Haha, Luo Feng, sit” smiled investigator Liu.

The royal guard Ice Mountain glanced at Luo Feng. He was cold and said nothing.

“The head has returned from the misty island and immediately summoned the three of us. It’s probably about dividing the profits from the misty island” smiled investigator Liu, “Luo Feng, looks like your reward this time isn’t going to be small”. In terms of reward, investigator Liu probably isn’t going to get as much as Luo Feng.

“Luck, I just happened to come across that misty island” followed Luo Feng.

“Luck is also a part of skill” smiled investigator Liu.

Royal guard Ice Mountain stayed silent on the side.

Suddenly——

“Ice Mountain, the head calls” a sound rang from a black man in a red robe standing out the door.

“The summons have begun”

Luo Feng and investigator Liu’s spirits were brought up.

“Ok” Ice Mountain stood up. He still had his golden mask on as he followed the black man in the red robe away.

“Ice Mountain sure is going to earn a ton this time” investigator Liu couldn’t help but to sigh. After that, he looked towards Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, your reward isn’t going to be small this time either. At that time..... the head will probably give you a chance to exchange for some treasures. You better grab onto that chance and exchange for some treasures you need”

“Exchange for treasures?” Luo Feng froze.

“Yea”

Investigator Liu nodded as he smiled, “A lot of spirits of nature were harvested this time. Technically, some of the spirits of nature will be given to you. But who would need so many spirits of nature? The best treasure is the one that suits you the most. You can use the spirits of nature to exchange for some rare treasures from the head. These treasures can’t be bought with money”

“Oh?” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed.

“You’ll know at the time” investigator Liu slightly smiled, “But who knows..... whether or not the head would be willing to bring out the truly valuable treasures”

After saying that, investigator Liu didn’t say another word.

Momentarily——

“Investigator Liu, the head calls” it was the same red robed black man.

“Luo Feng, I’ll be going first” investigator Liu slightly smiled as he followed the red robed black man away. Luo Feng was the only person left in the resting area.

Luo Feng waited silently.

10 minutes later, the red robed black man came back to the door: “Luo Feng, the head calls”

“It’s finally my turn”

Luo Feng took in a deep breath and then stood up. He followed the red robed black man as he walked through the hallway. Soon enough, he arrived outside a quiet room. The red robed black man slightly bowed and then left.

“Luo Feng, come in” an ice cold voice rang.

“Yes, head” Luo Feng met Hong before so he knows his voice.

The guest room was empty and black. There were only two cushions in there.

The black haired man sat cross legged on a cushion as he pointed towards the cushion in front of him: “Sit!”

“Yes”

Luo Feng went forward and sat on the cushion. In front of Hong, the formless pressure caused one to lower one’s head subconsciously, unable to bring up the slightest thought of resistance! This is probably what an ant does in front of a legendary dragon. When faced with the difference in power, there’s nothing else to do but to lower your head.

The black haired man’s gaze toward Luo Feng had a bit of warmth to it as he spoke: “You have played a large role in reporting the misty island’s location. Reporting the information gives you 10% of the spirits of nature. And when harvesting, you also played a role, so you can get another 5%. In other words..... you can get 15% total”

“It’s really 15%” thought Luo Feng to himself.

Keep in mind that the golden masked man harvested a full 92 spirits of nature. With Luo Feng’s ten thousand year willow heart and 2 thousand year willow hearts, there’s a total of 95 spirits of nature. 15% of this number is definitely an incredible amount of wealth.

The thousand year willow heart can only count as an average thing in that group.

And one thousand year willow heart is more valuable than a portion of dragon blood. It’s entirely imaginable how much money

15% is worth.

“So——”

The black haired man waved his hand.

CHICHI!

A 3D hologram suddenly appeared in the black guest room. In this 3D hologram appeared the images of 12 spirits of nature.

“Some of these 12 spirits of nature are more valuable than others, but in total, it’s about 15% of the 95 spirits of nature” the black haired man’s voice was cold as usual, “These 12 spirits of nature are yours”

“12?” Luo Feng looked towards the 3D hologram.

Within the 12 was a thousand year willow heart, which Luo Feng recognized. As for the 11, he actually wasn’t able to recognize a single one.

“You can carefully examine the value of these 12 spirits of nature” right when the black haired man’s voice finished, a huge amount of words appeared beside each spirit of nature, which explained the uses of each spirit of nature. Luo Feng had extremely good eyesight, so he could read them clearly.

Thousand year black crow root, boil it into 3 kg of medicine and drink 100 grams every day. After drinking, your body fitness level will soar up and your skin will become extremely tough……

Hundred dew grass. No matter what kind of injury or poison, you can immediately recover after chewing and consuming it.

……

Each spirit of nature had a special function. The most absurd spirit of nature out of the 12 could actually raise one's body fitness level 6 to 10 times (with a limit of peak of the advanced wargod level).

Some of them stunned Luo Feng.

But Luo Feng was also quite curious. How could the head easily know the usage and effects of each type of spirit of nature? And they even have all sorts of names.

"Head, did the thousand year black crow root actually grow for a thousand years?" Luo Feng couldn't help but to ask out of curiosity.

"Dumb"

The black haired man couldn't help but to smile a bit, "I just named them randomly. I'm Chinese, so I just gave them names that Chinese people would like. How long has it been since the

Grand Nirvana period? I haven't even lived that long, so names like thousand year and ten thousand year are just exaggerations, just to let people know how amazing the effects of these spirits of nature are"

Luo Feng nodded.

"Spirits of nature, for someone like you who has reached the peak of the advanced wargod level, aren't that effective" said the black haired man, "So, I'll give you a chance..... to use those spirits of nature to exchange for treasures you need"

Chapter 62: Exchange Table

“A chance to exchange for treasures?” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed. He previously received investigator Liu’s reminder.

In the black room.

The black haired man waved his hand. Beside the original 3D hologram that displayed the 12 spirits of nature appeared an even larger 3D hologram. There were many categories in this 3D hologram like “Instruction Manual”, “Auto jet” “Battle uniform” “Weapon” “Spirit Medicine” and many others.

Under each category were many 3D holograms. All sorts and types of treasures could make one dizzy.

“On this exchange table are 62 different treasures for you to exchange” said the black haired man.

“Spirit medicine category” Luo Feng didn’t look at anything else as he stared at the spirit medicine category. He looked down and saw many different types of spirit medicine, at least 10 different kinds. Each of them had amazing effects, “There’s no elixir of life?”

What Luo Feng cared about the most was an elixir of life, the elixir of life that could let his brother stand up again.

“Elixir of life?”

The black haired man, ‘Hong’, looked at Luo Feng with shock after hearing this. He shook his head, “Luo Feng, every single thing on this exchange table would sell for an astronomical price if put in human society. Many powerful countries and organizations can’t get these treasures no matter how much money they are willing to spend. How could the elixir of life enter this exchange table”

Luo Feng froze.

The elixir of life doesn’t have the right to be in this list?

“You want the elixir of life to let your brother stand up again?” the black haired man pointed at the 12 spirits of nature in the hologram, “Did you see the effects of the hundred dew grass within the 12 spirits of nature you received? As long as you chew it and consume it, it can cure any type of injury. Naturally, your brother would be able to stand up again”

Luo Feng looked carefully——

Hundred dew grass. No matter what kind of injury or poison, you can immediately recover after chewing and consuming it.....

“Okay” Luo Feng’s eyes were shining.

“Don’t tell me you plan to give this hundred dew grass to your brother?” said the black haired man in shock.

“Yea” Luo Feng nodded.

“Haha.....” the black haired man laughed. He hasn’t laughed like this for a very long time, “Luo Feng, in terms of value, this hundred dew grass is worth 10x more than the elixir of life! If you use the hundred dew grass to exchange for elixirs of life from the American government, they’ll probably be willing to give you 10 elixirs of life in exchange!”

“And you were thinking of using a hundred dew grass just to let your brothers legs grow out again? What a waste of the effects of the hundred dew grass” the black haired man shook his head.

The hundred dew grass was such a valuable spirit grass.

Good steel should be used on the edge of a blade, the hundred dew grass shouldn’t be wasted like this.

“In another one or two months, the American government will hold an auction for the elixir of life. At that time, just join the auction” commanded the black haired man, “Don’t waste spirits of nature”

Luo Feng blinked twice.

The hundred dew grass..... was worth 10x more than an elixir of life?

“Look clearly” the black haired man waved his hand.

Beep!

A price label immediately appeared beside the hovering hologram displaying the 12 spirits of nature. They were “2 stars” “2.5 stars” “3 stars”..... respectively. Each spirit of nature had a price. The lowest one was “1.5 stars” and the highest one was “5 stars”

In total, they were 36.5 stars.

“This is.....” Luo Feng was a bit confused.

“This is the value of the spirits of nature you received” the black haired man’s face was calm, “On this earth, many treasures cannot be valued with money. Nobody would foolishly sell a treasure for some Chinese or American dollars. That’s dumb! If you want to exchange, then you exchange for goods”

Luo Feng nodded. Indeed, he has never seen a place that sells almost any of the items on this exchange table that Hong has given him.

In other words.....

You can’t buy them even if you have the money! For example, there isn’t any place that sells the ‘Black God Set’.

“Stars are a unit that I randomly set” said the black haired man.

Luo Feng nodded.

“Their value is set by my confirmations”

“Look again” the black haired man pointed beside the hologram’s exchange table. Suddenly, prices appeared beside every item on the huge hologram’s exchange table: “1 star” “1.5 stars” “3 stars” “2 stars”..... the prices were different, but most of them were around 2 stars.

The black haired man had a mysterious smile on as he looked at Luo Feng: “You have 36.5 stars worth of spirits of nature. You can exchange for any item here as long as your total doesn’t exceed 36.5 stars”

After that, the black haired man remained silent as he let Luo Feng examine carefully.

On the exchange table, Luo Feng saw the auto jet category in a glance.

Emperor level auto jet: 2 stars

Universe level auto jet: 15 stars

Prehistoric level auto jet: 60 stars

“The prehistoric level is actually that expensive” Luo Feng thought that he was extremely rich after receiving this time’s reward, but he couldn’t help but to curse after seeing the ‘prehistoric level auto jet’. Holy, this price is way too incredible! No wonder Hong is the only person in the Dojo of Limits with a prehistoric level auto jet.

“Time to look at the battle uniforms”

Luo Feng didn’t look at anything else. He first examined the battle uniforms…… the best one was the Black God set!

Black God Set—— 5 stars

“The Black God set is quite expensive” thought Luo Feng to himself. But at least it was within an acceptable range.

“Head, I’ll buy this Black God set” Luo Feng looked towards the black haired man.

The black haired man looked towards Luo Feng and said: “The Black God set, is very special!”

“There aren’t that many Black God sets on earth. Only those who succeed in entering an archaeological ruin can receive a Black God set! And everyone only has one chance to enter, so even I can’t get more than one Black God set. Because of this, there aren’t that many Black God sets on earth”

“Luo Feng, my Dojo of Limits has a rule..... those who directly receive a Black God set must go to an archaeological ruin after some period of time to get another Black God set. And they must sell that Black God set to my Dojo of Limits” said the black haired man, Hong.

Luo Feng understood in his heart.

Everyone only had one chance to receive a Black God set. So if the Dojo of Limits uses the Black God set as an award, then once they give it out, their stock lowers. Naturally, they’ll need to get another one to make up for it. This way, they can keep the supply flowing.

“If you want to buy this Black God set, I’ll give you two choices”

“One. Spend 5 stars to purchase the Black God set. Your mission is to enter an archaeological ruin in the future and obtain another Black God set. After that, sell it to our Dojo of Limits. We won’t change the price”

“Two. Receive a Black God set for free now and then enter an archaeological ruin in the future. Receive another Black God set and give it to our Dojo of Limits for free”

Luo Feng’s eyes flashed as he heard this.

“I pick the second option” said Luo Feng without hesitation.

If he can get it for free now and make it up later to the Dojo of Limits, it's like a loan without interest. Only dumb people won't pick that option.

"Haha, how smooth" the black haired man let out a smile, "Luo Feng, you're extremely talented. Our Dojo of Limits always rewards the talented..... however, you've earned a lot this time, so I didn't give you any extra rewards. Giving you the second option for the Black God set should count as a small extra from me"

Luo Feng smiled.

Even though he has to get another Black God set in the future to return, he at least has more stars to spend on more treasures.

"Head, all of these treasures are making me dizzy. I hope the head can recommend one of them for me" said Luo Feng. How can his judgment compare to the head's? The head understands these treasures very well.

"Haha"

The black haired man, Hong, couldn't help but to laugh cheerfully. He was being kind to Luo Feng not only because of Luo Feng's talent, but also because of the cloud contact vines. The cloud contact vines, to Hong, are even more valuable than prehistoric level auto jets! Hong talked to Luo Feng so much because he was in a cheerful mood.

“Very well” the black haired man looked at the exchange table, “Most of the instruction manuals are ultimate moves for existences surpassing the wargod level, so there’s no point in buying them now. I recommend you purchase the《Spirit Reader Basics》, which costs 3 stars”

“I’ll buy it” nodded Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was a bit shocked when he initially noticed that the《Spirit Reader Basics》costs 3 stars. Why is it so expensive? Keep in mind that a portion of dragon blood is only worth 1 star in this exchange table.

“As for spirit medicine, there’s no need for you to buy that either. Your body has consumed a portion of dragon blood and a thousand year willow heart, so a lot of their effects are hidden in your body. You just have to train and your strength will rise!” the black haired man ‘Hong’ continued, “As for the other treasures, there is one that is extremely suitable for you. As for the rest.... just randomly pick some”

Luo Feng’s eyes flashed.

He bought a Black God set and the《Spirit Reader Basics》, and according to what Hong said, there is another item that is extremely suitable for himself.

“Which one?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to say.

“If you are able to pick it, then you have good luck. If you can’t, then that’s that” the black haired man, Hong, didn’t give any more tips.

Luo Feng mindlessly stared at the exchange table. Who knows which one is suitable for himself.

A treasure that’s suitable for himself?

Treasure?

If Hong isn’t willing to give any more hints about it, then it must be very valuable!

“Yea, it’s probably an expensive one” Luo Feng looked carefully, not at the goods, but at the prices…… the most expensive thing on the exchange table was the ‘prehistoric level auto jet’ for 60 stars. After that is an instruction manual that teaches the ultimate move ———— ‘Phoenix Wing Strike’ to existences surpassing the wargod level, which costs 36 stars.

The third most expensive one is a weapon called ‘soaring shuttle’, which costs 30 stars.

The one in fourth is also an ultimate move, called the ‘Lightning Spark Flint’, priced at 25 stars.

.....

“According to what the head said, those ultimate moves aren’t of any use to me right now. And according to the conversation between investigator Liu and Royal Guard Ice Mountain, ultimate moves are based off of the characteristics of an individual’s essence”

“I can’t afford the most expensive one, the prehistoric level auto jet”

“Then, this soaring shuttle?”

Luo Feng carefully examined the introduction to the soaring shuttle. The introduction was short, it was simply————

Soaring Shuttle: A weapon suitable for spirit readers to control, since it conserves spiritual force.

Most of the weapons in the weapons category were for spirit readers, since Hong provided all these treasures for Luo Feng to exchange. The introductions were simple. If it wasn’t for the price, one wouldn’t even notice the soaring shuttle.

“So expensive, 30 stars!”

Luo Feng was a bit unwilling, since his 12 spirits of nature are only 36.5 stars in total, and just a soaring shuttle is 30 stars.

“Head” Luo Feng clenched his teeth as he looked towards the black haired man, ‘Hong’, “I’m going to purchase the soaring shuttle”

The black haired man, ‘Hong’, let out a face of shock: “It was actually chosen by you. Tell me, how did you pick it?”

“The head wasn’t willing to tell me anything, so it must have been a unique treasure, which means that it would be expensive. So I looked at the most expensive items one by one……” when Luo Feng said that, the black haired man, ‘Hong’, beside him couldn’t help but to start laughing: “I was a bit stingy. Looks like you were meant to be with this soaring shuttle. The true value of this soaring shuttle is way more than 30 stars. One day, when you become an existing surpassing the wargod level, its true power will become clear! However, even for you right now, it’s the most suitable weapon”

Hong, because he got the cloud contact vines, decided to add the soaring shuttle into the exchange table.

Or else…..

Why would he add the soaring shuttle in there? And considering the fact that Luo Feng’s spirits of nature add up to a total of 36.5 stars, he decided to price the soaring shuttle at 30 stars.

Chapter 63: Examiner

“Thank you, Head” said Luo Feng.

The head personally said that the true value of the soaring shuttle is way greater than 30 stars. Keep in mind that a portion of dragon blood, worth 80 billion, is only 1 star. With that, one can imagine how valuable the soaring shuttle is. Of course..... you can’t actually compare the two like that!

Because, once it gets to a certain point, money is just a number!

Powerful fighters like Hong and Thunder God definitely wouldn’t exchange treasures for money. They would only exchange such treasures for other treasures.

“Use it properly. I hope it will be able to shine in your hands”

“Okay, until now, you’ve picked a soaring shuttle for 30 stars, the《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual for 3 stars, which comes to a total of 33 stars. Your spirits of nature are worth 36.5 stars, which is to say, you have 3.5 stars left to exchange” the black haired man, ‘Hong’, pointed towards the hologram with the exchange table, “Tell me, which one will you pick?”

Luo Feng looked carefully.

For armor, he has the ‘Black God set’. For a weapon, he has the soaring shuttle. As for spirit reader training, he has the《Spirit

Reader Basics》, so he isn't really missing anything.

"The prehistoric level auto jet is good, but sadly, it's too expensive"

Luo Feng sighed. As long as you're a fighter, who doesn't want a cool fighter jet?

"Hm?"

When Luo Feng glanced over the auto jet category, his eyes flashed—— emperor level auto jet 2 stars.

This is pretty good!

It's not too expensive, just 2 stars. And the armor of the emperor level auto jet is quite powerful. It even has AI, which makes it way better than those regular disc shaped fighter jets. Even though it's just '2 stars', an astronomical amount of money is still required to buy it. Very few wargods can afford this 'lowest level' auto jet.

"Its capabilities" Luo Feng looked at the screen carefully. Beside the emperor level auto jet was a basic explanation.

The emperor level auto jet: the AI system controls the jet, and the jet itself can defend against any horde leader level monster's attack. Its maximum speed is mach 10.6.

“Not bad” Luo Feng nodded to himself. Most airplanes wouldn’t say they are able to defend against any horde leader level monster’s attack. Saying this means that the airplane’s toughness nears the level of an emperor level monster’s defense level! However, that investigator Liu’s “Universe level” auto jet is able to defend against emperor level monsters’ attacks.

His jet is not as powerful.

But it’s still powerful. A maximum speed of mach 10.6 means that it can travel over 10,000 km in an hour. Most emperor level monsters probably won’t be able to catch up to this auto jet. Most importantly, this thingy has AI, which means you don’t even need to get a pilot. Quite convenient.

“I’ll buy this, the emperor level auto jet” said Luo Feng.

“Okay”

The black haired man took a glance and then nodded, “You’ve exchanged 35 stars, what else do you want?”

Luo Feng looked a bit and then smiled as he shook his head: “Nothing else. Out of my 12 spirits of nature, the cheapest one, the ‘thousand year black crow root’, is only worth 1.5 stars. I’ll just keep that for myself. As for the other 11, I’ll exchange those” this way, Luo Feng is only left with the ‘thousand year black crow root’ spirit of nature.

Of course, he also has the four things he exchanged for: 《Spirit Reader Basics》, Black God set, soaring shuttle, and the emperor level auto jet.

And he even got the Black God set for free.

“Okay” the black haired man, Hong, waved his hand, which caused the two big 3D holograms to completely disappear, making the room dark once again.

“Head” asked Luo Feng respectfully, “I want to ask something. This thousand year black crow root is supposed to be boiled into 3 kg of medicine. After that, we consume 100 mg every day. I want to know..... is it okay if we give some of it to regular people? They aren’t fighters, so should they drink a smaller portion?”

The black haired man, Hong, looked at Luo Feng deeply before saying: “It’s okay if you split it for others to drink. However, the effects of the medicine won’t be as great that way. As for regular people, they can consume 100 mg every day without a problem”

Luo Feng was overjoyed as he heard this.

“What do we boil the medicine with? Does it make a difference?” continued Luo Feng.

“No difference. It’s okay to even use water” said the black haired man, “No need to ask anymore. The “thousand year black crow root” comes with an in-depth manual”

Luo Feng nodded.

The room became quiet again. The black haired man, Hong, stared at Luo Feng. While being stared at by Hong, Luo Feng felt like he didn't have anymore secrets, as if the gaze can see through his soul. The black haired man, Hong, said coldly: "Luo Feng, with your peak of the wargod level strength, there's no need to stay in the elite training camp anymore"

"Yes" nodded Luo Feng.

"I'll give you two paths" the black haired man Hong said without pausing.

Ever since he signed the contract at investigator Wang's, it showed that..... from then on, Luo Feng is a member of the Dojo of Limits. Of course, the higher ups are arranging a job for him.

"One, stay in Hong Ning city and enter the special ops squad. Or maybe in the future you could apply to become a teacher in the training camp too, or some other position"

"Two, go to another headquarter city and become an examiner" the black haired man, Hong, quietly looked at Luo Feng, "Your choice"

Luo Feng froze.

“Pick seriously”

“These two choices are extremely important to you” said the black haired man, Hong, seriously, “Staying to defend and being sent off to missions are the two paths of a wargod in the Dojo of Limits! Once you choose, it’ll be extremely difficult to change your choice in the future. Unless you have a breakthrough and become an existence surpassing the wargod level. You’ll have special rights when you become an investigator”

Just like a job in an enterprise, it’ll be hard to switch after choosing between two jobs.

“Staying? Being sent off?”

Luo Feng paused for a bit. Once he chooses, he’ll be stuck in a certain place for quite a while.

“I wish to return to Jiang-Nan headquarter city and take the position of examiner there” said Luo Feng respectfully.

“Jiang-Nan headquarter city?”

The black haired man, Hong, nodded, “The current examiner of Jiang-Nan city isn’t a local, so according to the rules of the Dojo of Limits, those from their hometown have priority”. The position of examiner is a position with a lot of authority. The number of examiners in the Dojo of Limits of each headquarter city can be counted on one hand!

Usually, one must receive the title of “Advanced Wargod” and be quite famous to have the right to become an examiner!

To become a chairman, beginner wargod and intermediate wargod would be enough. The minimum requirement is ‘beginner wargod’.

To become a chief instructor, the minimum requirement is ‘advanced warlord’.

From the requirements, one can tell——

The differences in the three positions!

In Jiang-Nan city, the chairman and the three chief instructors of the Dojo of Limits’ Limit Hall are the big heads on the surface. Examiners control the weapons, and examiners with a lot of authority can even fire a chief instructor directly! And assign a new chief instructor! Or they can request the Dojo of Limits to fire the chairman. Of course..... examiners don’t have the right to fire a chairman directly.

And examiners.....

Take direct orders from the highest level in the Dojo of Limits. Just one investigator doesn’t have the right to fire an examiner. They’ll have to go through a round table conference to decide on that.

At a certain point, examiners have a gigantic amount of authority and are one of the strongest people in an area.

“To become an examiner, your title has to at least be ‘advanced wargod'” said the black haired man, Hong, “What you need to do now is to receive an advanced wargod title!”

“Yes” said Luo Feng.

From his battle score, Luo Feng is still a ‘beginner warlord’. Of course, in terms of actual strength, he’s already an ‘invincible wargod’.

“When you achieve the title of ‘advanced wargod’, you’ll automatically become an investigator” said the black haired man, Hong, “I want you to go to Jiang-Nan headquarter city and take up your position”

“Yes” answered Luo Feng.

Dojo of Limits, world headquarters. From the entrance of the mysterious, gigantic space shuttle-shaped structure, Luo Feng walked out with a red robed white man.

“Mr. Luo Feng” smiled the red robed white man, “Look there. That auto jet over there is yours”

“Oh?”

Luo Feng turned his head and saw a deep blue colored triangular jet on the empty area beside them. The surface of the entire jet plane was beautiful and was practically a work of art. The length of the plane was around 20 meters long and the width was around 10 meters long. The entire plane seemed quite sturdy and tough.

“This auto jet, is mine” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to feel a bit prideful.

Which man of this age doesn’t want to have their own fighter jet?

And fighter jets are extremely expensive, so even within the circle of wargods, only a select few have purchased them.

“Mr. Luo Feng, since you haven’t used this auto jet before, there’ll be a system confirmation process in the beginning” smiled the red robed white man, “Please follow me”

They arrived next to the jet.

A dreamy, blue light shot down as it enveloped Luo Feng. Suddenly, “HUALA——” the hatch swiftly opened and only let out a small sound.

“Mr. Luo Feng, only you can enter now, I cannot enter” the red robed white man stood beside and had trouble hiding the admiration in his eyes, “After entering, the confirmations are

automatically done by the ‘AI system’. Mr. Luo Feng just has to stay inside the plane. After a while, Mr. Luo Feng will understand everything”

Luo Feng nodded.

He stepped into the plane. The seats in the plane were extremely elegant. Sitting inside a plane like this was a pleasure.

HUALA!

The hatch closed. Various lights lit up the interior of the entire auto jet, making it quite dreamlike. At the same time, an electronic sound rang: “Hello master. I will immediately display the controls of this emperor level auto jet” after saying that, a hologram appeared at the front of the cabin.

In the hologram appeared diagram after diagram that were all easy to understand.

They explained in detail how to control this plane.

“Beep!”

A red light shot towards the tactical communications watch on Luo Feng’s left wrist. As it connected with the tactical communications watch, it began to install the long distance auto jet control system in the watch.

A moment later——

“That was quite simple, it’s all done by the AI so I don’t have to worry about anything at all” Luo Feng let out a smile.

“I’ll name you….. #1” Luo Feng randomly gave a name.

“Yes, master” rang the electronic sound.

At the same time, a silver, locked case popped out of the floor of the cabin. After it completely appeared, the hole on the ground completely closed again. The electronic sound continued: “This case was left for the master by the Dojo of Limits”. After hearing this, Luo Feng’s eyes flashed. This must be the case where the Black God set, soaring shuttle, and the other items were placed in.

Chapter 64: Soaring Shuttle

Luo Feng's fingers drew across the locked case and it opened automatically.

On the very top was a manual. Luo Feng opened it up and couldn't help but to smile: "This manual is quite detailed. The Black God set, soaring shuttle, instruction manual, and spirit of nature all have detailed explanations. Hm? There are only three of those items here. The《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual isn't here"

Luo Feng lowered his head and started looking through the items in the case.

Indeed—— there were only three packaged goods: the soaring shuttle, the Black God set, and the spirit of nature. There wasn't even a《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual here.

"How come there's no instruction manual?" Luo Feng carefully read through the manual. The manual explained that the《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual was top secret, so the physical instruction manual won't appear. If you want to learn it, there's only one way—— enter virtual space and read the instruction manual in there!

Holy!

He has to enter virtual space just to learn from his own instruction manual, this is being way too careful.

“It must be extremely important, or else the head wouldn’t resort to doing such a thing” thought Luo Feng. After that, he yelled at the air: “Hong Ning headquarter city map”

After Luo Feng spoke, a hologram suddenly appeared in front of him, which displayed a detailed map of Hong Ning city. The map’s size could be freely adjusted by Luo Feng. Soon enough, he found a spot on the map. Besides confirming locations via the map, he could also use his voice..... as long as the AI system can confirm the location.

“Destination, elite training camp” Luo Feng tapped with his finger.

Whoosh!

The dark blue colored triangular fighter jet swiftly ascended, which attracted the attention of quite a few people at the Dojo of Limits headquarters. Quite a few of them were admiring the jet. However, they couldn’t tell that this was an auto jet just from its appearance. In fact, many people on earth don’t even know about auto jets. The price difference between an auto jet and a regular fighter jet is extremely huge.

※※

The sky was dark and the elite training camp was very quiet. All the wargod teachers in the elite training camp didn’t have much to do, since all the students were undergoing their life and death

adventure. So many wargod teachers left the training camp to go back home or to walk and relax themselves near scenic locations. Only a rare few of them stayed here.

The students' life and death adventure month was also the month where the wargod teachers are on break.

Silence.

Whoosh!

A deep blue colored triangular fighting jet descended like a phantom. While it descended, the hatch opened and Luo Feng carried the silver case as he leaped out like lightning. As for the triangular fighter jet, it slowly descended and then shut its hatch. After that, it didn't move again.

"Eh, how come there's a fighter jet here?"

"No idea, where'd it come from?"

Two workers at the elite training camp looked at this triangular fighter jet in shock.

"To be able to enter this training camp, they must be someone with special rights, or an advanced level wargod, or even an existence surpassing the wargod level" the two workers couldn't handle it and started observing this fighter jet from the side for quite a while. Even the family members of the wargod teachers

still remaining in the training camp noticed this fighter jet.

But nobody knew whose it was.

Since the fighter jet descended too suddenly and Luo Feng dashed out too quickly. Only the patrol squad at the front gate was barely able to see a shadow fly out the plane.

.....

Jiang-Nan pagoda 2nd floor, study room.

The silver case was already opened, and inside was just the packaged ‘Black God set’ and the ‘Soaring Shuttle’. As for the ‘spirit of nature’, Luo Feng left it in the auto jet, since he’ll be returning to Jiang-Nan headquarter city soon. The auto jet is a very safe place to leave his spirit of nature.

“Using the Black God set sure is simple” Luo Feng looked at the manual.

After a human wears the Black God set, it’ll automatically seep into your skin and absorb some of your fresh blood. After it absorbs some fresh blood, the Black God set will undergo a transformation, causing the ‘Black God set’ to become extremely synchronized with the human body. Like the skin on your body, it’ll follow your every thought.

The Black God set was placed in a case that was only 20 cm long

that was made out of a pure white plastic material.

"RIP!" Luo Feng tore off the plastic. Inside the case was a black glove that seemed qutie sturdy.

"If I didn't read the manual, I definitely wouldn't be able to imagine that this thing is the Black God set" Luo Feng let out a smile. The Black God appears in all types of forms. It might appear as a 'glove', or a 'vest', a 'hat', 'pants', or even a 'ring'.

However, no matter what it looks like, there's no difference!

Since you can freely transform it after you wear it.

"The Black God set" Luo Feng picked up the black glove, took in a deep breath, and then..... fit it onto his left hand.

Luo Feng waited silently.

At first, he didn't feel anything at all. After a full 30 seconds, his left thumb seemed to have been pierced by a needle. CHI~ the entire black glove started boiling like water. The black droplets were shaking. At the same time, Luo Feng's five fingers, palm, and the back of his hand were all in pain.

Thankfully, the pain wasn't too intense.

The naked eye could see..... the red color seeping into the black

droplets. Countless black droplets wrapped around Luo Feng's left hand. When the red color merged into the black droplets, the black droplets seemed to have undergone some transformation. This entire process lasted for about 15 minutes before it stopped.

"Hm? How magical"

Luo Feng could feel the wind blow past with his left hand!

Yes!

This black glove was like the skin of his body, just like a part of him.

"Change, change, change"

Luo Feng stared at the black glove. Instantly, the black flowing light swiftly spread out as it continuously covered Luo Feng's entire left arm. At the same time, parts of the black flowing light broke off and directly covered his right arm. And it even it spread out towards his two feet, legs, neck, and every part of his face.

"Too amazing" Luo Feng walked to the mirror nearby and looked at himself.

Beneath his clothes, his entire body was covered in a layer of black skin. Even his face became black. Only his eyes, nose, and mouth were revealed. "Throwing knife". Luo Feng picked up a SS grade throwing knife and slashed at his own arm! However, as if he

just slashed against an extraordinarily tough piece of leather, not even a mark was made.

“Change!” with a thought from Luo Feng.

A black cape appeared on his body, and then a black suit.

“Change”

A black hat appeared on his head, and then it turned into a helmet, and even a black tie.

※※※※※※

During the night.

In the wilderness around 300 km away from Hong Ning headquarter city, the night wind blew and a black flowing light pierced the sky.

“Feels good”

Luo Feng was in midair and was standing on a shuttle* shaped object. It was a silverish gray color and stripe-shaped with two pointed ends. The middle was slightly wider and thicker. Its length was 81 cm and its two pointed edges were extremely sharp. The wide center was 27 cm wide. The entire object was a bit thin and had very densely packed markings all over it.

“Whoosh whoosh~”

While he rapidly flew, the horrifying currents in the air actually went along the packed markings, forming streams of air. The streams of air formed by the countless markings oddly merged together. They went along Luo Feng’s body, forming a ‘streamlined shield’ visible to the naked eye. This was a shield completely made out of air.

When flying, the faster you go, the more air resistance you encounter.

But the ‘soaring shuttle’ that Luo Feng is riding on creates currents of air that form a perfect streamlined shield, causing the resistance to lower to a startling point.

Whoosh!

Like a flash of black lightning, Luo Feng flew above the wilderness with no worries at all.

“This soaring shuttle sure is a great treasure” Luo Feng was extremely excited, “After riding on the soaring shuttle, my speed more than doubled!” Luo Feng compared the time it took to fly the same distance on his shield and on his ‘soaring shuttle’. It took him 2 minutes and 32 seconds on his shield but only 1 minute and 12 seconds on his soaring shuttle.

After that, Luo Feng went out of his way to find a place that was around 10 km long to test his speed.

“According to the results of my tests just now”

“My maximum sprinting speed is around 720 m/s”

“If I don’t use any spiritual force and only rely on my two legs, I can sprint at 561 m/s”

“And if I fly on my shield, my speed is around 618 m/s”

Spirit readers or existences surpassing the wargod level usually sprint faster than they can fly! When sprinting, one, you can still use your spiritual force to assist you, and two, you can use the power of your two legs! Existences surpassing the wargod level fly via special abilities. On the ground, they can still use their special abilities and also their two legs.

“If I fly on the soaring shuttle, my speed reaches an astonishing 1,300 m/s”

Tonight, Luo Feng came to the wilderness to, first, hunt for a high level horde leader level monster. Before, he already hunted a golden ape, so now he just has to hunt one more high level horde leader monster. That way.... with the materials of two high level horde leader level monsters, he’ll be able to attain the title of ‘Advanced Wargod’.

And his second objective is to test the power of his ‘soaring shuttle’ in the wilderness.

He has already tested one part of the soaring shuttle——speed!

“Even if I fly on my shield, some existences surpassing the wargod can’t catch up to me, like that representative Farr” Luo Feng was in high spirits, “And on my soaring shuttle, my speed reaches an astonishing 1,300 m/s. Increasing one’s speed by just a bit is extremely difficult”

With his legs, he can go up to 561 m/s. With his spiritual force working on his shield, he flies at 618 m/s. But even if you combine the two, it only becomes 720 m/s.

Clearly, the faster you go, the more air resistance you encounter.

And now, Luo Feng’s speed shot up to 1,300 m/s in an instant! Even existences surpassing the wargod level can only reach such speeds if they are on the ground. Once they fly, first not mentioning 1,300 m/s, just reaching the speed of 1,000 m/s? Probably—— difficult! difficult! difficult!

Thankfully, Hong isn’t a spirit reader and also got the cloud contact vines. Otherwise, he probably wouldn’t be willing to give such a treasure to Luo Feng.

“Now to test its attack power”

Luo Feng descended and then landed on the ground. The flying shuttle hovered in front of him. With a thought-

Whoosh!

Six blades shards detached themselves from the soaring shuttle. Each of these blade shards were curved and extremely thin.

“According to the manual, each of these blade shards are quite powerful and are extremely suitable for spirit readers to use. Oh yea..... the manual also said that the entire soaring shuttle can disassemble” with a thought, Luo Feng tried doing so. Suddenly..... whoosh, the soaring shuttle instantly spread out into pieces.

The densely packed thin and small blade pieces hovered in midair.

365 blade pieces in total.

The entire soaring shuttle was made out of this special material. The soaring shuttle was forged via special means using these 365 blade pieces!

Chapter 65: Palace of Wargods

Dawn of the second day. The cars weaved through the busy streets of Hong Ning headquarter city.

Inside a six wheeled hummer. There was lots of space inside and, other than the front row, the back row was like a resting lounge. There were soft couches and a refrigerator. Yet, a super gigantic backpack took up an enormous amount of space in this car's resting lounge, and Luo Feng sat alone on the couch.

After spending an entire night in the wilderness, Luo Feng became more familiar with the soaring shuttle. At the same time, he also found a high level horde leader level monster and killed it!

Maybe.....

For the usual advanced level wargod, hunting a high level horde leader is extremely difficult, since the high level horde leaders escape too quickly. There are also countless monsters following the horde leader. However, Luo Feng's speed on his soaring shuttle greatly exceeds the high level horde leader's speed. With no chance to escape, Luo Feng killed it directly!

"The monster materials are all prepared. I'll first go get the title of 'advanced wargod'" Luo Feng looked at the tactical communications watch on his wrist, "Hello" Luo Feng dialed.

"Hello, Mister. This is the Limit Skyscraper, would you like to make an appointment?" a soft sound rose. Chinese was used first,

and then English was used to repeat the sentence.

Luo Feng said directly, “I want to speak to one of your directors. I want to sell monster materials”

“Usually, the managers handle the business” explained the receptionist.

“The price of this business will exceed ten billion chinese dollars”

After saying this, the other side slightly paused. Soon after: “Mister, when will you arrive?”

“15 minutes later” answered Luo Feng.

“I still don’t know your name?” the receptionist started making records.

“Luo Feng”

“I have made an appointment for Mr. Luo Feng to meet director Zhang in 15 minutes” the receptionist’s attitude clearly changed by quite a bit, since the price of the monster materials exceeded 10 billion chinese dollars. Keep in mind that this is the Dojo of Limits, not the HR alliance! The HR alliance usually has high prices compared to the Dojo of Limits. Even though the Dojo of Limits’ prices are lower by quite a bit, you receive contribution points.

On the Dojo of Limits' side, usually only high level horde leaders sell for over 10 billion chinese dollars.

For someone to sell monster materials of this level, could they be normal?

Limit Skyscraper, a skyscraper that was 88 floors tall. It was one of the signature buildings of Hong Ning city.

As the headquarters of the Dojo of Limits, Hong Ning city has many fighters from the Dojo of Limits. Of course, the flow of people in the Limit Skyscraper is also gigantic, and tons of them were drinking and hanging out at the bar in the lobby of the first floor.

"Mr. Luo Feng"

Two women wearing suits greeted Luo Feng at the door.

"Let's go" Luo Feng was wearing his black battle uniform and was holding a backpack that was around 2 meters tall with one hand.

With the two receptionists guiding him, he passed the lobby and went inside an elevator.

"What a guy, that backpack was at least 2 meters tall"

“Just how many monster materials were stored in there?”

Languages of all types sounded. The backpack of a fighter was indeed layer by layer. If you unlock all of them, then the backpack could store a ton. However, very few people store that many materials.

Inside the elevator.

“Backpack?” Luo Feng held onto that black backpack with one hand and couldn’t help but to smile. This actually wasn’t the backpack that he purchased before, but..... a backpack formed by the ‘Black God set’. Like Phantom Demon Catalan, he’s too lazy to use a backpack or battle uniform since he has a Black God set.

“Ding!”

The elevator door opened, floor 32.

Under the guide of the female receptionist, they entered a spacious living room. Inside the living room sat a woman who seemed to be around 40 years old.

“Hello, Mr. Luo Feng, my family name is Zhang” smiled the female named Zhang.

“HUALA!”

Luo Feng directly pulled open the lock on the backpack and poured all the monster materials inside into a pond beside him. This caused the female named Zhang to freeze a bit, but after she saw the materials that poured out, she couldn't help but to take in a deep breath, because there were three obvious sharp spikes that stood out from the pile. There were still some hints of blood on those spikes.

"Komodo T.rex*!" the woman named Zhang couldn't help but to gasp.

"You leave first" the woman named Zhang waved her hand at the receptionist.

The receptionist works here, so of course she knows a lot about the different types of monsters. After she heard 'komodo T.rex', she couldn't help but to look at Luo Feng with shock.

"Yes, director" the receptionist responded and then left.

"The spikes of a komodo T.rex? From its color and size, it's probably a high level horde leader" the woman named Zhang couldn't believe this.

The komodo T.rex is one of the most horrifying high level horde leader level monsters. Most people on earth called it 'T.rex' because they could find traces of it from the komodo. The komodo T.rex is probably one of the various mutations of the komodo dragon from before the Grand Nirvana period. And it's one of the most horrifying mutations! Those three spikes are the spikes on

the komodo T.rex's spine, its most valuable part.

Any monster with the name 'dragon' in it is not to be trifled with.

Most advanced level wargods cannot kill a 'high level horde leader level' komodo T.rex.

"Deal with the materials here" Luo Feng frowned, "I still have things to do"

"Yes, Mr. Luo Feng"

Soon enough, the woman named Zhang started using her apparatus to examine each of the materials. After examining, the woman named Zhang was flabbergasted..... she never would've thought that the two high level horde leader level monsters would be the komodo T.rex and the golden ape. Both of them are considered to be extremely horrifying within the high level horde leader level.

"Help me reset my battle score and reconfirm my title" reminded Luo Feng, "I killed those two high level horde leader level monsters by myself"

To become an advanced level wargod, you have to hand over two of the most important materials of two high level horde leader level monsters. And you have to kill those monsters by yourself. Barely any wargods would lie about this, since lying does them no

good..... there isn't any benefit in attaining a powerful title if you don't have the strength to back it up.

For example, your true strength has to be recognized by the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits to attain the title of examiner.

You can't just get the title of examiner from your own title.

"Okay" the woman named Zhang nodded.

But was filled with amazement at the same time.....

"Too crazy. Even if he wanted to get the title of 'advanced level wargod', he could just go for a weaker high level horde leader level monster. He actually got a komodo T.rex and a golden ape" the woman named Zhang was stunned.

"Mr. Luo Feng"

The woman named Zhang said respectfully, "The golden ape is 8 billion chinese dollars and 4 million contribution points. And the komodo T.rex is 12 billion chinese dollars and 6 million contribution points. So in total, Mr. Luo Feng will receive 20 billion chinese dollars and 10 million contribution points.

Luo Feng nodded.

Actually, selling the materials to the Dojo of Limits doesn't net

him a good price. For example, the golden ape would be worth 12 billion if sold to the HR alliance. And the komodo T.rex can rival the steel armored dragon, so it could reach a price of 18 billion. In otherwords..... he could get a total of 30 billion if he sold the materials to the HR alliance.

And here, he only gets 20 billion. Of course, he gets 10 million contribution points, making Luo Feng reach a 'four star contribution rank' in an instant.

"Since I've become an examiner and have lots of authority now, I can't let my contribution rank be too low. A four star contribution rank should be able to get me through" thought Luo Feng to himself. As for 10 billion? Maybe money is hard for other advanced level wargods to make. Even Luo Feng had a very hard time killing the golden ape back in the continent of Australia..... as for the other horde leaders, he failed to kill them many times.

At that time, he was already a spirit reader nearing the advanced level wargod level.

Which could count as an invincible wargod!

If he didn't have his soaring shuttle, then Luo Feng's kill rate would be lower.

And now——

Invincible wargod! With the soaring shuttle! Killing high level

horde leaders is really easy.

“However, on the manual was also head’s reminder” Luo Feng still remembered that there was a phrase on the manual in the box that contained the soaring shuttle, Black God set, and the spirit of nature——

“Do not kill too many high level horde leader level monsters in the same area, for it could cause that area’s ’emperor level monster’ to go after you!”

.....

“Mr. Luo Feng, 20 billion chinese dollars has been transfered to your fighter account, and your contribution rank also rose to four stars” the woman named Zhang sat in front of a notebook and tapped on the wireless keyboard. After that, she smiled towards Luo Feng, “After becoming a wargod, people usually join the Palace of Wargods and receive a ‘consciousness sensor’. However, the people from the Palace of Wargods will send some people to test Mr. Luo Feng’s strength”

Luo Feng glanced at the display.

On the display was Luo Feng’s information. On the row of ‘rank’ was ‘Wargod level (advanced)’.

There was also a popped up box at the bottom, which contained the words————

“Palace of Wargods application, evaluating……”

In just a few seconds.

The woman named Zhang remained smiling: “Mr. Luo Feng, people from the Palace of Wargods will come today. It will not be long”

“Beep!”

An ear piercing sound rang.

“Hm?” Luo Feng and the woman named Zhang looked over.

On the display of the notebook appeared another pop up———“Palace of Wargods examination qualified!”

“How did he pass without anyone coming to assess him?” the woman named Zhang was shocked. She has been a director for a long time but has never witnessed anything like this before. However, she has heard that….. some powerful fighters are recognized by the Palace of Wargods committee and will pass without having to take the test. However, such cases are rare.

The recognition of the committee, what does that signify?

Every representative of the Palace of Wargods highest committee

is an existence surpassing the wargod level!

“Mr. Luo Feng, someone will bring all the stuff to this skyscraper” smiled the woman named Zhang.

“Ok” Luo Feng wasn’t in a rush.

Moments later——

The room to the living room opened automatically. Three men in suits walked in, and one bald man of Asian descent carried a metal box as he handed it over to Luo Feng respectfully: “Wargod Luo Feng, welcome to the Palace of Wargods. You shall receive a consciousness sensor helmet for free. With this consciousness sensor helmet, regardless of location, anyone who puts this helmet on can directly enter the virtual space”

“Consciousness sensor helmet?” of course Luo Feng was familiar with it, he used it during his time at the training camp.

After becoming a wargod, everyone receives their own helmet.

“As a member of the Palace of Wargods, you will have many special rights. Of course, with these special rights come special responsibilities” the bald man in front handed over the metal box, “After wargod Luo Feng enters the virtual space via the consciousness sensor, you will understand all the special parts about the Palace of Wargods”

“Thank you” Luo Feng smiled as he took it.

His finger drew across the lock, beep, the metal box directly opened, revealing the dark blue helmet within.

“How nostalgic” thought Luo Feng to himself.

“Good bye, everyone” smiled Luo Feng as he put the metal box into the black backpack that he was carrying with his left hand. He carried the backpack and directly walked out. As he walked out the door, he quietly said to his tactical communications watch, “#1, come pick me up at Limit Skyscraper”

“Time to go home!”

“Jiang-Nan headquarter city!” Luo Feng headed towards the elevator. At the same time, that dark blue jet flew away from the elite training camp and headed towards Limit Skyscraper to pick up Luo Feng.

—

*In Chinese “T.rex” is literally ‘explosive/raging dragon’. So T.rex still has the word “dragon” in it.

Chapter 66: Return to Jiang-Nan

Above the Limit Skyscraper was a descending, dark blue auto jet, which surprised quite a few fighters who were entering and exiting the skyscraper.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng easily and swiftly leaped into the air, as if he was a relaxed bird. This one leap was a few dozen meters high. Of course, his spiritual force aided him in this. Under the gazes of the fighters at the Limit Skyscraper whose jaws have dropped, Luo Feng, who was around a few dozen meters high, flew inside the automatically opened hatch.

HUALA! The hatch closed.

Luo Feng sat comfortably inside the plane. The light reflecting off of the various components inside the plane appeared quite dreamy.

“#1, return home” said Luo Feng.

Luo Feng already told the AI system that ‘home’ was Ming-Yue sector in one of the eight parts of China’s Jiang-Nan headquarter city, ‘Yang Zhou’ city.

“3D hologram, activate” said Luo Feng.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a 3D hologram appeared in front of Luo Feng, which portrayed the skies outside. Luo Feng could see the weather and whether or not there was a flying monster horde.

※※ ※※ ※※

Jiang-Nan headquarter city, Yang Zhou city, Ming-Yue sector.

Even though it was dawn, Ming-Yue sector was extremely lively. A lot of people were gathered in front of Limit Hall.

“Old Luo, your son’s really coming back today?”

“Didn’t old Luo’s son head over to the Dojo of Limits headquarters and say that he wouldn’t be back until new years?”

“Why would I lie to you guys. My son just called me not too long ago and said he would be home in about half an hour” laughed Luo Hong Guo. As of now, Luo Hong Guo’s face was extremely red and seemed to be way more energetic than before. Since he used to be a laborer, he always had to lower his head in front of other people.

Now, he’s a lot more confident. And also has a lot more free time.

“Not right, shouldn’t Luo Feng be undergoing his Life and Death adventure right now?” Wu Tong was confused, “Maybe there was

a mistake”

“No. My son never lies” bragged Luo Hong Guo.

Gong Xin Lan was also chatting with a group of housewives.

In Ming-Yue sector, no matter whose family’s fighter returns, there will usually be a lot of people to welcome them! Because..... a fighter’s path is a dangerous path where your brain hangs on your belt, who knows when you would lose it. For example, if Luo Feng let his guard down in the continent of Australia, he would’ve been blown away by Li Yao’s laser cannon.

So——

Whenever a fighter returns, everyone in the sector is extremely happy. Luo Feng’s parents told a few people they were on good terms with about Luo Feng’s return.

“Not right” Wu Tong was confused.

As a chief instructor, he knows quite a bit about the training camp. August is the month of the Life and Death adventure, so students shouldn’t be returning home. There are only two possibilities—— one, the student was expelled or disqualified. Two, the student graduated early. But Luo Feng only went for half a year.

How come he’s back already?

“Hello” Luo Hong Guo picked up his phone and let out a face of joy, “You’ll be here soon, 5 minutes? Alright, alright, your family is all waiting here. There are quite a few uncles and aunts here in the sector too”

“Luo Feng should’ve notified us earlier about his return” laughed a housewife, “Our family’s old Chen is always talking about Luo Feng. If he knew that Luo Feng was coming, he and brother Zhang wouldn’t go to class today”. Chen Gu and Zhang Ke are brothers that have experienced life and death with Luo Feng.

They’ve been through grave situations together!

“Watch the cars at the gate, he’ll probably be here soon” smiled Gong Xin Lan.

“For Luo Feng to arrive so quickly, he probably took a plane during the night” a group of people were discussing. A lot of people thought that Luo Feng rode on a passenger plane to the main city sector, and then rode a train from there to Yang Zhou. After that, he transfers again to a car….. and returns home!

Suddenly————

“Everyone look”

“What’s that in the sky?”

Quite a few people awaiting Luo Feng in the small sector looked towards the sky with shock. A dark blue light drew across the sky and stopped above Ming-Yue sector. Since it was quite high up, the naked eye could only see a tiny spot. They could barely make it out: a triangular shaped dark blue fighter jet.

Descend!

The dark blue triangular fighter jet slowly descended. As it descended, its size naturally increased and became clearer to the naked eye.

“How come this fighter jet is over here?”

“I saw one last time at the main city sector, a disc shaped one. This one is quite weird”

Ming-Yue sector’s fighters discussed with their families. And ‘Wu Tong’, whose position is the highest here, watched carefully. Suddenly, his face changed: “It’s a fighter jet from HQ”

Whoosh!

The dark blue triangular fighter jet slowly descended onto a grassy area deep within the sector. With a length of over 20 meters, one could only see its beauty, luster, and curves up close..... a disc shaped fighter definitely can’t hold a candle to this.

HUALA! The hatch opened.

A youth wearing jeans and a casual shirt stepped out the hatch while carrying a huge backpack.

“Luo Feng!”

“It’s Luo Feng”

“It’s actually him” suddenly, the various families in the sector that were staring at the mysterious fighter jet rushed over. Luo Feng immediately spotted his parents within the crowd and couldn’t help but to smile as he walked over.

A group of people passionately greeted.

“Dad” Luo Feng walked over.

“Feng” Luo Hong Guo grasped Luo Feng’s hand, but looked towards the fighter jet to the side, “Hurry, they brought you all the way here. Hurry and let them off so we can thank them”

Chief instructor Wu Tong also smiled as he walked over. He lowered his voice as he said: “Luo Feng, they spent all their time and effort to bring you here, so don’t just carelessly make a scene as you walk out alone. Hurry and tell the person who brought you here and the pilot to come out and sit for a bit. Even if they don’t, we still have to thank them”. To Wu Tong, not just your average person could call out a fighter jet from HQ.

“Thank them?” Luo Feng froze.

How would he thank them?

Should he tell uncle Wu and his parents that there’s nobody inside? Many people on earth don’t know about the existence of auto jets.

“This is a plane I bought” said Luo Feng.

“Bought?”

The surrounding crowd was shocked. Luo Feng’s parents and his brother Luo Hua all froze! As of now, buying a private jet is at least 100 times harder than it was before the Grand Nirvana period. Keep in mind that even many rich people can’t afford to ride on a large scaled commercial plane.

One can imagine just how few people can buy a fighter jet.

Only an extremely small amount of wargods can do such a thing, and they usually buy regular disc shaped fighter jets.

“Uncle Wu, I’ll treat you to some drinks later” Luo Feng smiled as he greeted the surrounding people. After that, he returned home with his parents and brother. Soon, the news of him becoming an examiner will spread..... so even if he says he bought this plane himself, nothing much will happen.

The various families of Ming-Yue sector, including Wu Tong, were frozen for quite a bit.

Holy shit!

A kid like Luo Feng bought a fighter jet? And not the common disc shaped fighter jet? Quite a few people couldn't get their heads over this information for quite a while.

"Not right, if the plane is parked here, how come the pilot isn't coming out?" after quite a while, someone finally reacted. And by that time, Luo Feng already returned home.

※※※※※※

Jiang-Nan headquarter main city sector, inside the Dojo of Limits headquarters.

Chairman Zhou Zheng Yong was sitting on a couch in a room. A cup of tea was placed in front of him.

"Examiner Liu" Zhou Zheng Yong smiled as he held his cell phone, "I've bothered you quite a bit during your stay here at Jiang-Nan headquarter city all these years. Thank you for all your help these years. Once you leave, the Thunder Dojo will probably be a bit more powerful than our Dojo of Limits here at Jiang-Nan city"

“You said the new examiner?” Zhou Zheng Yong laughed bitterly, “How should I know how powerful the new examiner is? Whether or not he can compare to the one at the Thunder Dojo”

“The notification hasn’t arrived yet. It’ll probably come soon”

Zhou Zheng Yong smiled, “I’m in the office. I’ll know immediately when the notification arrives”

“Alright, when I go to headquarters in the future I’ll definitely meet up with examiner Liu”

After that, Zhou Zheng Yong hung up.

Just yesterday, he learned that examiner Liu was going to be sent back to world headquarters. It’s just that the notification of the new examiner isn’t arriving..... and just now, which is the dawn of today, examiner Liu received the official notification. However, examiner Liu himself already left on a passenger plane last night.

“Now that examiner Liu is gone, I wonder who the new examiner is going to be” thought Zhou Zheng Yong to himself.

“Knock! Knock! Knock!”

The sound of knocking rang.

“Come in” said Zhou Zheng Yong.

The door opened and three people came in. They were precisely the three chiefs of the Dojo of Limits headquarters at Jiang-Nan city, Zhu Ge Tao and the others.

“Chairman, we just received notice of examiner Liu’s departure. I wonder who the new examiner is?” the shortest of the three chiefs, a skinny man who was wearing a white collared shirt, frowned.

“I don’t know either, the notification hasn’t arrived yet”

Zhou Zheng Yong shook his head, “That examiner Liu was quite comfortable here. He never even bothered with our matters and just devoted himself to his training, so everybody got along well! And examiner Liu is also extremely powerful. Once we run into some problems, he can easily deal with them. The government respects him too. This new examiner……”

“Will the new examiner be like steel faced Bao Zheng?” Zhu Ge Tao couldn’t help but to ask.

Steel faced Bao Zheng was the nickname the chairman and chiefs of that time gave to the examiner at that time.

When steel faced Bao Zheng was an examiner, he fired six chiefs and even kicked out a chairman! Which caused everyone who came after that to be filled with worry.

“Don’t know” Zhou Zheng Yong shook his head.

The other three chiefs were filled with worry too.

As for authority, examiners can easily fire chiefs and any position below that without even asking for the opinion of the higher ups. Once they actually get to it, they can even get rid of a chairman.

“Beep!” Zhou Zheng Yong walked towards the notebook beside him.

“The notification arrived”

yelled Zhou Zheng Yong. The other three chiefs ran over too, their hearts filled with worry as they looked towards the notebook’s screen!

With a click, the notification opened!

“Luo Feng?”

“Home is, Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Yang Zhou city?”

“Strength evaluation…… invincible wargod?”

The chairman and the three chiefs exchanged glances.

“It’s, it’s….. that little kid we sent to the elite training camp back

then?” Zhou Zheng Yong couldn’t help but to ask, he was still filled with disbelief, “Invincible wargod?”

Chapter 67: Meeting Luo Feng

“How is that possible?”

The three chiefs on the side couldn’t believe this.

“Look at his information” yelled the skinny man. The big four of the Dojo of Limits headquarters stared.

“His ID is 426123203806083211” followed a burly, tall chief, “He was born on 6/8/2038, which is to say, he’s only 19 years old this year! A 19 year old examiner?”

“19 years old?”

Chairman Zhou Zheng Yong and Zhu Ge Tao and the others exchanged glances. All of a sudden, everyone went silent.

If seeing ‘Luo Feng’ and ‘Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Yang Zhou city’ could make one suspect that it’s just a person with the exact same name, everything was cleared up after seeing the identification number! Since everyone has their own unique ID number. This message came from the Dojo of Limits world headquarters, so they must have went through a series of procedures; there’s no way they accidently wrote the wrong person’s name!

“It’s really Luo Feng”

“It’s really him”

The chairman and the three chiefs were all in different moods. Zhu Ge Tao had a bit of joy hidden in his heart right now. When he just found out about Luo Feng’s talent, Zhu Ge Tao helped Luo Feng a bit. Originally, he was just randomly expanding his connections, but who would’ve thought that in just one year, Luo Feng would become his superior!

“He’s only 19 years old, how did he become a wargod, and an ‘invincible wargod’ at that?” the skinny man was quite confused.

“Yu Sen”, laughed Zhu Ge Tao, “Stop thinking about it. There’s definitely no problem with what’s written here in the notice”

“Now this is troublesome” frowned the burly brute, “The new examiner is only 19 years old. Since he’s so young, he’s probably not the calm and collected type. Young people act on their emotions! Maybe one of us would get fired out of his rage if we accidently offend him”

Younger people indeed have a temper problem compared to older people.

“Yea” the others, including Zhu Ge Tao, nodded.

“Don’t worry too much” smiled Zhou Zheng Yong, “Young people having bad tempers isn’t good for us, but..... young people aren’t mature yet, so they aren’t as adept with dealing with people

and work. If we just compliment him a bit, he'll be happy. And those old people are sly as sly can be, so it's hard to make them happy"

The other three chiefs nodded.

"So everybody put your heart into this. This Luo Feng is from Jiang-Nan" Zhou Zheng Yong's expression became serious as he said seriously, "According to the rules, these positions give priority to locals! And this Luo Feng is an 'invincible wargod' and also a local, so after he becomes an examiner, he'll be staying in this position for a while"

The other three chiefs understood that even if a new examiner appears at headquarters..... they definitely won't be arranged to come to Jiang-Nan headquarter city. Because, this 'Luo Feng' of Jiang-Nan headquarter city is a local and an invincible wargod, so who has the right to take his spot?

"If this Luo Feng doesn't make a breakthrough, he'll probably stay in this position for a few dozen years"

"And once he makes a breakthrough, he'll become an existence surpassing the wargod level, an investigator! His position will become even higher and can fire me, a chairman, with just a phrase. So we have to make him happy"

said Zhou Zheng Yong seriously.

Whether or not Luo Feng makes a breakthrough, he'll always be above them. And since Luo Feng is a local, he'll probably be staying in Jiang-Nan headquarter city for quite a while. Since they'll be working under Luo Feng, of course the four of them have to make Luo Feng happy.

"Don't worry, chairman"

"We understand"

"None of us are dumb" said the three chiefs.

"Very good" nodded Zhou Zheng Yong, "I'll give Yang Zhou city's Ming-Yue sector a call"

"Hello"

Zhou Zheng Yong took out his phone and dialed, "Wu Tong, the Luo Feng from your sector……"

"What?" as Zhuo Zheng Yong listened to Wu Tong's recount, his face kept changing. Zhu Ge Tao, Yu Sun, etc. all listened carefully too. They were barely able to hear the words 'fighter jet' and 'Luo Feng'.

After a moment, the call ended.

"What happened, chairman?" the three people looked at Zhou

Zheng Yong.

Chairman Zhou Zheng Yong let out a smile: “Luo Feng, just now, arrived at Ming-Yue sector in a triangular fighter jet. And that Luo Feng even said..... that he bought that fighter jet himself!”

“He bought it? He just became an examiner, how could he afford it?” the burly brute couldn’t help but to say.

“Who cares how he bought it” Zhou Zheng Yong’s face sunk as he yelled, “Old Wang, keep in mind that from now on, Luo Feng is an examiner. He is the one with the most authority in our Dojo of Limits here in Jiang-Nan headquarter city! So watch what you say and stop saying he, he, he. If you make Luo Feng unhappy, one word can make you lose your position”

The burly brute was a bit shocked and then laughed: “Chairman, I just didn’t have time to process this yet”

“We still don’t know about this Luo Feng’s temper, so watch yourselves” Zhou Zheng Yong commanded, “Everyone prepare yourselves. 20 minutes later, we’ll ride on a fighter jet and meet the examiner in Yang Zhou city”

“Yes”

responded the three chiefs.

Yang Zhou city’s Ming-Yue sector, Luo Feng’s home.

Luo Feng's family was happily eating breakfast around the dining table. However, the originally lively scene changed because of one phrase from brother Luo Hua.

"Bro, you said you aren't leaving anymore? How come?" asked Luo Hua.

"The world headquarters appointed me as examiner of the Dojo of Limits headquarters at Jiang-Nan headquarter city" Luo Feng's words made his father, mother, and brother go silent. Father Luo Hong Guo couldn't help but to ask: "Feng, this examiner position sounds like it's pretty big. How big is it?". Even mother Gong Xin Lan was curious.

In the small sector, the positions they talk about the most are the chairman and the three chiefs.

As for examiners, who everyone almost never sees, they are rarely talked about.

"Dad, mom" Luo Hua just recovered from his shock on his wheelchair as he excitedly said, "It's an extremely big position that has even more authority than the chairman! In all of Jiang-Nan headquarter city, on the Dojo of Limits side, they are number 1!"

"Bigger than the chairman?" Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan froze.

They were just regular civilians. Even though they had a son who was a fighter, the chairman of Jiang-Nan headquarter city's Dojo of Limits headquarters was definitely a figure with a lot of authority. Keep in mind that to become a chairman, you have to be a wargod! You also need a ton of connections to be able to get into this spot.

And our son? Has more authority than such a figure?

"Feng?" Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan looked towards Luo Feng.

"Yea" Luo Feng nodded.

"The fighter jet I brought back this time" said Luo Feng, "costs more than 100 billion, and you can't buy it just with money" to help his parents clearly understand his current level of authority, Luo Feng directly told them the price of his fighter jet. Indeed, money isn't enough to get this emperor level auto jet!

For example, the Home of Limits and the HR alliance doesn't sell auto jets! The special discounted price for high ranking people in the Dojo of Limits, like examiners, still reaches up to a price of 180 billion.

If other countries or powers want to purchase it, the Dojo of Limits wouldn't even sell it for 200 billion! Keep in mind that these 'auto jet' things.... can only be produced by the Dojo of Limits.

“Over 100 billion?” Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan were shocked again.

Holy!

How much money does the richest person in China have? Keep in mind that Venina’s astronomical bounty of ‘100 billion’ caused countless fighters on earth to go crazy. One can imagine, even for the richest people in the world, how breathtaking an amount of 100 billion is! As for people who lived in rental homes like Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan.....

Astronomical number!

Although usually, even an ‘invincible wargod’ can’t afford such a thing! Luo Feng got lucky and made a killing out of the spirits of nature found on the misty island! Or else who knows when he would be able to afford it, and would be willing to pay such an amount of money for an auto jet.

“Oh”

Gong Xin Lan and Luo Hong Guo blinked a couple times before they recovered.

“Feng, just how much authority do you have? And how much money?” Luo Hong Guo asked a dumb question.

Authority and money?

“Authority? How should I say this.....” Luo Feng didn’t know how to explain. Invincible wargods, other than the existences surpassing the wargod level, are the strongest fighters! They have an astonishing amount of authority. As for money..... for someone who has a soaring shuttle like Luo Feng, hunting horde leader level monsters is extremely easy.

Horde leader level monsters are his money making machines.

The only problem is..... that he can’t kill too many horde leaders in the same area, or else he’ll anger that area’s emperor level monster.

“Don’t ask stuff like that. Can an old guy like you even spend 100 billion?” Gong Xin Lan scolded as she laughed.

“Feng” Gong Xin Lan couldn’t help but to say, “I have something I need your help with, look.....”

“Mom, if you have anything, then just say it” followed Luo Feng.

Gong Xin Lan sighed: “Back then, me and your dad went through the Grand Nirvana period. At that time, me and your dad were still young! During the Grand Nirvana period, human society rumbled and countless people died. Me and your dad became orphans at that time”. Luo Hong Guo also recalled the events of those years on the side.

The Grand Nirvana period!

The saddest time of humanity! All human cities were attacked and entire countries were eradicated!

“I had so many cousins.....” said Gong Xin Lan. Gong Xin Lan and Luo Hong Guo were born while the one-child policy was still in effect, so they were both the only child! However, their parents had many brothers and sisters, which led to them having many cousins.

“When we were escaping, we couldn’t worry about anything else. Who had the time to search for their relatives” Gong Xin Lan shook her head as she sighed, “And the Grand Nirvana period experienced unforeseen chaos. Tons lost their homes and identification. There were way too many who lost their parents and became orphans. Me and your dad’s name were registered by ourselves”

“That period was way too chaotic”

“By the time the construction of a headquarter city and the rebuilding of the country stabilized everything, 10 years passed already. Me and your dad were living in rental homes, so of course we didn’t have the time and money to search for our relatives”

After becoming an orphan, their feelings towards their relatives strengthened.

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan have always wanted to search for their relatives. They had so many relatives back then, so some must still be alive..... however, without enough power, they had no way to search! Even a family with a fighter doesn't have that ability.

"Dad, mom"

Luo Feng nodded seriously, "Don't worry, I'll search for all our relatives". This is the first thing he's going to do as an examiner, and something he's going to do for his parents.

Chapter 68: The Helmet's Safety Issue

When Luo Feng, his parents, and his brother reunited, Ming-Yue sector became lively again, because the main city sector's chairman and three chiefs were about to arrive.

Chief instructor Wu Tong brought a few dozen fighters with him as he waited.

"How come the chairman and the three chiefs are coming?"

"It's quite rare for the big four to come to our sector together" these fighters were discussing.

"They're here" Wu Tong looked towards the sky.

Everyone quieted down and looked towards the sky.

A flowing light pierced the sky and then decelerated. The light formed into a dark blue disc-shaped fighter jet as it hovered above Ming-Yue sector. It started to slowly descend!

"Go, let's welcome the chairman" Wu Tong brought the few dozen fighters to welcome them. As for the family of those fighters, they were prohibited from coming near. They were welcoming the chairman and the three chiefs, how can they have a bunch of random spectators around?

HUALA——

The hatch opened and a staircase extended out automatically. With chairman Zhou, who was wearing black, in the lead, the three chiefs followed. All of them walked down the staircase.

“I greet the chairman, the three chiefs” Wu Tong bowed.

“We greet the chairman, the three chiefs” the group of fighters bowed.

Quite a few family members of the fighters who were watching from afar were extremely excited as they quietly discussed amongst themselves. These people were the Big Four of Jiang-Nan headquarter city! It’s rare to see even one of them!

“Ok” Zhou Zheng Yong nodded.

The group of fighters held their breath. Back when Wu Tong brought Luo Feng to meet chief Zhu Ge Tao, he was extremely respectful. Keep in mind..... that a chief instructor of a sub city can’t even compare with a chief of the entire headquarter city. And don’t even talk about comparing him with the chairman! In front of the chairman and the three chiefs, all the fighters were extremely respectful.

“Is examiner Luo home?” smiled Zhou Zheng Yong as he asked.

Silence!

Wu Tong and the few dozen fighters froze. Examiner Luo? Who is this examiner Luo?

“Luo….. examiner Luo?” Wu Tong froze.

“Examiner Luo, as in Luo Feng” smiled Zhou Zheng Yong. He didn’t dare to boldly say “that kid Luo Feng”, since Luo Feng is his superior and Luo Feng’s strength has been declared as ‘invincible wargod’ by the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits. How could Zhou Zheng Yong, an intermediate level wargod, mess with that?

“Luo Feng? Examiner Luo?” Wu Tong and the group froze.

Zhu Ge Tao smiled on the side: “The world headquarters sent us a notice: Wargod Luo Feng has officially become the examiner of our Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits headquarters. We came here this time to greet examiner Luo”

“Luo Feng, oh, examiner Luo is with his family at home” Wu Tong’s responded the fastest as he replied, “Chairman, three chiefs, should I notify the examiner?”

“I’ll contact him myself” smiled Zhou Zheng Yong as he dialed.

Wu Tong and the group of fighters stared at Zhou Zheng Yong.

The call went through.

“Oh, examiner Luo, I am Zhou Zheng Yong” Zhou Zheng Yong’s face was filled with smiles as he said respectfully, “I have already arrived at Ming-Yue sector. The three chiefs are beside me. No rush, no rush. We’ll wait here at Limit Hall for examiner Luo”

After hanging up, Zhou Zheng Yong looked at Wu Tong as he smiled: “Wu Tong, go, let’s take a look at your Yang Zhou city’s Limit Hall”

“Yes, chairman” Wu Tong quickly followed.

.....

Soon enough, the entirety of Ming-Yue sector went into an uproar. Luo Feng was the new examiner of Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits. This news spread from one person to the next. Other than those who weren’t in the sector, everyone already knew. Everyone was excited and shocked and only came to realization after connecting this fact to the fighter jet they saw earlier.

“No wonder Luo Feng can afford a fighter jet, it’s because he became an examiner”

“Call him examiner, stop yelling Luo Feng Luo Feng”

“The examiner is only 20 years old this year. If you count his exact age, he’s only 19 years old. He hasn’t even married yet. Does

he have anyone in mind?”

“Not that I’ve heard of”

Some people have started to try to get closer to Luo Feng’s family while others searched for a potential wife for Luo Feng. Anyways, all sorts of things were going on! Since an examiner..... to become an examiner, you first have to be an advanced level wargod! And within the advanced level wargods, you have to be quite famous. Such a person, even across the entire world, means business!

If someone’s family member can marry Luo Feng, then their entire family will have it easy.

※※ ※※

Limit Hall, first floor’s living room.

There were a total of five people in the living room: the Big Four of Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits, and Luo Feng. And right now, Luo Feng was sitting on a chair. After walking to Limit Hall from home, the attitude of a few neighbors and fighters in the sector confused Luo Feng..... they seemed to be too passionate, and some people even yelled ‘Examiner Luo’.

Then Luo Feng realized—— his identity is out!

However, it was going to be revealed regardless, so Luo Feng had time to prepare.

“Examiner Luo, let me introduce to you” chairman Zhou Zheng Yong smiled, “These three, are the three chiefs of our Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits. This is Zhu Ge Tao, this is Wang Ke Fan, and this is Yu Sun”

“We greet the examiner” Zhu Ge Tao, Wang Ke Fan, and Yu Sun all stood up as they said.

“Don’t be so polite, relax. Everyone sit”

“All of you count as my seniors, and Zhu Ge Tao even helped me out back then, so I am extremely grateful” said Luo Feng honestly. He has met a few existences surpassing the wargod level and even met the world’s strongest fighter, ‘Hong’, face to face. Now that he’s with Zhou Zheng Yong, Zhu Ge Tao, and the others, Luo Feng was quite calm and relaxed.

After a few minutes of talking, Luo Feng’s relaxed manner erased a bit of the Big Four’s worries.

It seems like.....

Even though this young man’s position is high, he isn’t cocky and full of himself. The Big Four let out a big sigh of relief in their hearts.

“Chairman Zhou” said Luo Feng, “Of course, I’ll do what an examiner is supposed to do. As for the various things in the Dojo of

Limits in Jiang-Nan city, we should probably keep them the same way. I'm young and don't really understand this, nor do I feel like understanding this". After hearing this, chairman Zhou and the others were overjoyed.

"However, I hope none of you step out of bounds" Luo Feng's expression became serious, "Since headquarters gave me the position of examiner, I still have to be able to carry my duty out for the sake of the higher ups"

Even though he said that.....

Truthfully, Luo Feng hasn't even taken a look at the mail, which explained the duties of an examiner, sent to him from the Dojo of Limits headquarters yet.

"Do not worry, examiner Luo, we definitely will not cause trouble for you" promised Zhou Zheng Yong right away, "If anyone steps out of place, I will punish them before examiner Luo even says a word"

"Not that serious" smiled Luo Feng, "I am still easy to talk to, although my temper rages a bit sometimes, since I'm young. Please take care of me, fellow seniors"

"I have a favor to ask for, chairman Zhou" said Luo Feng.

"Please ask, examiner Luo"

Luo Feng took in a deep breath and said slowly, “During the Grand Nirvana period, my parents were separated from their relatives. I want to ask chairman Zhou to help me search for my parents’ cousins from back then, and find out whether or not my parents’ seniors are still alive”. Even though his parents were orphans.....

It was so chaotic back then. His parents were still young, so who knows whether or not his grandma or grandpa is still alive.

“This.....” frowned chairman Zhou, “this is quite a difficult task”

Luo Feng frowned.

Chairman Zhou continued: “Mainly because many cities from back then were taken over by monsters. Internet databases were paralyzed and lots of information was lost. Many people lost their identification. That is why our Dojo of Limits can not investigate this matter. We have to investigate through the Chinese government! The Chinese government’s civilian data is quite detailed”

“There’s no problem with asking the government to help right?” asked Luo Feng.

“For the Chinese government, examiner Luo’s words would hold way greater weight than mine” smiled Zhou Zheng Yong, “Yeah, but I will tell them when I get back. Once they know that examiner Luo wants a favor, they will definitely put their heart into it”

Invincible wargod! It's attractive even for China, one of the five countries.

"Okay" nodded Luo Feng.

"Since you just took up the position of examiner, according to the rules, we have to hold a gigantic welcoming ceremony for you. At that time, all the important people from the economic world, political world, fighters, etc. will participate. Even some important people within China will probably come" said Zhou Zheng Yong, "I don't know when the examiner hopes to hold this ceremony?"

Luo Feng froze.

Becoming an examiner is something big, so of course he has to show himself; he can't just hide. Luo Feng knew these were the rules.

"How about this, I'll rest a bit at home first since I just returned, hm..... the first day of the next month, which is September 1st, will be a good day to hold the ceremony and welcome our guests" said Luo Feng.

He just returned, so today at Ming-Yue sector was extremely lively. At night, Luo Feng gathered with Chen Gu, Zhang Ke, and other friends and they all enjoyed themselves.

※※ ※※

Deep in the night, 11 PM. Silence.

Luo Feng sat on the sofa in the listening room as he held a tea cup. He read the email on the large display of the listening room, which described the various responsibilities he had after becoming an ‘examiner’.

“Okay”

“This is quite easy” nodded Luo Feng. Beside him was a dark blue helmet that was currently sitting on the sofa.

Luo Feng picked up the dark blue helmet.

When using this ‘consciousness sensor’ helmet, the most important thing is to—— make sure to keep yourself safe! Because once you put on the dark blue helmet, your consciousness will enter the virtual space. When this happens, it’ll be a problem if someone wants to assassinate you. However, within the fighter’s sector of a headquarter city, nobody would dare to do such a thing.

However, the manual..... still reminded the user to keep themselves safe.

This ‘consciousness sensor’ helmet also has a safety feature: it can detect whether or not someone enters within its detectable range.

“Maybe others are concerned about their safety, but I’m not”

Luo Feng smiled as a black membrane covered his entire body. With his ‘Black God Set’ protecting him, what is there to fear?

“Safety range, 5 meters x 5 meters” Luo Feng still set it anyway and the windows of the room were sealed. Once someone enters the safety range, Luo Feng’s consciousness will be automatically kicked out of the virtual space.

“Whoosh!”

Luo Feng directly put on the helmet. The Black God set even extended over the dark blue helmet. He sat there cross legged, as if he was a black sculpture.

Enter virtual space!

The Palace of Wargods is in the virtual space, and he has to go in there to read his《Spirit Reader Basics》.

Chapter 69: Spirit Reader Basics

This was an extremely large and quiet room. Luo Feng, who was wearing a simple white robe, suddenly appeared in the room.

“What a large room” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to gasp.

With a glance, the length of the room was over 50 meters, and the width was around 20 meters. The ceiling was 5 meters high. In otherwords..... the area of this room exceeded 1,000 square meters. In the middle of the room was a large, circular bed with a diameter of three meters. In front of the bed was an indoor pool with a length of 20 meters and a width of 10 meters.

A bed, a pool, desks and chairs, an elegant dining table, a relaxer chair, a training section with yoga mats..... in this gigantic room with over 1,000 square meters of space, the space was neatly divided into several sections.

“Hehe”

Luo Feng let out a smile.

“Welcome, wargod Luo Feng” an electronic sound suddenly rang, which shocked Luo Feng.

“This is your private room within the Palace of Wargods. Other than you, nobody else can enter the room” the electronic sound reverberated within the room, “In the Palace of Wargods, you can

order whatever you want to eat or drink. There are many delicious delicacies that don't exist in real life"

Luo Feng froze? Advertising food and drink?

"On your desk are two books. One is the《Palace of Wargod Rules》and the other is the《Spirit Reader Basics》. I hope you enjoy your time in the Palace of Wargods" the electronic sound disappeared.

"Have fun?" Luo Feng laughed.

This Palace of Wargods is a place to provide entertainment for wargods?

The desk was closer to the window, and the entire southern side of the room was a gigantic french window. Through the window, he saw the extraordinarily beautiful, phenomenal sights outside.

"Paradise?"

Through the window, Luo Feng looked outside. The outside world seemed limitless. Mist emanated around and refracted the unending beams of sunlight, causing the light of the seven colors of the rainbow to shoot off. It was absolutely beautiful and stunning. Even though he knew this was virtual space, this 100% virtual modeling caused one to think it was real. One couldn't help but to be amazed at such beauty.

“Let’s first take a look at the《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual” Luo Feng walked towards the desk where the two books were placed. One of the book’s cover was black and had the four large words《Palace of Wargod Rules》on it. The cover of the other book was black with a bit of starlight flashing from within, as if it was as mysterious as the starry sky.

It had three large words on it——《Spirit Reader Basics》.

“This one instruction manual is worth 3 stars, even more expensive than an emperor level fighter jet” Luo Feng picked up this instruction manual and started reading.

.....

“Spiritual force comes from one’s spirit, one’s soul! The body is the foundation, the basis of one’s spirit”

“Spiritual force can only grow, become stronger, in one’s body. Because the relationship between the body and spiritual force is special, once spiritual force comes into contact with a person or animal, it’ll automatically go through. So spiritual force cannot directly attack an enemy’s body. It must attack via special means, like knives or other weapons”

After reading this part, Luo Feng couldn’t help but to nod his head.

Indeed!

Just like when he sprints, his spiritual force is working on an external object, like his shield, the bottom of his battle boots, his armguards, etc. and not on his clothes. Why? Because, from the atomic perspective, there are many holes on the battle uniform! When the spiritual force works on the battle uniform, a lot of it will naturally pass through these holes and go through the person's body.

It is still a bit effective.

But only 1/10 of what it potentially could be. And when you use it on places like the shield, the bottom of the battle boots, etc., 100% of the effect is brought out.

"Spiritual force, can have form, and be formless"

"Form, allows it to possess astonishing power. It can control objects and kill enemies over 100 meters away"

"Formless, allows it to slip into one's heart without notice and kill them without making any sort of sound"

"It is absolutely silent, and never conforms to one state"

"All spirit readers are split into three categories..... the first kind, controlling objects to kill enemies. The second kind, attacking an enemy's mind directly. The third kind, monster taming"

.....

Luo Feng continued to read. About half of the entire book was talking about “controlling objects to kill enemies’. The second half mainly talked about ‘attacking an enemy’s mind directly’. As for the third kind, ‘monster taming’, not much was was written about it.

“Hm?” when Luo Feng continued to read about the first kind, ‘controlling objects to kill enemies’, a line caused his eyes to lighten up.

“Spirit readers that focus on controlling objects, once they become strong enough, have three categories they train: “spiritual force strength”, “weapons”, “technique”. This book is mainly going to discuss “technique”. In terms of technique for a spirit reader, it is mainly about how many weapons a spirit reader can control at once while maintaining maximum power”

“For example, an ‘intermediate level wargod level’ spirit reader can reach up to 160,000 KG of impact power with one throwing knife!”

“If he controls five knives, where each one has 160,000 KG of impact power, it will be 800,000 KG of impact power in total!”

“Then what if he controls ten knives at the same time, where each one can reach its maximum? That’ll be 1,600,000 KG of impact power!”

“And what if he can control 20 knives at the same time, where each one can reach its maximum? That’ll be 3,200,000 KG of impact power!”

“Maintaining maximum power while controlling many weapons..... the spirit reader will naturally be stronger that way. The next part will introduce to you, how to raise the number of weapons you can control at once while maintaining maximum power on each one”

After reading this part, Luo Feng was stunned.

Yea, the number of throwing knives he can control!

That Phantom Demon Catalan was only an intermediate level wargod level spirit reader, and yet he could control nine daggers at once, where each of the daggers were at maximum power! As for Luo Feng, even though he was already a ‘peak of the advanced level wargod level’ spirit reader, can only control six throwing knives at once. The number of throwing knives he can control are too few.

“I can maintain an impact power of 500,000 kg on my throwing knives! So six of them would be an impact power of 3,000,000 kg. If I can control 10 throwing knives..... 5,000,000 KG? 20 throwing knives would be 10,000,000 KG, holy! Even an existence surpassing the wargod level probably can’t block that” Luo Feng was extremely excited.

As he kept reading, Luo Feng realized the difficulty of maintaining maximum power on each of the objects he controlled!

Under no special training, Luo Feng could be considered as talented for being able to control six throwing knives at once.

Phantom Demon Catalan trained for dozens of years and only reached nine daggers! However, Phantom Demon Catalan doesn't have the《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual to guide him and had to figure things out himself. On earth, the amount of spirit readers that can control over 10 throwing knives at once at maximum power won't exceed five.

20 throwing knives?

This is something that all the spirit readers on earth look up to.

"No wonder this instruction manual is worth 3 stars and can only be read in the virtual space" the more Luo Feng read, the more excited and happy he became, "It seems like going up by one throwing knife is difficult. However, as long as there's a way to train, then I'll improve eventually if I keep at it"

After finishing the 'controlling objects' section, Luo Feng's blood was boiling. He continued to read the 'spiritual attack' section.

"Oh?"

"In your own consciousness, your spiritual force is strengthened by a level. When your spiritual force enters someone else's, not only will it not become stronger, it will also be restricted by the

enemy's consciousness, thus weakening it by a level?" Luo Feng mumbled to himself, "In other words, if you want to kill someone with just your spiritual force, you have to be three levels higher!"

If an advanced level wargod level spirit reader's spiritual force enters a beginner level wargod level spirit reader's realm of consciousness, the advanced wargod level's spiritual force will be restricted while the beginner level wargod level's spiritual force will be strengthened, thus making them equal!

Only when you're higher by three levels!

Can you kill them!

"What? Regular fighters have powerful spiritual force too?" Luo Feng was shocked as he read the description.

Regular fighters don't have the ability of telekinesis!

But that doesn't mean they are spiritually weak. In reality, powerful fighters with solid wills have powerful spiritual forces. For example, an advanced level wargod has a very small amount of spiritual force in his realm of consciousness. In terms of quality, it isn't much weaker than the spiritual force of an 'advanced level wargod level spirit reader'. It's just that the quantity differs by too much.

.....

Spiritual attacks are quite complicated. Apparently, people on earth aren't that good at it anyway.

There are 18 attacks recorded in total in the instruction manual.

There are "Illusory Dream", "Phantom Eye", "Spiritual Awl Pierce", "Soul Shaker"..... quite a few famous techniques, and a full 18 of them.

The way to kill people is——

Use these techniques to distract your opponent and then kill them with objects!

"First use this technique and then control an object?" Luo Feng sighed to himself, as he was a bit disappointed with this so called spiritual attack. However, Luo Feng was still preparing to learn those 18 techniques anyway.

.....

He continued reading the third section—— monster taming.

In the book, your spiritual force is capable of taming monsters. As of now, there are nine spirit readers who have succeeded in taming monsters. However, there was only one method of monster taming recorded—— spiritual communication! A very delicate way of becoming friends with monsters.

He closed the book.

Luo Feng let out a deep breath and then walked next to the window as he gazed at the infinite sky and ocean outside.

“A price of 3 stars, how expensive” Luo Feng let out a smile, “But, worth it!”

Only after reading did Luo Feng understand why ‘Hong’ treasures this instruction manual so much. You can say that after reading the《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual, Luo Feng completely understands how to train as a spirit reader. The book mentioned ways to ‘raise the number of throwing knives you can control’ and also has the 18 spiritual attack techniques.

Just these techniques are priceless. Who knows how ‘Hong’ even gathered all of these.

“If I got this instruction manual one year ago, then I would probably have twice my current strength!” Luo Feng gazed outside the window, his heart filled with extreme joy.

Keep training hard I guess.

According to the descriptions in the book, once the number of throwing knives an ‘advanced level wargod level spirit reader’ reaches a certain point, he can even make a breakthrough and become an existence surpassing the wargod level!

“I’ll focus with object controlling and use a few spiritual attack techniques as support” thought Luo Feng to himself.

Work hard!

Now that he’s an examiner, he can take it easy a bit and safely train this ‘object controlling’ technique. Maybe he’ll even be able to shoot past the wargod level.

“Time to see the other wargods”

“All the wargods on earth are in this Palace of Wargods! Who knows how many of them there are” Luo Feng was curious about just how many wargods were on earth!

Chapter 70: “3516”

Luo Feng stood in front of his desk and opened the black cover of the《Palace of Wargod Rules》. There was only a single sheet of paper inside.

“Welcome to the Palace of Wargods”

“The Palace of Wargods was formed together by the first chairman Hong and the second chairman Thunder God to be the most powerful fighter organization. All the wargods and existences surpassing the wargod level on earth are a member of the Palace of Wargods. Only existences surpassing the wargod level have the right to become representatives of the administration of the Palace of Wargods, which is the ‘Palace of Wargods committee’.”

“And in the committee are the five big chairmen, divided into first chairman, second chairman..... all the way until the fifth chairman”

“These five people are the five strongest fighters on earth!”

“Which is to say..... the positions in the Palace of Wargods are split into three levels: regular member, representative, chairman”

“In the Palace of Wargods are ‘stores’, ‘auction houses’, ‘competition plazas’, ‘training towers’..... many functions that await for you to discover them!”

Just a short piece of paper.

After reading this, Luo Feng laughed and then walked towards the cabinet. He put on some casual attire and then pushed the door open as he left the room.

As he walked along the hallway, he naturally appeared at the external corridor of the Palace of Wargods' outer wall. This external corridor was nine meters wide. He stood on the external corridor that was like a castle wall as he looked below. Below was a gigantic plaza of the Palace of Wargods, which had a full nine arenas.

What about outside the plaza?

"RUMBLE~~" huge black waves smashed into the surrounding wall of the plaza over and over again. The gigantic Palace of Wargods was like a huge palace hovering above an infinite sea.

"Who designed this? One side of the Palace of Wargods is an infinite mist while this side is an infinite sea"

Luo Feng shook his head.

"Hello" a voice appeared from behind. Luo Feng turned his head and looked over. The man speaking was a tall, white man, who was currently smiling as he extended his hand, "My name is Vladi"

"Luo Feng" Luo Feng smiled as he shook his hand and

complimented, “Your Chinese is quite good”

“Thank you for the compliment” Vladi’s face was all smiles, “Mr. Luo Feng, you seem quite young, and this is my first time seeing you. If it’s the only thing I, Vladi, am good at, I know 99% of the wargods on earth. So Mr. Luo Feng probably hasn’t come here that many times”

Luo Feng looked at the person in front of him with shock.

99% of the wargods on earth? Maybe it’s an exaggeration, but it still shows his confidence.

“This is my first time here” smiled Luo Feng.

“Oh, first time” Vladi’s eyebrows raised and had a mysterious smile on, “You’re going to have a surprise later then”

“Surprise?”

While talking, Luo Feng and Vladi, the two wargods, have arrived at a spiral staircase leading to the first floor’s lobby. Luo Feng was currently at the third floor, so he was probably around 10 meters away from the first floor. And yet, the ceiling of the first floor was around 30 meters high and over 100 meters in both length and width!

This lobby is bigger than most schools’ gymnasiums!

In this gigantic lobby were large amounts of sofas and chairs, at least a thousand of them. And now, there were nearly a thousand people sitting with their friends and chatting as they drank.

“So many wargods!” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to hold his breath.

You have to at least be a wargod to enter the Palace of Wargods! And now, there are nearly a thousand wargods in front of him. This was the first time he has ever seen so many wargods at once. Even at the elite training camp, there were only a few dozen wargods. And in Jiang-Nan city, meeting even one wargod is a rare occurrence.

“Mr. Luo Feng, wargods are usually spread out, so they would rarely encounter other wargods. Because of this, many wargods frequently come to the ‘Palace of Wargods’ to have some drinks and chat, which also counts as making connections” said Vladi.

“Yeah” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to nod.

This is where all the wargods on earth gather.

As he walked down the spiral staircase, Luo Feng looked around. Other than the many chatting wargods, there were quite a few absolutely stunning waiters in the lobby, whether in looks or in elegance. There were probably over 100 of them who were here just to serve the wargods. There was also a gigantic display on the wall of the lobby.

There was a number on it——’3515′.

“What does this 3515 mean?” Luo Feng was full of questions.

PA!

At this time, Luo Feng and Vladi got off the staircase and Luo Feng stepped on the extremely shiny floor of the first floor’s lobby. When he did that, the entire lobby suddenly went dark. The originally smooth, comfortable light became dim. The relaxing music instantly disappeared.

“Hm?” Luo Feng was extremely confused, and a smile appeared on Vladi’s face.

WHOOSH!

The originally chatting wargods virtually looked towards the staircase in unison. Their eyes glanced across Vladi and then stayed on Luo Feng!

“DING!”

After a sharp sound that could make one’s soul shake, the entire lobby rang with a ringing, passionate, and joyful music. This music reverberated around the entire lobby. The nearly thousand wargods in this extravagant lobby from all parts of the world stood

up. Some of them even started clapping.

Some of them, work for the government.

Some of them, are special people hidden in the darkness.

Some of them, are mercenaries who live their lives killing.

Some of them, have peacefully retired and are enjoying their lives while teaching their students.

……

They are the most elite group of people in all of human society. They are the most wealthy group of people who stand at the top of the pyramid of human society.

Whoosh!

A dim light shone on Luo Feng.

“The Palace of Wargods, welcomes a new wargod, his name is….. LUO FENG!”

A thundering voice rang as if it came from the heavens!

After this voice rang, a 3D hologram appeared above the lobby,

which displayed some huge words——

Name: Luo Feng

Country: China

Level: Wargod (advanced)

————————

Just a simple three lines. Each of them are 3D and seemed to be carved out of stone as it hovered in midair.

“The number of wargods in human society increases by one more, it is now 3516!” the thundering sound echoed around the lobby. At the same time, the gigantic ‘3515’ on the gigantic display on the wall of the lobby jumped to ‘3516’. Furthermore, the happy music started to quiet down until it couldn’t be heard anymore.

The light shining on Luo Feng also disappeared.

Everything became silent again.

“This.....” Luo Feng didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. He looked towards Vladi beside him. This Vladi definitely knew about this, but just didn’t remind him.

“The virtual space automatically introduces any wargod that has come for the first time” Vladi’s face was full of smiles, “Who would’ve thought that Mr. Luo Feng, despite becoming a wargod recently, would be an advanced level wargod. This is quite respectable”

In the Palace of Wargods, the near thousand wargods sat on their seats as they discussed with their friends.

Quite a few people were talking about this Luo Feng.....

There were only a few hundred advanced level wargods out of the 3516 wargods on earth. It is indeed rare for a new wargod to be an advanced level wargod.

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

A few voices sounded and six shadows approached from a few faraway seats. Luo Feng looked towards them with shock..... he actually recognized all six of these people! These six people were teachers from the elite training camp! Even though he didn’t see his teacher Jiang Fang, he recognized everyone else. Within them was the wargod that originally brought him to the training camp, Yang Hui.

“Teacher Yang, Teacher Witt.....” yelled Luo Feng.

“Stop yelling teacher. You’ve already graduated, and the one who actually taught you was Jiang Fang, so just call us by our names” laughed Yang Hui. The other teachers from the elite training camp also nodded as they smiled.

No matter how powerful the student becomes, they have to respect their teacher.

However, every student in the elite training camp only has one teacher to teach them. Luo Feng’s teacher was Jiang Fang..... now that Luo Feng graduated and his position is high, only Jiang Fang deserves to be called ‘teacher’. Even though the others know Luo Feng, they haven’t actually taught him, so there’s no need for Luo Feng to do this.

“Luo Feng, according to the old rules, I’ll introduce you” Yang Hui smiled passionately. The other teachers also smiled as they stood to the side.

“Everyone!”

Yang Hui’s voice instantly became loud, and it rang across the entire lobby. The near thousand wargods that were chatting and drinking in the lobby all turned their heads over and saw Yang Hui’s group. Many of them watched on with interest. In this kind of place, wargods without a bit of background wouldn’t dare to yell like this.

“Let me introduce to everyone” smiled Yang Hui as he spoke loud and clear, “The one next to me is the new examiner appointed to

Jiang-Nan city by the head of the Dojo of Limits himself!”

Uproar!

A huge uproar!

The Dojo of Limits is the world’s most powerful organization. Just look at them: other than the head, ‘Hong’, being the strongest fighter on earth, he has three royal guards and five big investigators below him. That’s a total of eight existences surpassing the wargod level! You can say that the Dojo of Limits’ elites are the most powerful.

Usually, an organization would be decent if it even had one wargod in it.

And there are tons of advanced fighters in the Dojo of Limits!

To become an examiner in a large headquarter city like ‘Jiang-Nan city’ means you have to be a powerful figure within the advanced level wargods!

“Not only that, but the higher ups gave brother Luo Feng the title of ‘invincible wargod'” Yang Hui’s face was full of smiles, “You all better get close to brother Luo Feng”

After saying this, the entire lobby was in an uproar.

Invincible wargod?

There are only a few hundred advanced level wargods on earth. Those at Yang Hui's level, probably around a hundred people. And those at Phantom Demon Catalan's level, not more than fifty people! Finally, only a few dozen people have the right to be called 'invincible wargod'. These people either have their blade technique trained to an alarming level, or technique, or spiritual force……

Anyway, they have ultimate moves that are practically invincible!

Each of them are huge figures on earth.

"Luo Feng" said Yang Hui quietly to Luo Feng as he smiled, "You won't blame me right"

Luo Feng smiled.

He knew the rules too. The Dojo of Limits usually take the initiative to advertise their powerful people. For example, the title 'invincible wargod' helps get the name out! And nobody would doubt the strength rating of the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits.

"Go, let's sit over there" smiled Yang Hui.

"Luo Feng, the food and drink here is absolutely amazing. It's the best" said the other wargod teachers as they walked.

In the Palace of Wargods, the wargods from the Dojo of Limits naturally formed their own group.

The lobby was filled with discussions..... quite a few people started to look at Luo Feng in a different way.....

Luo Feng, invincible wargod?

The news of his first appearance in the Palace of Wargods will definitely spread across the world like wildfire.

Chapter 71: Spirit, Resolve

A corner of the lobby.

“Luo Feng, get whatever you want. Since it’s your first time here, it’s my treat” smiled Yang Hui as he handed over a menu from the waiter to Luo Feng.

“Oh?”

Luo Feng accepted it with curiosity. He opened up the menu and took a look: every single dish and drink had English and Chinese descriptions. On the back, the prices were written in Earth dollars, Chinese dollars, US dollars, Euros, Rubles (Russia), and Rupees (India).

“One glass of wine is almost 100,000 dollars?”

“What is this ‘Dragon Liver’, 880,000 dollars?” Hm, most of these dishes are fine, like 100,000 Chinese dollars for each one” Luo Feng was shocked and couldn’t help but to smile towards the wargods beside him. He smiled as he said, “Everyone, this is my first time here at the Palace of Wargods, but I have to say that the prices here are quite expensive”

All the food and drink in the virtual space is virtual, but who would’ve thought that they would cost more than their real life counterpart.

“It is expensive, but there is no helping it” the wargod teacher on the side, Brad, shook his head as he sighed in his twisted Chinese, “There is only one place that sells food and drink in the Palace of Wargods; there’s no other place to buy this! However, even though the food and drink in the virtual space is 100% virtual, it feels like you’re actually eating it. As long as you aren’t looking to fill your stomach and are eating it just for the taste, then it is worth it”

Usually, when a few wargods randomly order some food and drink, the resulting bill is over a million Chinese dollars.

If it’s an extravagant meal, then it’ll probably be over ten million Chinese dollars!

Only the most wealthy people on earth, the ‘wargods’, can afford to spend like this. The usual rich person wouldn’t dare to be so extravagant. For wargods, even if they are serving some organization, a yearly salary of five billion Chinese dollars is normal. For elite wargods like Luo Feng, they just have to hunt a monster on the level of a ‘T-Rex’ or ‘Steel Armored Dragon’ to earn 10 billion.....

Would they still care about some food?

“The taste, is indeed.....” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to compliment.

“As for taste, how can the real world compare to the virtual space” laughed Yang Hui.

Luo Feng then asked the group: “I have always been curious about just how many representatives are in the Palace of Wargods?”. If you’re a representative, you’re an existence surpassing the wargod level.

“A total of 52 representatives and five big chairman” laughed Ji Tao on the side.

“52 of them, so many?” Luo Feng was a bit shocked.

“A lot?”

The wargod teacher on the side, ‘Witt’, shook his head, “Under the five big chairman, there are only 52 representatives. With a worldwide population of seven billion people, there isn’t even one representative for every 100 million people. And our Dojo of Limits’ ‘three royal guards’ and ‘five big investigators’ have already taken up eight of them!”

“And the Thunder Dojo. Even though they don’t have as many as us, they also have six representatives”

“There are also those who aren’t willing to work for others and have created their own mercenary groups. There are seven or eight people like them. Five or six of them are at the HR alliance. Just adding these together, 26-30 representatives are used up already” Witt’s head shook a bit from speaking all this Chinese, “After that are the five powerful countries and 23 headquarter cities to split up the remaining 20 or so representatives! And some of the representatives are prideful and prefer solitude, so they live a life

hidden from the world, ignoring every organization. So how many representatives can those powerful countries receive?”

Luo Feng froze as he listened.

The Dojo of Limits, the Thunder Dojo, the various mercenary groups, and the HR alliance have already taken up over half of the representatives.

“As for representatives that are loyal and willing to serve their country, for example China, it would be nice if there were even three or four of them” smiled Yang Hui, “Of course—— a country’s power cannot be underestimated. For example, some of our Dojo of Limits’ investigators are Chinese. Even though they are part of the Dojo of Limits, if China asks for help..... they will definitely lend a hand”

Luo Feng nodded.

A representative could be in the HR alliance or become a mercenary, but that doesn’t mean that they won’t help their native country when the time comes! Since it’s their native country after all! So on the surface, a country has three to four representatives under its wing, but it can actually call up to seven to eight representatives when it has to.

“Luo Feng, how about we go to the stores of the Palace of Wargods in a bit? The things here in the Palace of Wargods are much cheaper than it is outside” suggested Yang Hui.

Luo Feng's interest rose as he asked: "There's an auction house here right?"

"Of course"

Ji Tao held his wine glass on the side as he said with excitement, "The monthly auction is quite interesting! Over 90% of the world's wargods will come on that day! Keep in mind that..... even the largest auction on earth has trouble gathering people from every organization. Only the Palace of Wargods can do such a thing!"

Luo Feng nodded. Each of the large headquarter cities, especially on different continents, are separated by the ocean. The only form of transportation are the commercial airplanes, which is quite troublesome.

However, the Palace of Wargods..... allows all the powerful fighters on earth to gather together.

"The auction here can gather so many people, so there are many interesting things" explained Yang Hui, "We can also set up our own things for auction. However, there are certain conditions..... the objects you want to auction off must be worth at least one billion Chinese dollars. There's no upper limit"

"Is there an elixir of life?" asked Luo Feng directly.

"In the past seven months, five of them had an elixir of life" introduced Yang Hui, "If my memory serves me correctly, there

will be an elixir of life in this month's auction too"

Luo Feng was overjoyed, and then confused.

How come there are so many elixirs? Didn't the American government want the elixir of life to appear to be rare?

"How come the American government is auctioning off so many elixirs?" asked Luo Feng in a confused tone.

"The elixir of life only seems valuable in the outside world" scoffed Yang Hui, "In the second half of this year, there will be a public auction open to every fighter. And there will only be one portion of elixir of life! However..... this is the Palace of Wargods!"

"In the Palace of Wargods, there are huge amounts of valuables to be auctioned off every month. Things worth billions and tens of billions are common! If the American government only sold off one portion of elixir of life a year, how much money would they make?"

"The outside world doesn't even know about the auctions in the Palace of Wargods, so if they sell off more portions, wouldn't they make more money?" smiled Yang Hui.

Luo Feng nodded.

"In the previous auctions, around how much did a portion cost?" asked Luo Feng.

“The starting price was 10 billion Chinese dollars. It eventually sold off for around 20 billion Chinese dollars” laughed Yang Hui, “Maybe it can reach 30 billion in the public auctions, but nobody in the Palace of Wargods is dumb..... if the price goes any higher, nobody would want it”

Luo Feng was extremely happy inside. Indeed, the way individual circles of society interact with things is different.

The Palace of Wargods is the location where all the world’s wargods gather, so it would indeed become a huge market. For example, if the American government wants to make money with its ‘Elixir of Life’, then it has to sell it within the Palace of Wargods.

“When does this month’s auction begin?” asked Luo Feng.

“In a few days, August 15th” said Yang Hui, “Auctions are every month, and they are always on the 15th of each month”

Luo Feng nodded.

On August 15th, his brother will finally be able to stand up. Just a few more days.

.....

In the lobby of the Palace of Wargods, people occasionally came down the staircase.

“Which one is Luo Feng?” a white haired old man walked towards a group of friends and sat down as he asked quietly.

“South, sitting with Yang Hui and the others” said a burly, bald brute quietly, “See that? The wargods of the Dojo of Limits are chatting with Luo Feng”. Ever since Luo Feng revealed himself, people from every faction notified their men.

“That young man?”

The white haired old man looked carefully and nodded, “His aura is indeed different. Look at those eyes.....”. The eyes are the windows of the spirit. If a regular person’s “spirit” is good, their eyes will be bright. If their spirit is weary, their eyes will be dim. As for spirit readers.....

When calm, their eyes are deep like a swamp that cannot be seen through. When angry, just a glance from them could cause a weak fighter to shake and tremble.

So all spirit readers have a unique aura to them, caused by their powerful spirit.

“Find a time to come into contact with him” said the white haired old man quietly, “In the future, we can also ask him for help when we’re in trouble. Oh yeah..... when I came here, I checked

the Dojo of Limits and asked the government to help search for Luo Feng's parents' relatives. This case is a good chance to get near him, so we should do some work too"

"Yeah"

The other fighters also nodded.

"Our 11th bureau will benefit greatly with Luo Feng's help" the white haired old man let out a smile.

Luo Feng received the title of 'invincible wargod' from the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits. This news spread extremely quickly. Even the couple Li Yao and Venina all the way in Europe received this news right away from their friends.

.....

In a quiet, gloomy villa, the couple Li Yao and Venina were quietly standing there as they waited.

"Will that senior meet us?" asked Venina quietly.

"Definitely" Li Yao's gaze was cold as he stood there.

Venina sighed as she witnessed this. Ever since the incident at the misty island, Li Yao has been hysterically drinking like crazy. After he becomes sober, he sinks into his hatred, constantly

thinking about revenge. Even his gaze strikes fear into other people. However..... they don't have the ability to kill Luo Feng!

"Sir, madam"

An old man wearing a suit on the floor above said without emotion, "The master is upstairs, waiting for you two"

Li Yao and Venina were startled, and then went up the staircase to the second floor. The old man in the suit said coldly, "Come with me". He directly brought the two to a quiet room. After he lead them to a quiet room and opened the door, the old man in the suit quietly left. Li Yao and Venina both took a deep breath before walking inside.

The quiet room was mostly empty.

Only the smell of sandalwood emanated in the air of the quiet room. A white haired old man sat cross legged in the quiet room. His long, scattered hair reached all the way to his waist, and he seemed like a piece of dead wood with no life in him at all.

"Senior" bowed Li Yao.

"Representative Yan" Venina also bowed.

"Sit" carried a low sound. The white haired old man opened his eyes and looked towards Li Yao and Venina. This old man's eyes were hazy, as if he was an old man that was about to die. He

absolutely had no sign of being a powerful fighter, but Li Yao and Venina didn't dare to be disrespectful.

And Li Yao even directly prostrated himself on the ground as he smashed his forehead against the ground, his tears streaming down his face.

"Little Vulture, what's wrong, what can make you cry?" the old man was calm.

"Senior" Li Yao clenched his teeth as he said lowly, "My only son was killed by a young man named Luo Feng. I want revenge, revenge for my son! However, Li Yao has only his incapability to blame, as this Luo Feng's strength is at the 'invincible wargod' level. I am not his opponent at all. However..... my son....."

Li Yao clenched his fists, his fingernails sinking into his palms. His entire body slightly trembled.

"Li Yao's parents have already died, I have no family"

"I do not care about anything on this world, but my son....." vulture Li Yao's voice started to shake. He was cruel, which was how he got the title of Vulture. When he was a child, the special experiences he went through during the Grand Nirvana period made him cruel and selfish. However, deep in his heart, he desperately wanted family!

His only son.....

His only obsession! After raising him for around 20 years, those feelings have already been engraved into his soul.

The more cruel, selfish, and cold a person is, the crazier they would become for a relationship they treasure, even more so than someone with strong feelings! Because, this is their only obsession!

“I beg..... senior, that you can kill Luo Feng. I am willing to become senior’s slave for the rest of my life in return” Li Yao tapped his forehead on his ground and buried his head.

The old man silently looked at Li Yao.

Li Yao just had his head on the ground like that as he waited for the old man’s reply. Even Venina tapped her forehead on the ground.

“You and I have been through some things together, so speak..... of the background of this Luo Feng” said the old man lowly.

Li Yao’s head remained buried on the ground as he replied: “Luo Feng, peak of the advanced level wargod level spirit reader, 19 years old, from Jiang-Nan city’s Yang Zhou city. Right now, he has become part of the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits, appointed as ‘examiner’ of Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits”

The old man slightly frowned.

“I cannot help you!” said the old man lowly.

Li Yao ferociously raised his head as he looked towards this old man with disbelief..... this was his final ray of hope. He and this super powerful fighter have a special relationship, since they went through the ‘Grand Nirvana period’ together. Li Yao might be selfish and cruel, but he is also very proud, so he has never begged this senior like this before.

“Because of Hong?” Li Yao couldn’t help but to ask.

“Yes” the old man did not hesitate at all.

He is extremely powerful and even fought for a chairman spot in the Palace of Wargods, although he failed.

However——

Not a single person on earth is Hong’s opponent. Hong, is a deity that looks down on all the fighters from above! Maybe only the second chairman, ‘Thunder God’, is a bit close to Hong. As for the third, fourth, and fifth chairmen, none of them have the courage to even attack Hong.

So don’t even talk about ‘Yan Hai’. Even though he has a special relationship with Li Yao, it isn’t enough for him to mess with Hong.

A 19 year old invincible wargod, even a retard knows ‘Hong’ will

treat him with care.

Li Yao's fists cracked as he clenched them tightly, his knuckles became pale white and blood dripped from his palms. He stared at the old man with unrivaled pain. When the old man saw this..... he seemed to have once again saw that crazy young man from the Grand Nirvana period back then. He sighed to himself.

"You really want to kill Luo Feng, even if you will die in the process?" said the old man lowly.

"Yes" Li Yao's voice was determined.

"Then surpass the wargod level and become an existence surpassing the wargod level" said the old man lightly, "That way, you'll have a chance to kill him. Of course..... you must face the wrath of 'Hong'. Hong might treasure talented people and let you go. But he also might..... kill you out of rage"

Li Yao's eyes were determined: "Senior, please guide me"

"This is my training journal. The techniques I've trained are in there. At the same time..... it also contains my breakthrough experience" the old man took out a handwritten book, "I hope it will help you". As he said that, he threw it over.

Li Yao extended his hand and took it.

"Remember....."

“Breakthrough, and become an existence surpassing the wargod level. The key is in your ‘spirit’ and ‘resolve'” the old man closed his eyes, “You guys can leave now!”

Li Yao and Venina tapped their heads on the ground in thanks and immediately left.

Chapter 72: Auction

In the training room.

Luo Feng, who was wearing a loose white robe, sat cross legged not on the ground, but on his soaring shuttle. The soaring shuttle kept a distance of around half a meter from the ground, and his entire body just hovered like this. Luo Feng's eyes were deep like the sea as he silently stared at the 12 blade pieces of the soaring shuttle in front of him. He was currently controlling them——

The 12 grayish white blade pieces started floating around him as if they were dancing.

As if 12 fairies were circling Luo Feng.

If you record the trajectories of these 12 blade pieces, you will discover that they are drawing a delicate and complex shape of a maze. The weird thing is, the 12 blade pieces sometimes speed up and sometimes slow down. They crossed each other over and over again. Sometimes it seems like they are about to smash into each other, but they don't. The blade pieces sometimes decelerate and sometimes accelerate until their speed surpasses the speed of sound.

"CHI!" two of the blade pieces scraped against each other.

"Failed"

Luo Feng, who was hovering in midair, had a calm expression on the entire time. But now, he couldn't help but to let out a smile, "I seem quite talented. I just started and am able to practice the second drawing of the《Celestial Deity Catalog》. However, having to complete the second drawing in a short 3.2 seconds sure is hard"

"It's only challenging if it's hard"

The《Celestial Deity Catalog》is one of the training methods for "object controlling" spirit readers mentioned in the《Spirit Reader Basics》instruction manual. There are a full 99 drawings in it, but according to the instruction manual, the most powerful spirit reader on earth right now can only draw up to the 18th drawing. Luo Feng was quite confused.....

If so, then where did the latter drawings come from?

.....

"Training the《Celestial Deity Catalog》sure is tiring" Luo Feng shook his head as he yelled loudly: "Turn on the projector!"

Suddenly, a beam of light shot towards the white wall from the projector in the training room, causing a huge computer display to appear.

"Video chat" yelled Luo Feng, "Connect to Xu Xin"

"Beep——Beep——Beep——"

The video chat was sending a request.

“It should be almost 10 AM right now and it’s summer time, so Xu Xin should be online?” Luo Feng waited. Only after about half a minute did the request get accepted.

HUA!

On the gigantic display on the wall appeared Xu Xin in her pajamas holding a coffee cup with steam rising from it. Her hair was casually let down and she seemed to be a bit sleepy.

“Luo Feng” Xu Xin struggled to open her eyes.

“No way, it’s 10 AM right now and you’re still sleeping?” laughed Luo Feng out of surprise.

“What 10 AM, it’s night right now” said Xu Xin helplessly.

“Night?” Luo Feng froze.

Xu Xin seemed to be a bit more awake now as she replied: “I’m in America right now, not in the country. Even though it’s morning in the country, over here it’s already night time”

Luo Feng came to a realization.

“Eh, Luo Feng” Xu Xin looked at Luo Feng through the video chat with shock, “Seeing the background behind you, it doesn’t seem like you’re in a wasteland like the continent of Australia?”. In the continent of Australia, Luo Feng also video chatted with Xu Xin before. However, that was through his tactical communications watch, and the video usually showed places like caves, mountains, and other wastelands.

“I’m back, at Jiang-Nan headquarter city” laughed Luo Feng.

“Back?” Xu Xin became even more shocked, “Didn’t you say you would be at the continent of Australia for a month..... if I knew you were going to be back, then I wouldn’t have come to America”. Xu Xin seemed to be regretful. Indeed..... ever since Luo Feng went to the elite training camp, the two of them have never met in real life; they have only chatted via video chat.

If Xu Xin knew Luo Feng was coming back, why would she go to America.

“You miss me that much?” teased Luo Feng.

“Tch!” Xu Xin frowned and pretended to not care as she immediately changed the topic, “How long will you be back for? I’m going to be here in America for around another week. After that, I’ll be able to join my family’s group to ride the plane back. After I go back..... my parents want me to participate in an important ceremony on September 1st. They said it’s a ceremony to welcome the new examiner of Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s

Dojo of Limits. School has already started by that date and yet my parents are still forcing me to go”

Luo Feng blinked twice.

It seems like……

Xu Xin still doesn’t know who this new examiner is?

“The new examiner, what a feat. Xu Xin, do you know who the new examiner is?” Luo Feng tried to contain his laughter as he asked.

“No idea, the new examiner…… probably some super powerful fighter I guess, but what does that have to do with me” Xu Xin seemed to have no interest in talking about this ‘examiner’ as she continued, “Oh yeah, I got so mad on this trip to America. Luo Feng, you don’t know what I had to deal with this time…..”

※※※※※※

August 15th. The Palace of Wargods holds an auction every 15th day of the month. And on that day, over 90% of the world’s wargods gather here.

Time in China: 19:45. In the auction room of the Palace of Wargods in the virtual space.

The auction house was set up like an opera house: the seats were surrounding the center platform in a circular shape. The center platform was where the goods were displayed, and each side of the platform had a huge amount of seats encircling it, a total of 5,000 seats. As of now, there were tons of people in the auction house, and most of the wargods were chatting in groups.

Relaxing music echoed around the entire auction house.

“Luo Feng”

“Luo Feng, over here”

Luo Feng, who was wearing casual attire, saw a bunch of wargods from the Dojo of Limits in the auction house waving at him passionately.

“Hello, Mr. Luo Feng”

“Mr. Luo Feng”

As he walked on the aisle in the auction house he noticed that most of the seats on both sides of him had wargods, whether they were black, yellow, or white, sitting in them. These wargods from all over the world seemed to be quite friendly to Luo Feng. Luo Feng also smiled and nodded in response. Soon enough, he arrived at the Dojo of Limits’ wargods’ huge sector.

Awe-inspiring!

The amount of wargods in the Dojo of Limits is indeed ‘awe-inspiring’, as they took up a huge area. With just the naked eye, you could tell that there were at least a few hundred of them.

“Just what you would expect from the world’s most elite organization. They have the most wargods and representatives” thought Luo Feng to himself.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng saw a beautiful image wearing purple and walked over: “Teacher Jiang Fang”

“Luo Feng” smiled Jiang Fang as she looked at the student in front of him. She only thought that Luo Feng’s technique and blade technique were quite good, but who would’ve thought that her student’s most amazing ability was his “spiritual force”. Now he has become an invincible wargod all of a sudden and even became the examiner of a large headquarter city like Jiang-Nan headquarter city. Jiang Fang couldn’t help but to be amazed at how quickly things have changed.

Examiners differ depending on the location.

Large headquarter cities have populations of 200 to 300 million people while smaller ones probably have less than 100 million! Five powerful countries around the world and 23 headquarter cities. In total, there’s 52 headquarter cities. There’s around 7 billion people, so on average, each headquarter city just has a little more

than 100 million.

Jiang-Nan headquarter city is clearly a larger headquarter city.

“Luo Feng, sit here” smiled Jiang Fang as she pointed to the seat beside her.

“Okay” Luo Feng sat there.

“After the auction ends, I’ll introduce you to the other wargods in our Dojo. Counting you, our Dojo of Limits has three ‘invincible wargods'” smiled Jiang Fang.

.....

In a corner of the auction house sat the Vulture Scorpion couple.

“Luo Feng is here” Venina looked towards the distance.

“Seems quite popular” scoffed Li Yao. As of now, Li Yao’s aura and face basically keeps everyone away from him. The wargods sitting beside Li Yao have known him for quite a while, but Li Yao’s current aura and face causes them to frown too.

There were tons and tons of people in the auction house as over 3,000 wargods have appeared.

“Everyone!”

THe entire auction house swiftly quieted down and the original sounds of music disappeared too. Whoosh! A ray of light shone on the center platform where a Chinese man and a white man stood. One guy spoke in Chinese while the white guy quickly followed in English.

“We meet yet again on the 15th of this month” smiled the Chinese man. The white man also repeated that.

The two of them waved their hands at the same time——

Instantly, large amounts of varying goods appeared on the surroundings of the center platform. There were tons of them. In just a moment, they disappeared again.

“There will be 71 items to auction off this time” smiled the Chinese man, “Maybe there are things here that someone wants, so I won’t keep talking. I officially declare the beginning of this auction!”

“The first item is a piece of artwork. The famous painting painted by Vincent van Gogh in 1890, the《Portrait of Dr. Gachet》! The opening bid is 1 billion Chinese dollars” right when the Chinese man’s voice dropped, a huge painting immediately appeared in the air above. It slowly rotated so that every wargod could see it.

.....

Below the platform where the Dojo of Limits' wargods' gathered, Luo Feng couldn't help but to be shocked as he heard this: "Teacher Jiang, they even auction off antiques and artworks here?"

"Of course" Jiang Fang kept her voice low as she quietly said, "The Palace of Wargods auction is the largest auction on earth. Not just the wargods are participating in this auction. The wargods represent the organizations and powers behind them, so all sorts and types of amazing treasures make their way to this auction, like antiques and artworks. Only the most valuable ones have the right to be auctioned off. Most antiques don't even reach an opening bid of 1 billion Chinese dollars"

Luo Feng nodded.

The Grand Nirvana period dealt a horrifying blow to various historical antiques and paintings. Many of them were destroyed while humanity was trying to escape. So now, after humans have settled down in their 'headquarter cities', the prices of these antiques are extremely high.

"The sixth item, is an A grade genetic medicine, 10 portions. Opening bid of 1.2 billion Chinese dollars"

.....

Luo Feng just listened, not bidding at all.

Finally——

“The 39th item, a portion of an elixir of life. Opening bid of 10 billion Chinese dollars” after this sound rang, Luo Feng’s eyes flashed after being so calm this whole time. In the air above appeared a packaged portion of the elixir of life.

“It has finally come” Luo Feng’s eyes locked on to the image of the elixir of life.

Chapter 73: Dawn

The elixir of life has always been in supply, but since there aren't many disabled fighters that can afford it, there just hasn't been a lot of demand. So the American government sells a set amount of elixirs every year to earn money slowly.

"11 billion!" a voice rang from a corner of the auction house.

Whoosh!

An image of a wargod immediately appeared in the center platform and a smile even appeared on this wargod's face. Many sounds of discussions that were purposefully kept down instantly appeared.

"11.5 billion" another voice rang and the wargod originally at the center of the platform disappeared. An image of a black wargod replaced him.

"12 billion!"

After that voice dropped, another image appeared on the center platform, which appeared to be a Chinese youth. He seemed quite young..... it was indeed Luo Feng! Suddenly, the quiet voices that were discussing instantly became louder. Many people were curious about this new wargod, this new 'invincible wargod' Luo Feng.

“12 billion going once!” yelled the Chinese man. The white man beside him also yelled.

“12 billion going twice! One portion of elixir of life, current bid is at 1.2 billion, any higher?” yelled the Chinese man. In the past, elixirs can usually go for 20 billion Chinese dollars.

Below the platform.....

Luo Feng was shocked and confused as he quietly asked: “Teacher Jiang, how come nobody else is bidding?”

Jiang Fang smiled, making her appear quite beautiful, as she quietly said: “Luo Feng, there are only around a dozen ‘invincible wargods’ on earth. And this is your first time making a bid in this auction..... so for the first time, everyone is willing to show you some respect. Unless they really want it, they won’t bid against you”

The Palace of Wargods is a place to make friends, especially with ‘invincible wargods’ and extremely powerful wargods on the level of Phantom Demon Catalan’s. Other wargods would think twice before offending them.

If you start bidding against Luo Feng’s first bid, then you seriously aren’t thinking correctly.

“12 billion three times! Congratulations, wargod Luo Feng” smiled the Chinese man.

.....

In a corner of the auction house, the Vulture Scorpion couple coldly watched.

“What are you pulling me for” Venina looked at her husband with dissatisfaction. Venina was about to bid just now.

“Hmph”

Vulture Li Yao scoffed as he quietly said, “It’s just a portion of elixir of life. What’s the point of bidding? If it’s too expensive, he won’t buy it. After the auction he can just contact the American government and purchase it directly. At most, he just has to pay a few extra billion! No need to make Luo Feng notice us for just a few billion”

“Right now, this Luo Feng is full of himself, so just let him stay that way. Once I breakthrough.....” Li Yao’s voice was kept down.

Venina couldn’t help but to nod.

Yeah, as of now, the Vulture Scorpion couple can’t mess with Luo Feng. They haven’t even returned to their home in Jiang-Nan city as they just stayed in Europe. They are slowly preparing..... preparing to deal with Luo Feng.

.....

“I finally got the elixir of life” Luo Feng was full of excitement. Maybe in terms of price, the ‘soaring shuttle’ is over a thousand times more valuable than an ‘elixir of life’, but when Luo Feng received the soaring shuttle, his heart was filled more with ‘curiosity’ and ‘expectation’ than excitement! 12 billion is nothing for Luo Feng right now.

However, an elixir of life.....

Means his brother can stand up again! And can live like a normal person again.

“I have finally succeeded” Luo Feng was extremely enthusiastic.

“I’ll see if I have a chance to get a second portion so I can give it to brother Zhang” thought Luo Feng to himself. His grudge with Zhang Ze Hu back then caused Zhang Ze Hu’s squad to ambush his own, which lead to Zhang Ke’s arm being broken off. Whenever he faces brother Zhang, there’s always a bit of guilt in his heart.

Now that he has the ability, getting a portion of elixir of life isn’t much.

Furthermore, he planned on spending 30 billion for a portion of elixir of life. Now that he only spent 12 billion, another portion would probably bring the total up to around 30 billion anyway.

.....

Item after item was auctioned off. Even though they sold off quite quickly, there were still a total of 71 items. So even if it took two or three minutes to auction off an item, it would still take around three hours in total.

“Now for the 58th item, the spider silk left behind by the spider type emperor level monster, ‘Black Widow Spider King’—— ‘Golden Spider Silk’. It is 8.3 meters long and 6.1 meters wide. Opening bid of 5 billion Chinese dollars” after the Chinese man’s voice dropped, a large piece of golden spider silk appeared above the center platform.

“6 billion Chinese dollars!”

“7 billion!”

It seemed like there were quite a few bids this time.

Luo Feng, who didn’t want to bid anymore, couldn’t help but to yell: “8 billion!”. Ever since his battle with Li Yao, Luo Feng wanted to make a ‘net made out of SS grade materials’. He estimated he would spend around 20 to 30 billion, but Luo Feng was still satisfied after discovering this “Golden Spider Silk”.

The golden spider silk is left behind by the spider type emperor level monster, the ‘Black Widow Spider King’. However, black widow spider kings are famous for their venom, not their spider

webs. The ‘golden spider silk’ that comes from it usually can’t trap an emperor level monster, so it’s worse than a ‘net made out of SS grade materials’. However, it’s better than a ‘net made out of 9th series materials’.

There are a total of two spider type emperor level monsters.

One of them is the ‘Goliath Spider King’*, which is known for its webs. Once caught in its web, even an emperor level monster will have a hard time surviving.

The other is the ‘Black Widow Spider King’, which is known for its venom. Once venomed, even an existence surpassing the wargod level will die! This is where the spirit of nature, ‘hundred dew grass’, comes into play. Of course, the black widow spider king can spin webs, which is its “golden spider silk”. However, its weaker compared to the web spun by the goliath spider.

“Even though the golden spider silk can’t contain an emperor level monster, an emperor level monster still has to work quite a bit to get out of it. Using it to deal with wargods and horde leaders is more than enough” Luo Feng was very satisfied.

It’s not as tough as a SS grade ingredient.

But it’s more comfortable to use.

“9 billion”

“9.5 billion” clearly, nobody bothered to care about Luo Feng this time. Showing their respects once is enough.

“9.6 billion”

“9.8 billion” the bidding prices of the wargods weren’t increasing as quickly anymore.

“10 billion” yelled Luo Feng. The image on the center platform also changed into Luo Feng’s figure.

Jiang Fang quietly said to Luo Feng: “Luo Feng, a net made out of SS grade materials is around 20 to 30 billion, so this string is worth at most 12 billion. Any more and it’s not worth it”

“10 billion going once”

“10 billion going twice..... 10 billion three times! Congratulations, wargod Luo Feng” the Chinese man reported the final results.

.....

The auction continued for around there more hours. Luo Feng received a portion of elixir of life and some ‘Golden Spider Silk’ for a total of 22 billion Chinese dollars. After the auction ended, Luo Feng was dragged to the lobby by the Dojo of Limits’ wargods, where he became acquainted with some extremely famous wargods of the Dojo of Limits.

“Hello, Mr. Luo Feng” right when Luo Feng left his seat and was about to head back to his room, a white man with a large mustache smiled as he walked over.

“Hello” Luo Feng was confused.

“My name is Aurora, the manager of America’s 11th Bureau. Mr. Luo Feng, I was the one who supplied the ‘elixir of life’ you bought earlier” smiled the large moustached white man, “How about we have a drink over there?”

Luo Feng’s heart couldn’t help but to skip a beat.

He was the one who supplied the elixir of life?

“Oh? Okay” smiled Luo Feng. The big moustached Aurora couldn’t help but to smile out of joy. There are way too many people who want to become friends with extremely powerful wargods like Luo Feng, so Luo Feng usually ignores most of them. Only because of the elixir of life is he getting close to Aurora.

Both of them sat down and had a decent time chatting.

“Mr. Aurora, I would like to buy another portion of elixir of life from you. Is that okay?” asked Luo Feng.

“Oh, the elixir of life is the government’s, so I need to hand in an

application” hesitated Aurora.

“I won’t make it hard for you. I am willing to pay 20 billion” said Luo Feng.

“Oh”

Aurora smiled, “Mr. Luo Feng is the friend of our 11th Bureau. Even though it is a bit troublesome, do not worry and leave it to me. I will provide another portion of elixir of life using the price you used to buy the first portion, 12 billion Chinese dollars” how can he make Luo Feng pay 20 billion dollars, since even an official auction……

can only make the price reach around 20 billion. So only by offering a lower price can he build up their relationship.

“That would be great, thanks” smiled Luo Feng.

Just a phrase to save 8 billion, only someone dumb wouldn’t do that.

※※※※※※

Yang Zhou city, Ming-Yue sector.

Dawn. The dawn of an August summer was still quite cool and refreshing. You could see fighters warming up in the sector

everywhere. Even Luo Feng was taking a walk in the sector as he breathed in fresh air and adjusted himself.

"Morning, uncle Wang"

As Luo Feng walked, he would greet those he was familiar with.

"Mr. Luo Feng" a sound rose.

"Hm?" Luo Feng turned his head and saw two teenagers coming over. One of them even carried a backpack as he ran towards Luo Feng. The teenager with slightly curly hair said: "Mr. Luo Feng, these are the two things you bought from the Palace of Wargods. Your fingerprint can open the alloyed box"

As he said that, he took out an alloyed box that was completely black.

"Thank you" Luo Feng's eyes flashed as he took over the alloyed box. His finger swiped across the box, crack, the alloyed box opened.

Inside it were two stabilized test tubes. There was even a manual beside it. In the test tube was a slightly green liquid.

"It's this" Luo Feng took in a deep breath as he headed home.

In the lawn of the villa.

Brother Luo Hua was currently sitting on his wheelchair, observing the flowers in the lawn. His pants had nothing in them and it hurt just to look at such a sight.

“Feng, back so early?” mother Gong Xin Lan smiled as she walked out the house.

“Yeah” nodded Luo Feng.

“Feng is here, Hong Guo, let’s eat breakfast” yelled Gong Xin Lan. Father Luo Hong Guo peeked his head out the house and couldn’t help but to look towards the alloyed box in Luo Feng’s hands with shock: “Feng, how come a box appeared just from your morning walk”

Gong Xin Lan glared: “Old man, how come you have to ask about everything”

“Luo Hua!”

But Luo Feng looked towards brother Luo Hua.

“Hm?” brother Luo Hua looked towards Luo Feng with shock on his wheelchair, “Bro, need anything?”

“Go inside” Luo Feng let out a smile, “Prepare to throw away your wheelchair”

Luo Hua's expression froze: "Bro——"

Luo Feng held up the alloyed box and tapped the surface of it.

"It's, it's that....." Luo Hua's eyes were wide open and his body was slightly trembling. Almost instantly, his eyes became wet. The hands that were originally holding onto the wheelchair with strength started to shake.

Luo Feng nodded.

After seeing his brother nod, Luo Hua's tears flowed down.

This day.....

Luo Hua has only dreamed about a day like today since he was young. And finally, the day has come.

This day.....

Luo Feng has been waiting for this moment for a long time. And finally, the moment has come.

"Don't cry, smile" however, Luo Feng himself couldn't hold it in either as his eyes became wet too.

Volume 6: The Fifty Thousand Year Old Corpse

Chapter 1: Hot Cakes

Recently, not only does the entire Ming-Yue sector know the name ‘Luo Feng’, virtually all the residents in the surroundings of the Lotus Pond park know that name.

Lotus Pond park is right beside Ming-Yue sector. It is a public park.

Back then, Luo Hua met Nan at this park by pure chance. This park is very crowded and is also the main place where information spreads. Things about Luo Feng mainly spread from here. Legends about Luo Feng.....

The first one is about the special triangular shaped fighter jet parked in Ming-Yue sector. According to what others have said, this fighter jet was purchased by Luo Feng. People who are familiar with such things commented that the usual fighter jet used in the military is priced over 1 billion, and that’s an estimate. Fighter jets that are able to venture in the wilderness alone usually cost more than 10 billion. Only a portion of wargods are able to buy it, and this fighter jet seems a bit special.

So it’s probably even more expensive!

The residents of neighboring sectors thought to themselves about the meaning of ’10 billion Chinese dollars’ and all of them froze at the thought.

Secondly, it appears that Luo Feng has become the examiner of

Jiang-Nan city's Dojo of Limits! What kind of position is the examiner you ask? A position that's even bigger than the chairman! There are barely any people in Jiang-Nan headquarter city who have more authority than him. Even the mayor of Jiang-Nan city and the general of the army has to be polite around him. You definitely have to raise your thumb when mentioning such people!

The third legend is about the two famous handicaps in Ming-Yue sector. One of them is the brother of the genius fighter Luo Feng, 'Luo Hua'. Because of his relationship, he almost killed himself in the lake of Lotus Pond park. A handicap attempting to commit suicide..... this topic was discussed for quite a long time by the people in the park. And this handicap was actually healed! He's grown two legs out!

As for the other handicap, Zhang Ke. This is a 'warlord level' fighter, quite respectable. However, many people saw..... that Zhang Ke, who was once missing an arm, actually has two perfectly fine arms now. Afterwards, news spread from Ming-Yue sector: because of their relationship with Luo Feng, the two handicaps, 'Luo Hua' and 'Zhang Ke', received some extremely valuable medicine to recover their legs and arm.

.....

People haven't been able to stop discussing about these three huge legends.

Of course, a lot of people were envious of 'Zhen Nan"s parents. Back then, Zhen Nan's parents' interference with their daughter's

relationship almost caused Luo Hua to commit suicide..... but now, Zhen Nan's parents are happily welcoming Luo Hua with open arms. According to the legends, Luo Hua even bought a villa in the sector that Zhen Nan's family lives in.

The most amazing part is that Zhen Nan's parents were originally regular people. Who would've thought they would climb up to such a point!

However, everyone knows that.....

All of this is thanks to that extremely mysterious person—— Luo Feng! Only 19 years old, and yet he already stands at the top of the entire Jiang-Nan headquarter city. Even around the world, he is quite an influential figure. A lot of people in the surroundings became especially interested after hearing that Luo Feng apparently doesn't have a girlfriend yet.

Getting with Luo Feng's brother brings so much already.

If you can get with Luo Feng himself, then your next few generations will definitely be in happiness too.

※※※※※※

Ming-Yue sector, a training hall in the first floor of Limit Hall.

Luo Feng, who was sitting cross legged on his soaring shuttle in a training uniform, hovered in mid air as 12 blade pieces circled

around Luo Feng like bees. They crazily danced and would sometimes accelerate and sometimes decelerate. These 12 blade pieces seemed to be playing with each other as they frequently zipped past each other. Perhaps even a 0.01 second difference would cause them to collide.

"Got it!" Luo Feng let out a face of happiness as his 12 blade pieces stopped and hovered in the air.

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch that was currently acting as a stopwatch ——'3.08' flashed past.

"Pass!"

"The second drawing of the《Celestial Deity Catalog》is finally complete" Luo Feng was extremely happy, "Next, I'll start practicing the third drawing of the《Celestial Deity Catalog》". Truthfully, Luo Feng's spiritual force was barely enough to complete the second drawing, so that's why he completed it in just a few days.

From the third drawing on..... is where the real test begins.

"Golden silk net!"

Luo Feng looked towards a net that was bunched up in the corner. This gold colored net, under Luo Feng's watch, hovered and swiftly expanded. The small lump seemed small, but it became

surprisingly large after expanding in the center of the training room. A length of 8.3 meters and a width of 6.1 meters. This net was formed by densely packed, thin golden strings that were around 5 mm thick.

"Cover!" Luo Feng thought to himself.

The golden net instantly descended to the ground below like a magic carpet.

"Capture!" the golden net, like a palm, directly covered the fist strength testing machine to the side.

"The most important thing when using the golden net is speed" thought Luo Feng to himself, "If I want to capture Li Yao with the golden net, then I have to control it quickly!". Clearly, the speed at which he controls the golden net can't even begin to compare the speed at which he controls his throwing knives or the blade pieces of the soaring shuttle. Because, compared to those two things, its surface area is way too large, leading to an astonishingly large amount of air resistance.

.....

For the entire morning, Luo Feng stayed on the first floor of Limit Hall as he practiced in his private training room.

Limit Hall is extremely spacious and not many fighters train there. So chairman Zhou Zheng Yong and the three chiefs took the

initiative to remodel one of the training rooms in the first floor of Yang Zhou city's Limit Hall. They also sent over a lot of equipment to make it a training room suitable for wargods to train in.

And so, this training room became Luo Feng's private training room.

"Hey, mom, is food ready?" Luo Feng smiled as he pushed open the door of his home.

"Almost almost" in the kitchen, Gong Xin Lan was personally cooking as a maid assisted her. Mother Gong Xin Lan didn't have many hobbies, so she just cooked all the time. And since she was usually free all day, she plays some mahjong with the other housewives in the sector. Her days were quite comfortable.

Luo Feng looked towards the living room, where his father was currently laying on the sofa as he watched the news on TV.

"Bro, you're back" a boy and a girl walked out a room to the side.

The teenage boy's face seemed a bit pale and he was a bit skinny. However, he also seemed a bit handsome with his tall figure. The girl holding his hand also let out a slightly formal smile in front of Luo Feng. These two were indeed brother Luo Hua and Zhen Nan.

"Nan is here" Luo Feng smiled as he nodded, "Luo Hua, you better take her out somewhere this afternoon"

“Got it, bro” smiled Luo Hua as he nodded, “Oh yea, bro, I have quite a few photos of girls here; other people told Zhen Nan to bring them to you. Interested in looking at a few? There are quite a few beautiful girls”

Luo Feng froze.

“Oh yea” mother Gong Xin Lan peeked her head out the kitchen as she yelled, “Feng, when i went to exercise in the park this morning, quite a few people talked to me about this too. I also have quite a few photos of brilliant girls. I approve of some of them”

Luo Feng smacked his head.

Ever since he came back, too much stuff like this has been happening.

“Mom, didn’t I say not to mention things like this any more?” Luo Feng shook his head with a bitter face.

“Bro, you won’t lose anything by getting to know them. Some people don’t even have the chance to meet with beautiful girls. All of these girls are quite brilliant. If they aren’t brilliant, then they wouldn’t be confident enough to send their information over” Luo Hua’s eyebrows raised, “AHH——” Luo Hua looked towards his girlfriend beside him, since he was just pinched by her.

Luo Feng shook his head.

“Mom, dad” Luo Feng turned his head, “I won’t be eating dinner at home tonight, I have some stuff to do this afternoon”

At 4 PM of the same day, Luo feng rode on his auto jet and headed towards the main city sector from Yang Zhou city.

After parking the auto jet on the roof of the Dojo of Limits headquarters, Luo Feng rode on a Dojo of Limits private car to the airport.

Airport.

Luo Feng was wearing jeans and a black T-shirt. However, within the T-shirt was a black piece of armor, which was formed from the ‘Black God Set’. And within this black armor were the 365 blade pieces of the soaring shuttle, which were spread out around the armor.

First, it’s convenient, since wearing this armor is equivalent to Luo Feng bringing around his most powerful weapon, the ‘Soaring Shuttle’. Second, it’s safe! In terms of defense, the Black God set may be powerful, but according to the manual..... the material making up the soaring shuttle is even more amazing than the Black God set’s material!

“Arrived” Luo Feng looked over.

In the air, a dark blue light pierced the sky as it arrived. It then hovered in the sky above. This was indeed a large commercial

plane. This large commercial plane slowly descended and then stopped.

HUA——

The hatch opened and a staircase extended out automatically.

Including Luo Feng, there were six others who were here to welcome those who arrived. To able to come to the place where the plane landed shows that they are people of authority. Including Luo Feng, there were only six people. Most of the people welcoming those who arrived are waiting outside the exit.

“Xu Xin” Luo Feng raised his head and looked over.

Within the many passengers coming down the staircase, one of them was a girl wearing a light green collared shirt and jeans, which completely attracted Luo Feng’s eyes. Under the refreshing summer day, Xu Xin’s figure showed clearly. Ever since she was young, Xu Xin’s unique aura caused her to be even more attractive.

“In high school, Xu Xin was like a neighbor. When she was a manager in the HR alliance’s first floor’s bar, she gave off the feeling of a professional worker.....” Luo Feng admits that he has been attracted to Xu Xin ever since his freshman year of high school.

Xu Xin also looked down from the stairs and couldn’t help but to smile as she saw Luo Feng below.

The passengers continued to walk down.

When Xu Xin walked off the stairs, she directly headed towards Luo Feng. She had a bright smile on: “And I thought you weren’t coming”

“When did I ever go against my word” laughed Luo Feng.

“Xu Xin” a sound carried from behind.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to look over. A youth who appeared to be around 20 years old walked over. His clothes and shoes were clearly expensive, and the watch on his wrist..... also seemed to be of a famous brand. His smile gave off a feeling that he was naturally of high class. Luo Feng couldn’t help but to ask Xu Xin: “Your Xu family’s?”

“Not really” said Xu Xin quietly.

The teenager glanced at Luo Feng. Luo Feng’s attire was quite normal, like a random college student off the street. The youth elegantly extended his hand as he smiled: “Hello, My name is Sun Chao, I don’t know if you’re Xu Xin’s.....”

“Ah, Luo Feng!” an overjoyed voice rang.

Luo Feng turned his head and saw Xu Xin’s brother, ‘Xu Gang’, in

a suit as he ran over and smiled passionately. After seeing the youth beside him, he smiled, “Who would’ve thought that I would meet Luo Feng right when I return. Haha, this is great. Ah, Sun Chao, Let me introduce to you. This is my sister’s boyfriend, Luo Feng”

Chapter 2: Arrival

“Boyfriend?” Xu Xin looked at her brother Xu Gang with her eyes opened wide. Does her brother not know..... that she and Luo Feng haven’t confirmed their relationship yet?

“Boyfriend?” Luo Feng had an odd expression on as he remained silent.

However, his image of Xu Gang improved a bit. Even though this ‘brother in law’ values position and authority too much, he can’t blame him. Luo Feng was unamused during their first meeting, but truthfully, Xu Gang did it for his sister! And now, he’s actively promoting their relationship.....

It’s not bad, having a brother in law who can grasp the situation.

“Luo Feng” smiled Xu Gang, “I was quite disrespectful during our first meeting, I hope my younger sister’s husband can overlook that.....”

Within a blink of an eye, Luo Feng’s identity raised from Xu Xin’s boyfriend to ‘husband’.

“Brother!” Xu Xin couldn’t help but to yell.

“Ah” Xu Gang said in a weird tone, “My sister is embarrassed. Luo Feng, I’ll treat you next time. As for now, I’ll head back with uncle Bo and the others so we won’t distract you two” as he said

that, he pulled on Sun Chao's arm as he dragged him away, "Sun Chao, go, let's return. Don't intrude on their world of two people"

Sun Chao's expression was frozen and awkward as he was dragged away.

.....

Sun Chao, Xu Gang, and their family stepped out the airport and were split into three cars.

In an elegant, long limousine.

Sun Chao and Xu Gang sat in the back row. Xu Gang wasn't as energetic as before as he calmly glanced at Sun Chao beside him: "Sun Chao, you better not mess with my sister and Luo Feng's relationship, or else....."

"We grew up together, so as your older brother, I'll remind you. Our Xu family's higher ups completely approve of and support my sister and Luo Feng's relationship. Whoever messes with that, even if your dad protects you, won't have a good future" said Xu Gang quietly, "The stuff between my sister and Luo Feng is currently our family's most important thing"

Sun Chao remained silent, saying nothing.

After a while, Sun Chao came up with the phrase: "Xu Gang, that Luo Feng..... could it be the Luo Feng from the Dojo of Limits?"

“Oh, you know?” laughed Xu Gang.

“Two days ago overseas, my dad called me and mentioned this Luo Feng. He said this Luo Feng has quite the image in the Palace of Wargods” Sun Chao let out a deep sigh, “At the airport just now, your words were enraging me. However, I felt like I heard the name ‘Luo Feng’. And I remembered after getting on the car”

Xu Gang laughed as he looked at him: “Still want to fight over my sister?”

“Fight over what?”

Sun Chao glared at Xu Gang, “Your sister always ignores me and never gives me even the slightest bit of respect. However, I didn’t care back then..... I just thought that I haven’t spent enough time with her yet. That’s why I came over with you guys this time. However, who would’ve known that Xu Xin’s boyfriend is this Luo Feng. I can’t fight over that. If I really try to, my dad will probably break my legs!”

Sun Chao’s father is a wargod level fighter! One of the Xu family’s guest wargods.

Because of his father’s position, Sun Chao had the right to manage a business under the Xu family in America. Sun Chao was quite clear..... even his father can’t catch up to this Luo Feng, so would he dare to mess with him? Fighting over someone’s girlfriend, and that someone is Luo Feng. Is he looking for death?

“And you. Xu Xin has a boyfriend like this and you don’t even remind me in advance” said Sun Chao with dissatisfaction.

“You’re blaming me? My schedule was packed and I had to help look over our family’s business in America. From beginning to end, I only met you three times in America. How should I know you only came back to the country to chase after my sister. Didn’t you say..... that you were homesick and wanted to visit your parents?” Xu Gang glared.

Sun Chao was speechless.

That was just an excuse..... I guess I came back for nothing. Whatever, I guess I can go visit my parents. As for Xu Xin, first, she isn’t interested, and second, my heart becomes cold whenever I think of Luo Feng’s legends. Fuck..... that guy is an ‘invincible wargod’ who can easily kill me with the amount of effort it takes to eat food or drink water.

※※※※※※

Around 8 PM, night arrived. The dim light from the street lights scattered across the concrete sidewalk.

Luo Feng and Xu Xin walked side by side. They ate dinner together, and now, Luo Feng is walking her home!

“Rich people sure are different. Land in a headquarter city is

priceless, and yet the place where rich people live is so quiet. Barely any people are here" smiled Luo Feng, "If it was in the sector of another area, then the streets would be filled with cars and people by now. The rich people's sector barely has anyone"

Xu Xin speechlessly glanced at Luo Feng and then said: "You're talking about rich people? You don't have money? Even if you take out all the usable money my family has, it still wouldn't be enough to purchase your auto jet!"

Even though the Xu family is one of the country's twelve families and extremely rich, most of their money is invested in capital assets. The money they can actually use is indeed not enough to purchase Luo Feng's auto jet.

"How did you know about the auto jet?" Luo Feng was shocked.

When they were eating, Luo Feng knew that Xu Gang and the others purposefully withheld his information when they were overseas. However..... paper can't contain fire. After the incident at the Palace of Wargods' auction house, Luo Feng became even more famous. Xu Xin learned about this through the HR alliance's internal discussion forums.

"Luo Feng the great examiner, your jet is parked in Ming-Yue sector, but no pilot ever enters or exits it. Could it be, that you're a pilot?" Xu Xin started giggling.

Luo Feng was speechless.

A pilot? Every pilot of every fighter aircraft needs extensive training. No matter how much of a genius they are, they cannot become a fighter aircraft pilot without huge amounts of training.

Luo Feng wasn't a pilot, the people of the HR alliance were easily able to determine that. So, Luo Feng must be riding in an 'auto jet'! Most regular fighters don't know about it, but the higher ups of the HR alliance were clear about it. Even the higher ups of the Dojo of Limits like the examiners and investigators have to pay, after discounts, 180 billion Chinese dollars for an 'emperor level auto jet'.

Other countries and the HR alliance wants to purchase it?

Sure!

As long as you can pay the price. Buy it for 200 billion? In your dreams!

"How about, we ride on the auto jet?" suggested Luo Feng.

Xu Xin wanted to, but she looked at her watch: "It's late now, so if we rush over there to ride on it, it'll probably be 11 or 12 PM by the time we get back"

"It won't be long" smiled Luo Feng as he commanded, "#1, come here"

"What are you doing?" asked Xu Xin in a confused tone.

Luo Feng smiled mysteriously as he raised his head towards the sky.

Xu Xin, still confused, also raised her head towards the sky.

A flowing light stopped in the sky above, which was indeed the dark blue triangular fighter jet. It slowly descended. Xu Xin saw the triangular fighter jet in the air, mouth agape: “So fast.....”

“The auto jet’s top speed surpasses mach 10. As long as I’m on earth, I’ll be able to send it a command” Luo Feng smiled as he pulled Xu Xin’s hand, “Come on, let’s go up there!”. Immediately, blade piece after blade piece appeared from Luo Feng’s neck. The 365 blade pieces quickly formed into the soaring shuttle. Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle with one hand holding Xu Xin’s hand and the other hand holding her waist.

Whoosh!

The soaring shuttle flew up and the hatch of the hovering auto jet opened automatically.

“This, this.....” Xu Xin looked downwards with shock.

She’s flying?

After that, Xu Xin reacted: Luo Feng was holding her!

“Xu Xin” Luo Feng held Xu Xin’s waist as his body pushed against hers. He felt the temperature coming from Xu Xin’s soft body and couldn’t help but to lower his head and look at Xu Xin. His heart moved and he lowered his head..... and kissed.

While the wind blew in midair, Xu Xin was absentminded: her first kiss was stolen just like that.

After their kiss.

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at Xu Xin, who was bright red, as he softly said: “From now on, you, Xu Xin, will be Luo Feng’s girlfriend”

“You’re so forceful” Xu Xin couldn’t help but to glare, “And what if I don’t agree?”

“Then I’ll let go and let you drop” Luo Feng had a playful smile on as he purposefully loosened his hand a bit.

Xu Xin’s body shook a bit and she was shocked as she saw the trees and streets below. She couldn’t help but to say, “Be careful, the ground is like 70 to 80 meters away”

“Do you still dare to disagree?” laughed Luo Feng.

“Hmph” Xu Xin giggled, “It took you so long to confess that I

thought you were too scared to". Indeed..... Luo Feng and Xu Xin frequently video chatted and their chats last for one to two hours. Even though none of them said it clearly, the way they acted was exactly like how people in a relationship would act.

They were just missing the confession.

"Because, in the past, I didn't have enough power. I didn't want trouble you" said Luo Feng softly.

Xu Xin's eyes became red and couldn't help but to bury her head in Luo Feng's chest.

Just like that.....

The auto jet hovered in midair. Beside the auto jet, Luo Feng was hugging Xu Xin while he stood on the soaring shuttle. For a long time.....

This night, was fated to be a special one.

※※※※※※

Outer space.

The stars were plenty. This infinite universe is quite mysterious. Nobody knows what wonders the universe holds.

Whoosh!

A golden stream of light swiftly approached earth from outer space at a speed nearing the speed of light! This golden stream of light swiftly pierced through the atmosphere and fell towards the earth.

Earth, Pacific Ocean. Around a few hundred miles away from the islands called the ‘Hawaiian Islands” before the Grand Nirvana period.

Whoosh!

The golden stream of light directly flew into the sea. The weird thing is, even though it descended at a speed nearing the speed of light, it didn’t cause the surface of the ocean to change at all. The waves were the same as always. Not only did the ocean not change at all, no satellite or apparatus was able to detect this golden stream of light!

Deep in the sea!

Around 3,000 meters deep, the golden light already dissipated, leaving behind a black, oval shaped egg that was around 12 meters in diameter. There were peculiar golden markings on the surface of the black egg. Keep in mind that the ‘dragon eggs’ of earth only had a diameter of around one meter.

At this moment——

was complete silence!

Every satellite from every country, and even the special devices from the archaeological ruins, were operating as usual. None of them were able to detect its arrival!

Chapter 3: General of the Land Forces

Ever since the Grand Nirvana period, the ocean has always been the territory of monsters! The area of the ocean far exceeds the area of the land. And thus, the boundless ocean gave birth to countless types of monsters! You can say that, if you throw someone in the ocean, only bones will remain after a few seconds, no matter how good they are in the water!

Pacific Ocean, around 3,000 meters deep.

The gigantic, black, oval shaped egg sat there motionlessly. After 12 minutes it fell into the ocean, a fish-type monster with blue scales that was around seven to eight meters long swam to the egg and started circling it. This fish-type monster slowly swam. Having a bit of intellect..... it determined that this egg in front of it probably isn't a rock.

Suddenly——

The fish-type monster opened wide. Each of its teeth in its mouth were huge and sharp. Two rows of teeth were intertwined like a saw. It opened its mouth and ferociously bit the black egg!

"CRACK!"

The gigantic fish-type monster shook its head around in pain. Blood could actually be seen drizzling out the side of its large mouth, and a few cracked teeth fell out! Keep in mind that the force of its bite is quite astonishing. As for this fish-type monster,

its bite can easily crush bedrock. Even a horde leader level monster's corpse wouldn't cause its teeth to shatter!

In fear, the green scaled fish swung its tail and, ~whoosh, left swiftly.

As for the gigantic, black egg, it stayed there like usual. The surface of the egg's shell was still black with mysterious golden markings mixed in. The fish-type monster's ferocious bite from before didn't even leave behind a single mark.

The humans on earth continued to live their lives like usual.

After Luo Feng and Xu Xin confirmed their relationship, Xu Xin no longer had class, since it was summer break. This young couple would frequently travel around the world. Every morning and night is Luo Feng's training time. As for the afternoon..... that'll be the time for Luo Feng and Xu Xin.

After eating lunch, the two of them rode on the auto jet, which could fly to any headquarter city in China in a small amount of time.

.....

August 26th, morning. Yang-Zhou city's Ming-Yue sector. Inside Luo Feng's private training room on the first floor of Limit Hall.

He sat cross legged on the soaring shuttle as he hovered in

midair.

“The third drawing” Luo Feng closed his eyes. In his brain was a clear, yet complicated, drawing that seemed like a maze. Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! 13 blade pieces swiftly circled Luo Feng as they followed the tracks of the drawing in Luo Feng’s head. And since that drawing had many intersections——

Quite a few times, the blade pieces would barely manage to pass each other.

“Slowly”

“Faster, even faster”

“Not good, brake!”

Luo Feng was so nervous that sweat could be seen appearing on his forehead. One of the dancing blades suddenly stopped, and three blades flew past from the front, side, and back.

“Accelerate”

“Got it!”

Luo Feng rapidly opened his eyes and scanned towards the tactical communications watch on the wrist of his left hand. The timer on the watch was moving swiftly.

“5.11 seconds? Kind of slow, but this was the first time I managed to complete the entire third drawing”

“However, my ‘brake’ in the middle wasted a few tenths of a second, leading to this poor result”

“I’m at 5.11 seconds, but need 3.6 seconds to pass” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to shake his head.

The farther you go, the harder it is to shave time off your record. A completion time of 5.11 seconds vs a completion time of 4.8 seconds. The time difference doesn’t seem big, but the difference in difficulty is gigantic…… as for the ‘3.6 seconds’ required to pass, Luo Feng isn’t even close to that point. The path was long, so he could only diligently move forward one step at a time.

“Continue!” Luo Feng closed his eyes and continued.

Usually, he can finish one drawing in a few seconds!

So Luo Feng practices his《Celestial Deity Catalog》 several thousand times a day! His entire morning is spent on training the《Celestial Deity Catalog》. After his training ends, his entire body becomes exhausted. As for night, Luo Feng spends his time training his fitness level, blade technique, technique, etc.

…..

The sun was high up in the sky and it was around 10 AM. Luo Feng was still focused on his training. His powerful spiritual force allowed him to continuously training. The only part of him that gets tired..... is his mind. Even an invincible wargod can't be in a state of extreme focus thousands of times throughout the morning of each day without enough willpower.

If you want to become powerful.....

Talent is important, but effort is even more important!

"Hm?" Luo Feng opened his eyes and looked outside through the window.

A dark blue saucer-shaped fighter aircraft was slowly descending from the sky. It landed on a grassy lawn in the sector. Chief instructor Wu Tong had a few fighters with him and was currently welcoming someone. The hatch of the dark blue saucer-shaped fighter aircraft opened and a total of three people came out. Sadly, Luo Feng didn't recognize any of them.

"Who are these three people, coming all the way to Ming-Yue sector?" Luo Feng's eyebrows slightly raised as he sat cross legged on the soaring shuttle, "It seems like they have some authority, since they are able to ride on such a fighter aircraft"

"Since Wu Tong didn't notify me to meet them, they probably aren't too important"

As of now, Luo Feng is the investigator of Jiang-Nan headquarter city and is an ‘invincible wargod’, so very, very few people can make him go out and personally welcome them.

“Continue!”

Luo Feng closed his eyes and continued training his《Celestial Deity Catalog》. Luo Feng was clear..... that his talent allowed him to shoot towards the ‘peak of the advanced level wargod level’ like a rocket. After that, his dark golden ball shattered, and breaking through the wargod level to the ‘existence surpassing the wargod level’ isn’t even done through talent.

He can only move forward step by step! Many people are stuck at the advanced level wargod level, as they aren’t sure what to do. But Luo Feng knows a path suitable for spirit readers——

《Celestial Deity Catalog》!

Even though he needs to practice countless times, each bit of improvement brings Luo Feng a bit closer to his breakthrough.

“Beep! Beep! Beep!”

After practicing who knows how many times, the tactical communications watch started ringing.

“Hu” Luo Feng opened his eyes and glanced at the tactical communications watch, “The alarm rang, it’s 11:45. Time to go

back and eat lunch”

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The soaring shuttle instantly transformed into countless curved blade pieces. Each of them flew inside the Black God set from Luo Feng’s neck like fish. Luo Feng himself landed on the floor.

“Hm?” Luo Feng glanced at the fist strength testing machine, “I haven’t tested my fitness level for around half a month, so let’s test it!”

After this private training hall was built, Luo Feng tested himself once.

However——

Luo Feng, who has consumed ‘dragon blood’ and the ‘thousand year willow heart’, only absorbed a bit of their effects in the beginning. A lot of the dragon blood’s power and the thousand year willow heart’s vitality are hiding in his body, waiting to be absorbed! When Luo Feng trains, this energy is rapidly absorbed, so Luo Feng has recently been improving at an astonishing rate!

“Fist strength!” Luo Feng turned on the fist strength testing machine.

“Peng!”

Like a shooting star, Luo Feng's fist smashed into the fist strength testing machine. The machine shook ferociously. And this is a top quality fist strength testing machine sent by chairman Zhuo Zheng Yong and the others.

"Beep!"

"239881 kg" these numbers appeared on the display.

Luo Feng let out a smile: "Not bad, I'll probably reach 256,000 kg in one or two months". Luo Feng's fitness level has been rising rapidly ever since his return. No wonder even 'Hong' said that he doesn't need to consume any other treasure. As long as his body continues to absorb the leftover effects of the dragon blood and the thousand year willow heart, he'll improve rapidly.

"Speed!"

Luo Feng turned on the speed testing machine and stood in front of the 80 meter track.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng accelerated like lightning and passed the speed of sound after his first step. After that, he continued to accelerate. After a few steps, he reached his top speed. Just like that, only his shadow could be seen as he flew past the speed testing machine. After that, he swiftly came to a stop.

“583.6 m/s?” Luo Feng mumbled to himself as he looked at the numbers, “Not bad”

As for reaction speed?

As a spirit reader, does he even need to test that? He’ll definitely reach a grade of superior for a peak of the advanced level wargod level!

“After one to two months, my fitness level will reach the ‘advanced level wargod level'”

“After around two years, my fitness level should be able to reach the ‘peak of the advanced level wargod level'” Luo Feng had his loose training outfit on as he walked out the training hall.

Click!

The door to the training hall closed automatically.

“Investigator Luo” in the hallway outside the training hall stood a youth who was smiling. He slightly bowed, “The commander is waiting for investigator Luo in the conference room”

“Commander? Which commander?” Luo Feng asked in a confused tone.

He doesn’t think he knows any commanders.

“The commander from the southeast military sector” smiled the youth.

“Let’s go” nodded Luo Feng.

However, Luo Feng was shocked..... as of now, each headquarter city has military sectors in the surroundings. However, the usual military sector near headquarter cities are called ‘military subsectors’. For example, the military sector to the north of Jiang-Nan headquarter city is a military subsector! However, the southeastern military sector is different..... this southeastern military sector was built to stop invading sea monsters from the eastern sea.

It’s a large military sector!

A large military sector, in terms of power, is way more powerful than a military subsector. And of course, the amount of equipment they have way surpasses the amount in a military subsector.

.....

Inside the conference room.

Right when Luo Feng stepped into the conference room, he saw three people inside: a middle-aged man. Even though his hair had some white hairs mixed in, he sat perfectly straight. His gaze was

sharp like a panther's. Beside him was a middle-aged man wearing glasses. And the third was chief instructor Wu Tong from Limit Hall.

"Hello, Mr. Luo Feng" the middle aged man stood up, and the man wearing glasses beside him also smiled as he stood up.

"Hello" Luo Feng was a bit confused.

But he did have a nice image of him..... because he recognized that the three people who got off the saucer-shaped fighter aircraft were precisely these few people. They arrived almost two hours ago, but decided to wait quietly instead of interrupting his training! Just because of this, he has to show some respect.

"Luo Feng" smiled Wu Tong on the side, "Let me introduce to you, this is Li Da Wei, the commander of the southeastern sector, commander Li. Beside him is executive officer Wang Luo Han, executive officer Wang"

Luo Feng nodded.

Commander of the southeastern military sector. As the commander of a large military sector, his title is general of the land forces. As of now, it's the highest ranking military position in China!

And commanders of military subsectors, like the commander of the military sector north of Jiang-Nan city, have the title of major

general of the land forces. One can imagine just how large the difference is between a ‘military subsector’ and a ‘large military sector’ just from their titles!

To be able to lead the southeastern military sector..... this Li Da Wei is definitely one of the most highest ranking people in all of China!

And such a figure actually personally came all the way here and would rather wait quietly for two hours than interrupt Luo Feng’s training.

Chapter 4: Personal Army

“Spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level? You indeed are quite different” right when commander LI saw Luo Feng enter, he started observing this legendary genius. The Luo Feng in front of him was wearing a regular training uniform and had a few balls of sweat on his forehead. A seemingly formless energy emanated from Luo Feng, which caused him to seem like an extremely powerful beast.

This caused commander Li and executive officer Wang’s heart beats to accelerate a bit.

They didn’t know, that this was because Luo Feng was practicing the《Celestial Deity Catalog》a few thousand times earlier this morning. Due to his exhaustion, he couldn’t perfectly control his spiritual force, which caused quite a bit to leak out.

“You guys chat, I’ll go out first” smiled Wu Tong.

“Thank you, chief instructor Wu”

Li Da Wei and Wang Luo Han watched Wu Tong leave. Even though Li Da Wei and Wang Luo Han are of high status, Wu Tong is still part of the ‘Dojo of Limits’. The Chinese government still want to remain on friendly relations with the Dojo of Limits.

“Commander Li, executive office, let us sit and chat” smiled Luo Feng as he sat down.

Li Da Wei and Wang Luo Han both smiled as they sat down. Li Da Wei smiled as he said: “I have long heard of Mr. Luo Feng’s grand name. In the Palace of Wargods, I watched Mr. Luo Feng from afar. And now, after meeting face to face, I realized that Mr. Luo Feng seems even more extraordinary than he did in the Palace of Wargods”

“If commander Li keeps complimenting me, I’ll end up flying” laughed Luo Feng.

“Not a compliment, respect!” smiled commander Li, “I will be 62 this year, but I’m still an intermediate level wargod. This is my limit. According to our military’s information, Mr. Luo Feng once defeated Phantom Demon Catalan, Blood Shadow Ethan, Great Bear Keita, and Vulture Li Yao, the four great advanced level wargods. And three of these four have ‘Black God sets’..... this battle score is outstanding. The highest title, ‘invincible wargod’, was given to Mr. Luo Feng by the Dojo of Limits, which also matches Mr. Luo Feng’s strength. As a fighter..... I truly respect Mr. Luo Feng”

After hearing this, Luo Feng didn’t let it get to his head.

Truthfully, when someone is complimented, especially by someone with high status like the commander of the south eastern military sector, it would make them really happy! However, Luo Feng hasn’t meddled around in the government. He is in a high position because of his ability, and also because of his personality.

Just a few simple sentences caused Luo Feng to have a good impression.

Since Li Da Wei and Wang Luo Han were clear—— even though they held high positions in the Chinese government, as Li Da Wei is the commander of a military sector and the general of the land forces..... Luo Feng is an examiner of the Dojo of Limits. And the Dojo of Limits is the earth's most elite power!

Of course they'll hold an extraordinary position! Even though they haven't formed a country, none of the five great countries are willing to mess with them. Instead, they would prefer to be on friendly terms.

If they have a request for Luo Feng, they of course have to get Luo Feng into a good mood. Otherwise, if they get escorted out by Luo Feng..... even if they are the higher ups of the military, they can't do anything about him.

"Mr. Luo Feng, if you don't mind, I'll disrespectfully call you Luo Feng. And no need to call me commander or anything..... just call me Li Da Wei, old Li, or even brother Li" smiled Li Da Wei.

"Haha, I'll call you old Li" smiled Luo Feng, "Old Li, feel free to say anything you guys came here for"

In the envelope the Dojo of Limits gave to Luo Feng about the 'responsibilities of an examiner', things that the examiner would face and things that the examiner is responsible for..... all of these were mentioned. So Luo Feng vaguely knew what these two people

were here for.

"Alright, I'll be direct" Li Da Wei's face became a bit more serious, "Even though our human society has powerful fighters and laser cannons, the monster hordes are too powerful!"

"Not that I'm trying to lower morale! In terms of numbers, even the land monsters far outnumber us humans" sighed Li Da Wei as he shook his head, "If it weren't for the threat of the 'laser cannon', how could humans live peacefully in headquarter cities?"

Luo Feng slightly frowned as he continued to listen quietly.

"Humans and land monsters, are in a stalemate!"

"We won't use our laser cannons against the emperor level monsters. And the emperor level monsters won't join the monster hordes in their invasions against the headquarter cities! Both sides have an agreement" Li Da Wei sighed as he said, "Actually, about the agreement..... your head, 'Hong', was the one who negotiated with the emperor level monsters back then"

Luo Feng froze.

Negotiations between humans and monsters? Hong went to negotiate?

"The monster hordes on land and the monster hordes in the sky aren't too dangerous. Last year, our China had one grade one

monster tide, six grade two monster tides, and 21 grade three monster tides. These are all within an acceptable range" said Li Da Wei nonchalantly.

Luo Feng was shocked.....

These numbers were all confidential. Luo Feng didn't know that the country was attacked this much every year.

"The most dangerous monsters to our country are the monsters in the sea" Li Da Wei's expression was extremely serious, "Even laser cannons cannot threaten the powerful sea monsters that are deep in the sea. And the amount of monsters in the sea vastly outnumber the amount of land monsters and sky monsters. How could they give in and negotiate?"

"Also—— once in the sea, human fighters probably only have 20 to 30 percent of their power left. We cannot even initiate the attack" Li Da Wei shook his head.

Luo Feng nodded silently.

Indeed, humans are weakened quite a bit in the water. Even that little lake by the misty island almost ended up killing Luo Feng. And don't even mention the vast, boundless sea. As of now, humanity has no way of initiating the attack against the sea monsters.

"We can only defend" Li Da Wei's face had sadness written on it,

“The monsters in the sea can attack the inner parts of the country via the rivers! The sea monsters have peculiar powers: as long as there are enough of them, they can create their own rivers! So us humans cannot allow them to enter. We have to block them with terrain, laser cannons, and our army!”

“Losses are big” Li Da Wei shook his head.

“Even if we kill billions of sea monsters at once..... who knows how many sea monsters are born every day. The battles between the large and small monsters causes many of them to die. Whether or not we kill them..... makes no difference to the sea monsters overall” said Li Da Wei helplessly.

Luo Feng also felt helpless.

Indeed——

Monsters frequently kill each other: survival of the fittest. Whether or not humans kill some sea monsters makes no difference to the sea monsters overall.

“So, Luo Feng, I hope you can occasionally assist our southeastern military sector when we need it and deal with some of the more powerful sea monsters. Don’t worry..... emperor level monsters wouldn’t dare to enter the rivers. Our laser cannons are waiting for them” said Li Da Wei.

An invincible wargod.....

is sometimes more effective than an army of 10,000 in a battle against monsters!

“Alright, I accept” said Luo Feng without hesitation.

The battle between humans and monsters determines their survival, so he should help!

“Thank you!” said Li Da Wei thankfully.

An invincible wargod..... and a spirit reader!

In a battle against a sea monster tide with no ’emperor level monsters’, is even more useful than 10 laser cannons!

“Luo Feng, according to the rules, the army will grant you the title of ‘major general’. Even though it doesn’t come with much power, it represents status. You can save yourself a lot of trouble if you ever go to the army from now on” smiled Li Da Wei, “This title is pretty good already. The title of a commander of a military subsector is major general too”

“Haha..... old Li, to tell you the truth, I wanted to enroll into military school when I was in high school” laughed Luo Feng.

“Oh, how come you didn’t then? Otherwise, a great talent like you would be in our military” followed Li Da Wei.

“Nobody can predict the twists of life” smiled Luo Feng as he shook his head.

He couldn’t enroll into military school, but ended up as a major general!

Keep in mind that there is no navy anymore. Airforce? Just look at the price of a fighter jet and you’ll know that the size of the air force is definitely small. So—— as of now, the land army makes up most of a country’s army. Which means that a title of major general is indeed quite prestigious.

“Luo Feng, even though you don’t have that much power as a major general, according to the rules, your level of ‘invincible wargod’ enables you to receive a personal army of 900 people” said Li Da Wei.

“Oh, a personal army of 900 people? What about the examiner of the Thunder Dojo” smiled Luo Feng as he asked.

“His is a personal army of 500 people” Li Da Wei and Wang Luo Han, who remained silent the whole time, laughed.

They were clear that the Dojo of Limits and Thunder Dojo are always competing with each other. Both huge dojos are spread across all over the world. As for their heads, one of them is #1 and one of them is #2. Both of them are existences that quickly came to power after the Grand Nirvana period! And Thunder God even claims that his speed and fitness level are #1.

Maybe in terms of strength, he's a bit off from Hong. But clearly, he is the closest man to Hong at the moment.

Just from this chat, Luo Feng became a major general of China and now has a personal army of 900 people. Of course, his responsibility is to—— assist the south eastern military sector when they need help and deflect the sea monster's invasion!

.....

The days passed one by one and September 1st approached. The night of September 1st is the night where the Dojo of Limits in the main sector holds their welcome banquet for the new examiner.

Night of August 31st.

Listening room, Xu Xin appeared on the wall's display.

"Luo Feng, how about I wear this? Would this fit for the banquet?" on the display, Xu Xin was wearing a light yellow evening dress.

"Pretty good" Luo Feng was smiling a bit as he nodded.

"Why do you always say pretty good" Xu Xin started to get a bit irritated, "Answer me right now. Only three answers—— not good, average, very good"

Luo Feng touched his nose and smiled: “Okay, this one..... is average. Not as good as the purple one from before”

“Oh, then let me try the next one” Xu Xin jogged away and disappeared from the display.

Suddenly, Luo Feng’s tactical communications watch rang——Beep! Beep!

“Hm?”

“Mail?” Luo Feng pressed the button and opened the mail. The title was——《Archaeological Ruin Discovered》.

Chapter 5: Archaeological Ruin #9

“Archaeological ruin?” As if a bucketful of water poured onto his head, Luo Feng shuddered. He stopped his smiling and instantly became serious. His eyes were like lightning as they stared at the mail. He said softly: “Open!”

Beep!

The mail instantly opened, and a letter with Chinese on it appeared.

“Examiner Luo Feng:

Please arrive at the world headquarters of the Dojo of Limits in Hong Ning headquarter city before 6 PM, 9/29. Many wargods will assemble and head to ‘Archaeological Ruin #9’ together.

Three reminders:

1, ‘Archaeological Ruin #9’ is one of the safer ruins. It is the only place to get a ‘Black God set’. Wargods have a 28% chance to succeed and a 72% chance to die. Please think carefully before deciding whether or not to enter. Once you enter, you cannot back out.

2, Everyone only has one chance to enter ‘Archaeological Ruin #9’.

3, Fighters who enter ‘Archaeological Ruin #9’ are forbidden from using special defensive gear like the Black God set. They are only allowed to use battle uniforms created on earth.

Please think carefully before making your decision!

If you decide to enter, please prepare! Arrive at the appointed location before the specified date.

Dojo of Limits

August 31st, 2057”

At the end of the letter was the emblem of the Dojo of Limits, which was shaped like a stamp. Just this simple letter caused Luo Feng to calm down completely. He lowered his head as he stared at the three reminders. He felt like the temperature around him dropped by several degrees.

“72% chance of death?” Luo Feng frowned, “and a success rate of 28%. Which is to say….. if you fail, you die!”

“And this is too high. Three out of four people die!”

Clearly…..

Only confident wargods would dare to enter ‘Archaeological Ruin #9′. However, even though they’re confident….. the death rate is

still as high as 72%! This means that the humans on earth have not found the trick to succeeding. If they knew, then the death rate wouldn't be so high!

"And you're not allowed to use special gear like the Black God set?" Luo Feng frowned.

"What kind of bullshit place is this! They even forbid you from using certain gear!"

.....

Deep into the night. Luo Feng sat on the sofa in the listening room quietly. He frowned as he contemplated.

He knew absolutely nothing about archaeological ruin #9. Knowledge is the key to victory. If he just charges into the archaeological ruin like a blind man, and is also forbidden from using the Black God set..... without enough defense, he might lose his life.

"Luo Feng, how about this one?" on the display, Xu Xin changed into another dress.

"Yea, not bad" Luo Feng raised his head and squeezed out a smile.

"What's wrong?" Even Xu Xin in the main city sector could tell something was wrong with Luo Feng through the display.

“I still have some things to take care of, I’ll tell you later” said Luo Feng.

“Oh, alright. Don’t pressure yourself too much, you’re already doing great” encouraged Xu Xin.

Beep!

The projection turned off.

The listening room returned to darkness. Luo Feng sat on the sofa alone. It was already deep into the night, so it was very quiet.

After thinking alone for a bit, Luo Feng made his decision.

“Beep, beep, beep——”

He dialed the inner Dojo of Limits’ phone number. Even though it is a bit rash to do so, he definitely cannot go into archaeological ruin #9 without knowing anything.

“Hello” the low sound rose.

Even though he talked to this mysterious person a few times, Luo Feng realized that this mysterious person’s voice almost always remained cold and low. Only when he said “thanks, mister” last time did this mysterious person’s tone change as he laughed a bit.

“Hello, I’m Luo Feng” said Luo Feng.

“I know it’s you, examiner Luo Feng. What do you need?” the voice was cold as always.

“I just received a mail titled《Archaeological Ruin Discovered》. It said that this time’s target, archaeological ruin #9, has a death rate of 72%. And, we cannot use the Black God set. Correct?” asked Luo Feng.

“Yes” answered the low voice easily.

Luo Feng continued to ask: “I want to know, do wargods encounter the same challenges and dangers?”

“Different!”

“As long as your fitness level reaches the wargod level, you can enter archaeological ruin #9” the low voice didn’t pause at all, “Beginner level wargods, intermediate level wargods, and advanced level wargods encounter different challenges and dangers after entering archaeological ruin #9. Some advanced level wargods could lose their lives while beginner level wargods succeed!”

Luo Feng’s face changed slightly.

This was what he was most afraid of: different difficulties. Then it's up to luck. Even though he's strong, what if he gets into an extremely dangerous situation?

"However, according to the data, advanced level wargods have higher success rates than intermediate level wargods. And intermediate level wargods have higher success rates than beginner level wargods" said the low voice.

Luo Feng frowned slightly.

Back when he talked with the head, 'Hong', it sounded like..... that he could easily get a 'Black God set' if he entered the archaeological ruin, as if there was no danger at all. But now that he looks at it, this place has a death rate of 72% and people are forbidden from using the Black God set.

"Why are we forbidden from using the Black God set?" Luo Feng couldn't help but to continue asking.

"You cannot enter while wearing the Black God set" answered the low voice simply.

"What are my chances of success if I enter" asked Luo Feng.

"Using previous cases of success as reference, the archaeological ruin is full of things that cannot be predicted, so I cannot give a precise answer. I can only give a guess—— the chances of success should be over 80%!" answered the low voice.

Luo Feng went silent.

Yeah, the archaeological ruin is an archaeological ruin because it is special. Humans as of now cannot understand them completely!

“When I talked with the head, the head made it sound quite easy” Luo Feng continued.

“I don’t know” answered the low voice.

Luo Feng froze.

“Usually, you have to apply to enter archaeological ruin #9! As for examiner Luo Feng, the head chose you directly” said the low voice, “As for whether or not it is easy to pass, from my data, I cannot guarantee you will pass for sure! Maybe the head has other reasons. You can ask the head!”

Luo Feng slightly nodded: “Sorry for bothering!”

Beep!

The phone call ended.

.....

Luo Feng quietly sat inside the listening room.

Luo Feng still had no idea what to do even after chatting with the mysterious person. This archaeological ruin #9 was too unpredictable; nobody knows what will happen after entering! Everyone can only enter once, so even Hong probably can't enter a second time to investigate the ruins. Otherwise, there would be no need to send a group of wargods to their deaths.

"Since the head is letting me go, then I guess I'll ask the head when I go to headquarters on September 29th" thought Luo Feng to himself.

Maybe other wargods would try their hardest to get a Black God set!

But to Luo Feng, there is no need. He needs at least a bit of confidence before he can take risks. He has no confidence at all right now, so what if he rushes in and, SPLAT, dies? Wouldn't that be a waste? Only high reward can make people take high risks! A Black God set isn't enough to make Luo Feng risk it!

Night of September 1st, the sky was dark.

In Ming-Yue sector, a group of armed, patrolling soldiers looked towards a lawn in the distance. A dark blue triangular fighter jet was parked on the lawn. Around the fighter jet were 30 armed soldiers. Luo Feng, who rarely dressed formally, was in a suit as he walked towards the fighter jet.

“Officer!” the thirty armed soldiers saluted. Since he was granted the title of major general, Luo Feng had a personal army of 900 people. Since Ming-Yue sector already had soldiers on guard, Luo Feng split his own personal army into three groups. The three groups take turns patrolling, so their mission was indeed quite relaxing.

“Yea” nodded Luo Feng.

HUALA——

The hatch opened and Luo Feng entered the auto jet like a breeze of wind. After that, the auto jet started to rise. It flew out the city’s defense systems and transformed into a flowing blue light as it disappeared into the horizon.

.....

Jiang-Nan headquarter city, inside the residential area in Limit Hall. Around 90% of the fighters in the headquarter city are here!

The sound of music reverberated.

In the residential area was a large, snow white, three story villa. Tonight, they are going to hold the banquet to welcome the new examiner here! So, long ago, they blocked off the surroundings outside a 100 meter radius with white fencing, blocking people from entering!

A red carpet extended over 100 meters from the gate of the fence to the entrance to the white villa.

And now——

Many big shots of Jiang-Nan headquarter city arrived one by one, like commanders of military subsectors and sectors, representatives of various countries' special forces, and even high ranking officials of the government. The people of the HR alliance were only allowed to participate in tonight's banquet because of their status.

Anyways, this is definitely a banquet of the highest level in Jiang-Nan headquarter city.

"Haha, commander Li, welcome welcome"

"Examiner Luo Feng hasn't arrived yet?" smiled Li Da Wei as he asked.

"Examiner Luo is the main character tonight. This banquet, is a banquet to welcome him. It's normal for him to be a bit late. Please understand, commander Li" laughed chairman Zhou Zheng Yong, "Excuse me!". Zhou Zheng Yong immediately ran to welcome other guests. Even if you only count the wargods, a ton of people came!

And over 10 people with the title of commander in the military have arrived!

Li Da Wei held his glass of wine and walked to an empty corner. A youth wearing a suit came up to him and said quietly: “Commander, if everything goes according to plan, something huge will happen within an hour”

“Oh” a smile appeared on Li Da Wei’s face.

Chapter 6: Competing

Music flowed into every corner of the hall. Handsome waiters and beautiful waitresses served fragrant wine and food.

In the hall, all sorts of famous people were chatting with each other.

“Old Li, what are you hiding here by yourself for?” a deep sound rang. A tall, middle aged brute was wearing a suit as he smiled and walked over. Li Da Wei looked over and couldn’t help but to laugh: “Ye Zhong, even though you’re a huge mayor, you sure came early today”

“All our old friends are gathered here for once, so how can I not come early?” smiled the burly brute.

Just from his appearance, this burly brute seems more like a fighter from the military than a mayor! After the Grand Nirvana period, there are only six headquarter cities across all of China. Each headquarter city’s mayor is a high ranking official; their position is way higher than the mayors, governors, etc. before the Grand Nirvana period.

As of now, two people are in command of a headquarter city together, namely the ‘mayor’ who looks over the civilians, and the highest ranking military official in the headquarter city. And the highest ranking military official in Jiang-Nan city is Li Da Wei.

“I heard you took a trip to Ming-Yue sector a few days ago?”

smiled mayor Ye, “Anything good?”

“Luo Feng is patriotic” smiled Li Da Wei. Suddenly, his eyes glanced towards the distance and couldn’t help but to laugh, “Look, the people of the Xu family have arrived.

Mayor Ye also turned his head and looked over. While doing so, he even said: “The Xu family? I heard this examiner Luo is dating with that little girl from the Xu family? Oh, that must be Xu Xin. Hm..... no wonder Luo Feng likes her. This girl is quite nice”. In the distance, three people from the Xu family have arrived.

The one leading was a slightly chubby, white haired old man. Beside him was a middle aged woman wearing a black dress who seemed like a noblewoman. The other was Xu Xin in her purple dress! A woman’s greatest weapon is her youth.

Xu Xin was already young, and after wearing this shoulder-revealing dress, it made her seem even more beautiful.

Which could cause people’s eyes to light up.

“You aren’t satisfied with this little girl from the Xu family being with Luo Feng?” mocked Li Da Wei, “You can also find a pretty young girl from the Ye family to steal Luo Feng away from the Xu family’s little girl. This is a 19 year old invincible wargod who could become an ‘existence surpassing the wargod level’. If you don’t strike now, you won’t have any chance in the future man”

Mayor Ye couldn't help but to glance at him and laugh helplessly: "An old man like you doesn't seem like a general at all"

.....

In the corner of the hall.

Xu Xin was currently holding a wine glass as she chatted with her aunt in the corner. Even though their Xu family is one of the 12 families, everyone who came here today are extremely important people. Their Xu family isn't conspicuous at all. As for Xu Xin and her aunt are even more quiet since they are using their family's identity to come.

"Who's the one talking with grandpa?" asked Xu Xin quietly.

"The Thunder Dojo's examiner's son, Lei Yu Feng" her aunt also responded quietly.

.....

"Yu Feng, your father hasn't arrived yet?" the head of the Xu family, Xu Yun Guo, was currently smiling as he talked with a long haired youth.

"Today is the day to welcome the examiner of the Dojo of Limits. That examiner Luo hasn't even arrived yet and my dad is the examiner of the Thunder Dojo. To come so early..... probably isn't such a good idea" said the long haired youth. His voice wasn't kept

quiet either, so quite a few servers of the Dojo of Limits glanced over with dissatisfaction.

Chairman Zhou Zheng Yong glanced over.

“Chairman, this Lei Yu Feng is too cocky” chief Yu Sun couldn’t help but to say quietly, “Even though this is a banquet to welcome the examiner of the Dojo of Limits, he is so disrespectful”

“Their Thunder Dojo has always been competing with our Dojo of Limits, so it would be weird if they were respectful” scoffed Zhou Zheng Yong. “Don’t mind him, our new investigator is an ‘invincible wargod’. Their fate has been sealed..... as long as Luo Feng is here on the soil of Jiang-Nan headquarter city, they will be below us!”

Chief Yu Sun on the side couldn’t help but to nod and let out a smile.

.....

The Thunder Dojo and the Dojo of Limits are the two leading fighter organizations on earth.

The Dojo of Limits is a bit stronger, but the Thunder Dojo isn’t far off.

Both Dojos fight over regular students! If they encounter a particularly talented fighter, both Dojos would send their

invitations to recruit them. For example, Luo Feng also received the Thunder Dojo's invitation back then.

Fighters are always competing!

If you build a training camp, I'll build a training camp too! You have examiners? I have examiners too! You have investigators? I have investigators too! From the lowest ranking people to the highest ranking people, the two Dojos have always been competing. They only have one competitor anyway, since no other power on earth can oppose them.

Even the two powerful heads are eternal rivals!

Thunder God, second strongest fighter on earth. World's best blade technique, and also claims to have the world's most powerful body and fastest speed!

And Hong, is the indisputable number one fighter on earth.

Usually, if your strength, speed, and reaction speed are all number one..... with the explosive power of Thunder God's《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》, he should be able to become the world's most powerful fighter! Many fighters think so too, but after all these years, Hong has remained the indisputable number one fighter.

"Old Xu, this is?" Lei Yu Feng's eyes couldn't help but to flash after seeing Xu Xin all dressed up.

“This is my granddaughter Xu Xin” smiled Xu Yun Guo.

Lei Yu Feng actually went up to Xu Xin and smiled, “Lady Xu, hello, I am Lei Yu Feng”

“Hello” Xu Xin was a bit dumbfounded.

“Nice to meet you” right when Lei Yu Feng finished that sentence ——

The entire hall went into an uproar.

“Examiner Luo is here”

“That fighter aircraft is an auto jet. Last time our organization offered 260 billion Chinese dollars, but the Dojo of Limits wasn’t willing to sell us an auto jet”

“Examiner Luo is coming out of the jet!”

“Examiner Luo is so young!”

Discussions were everywhere, and quite a few people in the entire hall headed towards the entrance.

Xu Xin and her aunt also walked over. On that red carpet that

was around 100 meters approached a young man in a black suit. He was currently smiling as he walked over. Everyone's eyes were on him! Right now, his formless aura was extremely formidable. As a powerful spirit reader, his eyes could cause one's heart to shake!

"Examiner" chairman Zhou Zheng Yong and the three chiefs, Zhu Ge Tao, Yu Sen, and Wang Ke Fan greeted him at the entrance.

"Chairman Zhou" Luo Feng directly stepped into the hall.

"Examiner, let me introduce to you a few important people" chairman Zhou Zheng Yong wisely brought Luo Feng to the area of the Xu family's head, 'Xu Yun Guo'.

Luo Feng saw that white haired old man instantly. He once saw this old man from a distance, so he recognized him.

"This is the head of the Xu family Xu Yun Guo, Mr. Xu" smiled Zhou Zheng Yong.

"I am extremely glad to meet examiner Luo. Examiner Luo's name has spread far and wide, and, after meeting, examiner Luo's age is just absolutely jaw dropping" Xu Yun Guo had smiles all over his face, as if a flower that has just bloomed, "Age and strength, with these..... examiner Luo's future, limitless, absolutely limitless"

These compliments caused quite a few people to scoff.

You're just making it clear that Luo Feng is your future grandson-in-law..... do you have to be so passionate?

"You praise me too much. It's my first time meeting old Xu and I'm filled with joy!" smiled Luo Feng as he said a phrase.

"Examiner, let's go there....." Zhou Zheng Yong was about to introduce another guest.

"No rush"

But Luo Feng headed straight towards Xu Xin. However, when he saw the long haired youth beside her, he couldn't help but to frown. Men want to be in control, so when a stranger was standing next to his own girlfriend, Luo Feng naturally felt a bit irritated.

"Please move" Luo Feng looked at the long haired man.

Lei Yu Feng was being stared at by Luo Feng. Lei Yu Feng felt like he was going to suffocate just from the pressure brought by Luo Feng's eyes. His consciousness was becoming blurry and he instinctively moved back a few steps.

After seeing Lei Yu Feng move back, Luo Feng stood in front of Xu Xin and winked.

Xu Xin smiled brightly and put her arm around Luo Feng's arm.

“Let’s go” Luo Feng and Xu Xin walked next to Zhou Zheng Yong.

Zhou Zheng Yong looked at Xu Xin with shock, and then let out a face of amusement as he nodded, “Alright”

This scene caused quite a few of the famous people in the entire hall to go silent with shock. Doing such a thing in such a place is basically announcing his relationship with Xu Xin! This scene caused quite a few people to be disappointed, since many of them were trying to get close to Luo Feng via marriage.

Xu Yun Guo and his daughter let out a smile

“Hmph” but Lei Yu Feng’s face was looking horrible.

.....

“This is the mayor of our Jiang-Nan headquarter city, Ye Zhong”

.....

“Examiner, this, is the director of the country’s special forces sector 9, Liu Yan”

.....

“This, is the director of the country’s special forces sector 11 Liu De Kai, old Liu”

.....

“This, is the head of one of the 12 families in our Jiang-Nan city, Mr. Ye Yi Fang”

.....

“This, is the commander of the northern military sector of Jiang-Nan city, commander Tong Xue Zhu”

.....

Luo Feng came to know many special people under Zhou Zheng Yong’s introductions. These people had immense power in China. And all of these people were polite when talking with Luo Feng.

“Examiner, one more” Zhou Zheng Yong kept his voice down, “The last one’s identity is absolutely amazing. He’s the leader of the second squad in our military’s most powerful special forces sector, “Hua Shan’. His teacher is the creator of the organization ‘Hua Shan’, ‘Jia Yi’, who is an existence surpassing the wargod level”

Military’s most powerful special forces sector? Hua Shan?

“Why would they call it ‘Hua Shan’, how weird” laughed Luo Feng quietly.

“The creator, ‘Representative Jia Yi’, was the one who named it, who knows why” said Zhou Zheng Yong quietly, “Jia Yi is one of the few existences surpassing the wargod level in China. He has tons of authority. And of course, the organizations he creates also has tons of authority!”

Chairman Zhou said no more, as he already brought Luo Feng in front of a middle-aged man.

Right when Luo Feng was going to speak with the representative of the country’s most powerful special forces sector——

“HAHA, EXAMINER LUO, I’M LATE, SORRY ABOUT THAT!” laughter which could rival the sound of thunder rang across the entire hall.

Chapter 7: No Retreat Allowed

The originally noisy hall immediately quieted down. Everyone turned their heads over and saw a slightly skinny middle-aged man in a suit whose eyes were like lightning. He was currently smiling a bit as he looked around. He yelled: “LUO FENG, LUO EXAMINER, WHERE IS HE? WHERE? I HAVE ALWAYS WANTED TO MEET EXAMINER LUO AND SEE WHAT KIND OF YOUNG LEGENDARY HERO HE IS!”

“Dad” Lei Yu Feng walked to his father’s side.

This man——

Is the examiner of Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Thunder Dojo —— Lei Meng! To be able to take up the position of a large headquarter city’s examiner, Lei Meng is also a famous advanced level wargod. In terms of power, he’s even a bit stronger than vulture Li Yao. Of course, he’s a bit weaker than Phantom Demon Catalan.

Phantom Demon Catalan’s fitness level has reached the peak of the advanced level wargod level, and he has spiritual force.

And Lei Meng simply has his fitness level at the peak.

“Lei Meng is here, now things are going to be interesting”

“Who knows how things will unfold”

Various famous people from all over were interested as they prepared to watch the show. Sometimes they would look towards Lei Meng, and sometimes they would look towards Luo Feng!

Across the entire world, who doesn't know that the Thunder Dojo and Dojo of Limits are always competing with each other?! Other people are too afraid to mess with the Dojo of Limits, but the Thunder Dojo isn't! And 'Hong' and 'Thunder God' remain silent when they see their people compete with each other.

.....

Luo Feng was currently standing in front of the representative of China's most powerful special forces sector. After hearing examiner Lei Meng's words, Luo Feng didn't even glance over. Instead, he smiled towards the representative of the military's special forces sector and extended his hand: "Hello, I am Luo Feng. I have long heard of representative Jia's huge name and have always been admiring him. I am glad to be able to meet representative Jia's student"

"Jiang Long, I am also glad to meet a talented person like examiner Luo" Jiang Long's feelings toward Luo Feng, WHOOOOSH, soared up greatly!

Know that the person who was most frustrated with Lei Meng's sudden entrance was Jiang Long!

Because Luo Feng was right about to talk with him. With Lei

Meng's sudden appearance, if Luo Feng turned his head and went to talk with Lei Meng while treating him, Jiang Long, as air..... wouldn't that be quite embarrassing? And now, Luo Feng's course of action is to—— treat that Lei Meng as air and pretend he didn't even see him. After that, he kept smiling and chatted with Jiang Long.

Of course Jiang Long would feel great! However, on the other side of the hall, Lei Meng wasn't feeling good.

"Examiner, squadron leader Jiang is one of representative Jiang's most powerful students" chairman Zhou Zheng Yong woke up and also smiled as he introduced, "As of now, he's already an advanced level wargod and is one of the most powerful people in 'Hua Shan'"

"When compared with examiner Luo, there's still a difference" smiled Jiang Long.

"In terms of experience, squadron leader Jiang has way more than me" Luo Feng also smiled.

If Luo Feng is respectful to Jiang Long, Jiang Long will also be respectful to Luo Feng.

"Excuse me" said Luo Feng.

"Please go ahead, examiner Luo" smiled Jiang Long, "We will talk later"

Only after chatting with squadron leader Jiang from China's most powerful special forces sector 'Hua Shan' did Luo Feng bring Xu Xin with him as he smiled and headed towards examiner Lei, Lei Meng.

"Examiner Luo, my father rushed all the way here just to congratulate you and happily wanted to chat with examiner Luo. However, examiner Luo pretended that he didn't even see my father" long haired Lei Yu Feng frowned as he said with dissatisfaction, "This is seriously——"

"Yu Feng"

Lei Meng waved his hand to stop his son from continuing.

Luo Feng laughed in his heart as he saw this scene. If this Lei Meng wanted to stop his son from speaking, he would've stopped him a while ago..... when he received the letter talking about the responsibilities of an examiner from the world headquarters, it mentioned—— to protect the honor of the Dojo of Limits. Especially when competing with the Thunder Dojo, you have to defeat them!

Competing with the Thunder Dojo has already become a kind of tradition! Since Luo Feng took up the position, he of course has to show some backbone.

"I am really sorry. I was talking with Mr. Jiang Long just now. Mr. Lei Meng's entrance was a bit sudden, so I could not just shake off Mr. Jiang Long to the side. Examiner Lei, am I right?" smiled

Luo Feng.

Lei Meng frowned and said nothing.

“I am really happy that Mr. Lei Meng could come” smiles were all over Luo Feng’s face, “We will talk more later”. As he said that, Luo Feng glanced at chairman Zhou Zheng Yong.

Zhou Zheng Yong nodded and headed towards the platform in front of the hall.

.....

On the platform.

Zhou Zheng Yong stood on top of it and looked down towards the important figures as he smiled: “On this day, September first, our Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits welcomes a new examiner! Who is he?”

“He defeated Phantom Demon Catalan, Great Bear Keita, Blood Shadow Ethan, and Vulture Li Yao, the four advanced level wargods, all alone” these phrases caused the face of Lei Meng, examiner Lei, to change for the worse, because even though Lei Meng is powerful, he still isn’t at Phantom Demon Catalan’s level yet.

And Luo Feng fought the four of them. If Luo Feng really fought against Lei Meng one on one, Lei Meng will certainly lose!

“Three of the four had ‘Black God sets’. But even so, when they encountered him, they lost. Furthermore, he even received the highest title of our Dojo of Limits, ‘invincible wargod’. And he is also extremely young”

“Even if I do not name him, we all know who he is!”

“Let us welcome——

“Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits’ new examiner——”

“Invincible wargod——”

“LUO FENG!!!”

Chairman Zhou Zheng Yong’s great voice echoed around the hall. The guests below also smiled as they clapped. At the same time, the music suitably rang. While the music played, Luo Feng told Xu Xin he was going and then smiled as he walked towards the platform alone.

Zhou Zheng Yong walked down and Luo Feng walked up.

On the platform.

Luo Feng looked down towards the guests. As he glanced past that Lei Meng, examiner Lei, his expression didn’t change at all; he

remained smiling.

"Everyone"

Luo Feng looked towards everyone, "Jiang-Nan headquarter city, here, is my home! To be able to become Jiang-Nan headquarter city's Dojo of Limits' examiner after growing up makes me feel extremely honored! I won't say too much, but, as an examiner, I will definitely perform my duties and responsibilities well! I will not lower the prestige of our Dojo of Limits!"

These words caused a round of applause. The people from the Dojo of Limits clapped especially hard.

But Lei Meng and the others watched silently.

"China is my native country. If my native country is in trouble, I won't just watch. And the war between monsters and humanity will not allow me to retreat. Previously, I have accepted general Li Da Wei's invitation" Luo Feng looked towards commander Li Da Wei below, and commander Li Da Wei smiled and nodded.

"Alright, that will be it. The most important thing tonight is for everyone to be happy. Chairman Zhou, prepare the banquet" smiled Luo Feng.

.....

The various guests ate dinner together. Well, pretending to eat

and mostly chatting! Since the people who came to this banquet are all major figures, they rarely have the opportunity to meet. For example, who can just meet the important members of the country's special forces whenever they want to?

After the banquet, the various guests ate fruits as they chatted in groups.

Soft music reverberated around the hall and the atmosphere was quite comfortable.

Luo Feng was also chatting with squadron leader Jiang and Liu De Kai. Right when everyone was chatting in the hall.

"WHAT!" a loud exclamation rang across the hall, which caused everyone to stop discussing and look over. The one who yelled was actually the commander of the south eastern sector, general of the land forces—— Li Da Wei. Li Da Wei was currently having a call.

"I'LL BE BACK IMMEDIATELY!"

Li Da Wei's expression was serious as he hung up.

"Commander Li, what's wrong?" headquarter city mayor Ye Zhong came over.

"Huge problem. The monster hordes from the sea have already come into conflict with the front lines of the south eastern sector" Li Da Wei's expression was serious. After saying this, the entire

hall went into an uproar.

The sea monsters have formed hordes and are invading?

“What grade?” asked mayor Ye.

“Grade one monster tide” said Li Da Wei.

Everyone in the hall was stunned. Even Luo Feng was stunned. Keep in mind that ‘wargod Lu Gang’ lost his life to a grade three rat tide! That tide already had an infinite number of rat type monsters. Above the grade three monster tide is the grade two monster tide, grade one monster tide..... and of course, the legendary disaster grade monster tide!

However, a disaster grade tide has rarely occurred on earth! The label for a disaster grade is—— when an emperor level monster is included! Which leads to disastrous results!

A grade one monster tide already represents an unending wave of monsters.

“Now that there’s a grade one monster tide, I need to go back immediately. I hope the wargods here can help when we need it the most!” Li Da Wei looked towards the guests, since there were quite a few wargods here.

“How can we retreat at a time like this” the Thunder Dojo’s examiner ‘Lei Meng’ said loudly. At the same time, he purposefully

looked towards Luo Feng.

“Commander Li, there’s no time to waste. Let’s leave immediately” Luo Feng directly headed towards commander Li.

For cases like this, especially times like these!

Lei Meng and Luo Feng are competing, so how can the two examiners retreat from a grade one monster tide? Wouldn’t retreating harm the honor of their Dojo? Since they have taken up the position of examiner, they naturally have to take up the responsibilities that come with the position. They have to bring honor to their respective dojos.

“Luo Feng, be careful” said Xu Xin as she came over.

“Don’t worry” Luo Feng smiled as he squeezed Xu Xin’s nose.

After that——

Luo Feng got on his auto jet. Lei Meng also got on his disk shaped fighter jet. Other wargods who wanted to help also got on their fighter jets. They all soared and swiftly headed south east.

.....

In the fighter jet Li Da Wei was on.

Commander Li Da Wei and the youth from before were both sitting on a chair.

“Commander, some people might have guessed this move” laughed the youth beside him.

Li Da Wei’s expression was serious: “So what if they know? The sea monsters have been gathering. The amount of sea monsters in the Huangpu river region is starting to scare us. If we don’t fight today, the monster hordes will probably attack after one or two months! We can’t just always wait for the monster hordes to initiate the attack can we? We might as well start the battle earlier!

“We can attack before the sea monsters make sufficient preparations”

“And using this banquet, we can get quite a few wargods to help” smiled Li Da Wei, “Especially Luo Feng and Lei Meng. One of them is an invincible wargod while one of them has a Black God set. If the two of them cooperate with our army, they won’t be less effective than a huge army of 200,000 people!”

The youth nodded.

“Tell me, who will be able to kill more horde leaders later: Luo Feng or Lei Meng?” smiled Li Da Wei.

Chapter 8: The War Between Humanity and Monsters

Autojet.

“#1, follow the disc shaped fighter jet in the very front!” commanded Luo Feng.

The black suit on Luo Feng instantly started to change. Soon enough, it completely disappeared, revealing the white collared shirt within. Luo Feng took off the white shirt and revealed the black vest within. Throwing knives danced as they flew out of the vest.

Huhu~~ they quickly assembled, forming the soaring shuttle.

“The amount of monsters in the sea monster horde will be uncountable, so my golden silk net will just get in the way” thought Luo Feng to himself. He didn’t bring his golden silk net, because it is only useful in a 1v1 situation!

The black membrane covered his entire body and swiftly transformed into the shape of a battle uniform set.

A black helmet even appeared on his head!

“Fellow wargods” a sound carried from the tactical communications watch, “I am Li Da Wei, I am Li Da Wei, 50 more

seconds to arrive at the front lines”

“There are an uncountable amount of sea monsters ahead. Fellow powerful wargods, please enter the front lines and assist the army in fending off this time’s monster tide. Wargods with ‘Black God sets’ could try and enter the horde to attack within”

“We have arrived!”

After hearing this sound from his tactical communications watch, Luo Feng quietly said: “#1, open the hatch”

HUALA!

The hatch opened. Luo Feng, who had his black uniform set on his body, helmet on his head, and ghost blade on his back, stepped onto the soaring shuttle and directly flew out. After that, the auto jet closed its hatch and then hovered in midair.

Fighter jets swiftly landed in the forward base below. This forward base was blocking a region of the Huangpu river. This region was completely clogged with large amounts of boulders and reinforced steel. A miniature military base built out of reinforced steel was built on top!

Large amounts of cold light fired out of large, sturdy cannons.

“So this is a grade one monster tide!” Luo Feng was hovering on his soaring shuttle around 1,000 meters above the ground and was

completely stunned as he looked below.

The Huangpu river was an important passage for the limitless sea monsters in the south eastern sea to attack the mainland through. For dozens of years, tons of sea monsters caused the Huangpu river's depth and width to become even more astonishing than it was before the Grand Nirvana period! Who knew how many sea monsters were lying in wait in the great Huangpu river.

And the military base here was clogging up the entire Huangpu river!

So the monsters can't get past!

And now——

"RUMBLE~~" as if the sky was going to fall and the earth was going to shatter, the sound of cannon fire rumbled throughout the area.

Densely packed sea monsters of all types covered the entire ground as they either flew out or crawled out from within the Huangpu river. Within these monsters were ferocious arthropod type monsters, crawling type monsters which were most familiar with the land, peculiar cnidaria type monsters, echinoderm type monsters, and tons of tons of fish type monsters!

The monsters in the sea are at least 10 times more horrifying than the ones on land!

One, there are tons of them. Two, they have extremely odd abilities!

For example, just look at the shrimp type and crab type monsters within the arthropod group. Before the Grand Nirvana period, thousands of different species of shrimp and crabs have been discovered. If you count in the ones that haven't been discovered, there are probably tens of thousands of different species! After mutating, the shrimp type and crab type monsters have reached an even more astonishing number. And this is even more so the case for cnidaria types and echinoderm types.

Before the Grand Nirvana period, humans have predicted that there are over two million different species in the sea!

And now?

After the Grand Nirvana period, nobody knows!

They only know that there are way too many horrifying monsters of all types. What happened to the various island countries from back then are an example of their power, so no country dares to underestimate the monsters in the sea.

"Holy shit!"

"What types of monsters are these?" Luo Feng was flabbergasted.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng's gaze turned cold and the membrane instantly covered his face, revealing only his eyes. After that, he soared downwards on his soaring shuttle!

.....

From the sky, the monsters seemed densely packed. After charging downwards, the monsters seemed even more formidable. Huge amounts of all types of fish type monsters jumped to a height of 20 to 30 meters out of the Huangpu river. A seemingly infinite amount of fish type monsters savagely revealed their teeth, which could even grind reinforced steel!

"Luo Feng, Lei Meng, please kill some of the horde leader level sea type monsters on the land" commander Li's voice carried from the tactical communications watch.

"Horde leader level?" Luo Feng looked below.

Right away, he saw a gigantic sea monster that was around 15 to 16 meters long with a huge turtle shell on its back. There were even some portions of the gigantic turtle shell that were sticking out and also had a faint gold color to them. Its head was like a dinosaur's head. It had a tough skull and even grew out a black pointy horn. Its gigantic sawblade-like mouth made none doubt its destructive power.

It was currently swiftly moving without pause.

“Can’t aim, it’s moving too quickly” in a building around a thousand meters away, one of the operators of the laser cannon said in a panic, “These horde leader levels have all become smart. After getting hit before, none of them stop moving after landing on shore”

No matter how fast the laser cannon is, it still needs a human to press a button to command it!

A human’s reaction time, added with the time it takes to press the button, isn’t fast enough.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

The cannon balls fired from cannons with calibers of over 100 mm rained all over the front lines. The 200 meter region between the real military base and the sea virtually became a sea of fire. An uncountable amount of sea monsters crazily charged while the military base crazily fired all sorts of cannons!

“Whoosh!”

A black light flew through the infinite sea monster horde like lightning.

Pu! Peng!

Because the firepower covered the entire region, quite a few large caliber bullets shot towards him. There was even a cannonball that flew straight towards him. However, it was controlled by a shapeless energy and ended up blowing up on a rampaging crab type monster. Even though steel pieces flew everywhere, the black shadow's speed didn't drop at all.

"Die!"

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six cold blades rotated as they flew in front of him. The blades flew across the neck of the gigantic turtle type monster that was charging at the military base. Like cutting through an apple, the horde leader level sea monster's horrifying head was directly split open. Its huge body kept charging forward, smashing away quite a few other sea monsters in the process. After that, it stopped moving.

"GREAT!" "NICE!" "EXAMINER LUO IS SO POWERFUL" quite a few people in the military base yelled in joy.

"RUMBLE!" "PU!"

But now, a gigantic monster that seemed like a snake crashed into the military base. The walls of the military base shook violently. The wall had quite a few holes and cracks in it already, so after it shook, large amounts of concrete fell from it. And at the same time——

Without any sound or sign at all!

A blinding white light shot out from one of the towers in the military base.

It gave this huge horde leader level monster no chance to dodge as it directly incinerated it into nothing!

The laser cannon!

However, as the snake shaped horde leader monster crashed into the wall, it also released an extremely powerful electrical attack at the same time! PA! A twisted bolt of lightning rapidly spread out and even slipped inside the military base along the muzzles of the cannons. This horrifying bolt of lightning caused quite a few casualties in the military base.

“I can’t believe there are so many horde leader level monsters” Luo Feng scanned around and locked onto another horde leader level monster.

Whoosh!

Even Luo Feng’s own body is tough enough to ignore some cannonfire. Regular sniper rifles can only threaten ‘low level commander level monsters’. These huge cannons can usually kill medium level commander level monsters. As for high level commander level monsters..... it is all up to luck. And for horde

leader level monsters? They can only rely on the laser cannon!

But for Luo Feng? The toughness of the ‘Black God set’ is even tougher than an emperor level monster.

You usually need an astonishing amount of impact force to kill a human wearing a black god set by shocking him to death! Just like how Luo Feng..... couldn’t do much against Li Yao. Since the ‘Black God set’ can absorb 90% of the impact force and the remaining 10% spreads across the entire body, which means every part of the body can help withstand against the force of impact.

Over 90% of the laser cannons in the military base on the front lines were used against ‘horde leaders’.

Just that amount of power..... even if Luo Feng accidentally gets hit, it won’t harm him!

.....

“The third horde leader level!”

A gigantic monster that was around 30 meters long shook its black tentacles like crazy as it tried to kill Luo Feng! Against this gigantic being that seemed like a small mountain, Luo Feng got on his soaring shuttle and nimbly dodged the tentacle attacks again and again. At the same time, his cold throwing knives shot towards this octopus type monster.

Inside the military base, operations room.

All around were 3D holograms displaying the scenes of battle outside. Commander Li Da Wei's expression was serious. Beside him stood other top officials in the military. As for the wargods, they have headed outside to assist the army a while ago to stop the monsters that are capable of charging into the military base.

"BEEP——BEEP——BEEP——"

The alarm suddenly rang.

"A transparent jellyfish type monster entered the base" the alarm system immediately gave its alert. At the same time, the 3D holograms around them immediately displayed an image. Using infrared, they saw a transparent jellyfish with large amounts of soft tentacles entering the outer part of the military base! Thankfully, there were very few soldiers on the outer part.

"Squad #3, head towards trap h21" Li Da Wei directly gave his command.

Suddenly——

RUMBLE!

RUMBLE!

RUMBLE!

The entire military base shook violently and the people in the operations room lost balance for a bit.

“There’s an extremely powerful sea monster crazily attacking our military base from the water below!” someone yelled immediately.

“The appetizer is over and now we’re playing for real?”

Commander Li Da Wei remained expressionless as he commanded: “With the military base as the center, throw napalm bombs in the surrounding 1,000 meter radius”

“Yes!”

The command was sent out. An old man wearing a military uniform in the operations room couldn’t help but to ask: “Commander, isn’t it a bit early to throw the napalm bombs out?”. Even though the sea monsters are powerful, even after mutating, they can only stay on land for a short period of time. If time goes on for too long, they’ll die from lack of water!

Sea monsters need water, so even if napalm bombs can’t burn these sea monsters to death, it can quickly use up the water in their bodies.

So——

Fire is an extremely effective measure to use against sea monsters.

“Not early!”

Li Da Wei let out a rare smile, “This time we have an ‘invincible wargod’ to help us. I thought he didn’t have a black god set, but he actually does! An invincible wargod with a black god set has an astonishing amount of power”

“Contact Luo Feng” commanded Li Da Wei.

“Examiner Luo Feng, please enter the water and kill the large sea monster that is attacking our military base from below” requested Li Da Wei.

Through the 3D hologram they could see…

Luo Feng in his black uniform set just killed a horrifying cnidaria type monster. After receiving this message, he stepped on his soaring shuttle and with a ‘whoosh’, ignored all the various sea monsters and charged straight towards the grand Huangpu river like lightning.

Chapter 9: Sound Wave Attack

Splash!

Luo Feng charged into the Huangpu river. With his naked eye, he could only see peculiar shaped sea monsters. When his spiritual force spread out, it covered the surrounding 100 meter radius! Within this 100 meter radius were over 100 different types of fish type monsters, and various other monsters of different types.

“There sure are a bunch of them” Luo Feng could feel the threat that sea monsters had against humanity.

Keep charging downwards!

.....

As of now, plane after plane flew in the air and dropped large amounts of a new kind of napalm bombs like a celestial maiden spreading flower petals. With the military base as the center, the surrounding 1,000 meter radius was covered with the weapons that the sea monsters hated the most! Even both sides and the surface of the Huangpu river were covered!

Huhu~~

The surrounding 1,000 meter radius instantly became a sea of fire! The monsters’ bodies aren’t afraid of being burned! But..... the water in their body is swiftly evaporating!

Monsters like cnidaria-type monsters, jellyfish, etc. can probably stay alive on land for 2 or 3 hours after their mutation. However, in a fire, they rapidly lose large amounts of water, so they can't even last for 2 to 3 minutes! According to the type, different monsters can last for different amounts of time.

These napalm bombs, even after being dropped onto water, continued burning!

Water cannot extinguish it! Dirt won't put it out either! Rolling around on the ground will do nothing. In fact, doing that will just increase the amount of flames on your body! Which is to say, even if you escape the sea of fire, you'll still be on fire!

You can say, that this is the weapon that sea monsters hate the most!

Without a doubt——

In the sea of fire, the overall power of the sea monsters dropped by around 70%!

But even so, it is still going to be extremely difficult for the military base to block off this attack.

Huangpu river, 50 meters below the surface.

Because the sea monsters have been swimming around here for dozens of years, the Huangpu river was indeed much deeper than it was before.

“Just these three big guys?” under the light of the fire on the surface of the river, Luo Feng, who was at the bottom of the river, saw three gigantic beings in the distance with a glance. The shortest of the three gigantic beings was around 60 meters long. The largest one was at an astonishing 90 meters long.

If you put it upright, it can rival the height of a 30 story building!

The one thing they have in common is..... they all have a sharp horn! The sharp horn on their heads crazily slammed into the foundation of the military base. Every time their sharp horn attacks, it can pierce into a distance of 7 to 8 meters. This caused the entire base to rumble. However, the horns can’t pierce a large enough hole for their gigantic bodies to enter through.

So, they can only attack over and over again to get the desired width, go in a few meters, and then go back to crazily attacking again.

As of now, they have only moved forward by around 10 meters.

“Two mountain shaking whales? And..... a roaring sky beast?” Luo Feng was astonished. The largest one was indeed the roaring sky beast. The other two mountain shaking whales, determining from the size of their bodies, are probably medium level horde leader level monsters. And that roaring sky beast..... is probably a

high level horde leader level!

The current Luo Feng doesn't really care about high level horde leaders.

But, this roaring sky beast!

Even though Luo Feng knew very little about sea monsters, he still knew quite a bit about the extremely horrifying and infamous sea monsters. The roaring sky monster was indeed one of these extremely horrifying monsters.

"The roaring sky monster has a gigantic amount of power. Its strongest attack is the—— sound wave attack!"

"Sound wave attack?"

Luo Feng slightly frowned as he immediately transformed his Black God set into earplugs and stuffed his ears. His black helmet formed layers and layers of protection over the portion of his ears.

"I need to kill the roaring sky beast as fast as possible and then eliminate the two mountain shaking whales"

Luo Feng stepped on his soaring shuttle and transformed into a black bolt of lightning as he charged!

The fact that the soaring shuttle is amazing cannot be denied.

Even the water can help it speed up! No wonder it's a treasure that even 'Hong' deems important.

"ANG——"

The gigantic roaring sky beast suddenly turned its head and, without any warning, immediately let out an ear piercing sound. The sound then disappeared.

BUZZ~~~

A vacuum was immediately blasted out of the water of the river between the roaring sky beast and Luo Feng. The river water around Luo Feng completely disappeared, and the sound wave attack instantly hit Luo Feng! It was so fast that Luo Feng was given no chance to escape. The sound wave attack that countless wargods feared struck Luo Feng.

However, after going through the special material that makes up the 'Black God set', the attack rapidly weakened!

And Luo Feng's ears were heavily protected, so the target of the attack, the obvious 'head', was easily spared from disaster.

"Hm?" Luo Feng only had a slight headache and nothing else. He couldn't help but to let out a smile, "The black god set is indeed powerful!"

"It can deflect sharp attacks"

“It can weaken impacts”

“It can greatly decrease the effect of sound waves”

This mysterious treasure originating from archaeological ruin #9 was indeed mysterious.

Whoosh!

After deflecting the sound wave attack, Luo Feng immediately transformed into a bolt of lightning as he charged towards the gigantic roaring sky beast. However, at this time..... the river water beside Luo Feng started rumbling and formless attacks struck towards Luo Feng.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six curved blades immediately flew past the river water like moon light around 70 to 80 meters to the left side in front of him. After that, a painful scream rang. The river water rumbled and a milk white colored blood spread out.

“Hmph, a transparent jellyfish type monster actually tried to ambush a spirit reader. I guess it was tired of living” scoffed Luo Feng to himself.

Out of the sea monsters, there are many types of jellyfish type

monsters. As of now, three types that are completely invisible to the naked eye have been discovered! Even though they attack in different ways, they have still been categorized together as the ‘invisible jellyfish type’. For human fighters, they pose a gigantic threat.

But even if you can’t see it via sight, Luo Feng’s spiritual force detected it a long time ago.

“Roaring sky beast! Mountain shaking whale!” Luo Feng seemed like he was going to slaughter some sheep as he charged towards the three gigantic horde leader level monsters!

.....

This battle between monsters and humanity was as tragic as always!

It continued on until 8 AM of the second day.

Even though the sea monsters never broke past the military base, quite a few horde leaders charged in by themselves! Large hordes of sea monsters capable of ‘discharging electricity’, and large hordes capable of spitting ‘poison’, and even hordes that can shoot ‘air bubbles’ like shockwaves.... all sorts of attacks from all sorts of peculiar sea monsters seeped into the military base, which caused quite a few casualties for the human army.

Command room of the military base.

High ranking people of the military and the wargods that came to assist were gathered here. Everyone was in a good mood.

“Thank you, everyone. We were able to successfully defend against the wave of sea monsters! Within half a year, the sea monsters probably won’t launch an assault of such a scale” commander Li Da Wei was in an extremely good mood. Even though losses were great, they are quite insignificant when compared with the losses in the past.

The one who did the most work..... was Luo Feng!

Luo Feng and Lei Meng were the only two people who possessed black god sets out of all the wargods, including the ones originally part of the army! And even though Lei Meng is powerful, the sea monsters can escape once they lose. So even though Lei Meng can defeat horde leaders, it is extremely difficult for him to kill them.

But Luo Feng is different!

With his soaring shuttle and blade pieces, which horde leader can escape such speed?

They all died!

And this battle!

Lei Meng, killed two horde leaders! He also fought back quite a few of them during critical moments, which helped the army quite a bit.

Luo Feng, killed 15 horde leaders!

“Fellow wargods, sell all your monster materials to our HR alliance!” laughed an old man in the command room.

“Those preparing to sell them to Dojos, ask me” laughed commander Li Da Wei.

Even though the wargods risked their lives to fight for the army, they usually don’t ask for anything in return. However, as long as they can find the corpses of the monsters they killed, they would usually sell them to the HR alliance, since the HR alliances offers better prices! The Chinese army also supports this process.

Because the Chinese government receives a bit of profit from the HR alliance, since they allow them to spread across the country.

“This time, examiner Luo Feng earned the most”

“Examiner Luo Feng, you’re going to be rich”

A group of wargods smiled as they congratulated.

Because Luo Feng was blocking the front, none of the wargods in

the military base died! So everyone was in quite a good mood.

“I have three horde leaders’ materials here. As for the other horde leaders, I don’t need them” the huge black bag that Luo Feng was carrying automatically opened, and large amounts of monster materials poured out from it and dropped onto the ground. Even though he killed 15 horde leaders, he used his blade pieces to cut off the important parts and put them in his bag at the same time he killed them.

He only stored the materials of three horde leaders, which were all high level ones.

As for the other ones…… he’ll donate them to the country!

“Haha, then I will shamelessly accept them” Li Da Wei didn’t decline.

“Commander Li, you’re not humble at all” a powerful wargod started laughing on the side.

Li Da Wei smiled: “Would a rich man like Luo Feng care about such a small amount?”

Out of the 15 horde leader level monsters, the most valuable materials are from the three that Luo Feng kept for himself.

The old man that was currently examining the materials from the three high level horde leaders couldn’t help but to glare at Li

Da Wei: “Old Li, even though the other horde leaders are low level or medium level ones, there are a lot of them. I estimate that the total will come to 30 billion!”. A low level horde leader ranges from 500 million——3 billion at the HR alliance.

A medium level horde leader ranges from 1.5 billion——9 billion!

Out of the 12 that Luo Feng killed, most of them were low level horde leaders and not medium level horde leaders, so the total would indeed come to around 30 billion.

“Roaring sky beast?”

“Nine headed snake dragon?”

The old man that was examining the materials was flabbergasted. The roaring sky beast were extremely horrifying high level horde leaders. They were even more powerful than the steel armored dragon. Since they are both in the sea, it is harder to kill them.

“I’ll take these two for 20 billion. As for this one, I’ll take it for 12 billion. In total, 52 billion Chinese dollars” smiled the old man.

“Okay” nodded Luo Feng.

.....

Luo Feng wasn’t too happy with the results from this war.

Money? After becoming an invincible wargod, money is not as important. Real treasures cannot be purchased with money.

Military base.

Li Da Wei personally escorted Luo Feng outside. The two of them walked side by side out the base.

“How are the losses this time?” asked Luo Feng.

“Around 1,000 warriors died and almost 1,000 people are handicapped” Li Da Wei shook his head as he sighed, “And these results are considered good. With you here, the most threatening horde leaders were killed off, so we had an easier time dealing with the monster horde. Just you alone can match a gigantic army of 200,000! In the past.....”

Li Da Wei couldn’t help but to shake his head.

In the war against the sea monsters, human casualties are too great. Otherwise, he wouldn’t purposefully use the gathering of wargods this time.

“And——”

Li Da Wei shook his head as he laughed helplessly, “The billions of sea monsters we killed this time, to the countless sea monsters in the sea, is like a drop in the ocean! Just a drop in the ocean!”

Chapter 10: Cleansing of the Soul

“A drop in the ocean” Luo Feng slightly nodded as he sighed.

“No, you don’t understand” Li Da Wei shook his head, “Without personally experiencing the struggle for life every single day back then, there is no way you can understand..... how my generation feels!”

Luo Feng froze.

Li Da Wei sighed: “I was born in a beautiful time. The year I was born in was during the transfer of sovereignty over Hong Kong: 1997! My family can’t be considered rich, but we were well off. I grew up without any worries: I played online games and read web novels. My parents would always scold me a bit every day, which irritated me quite a bit”

Luo Feng looked at Li Da Wei with shock.....

Online games? Web novels? In this age, all the students spend their free time from class in the ‘Dojo’. Becoming a fighter is the dream of every young person.

“Don’t look at me like that. Since you haven’t experienced such a peaceful period, it is unimaginable” Li Da Wei let out a smile as his eyes looked back on his memories, “During that time, we would even chat on online discussion boards and shitpost. We could gather for dinner and go on field trips. There truly were no worries at all!”

“However——”

“2015! It all started on January of 2015!”

“We instantly fell from heaven to hell! That year was the year I was preparing for my high school exams..... however, there were no exams!”

“Nightmare befell!”

“The virus spread across the entire world via air. Anything that needs to breathe was infected. My friends died one by one. The girl I had a crush on, the brothers I played basketball with, my neighbors, my guildies from my online games, all of them died one by one! I almost broke down. I thought I was going through a nightmare.....”

“Sadly, I realized that that was just the beginning of the nightmare!”

“On the second half of the year of 2015, countless mutated monsters started attacking the cities where humans gathered! From a few scattered battles to full blown wars! We didn’t care about these primitive monsters, since we thought they wouldn’t stand a chance against human weapons. But we were wrong!”

“The real disaster began!”

“Cities were invaded and humans started running for their lives! Almost six full years of running. I passed by the angel of death multiple times. I struggled for my life every single time, for failure means death. Because of that, I had to pull through. From a simple youth who never experienced pain, to a cruel, experienced warrior!”

Li Da Wei’s voice became low: “In those six years, I watched my father die for me!”

“I watched the girl I love who escaped with me lose her life to the mouth of a monster. I could only clench my teeth and run away while wiping my tears!”

“I trained bitterly and squeezed out my body’s potential!”

“Finally, humans relied on laser cannons and powerful fighters to end up in a stalemate between the monsters on land. And thus, the Grand Nirvana period ended. Humans entered the ‘headquarter city age’. And I….. officially joined the army!”

“With a blink of an eye, around 30 years passed”

Li Da Wei seemed to smile without worry, but Luo Feng felt like that smile contained too much bitterness to express.

“For 30 years, humans and monsters fought. Even though the scale wasn’t as large as the battles in the Grand Nirvana period, it never stopped” Li Da Wei shook his head as he said, “Just counting

the armies under my control, do you know how many people have died in the past 30 years?”

Luo Feng froze.

“A rookie replacing a veteran..... I can’t even say how many times that has happened”

“Death notices being sent to their families one by one. They died so humans can exist” sadness could be seen in Li Da Wei’s eyes, “However, I powerlessly realized that a new monster type will appear in each sea monster’s assault every year. A stronger monster will appear every year”

“What does that signify?” Li Da Wei stared at Luo Feng, “It means that, the sea monsters are continuously becoming more powerful!”

“I’m scared!”

“I am very scared” a tear could barely be seen in Li Da Wei’s eyes, “Humans can never go on the offensive, and the monsters in the sea can continuously evolve and become more powerful. I am scared that there will be a day..... that humans will go extinct!”

Luo Feng’s heart froze.

“However, for sea monsters to attack humans, they have to go through the rivers to attack the inland area”

“So——”

“I will dedicate my life to blocking them. I will definitely not allow them to advance by a single millimeter! The farther they are blocked from the land, the bigger the buffer the headquarter city has. Ever since I became the commander of the southeastern military sector, for a whole 11 years, 6 months, and 3 days, the sea monsters have not been able to advance a single step further along the Huangpu river!”

As Luo Feng heard this, his heartbeat accelerated. From his heart, he truly started to respect the senior in front of him!

Because of their sacrifice, young people like him are allowed to grow up in headquarter cities peacefully.

“I’m going to do everything I can against these sea monsters for the rest of my life!”

“All I want..... is for my future grandsons to have a future, to have hope!” said Li Da Wei softly.

Future, and hope?

Yeah!

If the headquarter cities are invaded again, will the future

generations have any hope?

“Luo Feng” Li Da Wei lightly patted Luo Feng’s shoulders, “In this age, humans can only rely on two trump cards to survive. One is the high tech ‘laser cannon’, and one is the power of a fighter, fighters as powerful as ‘Hong'”

“For humans to survive, they can either invent a weapon more powerful than the laser cannon as of now!”

“Or, another ultimate fighter like ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’ can appear. Or even a fighter that surpasses ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’!”

Li Da Wei looked at Luo Feng: “Luo Feng, when I was young, nobody taught me anything. Because of that, I went down the wrong path. I’m an intermediate level wargod, but this is my limit. I have no hope of improving”

“But you are different!”

“You aren’t even 20 years old yet..... Luo Feng, an existence surpassing the wargod level can be compared to an army of a million people! And ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’ are even more powerful, making them unrivaled”

“Humans are able to peacefully live in headquarter cities now because ‘Hong’ went to negotiate with the countless ’emperor level monsters’ on land. So, one ‘Hong’ is more valuable than a

country's entire army. I hope..... you can reach that level, or even surpass that level"

.....

As he watched Luo Feng's auto jet fly away, Li Da Wei had a complicated expression on as he silently mumbled to himself: "I am already old, and Luo Feng..... your future is limitless"

.....

Luo Feng's thoughts were in disarray because of the words that Li Da Wei gave to Luo Feng at the Huangpu river's military base.

He trained like crazy in the past mainly for the sake of his parents and brother! Ever since he became an 'invincible wargod', even though he still worked hard, he didn't have much pressure anymore.

Enemy 'Li Yao'? Hasn't cared about him for a while.

Family? They're doing great.

Money? Right now, money doesn't serve much of a function.

Authority? Even leaders and heads of organizations, families, and armies are all passionate when faced with him.

“Dad, mom”

Ming-Yue sector. Luo Feng walked into his home.

“You’re back. Breakfast is already ready for you. Maid” yelled his father who was reading.

“Your brother is jogging outside. Ever since he got his legs back, he loves to jog” his father’s smile was bright, “Oh yea, Feng, when are you planning on getting married. The only thing your mom and I want to do is to hug our grandsons”

Luo Feng sat in front of the dining table.

He drank hot porridge and listened to his father. Suddenly, he felt like..... he was extremely happy. The warriors in the military base give up their lives in battle so the civilians in the headquarter cities can live peacefully..... maybe, this is why commander Li Da Wei and countless soldiers work so hard.

“Hey, Wei”

He sat on the floor of the training room as he smiled while holding his cell phone, “What, you’re going to travel with your girlfriend this summer? How romantic. Yea. alright. However, I don’t have much time now, since I still have to go out at the end of the month! I’ll see you later. Yeah, okay, see ya!”

Luo Feng’s face was filled with smiles. Wei was having a good life

too.

His parents were also happy and his brother's relationship was going great.....

Luo Feng recalled the words that commander Li Da Wei said——

"All I want..... is for my future grandsons to have a future, to have hope!"

"There's still a future. There's still hope!" mumbled Luo Feng to himself, "I also want my parents to enjoy the rest of their lives. I also want my brother to marry and have kids and have a family! I don't want all of this to be destroyed by monster hordes. I want the future generation to have hope!"

In this moment——

Luo Feng was determined like never before.

"I also want, to pursue the limits of life and surpass my limits! Become a representative, a chairman, and even more powerful than them! Continue to surpass!"

"I also want, to become like 'Hong' and use my own power to make the monster hordes of the land tremble!"

"I also want, for the future generation to have a future, and to

have hope!”

Luo Feng’s eyes were filled with determination!

“Hardwork!”

“Move forward!”

“Surpass!”

“When I close my eyes for the final time when I die, I don’t want to have any regrets because I didn’t work hard enough in the past!”

After this time’s cleansing of the soul, Luo Feng’s beliefs were hardened like never before. For the entirety of September, Luo Feng dedicated himself to his ‘blade technique’, ‘technique’, ‘fitness level’, ‘Celestial Deity Catalog’, and other things he has to train. His dedication, instead of making him feel bored, made him feel a joy that came from within the deepest part of his heart.

His body’s genetics started to perfect themselves.

His strength improved again and again.....

This physical change to his body made him feel great.

Forcing himself to train leads to poorer results. If he enjoys his

training and the feeling of becoming a more powerful being, the rate at which he improves becomes alarming.

Dawn of September 29th, the time when Luo Feng tested himself!

And..... his fist strength reached 258,103 kg, which is over 256,000 kg. He has officially stepped into the 'advanced level wargod level fitness level'!

.....

Afternoon of September 29th, around 2 PM.

He wore a new blood red colored SS battle uniform which he bought at the cheapest price from the 'Palace of Wargods' and had a SS ghost blade on his back. Luo Feng's body seemed like a polished jewel. As he stood there, he seemed like a blade that could shoot towards the sky as he possessed infinite fighting spirit!

"Dad, mom, I don't know how long I'll be gone this time. Luo Hua, while I'm gone, take care of dad and mom"

"Got it, bro"

"Be careful out there" followed his parents.

Luo Feng slightly smiled and then directly walked outside towards his auto jet. The hatch of the jet automatically opened.

Luo Feng entered it and the hatch closed.

Whoosh!

The dark blue triangular fighter jet swiftly ascended and flew out of Jiang-Nan headquarter city's defense network. It then transformed into a stream of light and rushed towards the Dojo of Limits world headquarters.

Chapter 11: Archaeological Ruin

Hong Ning headquarter city. The Dojo of Limits world headquarters was an old, gigantic spaceship. At the parking area beside the gigantic spaceship landed a dark blue triangular fighter jet.

Inside the auto jet.

“We can’t use the ‘Black God set’ in the archaeological ruins, so I have to leave it here” Luo Feng extended his right hand. Soon enough, the black membrane gathered on his right hand and transformed into a black glove, “I still have to give up control”

After the black god set absorbs the blood of its host, it undergoes a transformation: it becomes tied to its owner’s body like never before, as if it was its owner’s skin. It could change into tens of thousands of different things and even hide below skin! However, there is one downside..... once it’s on you, it is very hard to get it off.

There are two ways to get it off your body.

First way, death of the owner!

Second way, force out the blood that the black god set absorbed. This way, the black god set will automatically come off.

“Now, I’ll get the black god set off. I have to let it absorb my

blood again later” laughed Luo Feng helplessly.

In a moment, the black glove fell onto the seat of the auto jet.

“#1, put away the black god set” after saying that, Luo Feng left the auto jet.

.....

Inside the gigantic spaceship. Right when Luo Feng arrived, he was led to a certain resting lounge. The lounge was huge and had a few dozen seats.

Six people were already in the lounge. With a glance, Luo Feng determined that a man and a woman were of Chinese descent. The one sitting with his eyes closed was Indian. As for the other three, there were two black people who were also sitting silently and a white man with curly golden hair.

“Hello, Luo Feng, I am Ta Ba Yan from Kyoto headquarter city” the Chinese man came over and introduced himself, “From what I know, out of the 8 people departing this time, only you and me are from China. Oh, lady Li who I was talking to is from Hong Ning headquarter city”

“Oh” Luo Feng slightly nodded, said a few words, and then sat on the side.

To prepare to enter the archaeological ruin.....

Soon enough, the 8th and last member arrived. All the wargods of the Dojo of Limits headed to archaeological ruin #9 have arrived.

“Everyone, please follow me”

Under the lead of a man wearing a loose red robe, Luo Feng and the other seven wargods from all over the world arrived at a room made out of a weird purple colored wood. Luo Feng and the others have never seen the purple wood that made up the room. However, it had a weird smell that could help someone gather their spirits like never before.

A man wearing black was currently standing in the room. His back was faced towards Luo Feng and the group.

“Head!”

Luo Feng and the other seven people all slightly bowed.

Only after that did the black clothed man turn around. He scanned across Luo Feng’s group as he said emotionlessly: “Archaeological ruin #9, even though it’s one of the safer archaeological ruins, its death rate is still very high. If any of you want to leave, you can say it now. Otherwise, it will be too late for regrets after entering the archaeological ruin”

Everyone stayed silent.

“Very good” said the black clothed man calmly, “Allure, come in”

His sound spread out.

Whoosh!

A blurry image came together outside the door, which showed to be a mysterious girl who was wearing a golden mask and a black robe. Her black, long hair was spread out. Because the mask was blocking her face, you could only see her eyes, nose, and mouth. However, just from those, you could tell that she is an extremely beautiful person.

Especially those eyes, it seemed to attract the deepest part of one’s soul.

“She’s mixed race” Luo Feng determined this from her eyes, “Allure of the three royal guards, no wonder she got that nickname”

The three royal guards are the most loyal subordinates of ‘Hong’!

Because they are always with Hong, the three of them are more powerful than the average strength of the five investigators.

“The eight of you will depart to archaeological ruin #9 in a bit. Allure will lead” commanded the black clothed man.

“Yes”

Everyone heeded the order.

“Luo Feng stay, everyone else leave” commanded the black clothed man.

Soon enough, only Luo Feng and the black clothed man, ‘Hong’, remained in the room.

The black clothed man said calmly: “Luo Feng, you asked the inner section about the archaeological ruins through phone? You don’t want to go?”

“Head”

Luo Feng slightly bowed, “I did make a phone call to ask about it. At that time, I thought that it wasn’t worth it to enter the ‘archaeological ruin’, because after risking my life, the only thing I get in the end is a….. ‘black god set’. Because of that, I was quite hesitant at that time”

“You changed your mind?” the black clothed man looked at Luo Feng with a bit of shock.

“Yes”

Luo Feng nodded, “The path to aim for the limits of life is filled with difficulty. Of course I can’t shy away from any challenges!”

“Pedestrians can get hit by a car”

“Even in a sector, a dropped vase could hit your head. Nothing is absolutely safe!”

“I picked this path because I need the courage to fight. If it’s absolutely safe, then there’s no point in challenging it. Only because there is danger can my blood boil and fill me with the will to fight! And also, I was already told that my chances of success is over 80%, so what do I have to be afraid of?” Luo Feng’s eyes were bright.

The black clothed man looked and nodded to himself.

This young man in front of him is talented, but to become truly successful, talent isn’t enough.

This young man, compared to the last time he saw him, has at least double the fighting spirit! A flowing fighting spirit that seems to have been hammered repeatedly! If you truly want to break past the limits of life and become the most powerful fighter on earth, then you need an unstoppable fighting spirit that isn’t willing to give in to anything!

“Good. All I want to tell you is….. even though ‘advanced level wargod level spirit readers’ that entered the archaeological ruin #9

have failed, none of them died” said the black clothed man.

Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat. No wonder.....

No wonder Hong wanted him to go, as if Hong knew nothing would go wrong.

“Of course, there are barely any advanced level wargod level spirit readers in the first place, so we don’t have enough data to absolutely guarantee your safety” said the black clothed man, “Go join the group”

“Yes, head”

Luo Feng left immediately.

Whoosh!

A universe level auto jet was currently soaring the air with amazing speed.

Inside was indeed royal guard Allure and the eight wargods.

“You guys can just call me Mrs. Representative” it felt extremely comfortable to listen to Allure’s voice, “Our destination is archaeological ruin #9. Archaeological ruin #9 is in the depths of the amazon rainforest in South America and is one of the safer archaeological ruins”

The white guy suddenly said with curiosity: “Mrs. Representative, so there are other archaeological ruins?”

“Of course!”

No one could see Allure’s full facial expression, but you could see the ends of her mouth curve upwards, “I can tell you of one. Archaeological ruin #1 is the first archaeological ruin we found on earth. It is located in the depths of the sea around Bermuda in the ‘North Atlantic'”

Including Luo Feng, everyone couldn’t help but to gasp.

Archaeological ruin #1? First one found?

“However, as of now, there is no way to enter the entrance of archaeological ruin #1” Allure’s voice was a bit evil, “Even the most powerful person and the hardest metallic weapon….. after entering, will instantly be destroyed!”

Luo Feng and the others were at a loss for words.

All the humans on earth can’t even get past the entrance of this archaeological ruin #1.

Even ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’ cannot enter. It seems that even ‘SS grade materials’ and even higher quality materials will be

destroyed..... “I probably shouldn’t even bother thinking about this place. I need to bring up my skill first” thought Luo Feng to himself.

“Everyone, listen carefully, I’m only going to say this once!”

Allure’s voice became slightly louder.

“Archaeological ruin #9 is an archaeological ruin that uses a ‘disqualification’ type of trial. When you enter, fighters usually continue through the ‘Type-A tunnel’. Spirit readers will be arranged to go through the ‘Type-B tunnel'” after Allure said this, everyone started listening carefully.

It seems like.....

Spirit readers and regular fighters are treated differently inside.

“After entering the depths of the archaeological ruin, everyone will encounter different things”

“The difficulty will be different too!”

“However, those who succeed will receive the ruin’s reward, a ‘black god set’. Those who fail, even if they don’t die, will become handicapped!”

Allure suddenly stood up and faced towards the control area of

the universe level auto jet: “Command..... ruin #9”

Beep!

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Eight red lights flew out of the auto jet and shot towards Luo Feng and the other wargods’ tactical communications watches on their wrists. The group became confused.

“Don’t panic” the sides of Allure’s mouth slightly curved upwards, as if she was about to laugh.

“There are words inside archaeological ruin #9. However, they are different from any language on earth” said Allure, “If you don’t understand what is being said and can’t read the words in the ruin, you will waste a huge amount of time. Early on, nobody understood these words. There were wargods that spent a full seven months before coming out”

“Understanding what is being said in the ruins will save you guys a lot of time”

“So before entering, I will install a piece of translation software in your tactical communications watch. This translation software can translate everything in archaeological ruin #9 to Chinese and English. After you guys come out, I will be responsible for uninstalling this archaeological ruin #9 translation software”

After five minutes, the installation process finished.

South America, amazon rainforest. Night. The universe level auto jet was flying downwards. It then slowly descended.

HUA!

The hatch opened.

Luo Feng and the other seven wargods and ‘Allure’ walked out together. What was around them was a forest whose ends could not be seen. A few monsters could be seen too, but none of them dared to come close. A ‘CHI CHI’ sound rang, and the dirt on the ground started rumbling. The ground unexpectedly split into two as it separated and revealed a tunnel towards the underground area that was five meters wide.

BEEP!

A silverish gray elevator actually rose to the surface. The elevator doors opened and an old man wearing a red robe came out.

“Representative Allure” the red robed old man slightly bowed.

“Ok”

Allure looked towards Luo Feng and the other seven people as the sides of her mouth slightly curved upwards, “Alright, hurry and

enter and then go in the archaeological ruin! Each of you will encounter different things. I hope all of you can come out alive!". After that, representative Allure directly flew into the universe level auto jet, which quickly flew away.

"Everyone, please make haste. Archaeological ruin #9 will only be open this year for two more hours" reminded the red robed old man.

Chapter 12 – Brain Vigor ’21’

“The final two hours? It seems like you can only enter this archaeological ruin #9 at certain times” thought Luo Feng to himself. At the same time, he remained silent as he entered the silverish gray elevator with the seven other powerful wargod fighters.

The red robed old man pressed the button!

Beep!

The elevator doors closed and the silverish gray elevator started to descend. “CHICHI~~” the opening quickly closed and the depths of the amazon rainforest went back to silence! Even so, none of the various monsters roaming around in the amazon rainforest dared to come near this place!

HUA! The elevator doors opened.

What appeared in front of them was a black hallway forged out of alloy. There were lights along the hallway.

“Everyone, welcome to the base of the human camp in archaeological ruin #9” the red robed man spoke fluent chinese, and then followed up with fluent english, “Right now, we are kind of in a rush, so I won’t go on. Everyone, please follow me!”

The red robed man walked ahead and the other eight people

followed behind.

There were nine checkpoints along the black hallway. Finally, they arrived in an empty lobby that was around a few hundred meters wide. There were almost a hundred people from all over the world gathered in the lobby and most of them were in front of computers.

“Welcome, wargods!”

“Wargods, we will pray for your success!”

“Go go go, we’ll receive our fellow wargods when they return. We will have absolutely amazing champagne!”

The various members in the underground base seemed to be overpassionate. However, Luo Feng and the other seven remained silent. The red robed old man smiled on the side: “Ignore these guys. All of them have remained here for too long, so they get a bit excited when they see outsiders. Alright—— are the eight of you ready?”

He said that in chinese and english.

Luo Feng and the other seven remained silent. They just stared at him.

“Very good. Open the entrance!” yelled the red robed old man loudly.

CRAAACK~~

An arc shaped portion of the alloyed wall in front of the lobby split open and revealed a circular tunnel.

“What!”

“Holy!”

The eight wargods who remained silent the whole time looked at the round tunnel with shock. Even their eyes were filled with complete shock. Luo Feng also couldn’t hide his surprisement. When the tunnel first started opening, the first two to three meters were still made out of alloy. However, further in..... was a weird dark brown color, as if tree branch after tree branch tied together to form this tunnel.

At the end of the tunnel was actually a mirror that continuously emitted light. It’s probably a mirror.

“Keep going forward through the tunnel and enter that mirror that’s emitting light. That actually isn’t a mirror, but the entrance to archaeological ruin #9!”

“Once you enter, there’ll be no turning back”

“Wargods, I pray that you can come out alive!” the red robed old

man looked at Luo Feng and the other seven wargods. The people in the empty lobby also looked at Luo Feng and the seven others.

After going in, their lives will be left to fate!

The eight wargods remained silent for a bit. “Everyone” Luo Feng walked towards the tunnel, “I’ll be going in first”

“Enter”

“Go!”

With Luo Feng in front, the other wargods also entered the tunnel one by one.

“CRAAAACK~~” the alloyed wall behind them closed. There was no way back.

After stepping on the dark brown tree branches that formed the peculiar tunnel, a weird smell emanated. Luo Feng smelled it: “Hm, this smell is coming from this tree branch? How come it smells like the ‘black god set’?”. Only after the black god set sticks to you can you smell its light, yet never fading, smell.

“The shining mirror? Is the entrance to the archaeological ruin?” Luo Feng looked in front of him.

“Brother Luo Feng, I wish you good luck” yelled Ta Ba Yan on the

side.

“Good luck to you too!”

Luo Feng laughed and then stepped forward into the shining mirror without hesitation. As if it was the surface of water, the mirror easily swallowed Luo Feng.

“I’ll go next”

the black man spoke his native language, clenched his teeth, and then stepped into the circular mirror.

One by one..... all eight people entered.

This was a black lobby. The front part of the lobby was a semicircle shaped. The entire lobby was a few hundred meters wide. A dreamy light shone from the black lobby’s ceiling, causing the entire lobby to seem quite dream-like.

“This is archaeological ruin #9?”

Luo Feng stood inside the lobby and looked around him. His face slightly changed, “Where’s everybody else?”

.....

At the same time, Ta Ba Yan and the other wargods also appeared in their own black lobbies. These black lobbies were exactly the same.

“Just what you’d expect from an archaeological ruin”

“Right when I stepped through, everything was blurry, and then I appeared in this lobby. I’m even separated from everyone else!” Ta Ba Yan looked at his surroundings with curiosity. Despite saying that, they all knew that each wargod would encounter different things with different difficulties inside the ruin before even entering.

Suddenly——

a dreamy light encapsulated Ta Ba Yan.

“xxxxxx” a complicated sound rang in the lobby.

“Thankfully there’s a translation software” Ta Ba Yan lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch. Just two seconds later, the tactical communications watch gave its translation—— “please enter the type-a tunnel”. After that, a few words appeared on the display of the tactical communications watch matching the translated ‘ancient ruins language”.

The black lobby was currently rumbling slowly. Only after about half a minute did a black tunnel appear. Beside the tunnel were a few complicated letters.

“Oh, the words are the same, so this must be the type-a tunnel. This is the only tunnel here anyway!” Ta Ba Yan directly walked towards the tunnel. After he entered, the entire black lobby instantly disappeared.

.....

You can say that, at the same time, seven of the eight wargods were headed towards the depths of the archaeological ruins along the tunnels.

In the black lobby, a dreamy light encapsulated Luo Feng.

“What’s going on? This colorful light has surrounded me for over 60 seconds already. How come there’s no response at all?” Luo Feng was quite confused as he raised his head and looked at the colored light. He had no idea that the other seven wargods were quickly released from the light and were already headed to their respective tunnels to the depths of the archaeological ruin.

Only Luo Feng!

“xx, xx, xx.....” a piercing sound that had rhythm to it suddenly rang across the black lobby.

“Translation software” Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch. The software was running, and what came out of the tactical communications watch was the

sound——”Alert, alert, alert……”

“Alert?” Luo Feng froze.

Luo Feng did not know that a situation like this has never occurred since humanity discovered archaeological ruin #9.

The dreamy light that was surrounding Luo Feng suddenly disappeared. At the same time, crystals that were as thick as a finger shot down from the walls of the black lobby. At least a hundred crystal ropes shot towards like lightning. They were even faster than the vines in the misty island back then.

“Not good” Luo Feng wanted to dodge.

Sadly, these crystal ropes were unbelievably fast, so Luo Feng had no time to respond as they instantly wrapped around him. The crystal ropes wrapped Luo Feng into a dumpling.

“What’s going on?”

“How come I never heard that you get tied up right after entering?” Luo Feng quickly controlled the soaring shuttle in his backpack. Six blade pieces flew outside of his backpack and slashed towards the crystal ropes like lightning.

The blade pieces of the soaring shuttle that could cut through steel like tofu couldn’t even leave a mark on the crystal ropes.

“Break open” Luo Feng struggled with all his power.

“PU!” “PU!” “PU!” “.....

He continued to slash with his blades.

Sadly, as if a tiny child was struggling, nothing he did could get him out of the crystal ropes. Luo Feng soon understood..... that his strength is nothing in this archaeological ruin! Makes sense. Is an archaeological ruin that can grant black god set after black god set something he can oppose?

“Archaeological ruins are indeed filled with mysteries. Who would’ve thought that I would run into a situation like this right off the bat. However, these crystal ropes are merely immobilizing me. They don’t seem to want to kill me” Luo Feng thought to himself.

And at this moment——

A flowing light flowed through the crystal ropes that were tying up Luo Feng and headed towards the ceiling of the black lobby! As if a machine was sending a signal. This process lasted for about 30 seconds. Suddenly——

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

All the crystal ropes quickly retracted and merged into the walls.

“xxxxxxx, xxxxxxxxx.....” a bunch of words rang across the black lobby.

Luo Feng looked down towards his tactical communications watch.

Complicated words appeared on the display of the tactical communications watch. At the same time, it spoke in chinese——

“Congratulations. Your brain vigor is 21, greater than 18. You are qualified to enter the ‘elite tunnel’ of the training base. Because this is the first time the elite tunnel has opened in the past 5,000 years, please wait 15 minutes”

Luo Feng stood in the black lobby, his thoughts in a mess.

Didn’t that royal guard Allure say that..... there were only the type-a and type-b tunnels throughout the entirety of archaeological ruin #9? How come an ‘elite tunnel’ popped out all of a sudden?

And this is the first time in the past 5,000 years?

And it even talked about some brain vigor.

“What is brain vigor?” Luo Feng was confused, “My brain vigor is

21, greater than 18? It looks like a brain vigor of 18 is the bottom line of qualification. From the words of this archaeological ruin, it seems like nobody out of all the wargods that have entered so far were able to enter this elite tunnel”

Is this good or bad?

The good part is that the ‘elite tunnel’ is different from the original type-a and type-b tunnels, so there might be an unexpected reward.

The bad part is that, once he enters the ‘elite tunnel’, the experiences of previous fighters won’t help!

Since this is the first time it has opened in the past 5,000 years, nobody knew what would happen after entering this ‘elite tunnel’.

“15 minutes sure is taking a long time to pass”

“There is no signal on my tactical communications watch at all. It looks like you can’t connect with the outside world within the ruins” Luo Feng glanced at his watch. However, he wasn’t surprised. If the outside world could connect with the people in the ruins, then the Dojo of Limits, Thunder Dojo, etc. would know much more about the archaeological ruins.

Time passed slowly.....

Luo Feng waited silently.

“xxxxxxxx.....” a bunch of words rang across the black lobby. At the same time, the lobby started slightly rumbling.

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch, which translated the phrase: “Please enter the elite tunnel”

He raised his head!

A dark tunnel whose end could not be seen appeared in the wall of the black lobby. Beside the tunnel were a few complicated words that matched the words displayed on his tactical communications watch.

Chapter 13 – Death Mission

“Elite tunnel huh.....” with a thought from Luo Feng, 365 blade pieces went out of the crack that Luo Feng purposefully left in his backpack and quickly flew out to form the soaring shuttle.

Luo Feng jumped and stepped on the soaring shuttle. Once he was on the soaring shuttle, his speed and agility increased by quite a bit.

“Go!”

Whoosh!

With a speed that could rival a car, he flew into the black tunnel. The black tunnel was extraordinarily dark. After flying for around 500 meters, Luo Feng finally saw several new paths in the road.

“Nine paths? A maze?” Luo Feng frowned. According to what royal guard ‘Allure’ said and his own experiences, he knew that this archaeological ruin #9 uses a disqualification type of training, so it has all sorts of training content.

“A maze appeared? For what?” Luo Feng was confused, “Okay, I’ll first pick a path”

Luo Feng flew into the first path from the left.

In just a moment, another nine paths appeared at the end of this path!

“Damn, nine after nine..... at this rate, even the greatest expert will get lost” Luo Feng carefully examined his surroundings. Around him were ancient tunnels formed by the black tree branches. Nothing stood out.

※※

In a path around 300 meters away from Luo Feng, a blurry black shadow seeped out of the walls in the path made out of the black tree branches. In a moment, as if water was dripping, the black shadow fell onto the floor of the path. It slowly came together, forming a black robed person wearing a silverish gray mask.

The same thing was happening in the other paths. In the nine paths in front of Luo Feng and the nine paths behind Luo Feng. Each of the paths ‘gave birth’ to a black robed man wearing a silverish gray mask.

A total of 18 black robed men started gathering towards Luo Feng.

“Hm? People?” Luo Feng saw a black robed man come out of a faraway path with a glance. This black robed man was wearing a silverish gray mask and had green eyes. His eyes were revealing his unhidden killing intent!

“Another one!”

A black robed man came out of another path. Three, four, five, six….. eight, nine! Nine black robed men stood in front of the nine paths, their green eyes filled with killing intent as they stared at Luo Feng.

“ROAR~” a roar carried from behind Luo Feng.

“There are nine behind me too!” Luo Feng’s spiritual force clearly discovered that there were nine black robed men headed towards him one step at a time as they growled quietly.

Suddenly——

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The nine black robed men behind charged towards Luo Feng along the tunnel like lightning. The nine black robed men in front did the same. Each of the black robed men were filled with killing intent.

“I can’t get stuck between them in this tunnel, or else I’ll be in big trouble from this two pronged attack”

“Charge!”

BOOM!

With his foot on the soaring shuttle and his hexagonal shield and ghost blade in hand, Luo Feng charged forwards like a blood red phantom.

“Break through!” Luo Feng’s eyes became cold.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six curved blade pieces danced like floating butterflies. They drew past an arc as they immediately charged towards the closest black robed man. The black robed man howled as the silverish gray gloves on his hand actually tried to stop those extremely fast blade pieces!

“PU!” each blade piece held over 500,000 KG of impact force. All six blade pieces attacked the black robed man at the same time!

Like a cannonball, the black robed man flew out. As he flew out of the tunnel, he even hit another black robed man.

“Roar~Roar~” the nine black robed men in the tunnel behind were clearly not as fast as Luo Feng.

However, the other eight black robed men in front of him didn’t charge alone. Instead, they blocked the path.

“Those who block me will die!”

“Break through! Break through! Break through!!!” Luo Feng’s speed accelerated to his limit. A horrifying speed of 1000 m/s caused a sonic boom. Even the air itself was curved under such speed. The six blade pieces in front of Luo Feng cleared all obstacles!

Yet, the eight black robed men howled crazily in front of the tunnel ahead as they waved their right hands that had the silverish gray glove on!

“Injuring ten fingers cannot compare to breaking one of them!” Luo Feng’s eyes were cold.

Whoosh!

At the instant he charged out of the tunnel, the soaring shuttle drew past an arc and charged towards the right. He only had one target—— the black robed man on the very right! And Luo Feng’s left hand was holding the shield, ready to deflect any possible attacks.

“PING!” “PU!” three heavy fists smashed into the shield that Luo Feng was holding. Each of the fists were as heavy as mountains: over 100,000 KG!

Thankfully the three fists didn’t land at the exact same time. Otherwise, Luo Feng might’ve died just from the vibrations!

PU!

Fresh blood sprayed out, his left arm was completely broken!

“Die!” Luo Feng’s eyes didn’t even look at the other black robed men. He only stared at the black robed man to the very right.

The six blade pieces cruelly charged towards the black robed man’s head and neck.

“ROAR~” as the black robed man on the very right roared with anger, he swung his two hands like lightning. Sadly, Luo Feng’s blade pieces were too fast..... over mach 10. Two of them successfully slashed the black robed man’s neck. PU! The first blade piece couldn’t even cut through one millimeter. PU! However, the second blade piece slashed through half of the neck!

“Out of the way!”

Luo Feng, who was travelling over 1,000 m/s, roared as his eyes became red. The ghost blade in his right hand instantly transformed into a thunderbolt!

Thunderbolt, quick to the extreme!

Luo Feng was on his soaring shuttle, moving at a speed of over 1,000 m/s, completely using the fourth stage of the《Nine Stage Thunder Blade》, and using his thunderbolt technique..... this blade is the strongest attack Luo Feng has ever done! The blade

directly slashed past the heavily injured black robed man. BOOM! First the blade slashed past, and then Luo Feng's entire body smashed into him!

The black robed man blew up.

"ROAR~" "ROAR~" the other black robed men charged towards with rage like lightning. Each of them were sprinting at a speed of 800 m/s, which is much faster than Li Yao's speed. Each of them rivaled Phantom Demon Catalan.

Including the black robed man that Luo Fent blew away earlier!

A full 17 black robed men crazily pursued!

"Too late for you guys" Luo Feng charged towards the very right tunnel like lightning.

Whoosh!

With a sonic boom, Luo Feng left behind an afterimage as his speed on his soaring shuttle reached 1,300 m/s, which is 500 m/s faster than the black robed men. So..... in just a few seconds, Luo Feng left those black robed men behind. However, Luo Feng continued to fly down path after path for half a minute before stopping.

"Nine paths after nine paths after nine paths, never ending....."

“They better be able to find me after all this” this maze’s design shocked Luo Feng.

In terms of complexity, this maze was quite simple.

It’s just that, how do you even construct such a huge maze?

“After running so much, I probably won’t be able to find the way back for a while” Luo Feng shook his head as he laughed, “At least I got through this part! Those 18 black robed men were too hard to deal with, as each of them could rival a fighter at the peak of the wargod level. The gloves they were wearing were also quite peculiar”. Once surrounded by the 17 black robed men.....

Luo Feng has no confidence in surviving without his black god set.

.....

All 17 black robed men were at the place they were battling at earlier. The pieces of the dead black robed man’s corpse were scattered around the ground. Suddenly, as if it melted, the pieces of the corpse slowly sank into the ground and disappeared.

The bodies of the 17 black robed men became blurry as they transformed into a shadow and merged into the ground.

.....

In the depths of archaeological ruin #9, the hundreds of thousands of thousands of transparent crystal ropes extended towards the same direction. At the same time, a flowing light flowed through them as they gathered towards the same point.

The black tree branches formed a wide path. There were nine paths ahead!

“Another nine paths! Will I ever reach the end at this point?” no matter how good of a temper Luo Feng had, he couldn’t help but to stop.

Every path was exactly the same!

“If I succeed, I can get a black god set. But, what counts as succeeding?” Luo Feng looked at the paths in front of him and thought to himself helplessly. If he was directly told that..... defeating a few black robed men counts as passing, then he could work hard and go for it. But right now, there was no sign at all.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to shake his head.

.....

In a silent path, Luo Feng was still thinking about what to do. And without a sign.....

“Whoosh!” “Whoosh!” “Whoosh!”

Like rain, transparent flowing lights shot down from high above. These transparent flowing lights instantly formed a crystal house that was five meters high and eight meters wide. It trapped Luo Feng inside.

“What’s going on?”

“Before I could even react, it formed a crystal house and locked me up?” Luo Feng looked at this crystal house. With a thought, six throwing knives smashed towards a circle on the same crystal wall with a speed of over mach 10.

The crystal house slightly shook. Sadly….. not a mark was left on the crystal wall.

“What is this house made out of?”

“Even diamond would’ve turned into powder from that impact” Luo Feng was a bit scared. A total impact force of over 3,000,000 kg within a 5 cm diameter circle couldn’t even leave a mark.

“xxxxxx…..” a mysterious sound reverberated within the crystal house for quite a while.

Luo Feng was overjoyed. The archaeological ruin was finally

giving a message. He quickly looked down towards his tactical communications watch and his translation software immediately translated the entire message——

“Elite student Luo Feng, your test, the death mission, has officially begun!”

“For the duration, you will receive food and water”

“The instruction manual of the basic 312 moves of the spirit reader ‘controllers’ will be carved onto the wall of the testing room. After learning these 312 moves, you will have a chance to break out of the testing room”

Luo Feng scanned the wall of the crystal house. On the semi-transparent wall of the crystal house were large amounts of all sorts of complicated engravings, over 300 human body diagrams, and archaeological ruin words beside them for further explanation. Luo Feng felt like they were extremely complicated just by looking at them.

This seems to be the basics of the spirit reader ‘controllers’? Just the basics?

“The death mission requires you to: break out of the testing room within three years!”

“If you cannot break out of the testing room within three years, then you fail”

“Failure, means death!”

Chapter 14 – The News of Luo Feng's Death

In the half transparent crystal house in the maze in the depths of the archaeological ruin.

"Failure means death?"

"Three years?" Luo Feng's face was looking extremely bad. He can't even contact the outside world within the archaeological ruins! And this special 'death mission' gave him a duration of three years. If he was actually stuck in these ruins for such a long time, what would the people outside think?

They would probably think he's dead!

And then they would contact his parents. Even Xu Xin would know.

"What should I do, I'm not even dead!"

"If I stay in here for a long time, I won't even be able to contact the outside world" Luo Feng was extremely anxious. When he thought of his family and Xu Xin thinking he's dead, he couldn't help but to become even more anxious, "Fuck, can't believe I ran into this stupid test. I rather not have the treasures I receive from succeeding!"

Luo Feng couldn't think of what would happen to his family if he wasn't there for three years!

“Hurry!”

“I need to break out of this testing room as fast as possible!” Luo Feng scanned across the walls of the crystal room. There were large amounts of complicated engravings on them, but Luo Feng couldn’t bother with them anymore. He clenched his teeth, whoosh! whoosh! whoosh! Six throwing knives transformed into six lights as they blasted within a circle with a diameter of 3 cm.

BOOM!

BOOM!

BOOM!

Again and again, Luo Feng crazily attacked with all of his power!

“BREAK!” Luo Feng screamed from his heart.

“I don’t want to stay here for three years!”

He attacked again and again. However, not a scratch was left on this weird crystal-like material.

“It’s no use, no use” Luo Feng helplessly kneeled onto the floor of the crystal house.

Logic told him that since this mission gave him a full three years, breaking out of this crystal house is, without a doubt, extremely difficult. If only..... if only he could contact the outside world with his tactical communications watch to tell his family and his girlfriend that he's still alive, then that would be good too.

But, he can't contact them.

If something happens to his parents, then what's the point of these rewards?

"If I can't oppose this, then I can only accept it"

Luo Feng's gaze was as sharp as a knife as he scanned across the diagrams and words of the instruction manual, "if you give me three years, then I will break out of this testing room within three months"

Click!

Luo Feng pressed the button of the tactical communications watch. As if he was taking a video, he recorded all of the diagrams and words on the wall into his tactical communications watch and then translated it to 'diagrams and Chinese' through his 'translation software'. After around 20 minutes, the secret instruction manual for controllers, 《basic 312 moves》, was complete.

.....

As of now, it was 22:56 9/29/2057 in Beijing, China.

Luo Feng has already started studying the instruction manual for controllers, 《basic 312 moves》. His desire to go home caused Luo Feng to focus completely into his studies. There was food and water in the archaeological ruin! If he's thirsty, he would drink. If he's hungry, he would eat. As for the rest of the time, it was completely used into studying these basics!

After starting, Luo Feng realized how deep this instruction manual, 《basic 312 moves》, was!

In terms of complexity, who knows how many times more complicated this is compared to the 《Celestial Deity Catalog》.

The 《Celestial Deity Catalog》 is just a bunch of dull drawings where one has to model these drawings with throwing knives. This takes upon the idea of "practice makes perfect", as the person continues to push his throwing knife control to the extreme. From this, the person is able to improve his control! These drawings were created by 'Hong' through an AI system. The drawings get harder and harder.

However, the《basic 312 moves》 is different!

The ones who built this archaeological ruin #9, which was built to contain the training method of the basics of the spirit reader

‘controllers’, is a certain organization in the universe! This instruction manual gave birth to an uncountable amount of powerful people tens to hundreds of times stronger than Luo Feng in the distant past!

The thing that Luo Feng bought back then that was treasured by Hong, 《Spirit Reader Basics》, was created with the knowledge that humans had over the course of a few dozen years.

But the 《basic 312 moves》 was created with thousands of millions of years of testing!

Once he began training, Luo Feng immediately realized the difference between the two!

Luo Feng improved quite slowly after practicing the 《Celestial Deity Catalog》for such a long time, but after practicing the 《basic 312 moves》..... his ability to control throwing knives increased with a whoosh. Even Luo Feng was surprised at his improvement.

.....

“BOOM!”

“Still not enough” in the crystal house, Luo Feng, whose face was stubbled, stared at the crystal wall. There were no marks on the crystal wall, and the ten blade pieces that crashed into the crystal wall danced back to the soaring shuttle, “Ten whole blade pieces, each blade piece with an impact force of over 500,000 KG, is not

even close to enough”

“Continue!”

Luo Feng yet again sank into the《basic 312 moves》. From six blade pieces to ten blade pieces, only two months and 21 days have passed! Keep in mind that after practicing the《Celestial Deity Catalog》for a month, he couldn’t even go from six throwing knives to seven! When the two are compared, the difference is shocking.

※※

Underground base of archaeological ruin #9.

“It’s been three months!”

The red robed old man shook his head as he sighed, “Three whole months, and Luo Feng hasn’t come out yet. Notify the Dojo of Limits”

“Yes!”

The many members of the base quickly sent the message.

.....

Luo Feng had no idea how shocked the outside world was while

he buried his head in his studies! As of now, of the eight wargods that entered archaeological ruin #9, five people came out. Of these five people, two of them succeeded while three of them were handicapped. There were another three people that didn't come out!

Usually, if you aren't able to come out of the archaeological ruin alive, then you would be determined as dead!

However, keep in mind that one of the three people that weren't able to come out was the famous 'invincible wargod' Luo Feng! Nobody would think that Luo Feng would fail! Even if he failed, he should at least be able to escape with a disability. But no news of Luo Feng and the two other wargods could be heard.

Dojo of Limits world headquarters, in the gigantic spaceship-like structure.

The black clothed man, 'Hong', stood there silently as he looked outside through a window.

"Head" said Allure respectfully.

"I didn't think that, I really didn't think that....." Hong sighed deeply.

Of the eight that entered, five came out. The fastest one came out in just three days! The slowest one came out in 15 days! The last three never came out..... including Luo Feng. Usually, if they don't

come out after three months, then they would be determined dead!

Before the translation software was made, the longest time it took for a wargod to come out was seven months, since they couldn't read or understand anything that was going on in archaeological ruin #9.

But after the translation software was made, efficiency was greatly increased. The longest time it takes for someone to come out is just half a month!

The Dojo doubled that time, making the final date 'three months'.

If they aren't able to come out of archaeological ruin #9 within three months, then they would be determined dead!

"Three people couldn't make it out" the black clothed man, Hong, said quietly, "Notify their family members of their death! Luo Feng is an exception..... notify his family that Luo Feng could be dead, but not confirmed"

"Yes" Allure bowed.

"But head, it's been three months?" Allure couldn't help but to say.

The black clothed man sighed: "I still cannot believe that Luo Feng would die in this archaeological ruin #9. Go!"

“Yes” Allure left.

The black clothed man, Hong, silently looked outside the window. He first saw Luo Feng in the elite training camp. At that time, Hong was shocked at Luo Feng’s talent! After that, his hopes for Luo Feng increased steadily. He even handed the ‘soaring shuttle’ over to Luo Feng. He thought that Luo Feng would become his right hand man one day.

But he didn’t think that.....

Luo Feng would die in archaeological ruin #9, one of the safer ruins.

※※

Dawn, Yang Zhou city, Ming-Yue sector.

“Hong Guo, what is going on?” in the kitchen, Gong Xin Lan yelled, “We weren’t able to contact Feng for three months. I’ve been panicking the whole time”

“Relax”

In the living room, Luo Hong Guo laughed as he looked at his newspaper, “Our son is one of the most powerful people on earth! He kills monsters like he’s cutting through vegetables. The

commander of the south eastern sector even came to thank our family last time”

Suddenly——

The doorbell rang.

“Maybe Feng is back” Luo Hong Guo immediately got up, but Gong Xin Lan was even faster than him; she ran from the kitchen all the way to the door to open it.

“You guys are?”

The couple Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan looked at the two people in front of them with confusion on their faces. Standing outside their door was an extremely beautiful woman, and another woman beside her. Below the steps to the door were four more people: the chairman and the three chiefs of Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Dojo of Limits.

The six of them had painful expressions on their faces.

“Hong Guo, something isn’t right, I’m a bit scared” said Gong Xin Lan quietly.

“Chairman Zhou? Quick, come in” smiled Luo Hong Guo.

The six of them came in.

The woman in front bowed: “Mr. Luo, Mrs. Gong, I am Luo Feng’s teacher Jiang Fang”

“Oh, teacher Jiang Fang. I’ve heard of you” smiled Gong Xin Lan.

“I came today to notify you of something” Jiang Fang’s eyes had a bit of sadness in them. She couldn’t have imagined that the talented, yet hard working youth would.....

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan exchanged glances.

“Our Dojo suspects that your son, Luo Feng, has died, so they wanted us to notify you two” said Jiang Fang quietly.

“Holy!”

Gong Xin Lan’s eyes widened as she immediately collapsed.

Luo Hong Guo’s body froze, but he still went to hold his wife. Luo Hong Guo’s tears couldn’t help but to stream down.

Jiang Fang also held Gong Xin Lan. Gong Xin Lan’s collapsed body froze as she looked at Jiang Fang in front of her with widened eyes. Her voice was shaking: “Teacher Jiang, impossible, this is impossible. Our Feng is definitely fine. Impossible, impossible.....” Gong Xin Lan’s face was shockingly pale.

“We aren’t sure, it hasn’t been confirmed yet” followed Jiang Fang.

“Yes, not confirmed yet” Luo Hong Guo held Gong Xin Lan, “There won’t be any problem. Feng will come back”

But Gong Xin Lan cried without a sound.

Not sure?

What kind of power is the Dojo of Limits? The strongest power on earth! The Dojo of Limits sent a few wargods to notify the two of them. If they didn’t have a clue, would they just come and randomly say something like that? Father Luo Hong Guo was clear….. that there is over a 90% chance that his son, Luo Feng, is dead.

“Hello, chairman Zhou”

Luo Hua walked in his home with a bright smile on his face, but after looking at his father and mother, he couldn’t help but to panic as he ran over: “Dad, mom, what’s wrong?”

Chapter 15 – One Year and Three Months

Ever since they heard of the news, Luo Feng's family was in pain. However, like someone drowning trying their hardest to grab onto something, they wanted to believe that Luo Feng was alive—— since he wasn't confirmed to be dead yet! So they waited anxiously. They also couldn't bear to notify Luo Feng's girlfriend, 'Xu Xin' about this.

Time passed day by day. There are no walls on earth that can block all wind. Since Xu Xin is part of the Xu family, she kind of realized what was going on after Luo Feng went missing for five months. When she anxiously asked Luo Feng's parents, they could only tell her the truth……

Even though they were extremely sad, they were all waiting!

Without an absolute confirmation, they won't give up.

…..

Depths of the archaeological ruin, inside the maze's crystal house.

Luo Feng had tons of facial hair, but his eyes were as bright as the stars. He lowered his head and looked at his tactical communications watch.

"A year, it's been an entire year"

“I’ve been in this archaeological ruin for an entire year” with a thought, his formless yet powerful spiritual force flew out like a dragon as it rolled up blade piece after blade piece. A full 14 blade pieces started dancing around him. They then transformed into 14 flowing lights as they smashed towards the same point on the crystal wall!

BOOM!

14 blade pieces, each one with an impact force of over 500,000 kg, which adds up to a total of over 7,000,000 kg! Even an advanced level wargod wearing a black god set will become heavily injured from the impacts. If they are attacked multiple times, then their organs will be completely destroyed!

“RUMBLE~~” the crystal house shook a bit.

“Not enough. Over 7,000,000 kg of impact force isn’t enough?”

Keep in mind that the usual ‘advanced level wargod’ usually has a fist strength of 300,000 kg. With a multiplier of three, their attacks will only end up at around 900,000 kg. Luo Feng is at least eight times more powerful! This strength is definitely way beyond any advanced level wargod.

It could even threaten an ‘existence surpassing the wargod level’.

However——

It is not enough!

“I definitely will be able to get out”

“Dad, mom, Xu Xin..... wait for me” Luo Feng closed his eyes. Two tears couldn’t help but to flow down his cheek, which were quite visible since Luo Feng’s face was filled with dust.

※※

Virtual space, a huge conference room.

A silver floor, silver walls, and a huge silver round table. There were only six chairs that were so black they seemed to be able to swallow up sunlight! As of now, there were five white robed people and one black clothed person sitting on the chairs! This was indeed the ’round table conference’ of the highest level of the Dojo of Limits.

The head ‘Hong’ and the five investigators were here.

“Head, it has been an entire year since Luo Feng has entered archaeological ruin #9. Even people who couldn’t understand and couldn’t read what was in the archaeological ruin back then took at most seven months! After people were able to understand, it took at most half a month!” a white man spoke slowly, “So we can confirm it?”

The black clothed man said softly: “Confirm Luo Feng’s death”

The expressions of the five investigators slightly changed.

“Transfer Luo Feng’s property to his family” said the black clothed man, Hong, without emotion, “keep the auto jet in the Dojo”

“Yes”

The five investigators heeded the command. However, they were a bit amazed that ‘Hong’ cared about Luo Feng’s family so much. For someone like ‘Hong’, dealing with Luo Feng’s property is nothing important at all. And yet, he personally gave the command. Even though Hong said leave the auto jet in the dojo….. keep in mind that an emperor level auto jet is extremely expensive: over 200 billion!

Nobody would say anything if Luo Feng uses an auto jet. But if Luo Feng’s family has this auto jet….. it would be a disaster!

And since Hong personally ordered the transfer of property, nobody would dare to try to take some for themselves.

Keep in mind that Luo Feng’s property is worth a gigantic amount!

“Sadly, we can’t even hold a memorial for Luo Feng, since he died in archaeological ruin #9” sighed investigator Liu. Usually, a

memorial will be broadcasted across the entire country for wargods that have died! Even the leader of the country and various wargods will participate. Citizens from all over the country will watch the broadcast.

However.....

Memorials will not be publicly held for wargods that have died in archaeological ruin #9.

One reason is that they need to make up a cause of death to hold the memorial.

Another reason is that, the Thunder Dojo once held a memorial for the wargod that stayed in archaeological ruin #9 for seven months. But who would've thought that he would actually come out again. Wouldn't it be awkward for someone to come to life after broadcasting his death to the entire country?

Ever since that incident, memorials were not publicly held for those who died in archaeological ruin #9.

"Head, we should probably start discussing who should be the new examiner for Jiang-Nan headquarter city"

On 9/30/2058, a notice was posted on the website of the Dojo of Limits.

The news of Luo Feng's death!

The couple Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan received the news that day.

Even though they also received a gigantic amount of wealth under Luo Feng's name that day, the two of them were still extremely sad.

And when Xu Xin received the news that day, she couldn't handle it. She directly quit school and left. She rode on a train alone and left Jiang-Nan headquarter city to a foreign place. Even though the people of the Xu family were easily able to track her down, the head of the Xu family gave his command——

Let Xu Xin stay outside. Just protect her secretly, and do not bother her.

Jiang-Nan headquarter city, Jiang-Nan mountain water sector, a villa on top of Marvelous Mountain. After a year later, it welcomes its owner again.

Inside the villa.

"HAHA, HAHAHA, I AM SO HAPPY, SO HAPPY!!!" inside the villa, Li Yao raised his hands and then clenched his fists. He took in a deep breath and turned his head to his wife Venina, "The Dojo of Limits finally confirmed Luo Feng's death. Too bad I couldn't kill him myself"

Venina said quietly: “No, doesn’t he have family? He dared to kill our child, so we.....”

“Yea” Li Yao’s eyes seemed to have a horrifying green light in them.

“However, his family is still the family members of someone who was in the Dojo of Limits” sneered Li Yao, “If we kill them, then we’ll get in trouble too. The best way is to use civilians to torture his family! Make them break down and even..... kill themselves in pain! That way, nobody can blame us”

Li Yao looked towards Venina: “Now if I use the HR alliance, nobody will stop me right?”

Last time Li Yao tried to do something like this, the chairman of the HR alliance’s underground assembly stopped him.

“Luo Feng is already dead. Who would care about the family members of a dead man?” laughed Venina without a care.

When Luo Feng was here.....

Even the HR alliance has to fear him. But now that he’s dead, what do they have to be afraid of?

“Then let’s begin” smiled Li Yao.

“Let me organize it. There are tons of psychology experts. It will be quite a simple task to torture them and break down their minds” smiled Venina.

Ming-Yue sector.

“WHAT? My mom got into an argument with someone at Lotus Pond park and was injured?” Luo Hua couldn’t believe this, “But even if she got hit, why would my mom cry so much?”

Nanny Tai quickly said: “That bitch said way too much. Even I was enraged. But she had so many housewives helping her”

Luo Hua squinted.

Even though Luo Feng was the one who stood out the most in the Luo family, Luo Hua is also extremely talented, especially in terms of intelligence. Even Luo Feng admits that he isn’t as smart as his brother, since his brother was able thrive in the stock market as such a young age. The stock market is the place that can reflect human nature, and Luo Hua was fighting in the stock market ever since he was handicapped.

As of now, he definitely counts as an expert in the stock market.

It’s just that..... he was always overshadowed by his brother! No matter how much money he makes, he never will be able to make as much as Luo Feng! However..... he isn’t dumb. Rather, he’s extremely intelligent.

“I always feared that my brother’s enemy, that Li Yao, will come back”

“Could it be him?”

Even though he might be overreacting a bit, Luo Hua didn’t dare to relax. As of now, he manages the gigantic amount of wealth, tens of billions of dollars, that Luo Feng left behind. And he still has a ‘thousand year black crow root’ spirit of nature, which is said to be a treasure that cannot be priced.

.....

Two months later.

“What?”

Li Yao and Venina’s faces weren’t looking good.

“We can’t do anything either. That little Luo Hua of the Luo family actually hired six ‘advanced level warlords’ as bodyguards. Whenever their parents go out, two advanced level warlords will follow them!” said a young man respectfully, “We do not have the ability to arrange ‘wargods’ to help us, so we can’t do it the hard way”

“So we tried a different approach that doesn’t require force, but

___”

“Luo Hua has now become the eighth largest stockholder of China’s ICBC, so he can use China’s special forces to protect his family”

Li Yao and Venina were flabbergasted.

ICBC, that is China’s largest bank with assets around ten trillion. They manage over 50% of the stocks of the country’s financial sector, so the top ten stockholders indeed hold an astonishingly high amount of authority. However, the top five stockholders are all huge organizations and not a single person! How can a little shrimp like Luo Hua become the eighth largest stockholder of ICBC?

Even if he has tens of billions of dollars, someone has to be willing to sell him all of those stocks.

It’s virtually impossible to purchase so many stocks in such a short amount of time in the stock market.

“In China, our HR alliance cannot compare to the country’s special forces. This is their territory” bowed the young man as he said.

“GET OUT” roared Li Yao.

The young man didn’t dare to make a sound as he left.

Li Yao's face was looking horrible: "Luo Feng was hard enough to deal with, but who would've thought that this normal person named Luo Hua would make it so hard too. What method did he use to become the eighth largest stockholder of ICBC?"

"Hmph, I can't beat your brother"

"But I don't believe, that I can't beat you either!"

"Luo family....." Li Yao's eyes were flashing with a cruel light.

And when Li Yao started doing all sorts of things to deal with the Luo Family.

On 12/26/2058, which is around one year and three months after Luo Feng got stuck in the crystal house.

In the maze, the crystal house was slightly transparent and extremely beautiful. However, it was even tougher than an emperor level monster's scales and has trapped Luo Feng for one year and three months!

"BOOM!"

After a boom, flowing lights broke through the crystal house's wall, and a large black figure walked out with large steps with excitement.

“I’m finally out”

“I’M FINALLY OUT!”

Chapter 16 – The Ruin's Reward

After one year and three months of hard work, he finally broke out of this crystal house.

The crystal house with a huge hole in its wall suddenly let out a 'CHICHI' sound. Soon after, it completely transformed into a dreamy light and then merged into the dark brown tree branches on the ground.

"xxxxxxx....." a familiar sound rang in the maze.

"After one year and three months, I finally hear this sound again" Luo Feng lowered his head and looked towards his tactical communications watch, which quickly translated into——

"Congratulations. You pass the death mission test!"

"Please go along the tunnel in front of you and keep going forward. See me to retrieve your rewards for completing the mission"

While the sound was still reverberating, the solid wall formed out of the dark brown tree branches in front of Luo Feng started to make an opening. A tunnel that was three to four meters wide was formed. The tunnel was dark and there seemed to be a dreamy light at the end, the same kind of light that the 'crystal wall' was letting off.

“I finally succeeded. So it’s time to get my reward?” Luo Feng turned around to put his bag on. And then his soaring shuttle flew up.

“Go!”

With a leap, he landed on the soaring shuttle.

Whoosh! The soaring shuttle swiftly flew along the tunnel and quickly arrived at a palace shining with light! As if it was a gorgeous palace where angels lived, the dreamy light in here never disappeared. The palace itself was around a few dozen meters wide, it was like the size of a gymnasium.

“Meet him? Where?” Luo Feng looked around him.

It was all empty!

Suddenly——

A huge amount of light came together and quickly formed a blurry, tall person. It focused and became a crystal person with a bald head.

“The light formed a person?” Luo Feng was a bit nervous. Everything that has happened in this archaeological ruin has long surpassed human capability! Even the most powerful fighter is nothing in this archaeological ruin! Naturally..... Luo Feng would be a bit nervous in front of this crystal person.

“xxxxxx……” the bald crystal person smiled as it talked. Its face was extremely detailed. If it was a real person, they would probably be quite beautiful.

Luo Feng’s tactical communications watch immediately translated: “Hello, Luo Feng”

The bald crystal person took a glance at the tactical communications watch. After that, one of the flowing lights of the palace instantly shot into the tactical communications watch. Luo Feng couldn’t help but to be shocked, as he could tell from the tactical communications watch’s display that this ‘bald crystal person’ of the archaeological ruin was currently deleting a massive amount of information from the tactical communications watch.

“Relax” a slightly metallic sound left the bald crystal person’s mouth.

Chinese?

Luo Feng looked at the person in front of him with shock.

“Don’t be so shocked. I have observed how the humans on this planet have evolved. The evolution in your language, culture, history, everything. Of course, I understand your words and languages” the bald crystal person slightly smiled, “To help you accept me, I’m talking to you in the form of a person”

Luo Feng calmed down.

Yeah, who knows how long this archaeological ruin has been around for. It isn't weird that they know exactly how the world has progressed.

"Humanity's technology is still in a primitive state" continued the bald crystal person, "I know everything about you guys. Because of that, I am able to call out your name 'Luo Feng'. Before you entered here, I called out to you once"

Luo Feng froze.

Yeah, one year and three months ago, he was called 'elite student Luo Feng' when the death mission activated. At that time, he thought the translation software added that in. Now that he looks at it, the archaeological ruin indeed knew his name.

"Because you activated the death mission, I called out your name directly" said the bald crystal person, "If you failed the test, then you will die. That way, the news won't go out. And if you passed the test, you have the right to enter Yun Mo planet and become a member of Yun Mo planet. You will also know that I am observing this planet"

"Yun Mo planet?" Luo Feng froze.

The bald crystal person slightly nodded: "Knowing is the same thing as not knowing"

“And now, I’ll give you the rewards for passing the test”

The bald crystal person waved his hand. Momentarily, a few objects from the depths of the palace were carried over by a colorful light. There were four objects in total: a black vest, a silver armguard, a book that seemed to shine with a bit of starlight, and a hexagonal shaped metal card. These four objects hovered in front of the bald crystal person.

“The first thing is what you people call the black god set” the bald crystal person pointed at the black vest.

“The second, this silver armguard-shape thing is a mini quantum computer!”

“The third, is a technique for controllers, 《Soaring Sky》”

“The fourth, is a card that lets you enter Yun Mo planet”

The bald crystal person touched the last hexagonal shaped metal card. There were two complicated words on it. He sighed: “I’m following the program that my master set, but sadly, even if you get this card, you can’t get the people of Yun Mo planet to come get you. Which means, you can’t enter Yun Mo planet”

“Why?” Luo Feng’s mind was in a mess right now, “And what is this Yun Mo planet?”

“Yun Mo planet is a mysterious place in the vast universe” the bald crystal person looked at Luo Feng, “Sadly, I can’t contact Yun Mo planet, and you can’t contact Yun Mo planet via the card. According to the program in this base, I must give you this card. However, you can’t use it anyway”

Luo Feng was shocked.....

Sounds like this Yun Mo planet is a mysterious and powerful organization in this universe! They set up this archaeological ruin a long, long time ago and observed everything that was going on here. They would pick out the elites and grant them access to Yun Mo planet. However, it seems like this archaeological ruin can’t contact Yun Mo planet.

Yun Mo planet is probably in trouble! Or maybe it has been destroyed!

Nothing is eternal. No matter how powerful or mysterious the organization is, it won’t last forever. This archaeological ruin is in perfectly fine condition, so if contact cannot be made, the fault must lie in Yun Mo planet.

“You can’t use this Yun Mo card, and you already know the usage of this black god set”

“And this mini quantum computer is something that every genetic fighter and spirit reader wants. It is extremely useful” said the bald crystal person, “Not only can it perform every function that your tactical communications watch can, it also has various

other functions. The most important one is that it can evaluate a target's strength"

"Evaluate strength?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Put it on" said the bald crystal person, "And then seep your spiritual force into it". As he said that, the silver armguard flew towards Luo Feng.

"Okay"

Luo Feng first took off the armguard that was originally on his left arm and then put on this silver armguard. Right when a bit of his spiritual force went into it, the silver armguard quickly attached itself to his skin. On the surface of the silver armguard appeared a huge amount of pictures and words, which were all in Chinese.

"The mini quantum computer also has a translation function" said the bald crystal person, "The translation software in your tactical communications watch will leak out too many of this ruin's secrets, so I already deleted lots of information about this ruin from your tactical communications watch, including the controller's basic 312 moves"

Luo Feng nodded.

Who cares if it was deleted? Who knows how many times he has bitterly practiced those basic 312 moves over the course of a year

and three months. He has those basic 312 moves memorized backwards and forwards.

"Press the most bottom left button on the 'mini quantum computer' and then point the 'mini quantum computer' towards someone to evaluate their strength" said the bald crystal person, "You can also control it with your voice"

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked. The so called most bottom left button was just a button formed by a few markings, since the entire surface of the mini quantum computer was smooth and flat. Luo Feng slightly pressed down onto the bottom left button and then pointed the mini quantum computer to himself. Momentarily, a few words appeared above the mini quantum computer—— "Battle strength: Spiritual force (Student level 9). Genetic energy (Student level 9)"

"What does student level 9 mean?" Luo Feng looked at the bald crystal person.

"Since you are already part of Yun Mo planet, you have the right to know about this" said the bald crystal person, "There are an infinite amount of life forms in this wide, vast universe. Most of the life forms have the strength of 'student level'. The so called student level, using the terminology of your world, basically means an average civilian"

Luo Feng froze.

An average civilian..... he's just a regular person? Just a civilian?

“The student level is split into nine different levels. Level one is the lowest and level nine is the highest. Level one is equivalent to your beginner level warrior level and level nine is equivalent to your advanced level wargod level” smiled the bald crystal person, “The strongest fighter on your planet, ‘Hong’, has received a few inheritances from a few archaeological ruins. That’s how he came to know about the nine different levels. Maybe because he thought those nine levels didn’t sound good, he changed them to ‘warrior, warlord, wargod’. However, across the vast universe, this level is labeled as ‘student’”

Luo Feng took in a deep breath.

“Above the student level is the star traveller level! Only after reaching the star traveller level can you be called ‘genetic fighter’ ‘spirit reader’. Before the star traveller level, you’re just a student with no right to be called a genetic fighter, spirit reader” after the bald crystal person said this, Luo Feng was speechless.

He is called an invincible wargod, but it turns out he doesn’t even have the right to be called a spirit reader.

“The star traveller level is also split into nine levels!”

“On your planet, existences surpassing the wargod level are star traveller level fighters!” said the bald crystal person.

Luo Feng came to a realization: so all those mighty and great representatives are star traveller level fighters.

“After becoming a star traveller level fighter, you can wander around in space and at least keep your stomach full. You have the basics to survive” smiled the bald crystal person, “But your planet doesn’t have the technology to allow you to wander around in space”

“What about strength?” Luo Feng asked, “How powerful are they?”

Luo Feng was curious as to how powerful the existences surpassing the wargod level, Hong, and Thunder God were.

“Most of them are at the star traveller level one stage, only a few of them are at the star traveller level two stage! Two of them are at the star traveller level three stage” said the bald crystal person, “The most powerful fighter, ‘Hong’, is at the star traveller level six stage. And ‘Thunder God’ is at the star traveller level seven stage. The two of them are much more powerful than the rest”

Luo Feng froze.

Hong is at the star traveller level six stage? And Thunder God is at the star traveller level seven stage?

“Wait, Hong should be more powerful than Thunder God” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to say.

“I am talking in terms of level, which is the power of their body,

genetic energy, and spiritual force. That is not their true battle power" said the bald crystal person, "Hong's fitness level and genetic energy is indeed weaker than Thunder God's. However, true battle power doesn't just rely on fitness level or genetic energy"

"Like you!"

The bald crystal person looked towards Luo Feng, "Your spiritual force is at the student level nine stage! But, your battle ability amplifier is 16! Your genetic energy is at the student level nine stage with a battle ability amplifier of 3.5!"

As of now, Luo Feng can simultaneously control 16 throwing knives at maximum power.

"Both at the student level nine stage, but is a battle ability amplifer of two and ten the same thing?" the bald crystal person looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng froze.

Yeah……

The mini quantum computer only looks at the basics of your body. When he first came here, his spiritual force could control six throwing knives, but now he can control 16 throwing knives. The difference in power is gigantic, but the test still labels him at the student level nine stage.

“Student level nine stage, battle ability amplifier of 16”

“Is equivalent to a star traveller level one stage, battle ability amplifer of 4” said the bald crystal person, “Most star traveller level one fighters have battle ability amplifiers of three to four, so your current battle power can compare to most people at the ‘star traveller level one stage’, which is your so called existences surpassing the wargod level!”

The bald crystal person pointed at the hovering book with a bit of starlight shining from it: “However, you have an instruction manual teaching an attacking method for controllers, 《Soaring Sky》. This 《Soaring Sky》 teaches you how to use the weapon for controllers, the soaring shuttle. In the past, you didn’t even understand how to use the soaring shuttle and actually used it as a regular throwing knife. That is a disgrace to this weapon built for controllers”

“What is a controller?” asked Luo Feng.

“The fighters in the universe are split into genetic fighters and spirit readers. These are the two large categories. Genetic fighters are further split into smaller categories, and so are spirit readers. You are in the ‘controller’ type category of the spirit readers. Using the words of your planet, it is simply telekinesis”

Luo Feng was shocked. It looks like the universe has long established a perfect system about training.

“Spirit readers in the star traveller level all wish for a weapon for spirit readers! Who would’ve thought you actually obtained one” said the bald crystal person, “So you are quite lucky. Even though that ‘Hong’ knows about the treasure, one, he isn’t a spirit reader, and two, he doesn’t have the manual that teaches him how to use the soaring shuttle. So that’s why he gave it to you”

Luo Feng was overjoyed. No wonder Hong seemed a bit reluctant and said that he purposefully lowered it to 30 stars.

Even spirit readers of the star traveller level wish for a weapon like this, and he actually got it.

“If they don’t have a weapon built for them, how much of their strength can they actually use”

“And now that you have the soaring shuttle and the instruction manual《Soaring Sky》, you can unleash the soaring shuttle’s true potential”

“Without the soaring shuttle and instruction manual, you can already compare to a star traveller level one’s battle power”

“But with them, it’s like giving wings to a tiger. Your strength will increase dramatically. As to how much it will increase, it depends on how well you can use the soaring shuttle!” said the bald crystal person.

Luo Feng’s heart rate accelerated.

Even though he hasn't broke through to the star traveller level yet, with his battle ability amplifier, soaring shuttle, and the《Soaring Sky》instruction manual, the usual existence surpassing the wargod level won't be his opponent.

"Usually, you need to be able to control 12 throwing knives at maximum power to break through to the star traveller level"

"But you are talented, as your brain vigor is 21. So your breakthrough requirement is higher than the normal person's. You need to reach 16 throwing knives to be able to have a chance to break through" said the bald crystal person, "Right now, you can break through at any time. I left the method for your breakthrough in the mini quantum computer. Take a close look at it when you get back"

Luo Feng was excited. No wonder the crystal house's toughness setting was set so that he needed 16 throwing knives to break it open. He had to reach 16 throwing knives to be able to break through to the 'star traveller level'.

"You are the first person on earth to become a member of Yun Mo planet in the past five thousand years" said the bald crystal person, "But you can't get proud. In terms of battle power, that 'Hong' is way more powerful than you. He has his own domain already! You can say that he is invincible in the star traveller level"

"As the first person in five thousand years to become a member of Yun Mo planet, even though you can't enter Yun Mo planet

anymore, I still hope for you to surpass them and become the strongest fighter" said the bald crystal person as he looked at Luo Feng.

Chapter 17 – Luo Feng is Back

The bald crystal person was the central AI of the entire archaeological ruin. However, it's not the type of AI that 'Hong' makes, but an AI with human intelligence and even a bit of human emotion! Its original program was to serve Yun Mo planet, so it thought of itself as a member of Yun Mo planet!

Yun Mo planet, only those with true talent, perseverance, and intellect are able to join! Otherwise, even a star traveller level fighter doesn't have the right to join.

Luo Feng is extremely talented!

To be able to finish the test in one year and three months, his perseverance and intellect is clearly displayed. Only someone like this has the right to enter Yun Mo planet! Sadly, something happened to Yun Mo planet. All these years, this central AI hasn't been able to contact Yun Mo planet, so it could only guess that something has happened to Yun Mo planet.

However, it is an AI, so it must obey the program it is following. Year after year it continued its mission on earth.

Now that there's finally someone who was able to become a part of Yun Mo planet, its tiny 'emotion' hoped for Luo Feng to surpass everyone on earth.

"Yeah, I'll work hard" nodded Luo Feng, "I wonder if there is anything above the star traveller level?"

“Of course. Star traveller level fighters are only able to survive in space while they wander around” said the bald crystal person, “Above the star traveller level is the star level! Star level fighters are also split into nine stages. And above the star level is the universe level!”

“Star traveller level, star level, universe level.....” Luo Feng kept that in mind.

“Star traveller level fighters can fly between the stars”

“And star level fighters, to you fighters on earth, have the ability to destroy the sky and earth. They can fly in space without a spaceship, but only for a short time. They cannot survive for a long period in space”

“Universe level fighters can wander around in space with just their body. Each of them are truly powerful!”

“For your earth, universe level fighters are deities that you cannot oppose. Even ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’ are ants in front of them. They can just exhale a breath and the resulting shockwave would kill Hong. They can fight with battleships in the universe. Each of them are extremely powerful”

“Reaching the universe level counts as joining the ranks of the powerful fighters in the universe” smiled the bald crystal person, “Of course, just merely joining them. If they choose to, a universe level fighter can easily have a few dozen stars, a countless amount

of beautiful women, authority, servants”

“And, only above the universe level can you truly cause the many countries in the universe to fear you” said the bald crystal person.

Luo Feng held his breath.

“A countless amount of beings in the universe are at the student level”

“Star traveller level fighters merely exist, star level fighters are kind of powerful beings. Universe level fighters are large, respectable figures. It takes a countless amount of stars to give birth to one universe level fighter! And there are barely any fighters above the universe level! Even countries around the universe have to respect those fighters” said the bald crystal person.

Luo Feng was flabbergasted. It takes a countless amount of stars to give birth to a universe level fighter? One can imagine how rare universe level fighters are.

Not bad, looks like earth isn’t doing too bad.

“Keep working, Luo Feng!”

“You have hope for the star level! If you work hard, get lucky, meet famous people, etc. You still have a sliver of hope of reaching the ‘universe level’” said the bald crystal person.

Luo Feng didn't even know what to say.

Does this AI even know how to comfort people? He has to work hard and get lucky and meet famous people to just have a sliver of hope. That's basically saying—— Luo Feng, you have a one in a hundred million chance to reach the universe level!

Well, the bald crystal person can't be blamed.

It takes a countless amount of planets to give birth to a universe level fighter! Even though Luo Feng is talented, you cannot measure the amount of lifeforms in the universe. There are probably hundreds of billions of more existences that are more talented and are more determined than Luo Feng. The chances of becoming a universe level fighter? They are indeed extremely small.

That is an existence that can fight against a battleship with their bare hands! Extremely powerful!

"You aren't encouraging me, you're making me lose confidence" said Luo Feng helplessly.

"Go!"

"Earth is your home. Keep working hard. If there is a day where this location is discovered by other countries in the universe, then the stronger you become, the better it will be for you. You might

even be able to help out your home planet” after saying that, the bald crystal person dissipated and became a countless number of flowing lights, “the tunnel is open, you can return home”

“Go back home!” Luo Feng’s heart was beating quickly.

The palace walls moved and then formed a tunnel made out of a huge amount of dark brown colored tree branches. At the end of the tunnel was a shining mirror! Back then, he went through this mirror to enter the archaeological ruin.

“I can finally go back”

“Dad, mom, Xu Xin.....” Luo Feng put the soaring shuttle and the other things into his backpack and then took large steps as he headed towards the mirror through the tunnel. After that, he stepped out of the mirror!

Archaeological ruin #9, underground base.

This base was formed by various different organizations on earth. Whether the five great countries, two dojos, or the HR alliance, all of them have the right to send people into archaeological ruin #9. The various people here also come from various different organizations.

“Ahhh”

Zhang Qing, who was wearing a white robe, stretched in front of

the computer, “Man, I’m bored. Sigh, this novel still hasn’t updated yet”. The members of this underground base indeed had very little to do. Other than the basic operations of the base, they just had to receive wargods and contact their organizations. Other than a few notebooks for work, there were various computers here for entertainment.

“After I play some games, I’ll be off work” Zhang Qing suddenly froze.

RUMBLE~~~

Zhang Qing rapidly turned his head!

The near hundred members of the entire underground lobby all turned their heads towards the large door. That door is the door to the tunnel that leads to archaeological ruin #9. Other than manually opening it, the door also automatically opens when the sensors sense a wargod coming out.

“Someone is coming out?”

“Wait, the wargods this year already came out two months ago”

Another batch of wargods were indeed sent in again on 9/29/2058. However, the slowest one came out on 10/25. Now it’s already 12/26. Ever since the translation software was created, nobody stayed in the ruins for a duration of three months before coming out.

“Damn, someone stayed in for three months”

“omg*”

“Oh lord”

All the members stood up and looked towards the slowly opening door. They all wanted to see which wargod stayed in for three months before coming out.

Crack!

The door was mostly open and someone who was completely black stepped out.

“A black person?”

They all froze as they looked at the person in front of him. This person was black and his moustache was dirty, so he really seemed like a black person.

“Beep!”

A beam of light scanned past Luo Feng.

“Welcome back, wargod Luo Feng” this was the electronic sound

of the underground base.

“Luo Feng?”

“IT’S LUO FENG!!!”

“HOLY, one year and three months.....”

“LUO FENG IS STILL ALIVE!”

The entire lobby went into an uproar. Luo Feng’s death back then was a huge incident. Even the head of the Dojo of Limits, ‘Hong’, treated that case seriously. Many people didn’t think that Luo Feng would die, but who would’ve thought that one year and three months later, Luo Feng would come out of the archaeological ruin again.

“Welcome, wargod Luo Feng” someone came up to receive him.

However, most of the people in the lobby were still going crazy”

Holy! He stayed in archaeological ruin #9 for a year and three months. Ever since the translation software was made, the longest it took for someone to come out is half a month! How could this happen?

“Report, Luo Feng is back”

“Reporting to headquarters, the Chinese wargod, Luo Feng, is back!”

The various members of the underground base started to do their work as they notified their respective organizations. This was definitely an earth shaking piece of news! The genius, an invincible wargod, stayed in the archaeological ruins for an amazing one year and three months.

Dojo of Limits world headquarters, inside the gigantic spaceship structure.

Top floor, in an empty room.

The black clothed man, Hong, held a spear as he closed his eyes. He stood there silently, and then slowly began to practice his moves one at a time. He did them extremely, extremely slowly, but the weird thing is that once he started to do them, the surrounding space itself seemed to curve. The space became so curved that the spear became blurry.

“Knock, knock, knock” an anxious knocking sound rang from outside.

“Hm?” the black clothed man, Hong, slightly frowned.

Everyone is banned from interrupting his training sessions. The only ones allowed to even reach this area are the five big investigators and the three royal guards, nobody else has the right.

But none of these eight people are dumb. So unless something extremely important is happening, nobody would distract him.

“Come in” said the black clothed man, Hong, coldly.

The door opened automatically.

Three people came in, which were two royal guards with black robes and golden masks, and investigator Liu.

“What’s going on?” Hong was extremely shocked.

It was really shocking that three people came in together.

“Head” investigator Liu was a bit excited as he said, “Luo Feng came out”

“What” Hong froze.

Beside him, the royal guard with the beautiful figure said quietly: “Head, Luo Feng, who stayed in archaeological ruin #9 for one year and three months, came out alive”

Even Hong was surprised.

Too extraordinary!

One year and three months inside an archaeological ruin that even he doesn't understand. Since Luo Feng stayed in there for such a long time, he must've had some special rewards.

"Depart right now, I'll personally go welcome wargod Luo Feng of our dojo" the black clothed man, Hong, let out a comforting smile.

The five powerful countries, two dojos, and the HR alliance received this piece of news at virtually the exact same time. All of those powers were stunned. The archaeological ruins are something that even modern age technology cannot understand. Despite that, even though Luo Feng had the translation software with him, he actually managed to stay in there for one year and three months. Something special must've happened.

Jiang-Nan headquarter city, Jiang-Nan mountain water sector, in the villa on top of Marvelous Mountain.

"Not bad, Luo Hua, you managed to save your old dad's life from that" Li Yao sat on the sofa, his eyes shining with a fierce light while he held a glass of red wine.

Whoosh!

Someone charged into the living room like lightning, it was indeed the blond haired Venina.

"What're you so in a rush for?" frowned Li Yao. He took a sip of

red wine and closed his eyes in extreme satisfaction.

"Luo Feng is back!" said Venina in a rush, "He came out of archaeological ruin #9"

Li Yao, who had his eyes closed in satisfaction, widened his eyes out of disbelief. The glass slid off his fingers and CRASH! smashed onto the ground. It split open and the red wine that poured everywhere seemed like fresh blood.

Chapter 18 – 50,000 Years

Human underground base of archaeological ruin #9.

“Wargod Luo Feng, here is a clean set of clothes”

“Wargod Luo Feng, do you need anything else?”

Luo Feng, who looked like a ‘black person’, took a glance at the two girls at the door and waved his hand, “No need!”. With a thud, the door to the room closed.

“Haven’t had a bath for a year and three months!” Luo Feng swiftly took off his battle uniform set and his clothes and then charged into the tub in the bathroom. Hot water continuously came out of the faucet. When Luo Feng went in, the tub of the water swiftly became black. There’s no helping it, Luo Feng only had water to drink in the archaeological ruin.

Want to take a bath? In your dreams!

As he lay in the tub and allowed the hot water to wash his body, Luo Feng couldn’t help but to use his ‘mini quantum computer’ to make a call. The mini quantum computer has already copied all of the phone numbers and other crucial data from his ‘tactical communications watch’.

“It’s been a year. I wonder how my parents are and if they’re doing well”

Actually, Luo Feng wanted to make this call right when he came out of the archaeological ruin. But since he was blocked by the massive amount of workers in the underground base, Luo Feng could only find a room to take a bath and then make the call from there.

“Beep——Beep——Beep——”

The call went through.

Jiang-Nan headquarter city, Yang Zhou city Ming-Yue sector.

In a quiet room.

Luo Hong Guo was laying on a bed, his face pale white. Beside him was a hanging plastic bag since he was receiving IV treatment. Two nurses were currently with him in the room.

“It’s a phone call from Luo Feng, it’s a phone call from Luo Feng.....” the ring tone rang.

Luo Hong Guo, who had a pale face and closed eyes, instantly opened his eyes and ferociously turned his head towards the cellphone on the counter. He couldn’t care about anything else as he struggled to turn his body and extend his left hand to reach for the cellphone. This scene caused the two nurses beside him to jump with shock, one of them quickly said: “Mr. Luo, you cannot move your waist. Let me do it”

“No problem”

As if he had infinite power and the waist that was hurting was somebody else’s, Luo Hong Guo actually managed to swiftly pick up the phone.

As he looked at the display, Luo Hong Guo was in disbelief: “It’s actually Feng. Who is calling, Feng?”. Keep in mind that the Dojo of Limits has already confirmed Luo Feng’s death. Luo Feng’s parents didn’t know that Luo Feng was in archaeological ruin #9, so they thought that the Dojo had a way to absolutely confirm Luo Feng’s death.

After taking a deep breath, Luo Hong Guo accepted the call.

“Beep.”

“Hello” Luo Hong Guo’s voice was hoarse, low, and had a bit of worry and a bit of expectation in it, as if he was holding a piece of tofu and scared that it would break at any time.

“Dad, it’s me” the voice filled with energy and power that rang in Luo Hong Guo’s dreams who knows how many times, that familiar voice that was so familiar it couldn’t get any more familiar….. caused Luo Hong Guo’s eyes to widen. Luo Hong Guo’s hands started to shake: “Feng, Feng, is that you?”

“It’s me, dad” said Luo Feng.

“Why don’t you hurry up and video chat so I can see you” followed Luo Hong Guo. He was scared that someone was pranking him, since it isn’t hard for modern technology to mimic someone’s voice.

“Dad, I’m taking a shower and I have a huge moustache” Luo Feng was a bit embarrassed.

Beep!

The video started!

Luo Hong Guo stared at the screen of his cell phone. Within the heat of the bath was a human figure. His long hair was wet and he had a huge moustache. However, the shape of that face, and especially those eyes, caused Luo Hong Guo’s eyes to light up. In the video, a throwing knife flew up and swiftly flew past Luo Feng’s face, quickly cutting off that big moustache. What was left was a handsome young man!

It was indeed Luo Feng!

It was indeed the Luo Feng that he, Luo Hong Guo, has raised for 20 years!

“Feng, Feng, you aren’t dead, great, this is great” Luo Hong Guo’s eyes teared up. He and his wife were extremely saddened because of what happened to their oldest son over this period of time.

“Dad, sorry, I was stuck in a place and couldn’t come out. I just came out, and now I’m in South America. I’ll be back home in a few hours” said Luo Feng.

“Okay, okay, no rush. Your things are more important” said Luo Hong Guo.

Suddenly——

Crack, the door to the room opened. Luo Hua, who was in a cotton sweater, came in with a cup of fresh milk.

“Don’t worry, dad, everything has been dealt with. I will be home soon. Is everything fine at home?” the voice from the phone carried over, which caused Luo Hua, who was bringing in some milk, to freeze.

“Bro!”

Luo Hua widened his eyes in disbelief, and his tears practically started streaming down instantly!

The two nurses on the side were flabbergasted. They were clear about how capable this Mr. ‘Luo Hua’ was. He is the eighth largest stockholder of China’s largest bank, ICBC, with property worth over a hundred billion. People who go in and out of his home are people with extremely high authority in the stock market and agents of the country’s special forces.

Even they are nurses arranged by the country's special forces to take care of Luo Hua's father, and such a person started crying all of a sudden?

"Everything is fine, everything at home is fine, everything will be fine when you come back" followed Luo Hong Guo.

"Okay, I will be back soon"

The phone call ended.

Luo Hua walked towards his father and said with disbelief: "Dad, that's a phone call from bro? Bro isn't dead?"

"In just a few hours, he'll be home" followed Luo Hong Guo.

"Haha, ha, ha....." Luo Hua seemed to be crying and seemed to be laughing, "I knew bro would be fine. I knew it!". Ever since he was young, Luo Feng was like a gigantic tree that was protecting him. He even became a fighter to earn money to help him stand up again. In his heart, Luo Hua is extremely grateful to his brother.

In his life, his brother is extremely important! When the news of Luo Feng's death spread around, not only were his parents sad, he, Luo Hua, was also sad. However, he had to hold up the family.

He isn't even 20 yet, but he had to fight against Li Yao's schemes

and deal with all sorts of sly foxes. Luo Hua was indeed very, very tired.

※※

In a cafe in Kyoto headquarter city.

Xu Xin was currently sitting on a couch in the cafe. There was an extremely thin laptop in front of her. The desktop photo of the laptop was a photo of her and Luo Feng together. In the photo, Luo Feng was smiling extremely dramatically, as if he was a child. Xu Xin tapped the screen and opened a folder.

As she held her cup of coffee, Xu Xin silently looked at the photos inside the folder.

“Hello, may I borrow your cell phone for a bit?” a handsome young man smiled as he walked by.

Xu Xin glanced at him. Her eyes were cold. After that, she looked back to her laptop without making a sound.

The handsome young man slightly frowned, but when he saw out of the corner of his eye the photo that Xu Xin was currently looking at on the laptop, which was a photo that Xu Xin and Luo Feng took together on top of a building in the wilderness, the handsome young man couldn’t help but to walk away and curse in his mind: “Damn, she already has a boyfriend. The cabbage is given to a pig. Eh, wait. The background of that photo seemed to

be a ruined city, and there were monsters?”

A couple taking a romantic photo in a city in the wilderness?

“I saw the wrong thing, I saw the wrong thing” the handsome young man couldn’t believe this.

And at this time..... an extremely sad song rang, which caused the handsome young man to turn his head in confusion: “Using such a sad song as a ringtone?”

Xu Xin’s body shook on the sofa. She set this song as the ringtone for Luo Feng’s number. She took her cellphone out and accepted the call.

“Xu Xin, it’s me”

Instantly, the layer of ice sealing Xu Xin’s long frozen heart melted.

※※

Exit of the underground base.

Luo Feng, who was wearing a black casual outfit and holding a gigantic backpack, smiled as he watched two flowing lights fly towards him in the sky. After making the two calls, Luo Feng’s heart became much more relaxed.

The two flowing lights in front of Luo Feng was Luo Feng's emperor level auto jet! After he came out of the archaeological ruin, Luo Feng gave the command to his auto jet..... which instantly came flying over.

"Hm? that's——" Luo Feng saw the other blood red triangular shaped fighter jet beside it.

The two fighter jets descended simultaneously.

The hatch opened and a staircase extended out. The black clothed Hong stepped out first, whereas royal guard 'Allure' and investigator 'Liu' followed after.

"Head" Luo Feng slightly bowed.

"Good, you didn't let me down" the black clothed man, Hong, directly walked in front of Luo Feng. His eyes seemed to see straight through Luo Feng, "And I feel like, Luo Feng, you're different from before. You must've received quite a bit this past year and three months. Go, let's talk on the fighter jet"

"Yes" Luo Feng clearly knew the head's strength: star traveller level six stage. But because he has a domain, even those at the star traveller level nine stage probably aren't his opponent. He is invincible in the star traveller level!

The difference between the representatives at the star traveller

level one stage and the head's strength is like the difference between a 'beginner level warrior' and an 'invincible wargod'!

And the difference between him and the head is also very huge.

The prehistoric level auto jet was in front while the emperor level auto jet was behind.

Inside the prehistoric level autojet, the black clothed Hong, Luo Feng, Allure, and Liu He sat on a chair that formed a circle.

"Luo Feng, you have the translation software, so why did you spend a year and three months inside archaeological ruin #9?" the black clothed man, Hong, looked at Luo Feng, "Did you discover some secret in this archaeological ruin #9?". As the number one man on earth, he also received some technological inheritances from the ruins, so there are barely any things left that can pique his curiosity. Archaeological ruin #9 happens to be one of those things.

"Yes" nodded Luo Feng.

"What secrets, can you tell me?" the black clothed man, Hong, looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng knew in his heart that the reason why the bald crystal person took the initiative to delete all that information from his tactical communications watch was to prevent the people on earth from knowing them! Only members of 'Yun Mo planet' are allowed

to know them.

“My brain vigor is higher, so I triggered a special death mission” said Luo Feng half truthfully.

“Death mission?”

The people on the seats were astonished. The black clothed man, Hong, continued asking: “Did you receive the same rewards as the other wargods? There must’ve been something different”

In the past, as long as they entered archaeological ruin #9 and succeeded, they all received a black god set.

“I did receive something extra”

“Not only did I get a black god set, I also got an instruction manual for spirit readers” said Luo Feng.

“Oh?” the black clothed man, Hong, was a bit disappointed.

He is a fighter! All of his energy is put into his training. As of now, according to what ‘Hong’ knows about the universe, even though he is at the ‘star traveller level six stage’, his true power is way higher than that. Many star level fighters don’t have their own domain.

With a domain, he is invincible in the star traveller level!

With such a high state in his fighter abilities, of course he won't waste any more time on training spiritual force.

※※

Inside archaeological ruin #9, in the dark brown maze.

The bald crystal person, whose entire body was shining, walked forward step by step.

"Luo Feng indeed didn't say anything about what happened in the ruins"

The bald crystal person could barely feel a feeling that humans had, a sliver of 'sadness', as he sighed, "Master, it's been 50,000 years. I haven't been able to contact you for 50,000 years". Even after 50,000 years, as an AI, it could only obey the core program and pick out wargods.

Chapter 19 – Anger Surges, Intense Hatred Arises

The emperor level auto jet and the prehistoric level auto jet were both hovering in midair.

Luo Feng took out a black god set from the emperor level auto jet, got on his soaring shuttle, and then flew back into the prehistoric level auto jet.

“Head, the black god set” Luo Feng put it on the seat.

“Yeah” the black clothed man, Hong, slightly nodded his head.

However, in his mind, ‘Hong’, for once, didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. Because the ‘AI’ of the auto jet he sold only has a simple AI that listens to Hong’s commands. Hong commanded that auto jet to listen to Luo Feng, so of course the fighter jet obeyed! If Luo Feng and Hong gave a command at the same time, then the auto jet would actually listen to the one with the highest authority, ‘Hong’.

After the news of Luo Feng’s death spread around.

Hong took back the auto jet and also took away the black god set! After knowing that Luo Feng came out, Hong hurriedly put the black god set back in!

Oh my gosh!

When has he, Hong, ever been so embarrassed before? Good thing nobody knows about this.

“Luo Feng, let’s split up here” said the black clothed man, Hong.

“Yes, head”

Without caring about anything else, he said goodbye to the two existences surpassing the wargod level, stepped on his soaring shuttle, and flew into his auto jet.

“#1, go home” commanded Luo Feng.

Whoosh!

The dark blue auto jet instantly accelerated to over mach 10 as it headed towards China’s Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Yang Zhou city.

The sky was gray, there was no sunlight. The cold breeze carried up a few fallen leaves.

There were quite a few children in Ming-Yue sector. The teenagers ignored the cold as they did some strength, agility, and blade exercises. Many people take the way of the fighter seriously in Ming-Yue sector. Around the teenagers were quite a few

parents, and some of them were fighters that were guiding these teenagers.

"Look, a fighter jet"

"Oh? It's dark blue, like wargod Luo Feng's"

"It does look like it. It basically seems identical"

Quite a few people in the sector looked towards the sky with shock. The dark blue triangular fighter jet was currently descending. It landed on the lawn.

HUA!

The hatch opened. A youth wearing a casual black shirt who was carrying a gigantic backpack ran towards one of the villas. The various adults and children in the sector looking from afar were all stunned, stunned at the face of that youth!

"Luo Feng?"

"It's Luo Feng? Is this a ghost, I thought the Dojo of Limits announced his death?"

"The dojo in our headquarter city even held a memorial"

Quite a few people were flabbergasted.

“Brother Chen, I’ll see you later” Luo Feng, who was still running, smiled towards the stunned Chen Gu.

“Luo, Luo, Luo.....” Chen Gu looked towards Luo Feng with shock as he pointed at Luo Feng. However, not a single phrase could leave his mouth.

In the memorial, the original fire hammer squad members were extremely, extremely sad.

And fuck, now he’s alive?

.....

Ming-Yue sector was definitely going to be in an uproar today. Jiang-Nan headquarter city was definitely going to be in an uproar today.

In Luo Feng’s home’s backyard.

Brother Luo Hua and mother Gong Xin Lan all stood there. Beside them were a few bodyguards and servants.

“Feng” yelled Gong Xin Lan.

“Mom” Luo Feng ran over. His mother was visibly much more older than she was a year ago.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to glance at Luo Hua as he said lowly: “What’s going on. How come you didn’t boil the thousand year black crow root into a medicine and give it to mom and dad?”. Luo Feng told his brother a long time ago that the he and his parents should drink the medicine made out of the thousand year black crow root. But Luo Hua and his parents said no rush..... they wanted to see if they could find other relatives first and then split it between all of them.

“Bro” Luo Hua shook his head, “I’ll tell you later”

“Where’s dad?” Luo Feng was confused.

After going missing for a year, with his dad’s temper, he should’ve came out by now.

“Your dad is in the room” Gong Xin Lan pulled his son’s hand as she headed towards the room.

In the quiet room, father Luo Hong Guo lay on the bed. When Luo Feng opened the door and went in, Luo Hong Guo’s eyes contained an excitement never experienced before. His son, that he thought was lost forever, is standing in front of him! Luo Hong Guo even wanted to get up from bed.

“Mr. Luo, you cannot move. Please watch your waist” the two

nurses were shocked and then ran over.

“Dad, what happened to you?” Luo Feng’s face instantly changed.

He sat beside the bed and grasped his father’s hand. He started to frown deeply: “Dad, wait, your face is so pale. How come you can’t even get up?”

“No problem, the doctor said I just have to rest for about a year and a half” Luo Hong Guo let out a smile, a smile that came from the bottom of his heart, “If dad can see you, then it doesn’t matter how injured I am. I am really, really happy today. Really happy. Extremely happy” as he said that, a joyful tear started to appear in the corner of his eye.

Luo Feng nodded, but his heart was filled with a bit of anger and confusion.

Not right!

“Luo Hua, what is going on?” Luo Feng looked towards his brother.

“You two go out” Luo Hua waved his hand at the two nurses. The two nurses swiftly left, leaving the four members of the Luo family in the room.

Luo Hua looked at his brother: “Bro, I’m useless”

“Can’t blame your brother” father Luo Hong Guo stretched his arm from the bed to stop Luo Hua, “Feng, over this period of time, especially the three months after the Dojo of Limits announced your death, our family has never had peace. All sorts of methods were used to deal with us. They even used some of the residents in the sector..... your mom has had to consume sleeping pills every single day to be able to sleep”

Luo Hua’s face turned green as he clenched his fists, his gaze was as sharp as a blade!

“Luo Hua” Luo Feng looked towards his brother and said lowly, “Tell me”

“It’s Li Yao”

Luo Hua took in a deep breath, “Starting from three months ago, Li Yao has been using all sorts of methods to deal with our family via the HR alliance. Even though he didn’t dare to directly kill the family members of a fighter in the Dojo of Limits, but..... certain methods are even worse than death! I could only do everything in my power! I even used the ‘thousand year black crow root’ and contacted a major figure through bro’s friend, commander Li Da Wei, to transfer 120 billion worth of ICBC stocks to me. I became the eighth largest stockholder of ICBC, which gave me the authority to arrange members of the special forces to protect our family”

“But Li Yao never gave up his revenge”

“All sorts of methods against the mind, the body, no matter how underhanded they were..... he used everything” Luo Hua shook his head, “Now mom and dad can only stay at home. I have no other way. Last time, dad just crossed the sidewalk and ended up getting in a traffic accident. Luckily, he had bodyguards protecting him, or else he wouldn’t be alive anymore”

The more Luo Feng listened, the uglier his face became.

CHICHI!

The left hand he was holding the steel edge of the bed with became powder.

“He actually, actually.....” Luo Feng’s face turned green, “I CAN’T BELIEVE THIS LI YAO IS THIS SHAMELESS!!!”

It’s all his fault!

Ever since Li Yao hid in Europe like a turtle, he couldn’t be bothered to deal with him after he became famous. However, after the news of his death was confirmed, this Li Yao actually came to unleash his revenge on his family members right away. Luckily his family had the ‘family members of a fighter in the Dojo of Limits’ identity, so Li Yao couldn’t come and attack them himself.

If his brother was just a bit less capable, then.....

“Bastard” Luo Feng’s body was shaking a bit.

Anger surges, intense hatred rises!

His killing intent couldn’t be controlled!

After a few minutes.

After comforting his parents, Luo Feng was in the training hall upstairs.

“I made a mistake once, but I won’t make the same mistake again!”

Luo Feng touched the ice cold, dense blade pieces of his soaring shuttle, his blade-like gaze caused one’s heart to go cold, “Li Yao, you think I’m too scared to touch you because you keep hiding in a headquarter city?”. There are indeed laws that ban people from killing each other in headquarter cities, and killing a wargod in a headquarter city is even more serious.

But.....

Luo Feng understood that the so called law was to keep the country in order. As of now, his true power can compare to someone at the ‘star traveller level one stage’. Once he seriously begins to study《Soaring Sky》and brings out the soaring shuttle’s true potential, he will become even more powerful.

More powerful than the average representative.

An existence surpassing the wargod level killing a wargod. That might anger some people, but the consequences won't be too major, Luo Feng can still accept them.

"Beep"

Luo Feng looked towards the mini quantum computer and turned on the 'Palace of Wargods Sharing System'. Back then, Li Yao and Venina used this system to track down Wang Tong and the other wargod's position! The Palace of Wargods wanted wargods to use this system to help each other when they're in trouble, so every wargod has this system installed. And today..... it is going to be used by Luo Feng to track down Li Yao!

"Oh, he's still in Jiang-Nan headquarter city" the skylight above opened.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng, who was wearing black, stepped on the soaring shuttle and soared into the sky.

He flew along an arc as he charged towards the auto jet. HUALA, the hatch automatically opened.

“Golden silk net!” Luo Feng looked inside the cabin and his spiritual force, like a formless gigantic hand, directly grabbed the golden silk net. Luo Feng gazed towards the southwest, his gaze was like a blade, “LI YAO!”

Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s HR alliance building, 32nd floor.

Li Yao and Venina were currently talking to the manager of the HR alliance’s building.

“Still three more hours before the passenger plane takes off” Venina lowered her head and looked at her watch.

“Don’t panic” said Li Yao lightly, “What are you scared of?”

“That Luo Feng is going to be back” frowned Venina, “I said a long time ago that we should have just rode a plane back to Europe. Wouldn’t that solve everything?”

“A plane?” Li Yao shook his head, “That plane worth only about ten billion? If we fly a short distance around the headquarter city, then there would be no problem. But for long distances, there are many flying monsters around uninhabited areas, like the land and sea in the wilderness! Once an accident happens——”

Only ‘passenger airplanes’ are able to travel over long distances, or auto jets, or extremely advanced and expensive ‘disc shaped fighter jets’ that are priced at around 50 billion.

“Furthermore, this is a headquarter city, and you’re still scared that Luo Feng will mess around?” sneered Li Yao.

“Hm?” Li Yao froze as he looked outside the french window.

“Look outside?” Mr. Zhu was shocked.

What could be seen was a black image in midair with his foot on the soaring shuttle as he charged towards this window like a bolt of black lightning!

“It’s Luo Feng!” exclaimed Venina.

“LUO FENG!” Li Yao’s entire body was instantly protected by the black membrane as it formed into a black battle uniform and a black helmet. Only his two eyes were revealed.

BOOM!

The glass was smashed apart!

“LUO FENG YOU DARE——” Li Yao roared as he smashed towards the window to his side and directly leaped into midair outside.

From Li Yao’s perspective, the area outside could be easily captured by all sorts of surveillance cameras, so Luo Feng wouldn’t dare to mess around.

“Hmph” Luo Feng swiftly passed through.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Flowing light after flowing light instantly shot out. A full 16 flowing lights, like 16 roaring dragons, caused powerful sonic booms that shattered the entire floor of the elegant lobby. Even Mr. Zhu was blown off to the side. Luo Feng only stared at Li Yao, his eyes seemed to be burning with fire.

The 16 flowing lights followed an arc. They were so fast that Li Yao had no chance to dodge, and they all simultaneously smashed into Li Yao’s body.

“Hmph, throwing knives?” a bit of disdain crossed through Li Yao’s eyes.

“BOOM!”

The incredible destructive force instantly carried through the black god set. Even though it was weakened by 90%, the incredible impact force was still alarmingly large. Each throwing knife had an impact force of over 500,000, so 16 throwing knives combined to a total of over 8,000,000 kg! Even after 90% of it is taken off, there’s still over 800,000 kg of impact force left!

Which is to say, Li Yao, with nothing to protect him, has to handle over 800,000 kg of impact force with his bare body!

Back when Luo Feng was inside archaeological ruin #9, he relied on his shield to dissipate the large impact force of nearly 1,000,000 kg from the mysterious black robed man's attack. Even so, his arm still broke! Just his shield was able to dissipate half of the force, and his broken arm also took away quite a bit of it. The actual force that hit Luo Feng was 300,000 to 400,000 kg, but that still made Luo Feng spit out blood in pain.

And Li Yao, has to deal with an impact force that exceeds 800,000 kg!

Usually, Li Yao would be killed!

But luckily, the 'black god set' spread the force of impact to every location of his body. And his fitness level is at the peak of the advanced level wargod level, which was quite a bit more powerful than Luo Feng's fitness level when he first entered archaeological ruin #9!

"PU!"

"PU!"

"PU~~~"

Li Yao's face became flushed red as fresh blood sprayed out of his mouth like a fountain. Just from this horrifying impact force, just this one time! Caused Li Yao to lose most of his battle power.

“Impossible, impossible!” Li Yao roared in his heart, “I am at the peak of the wargod level and I have a black god set! Even ‘representatives’ surpassing the wargod level can only damage me in one hit. Barely any representatives are able to kill me in one hit. But Luo Feng, he..... could it be, that he made a breakthrough and is now an existence surpassing the wargod level?”

Wargods all knew that advanced level wargods with ‘black god sets’ cannot be killed by wargods. Even representatives would have trouble killing them in one hit.

.....

There were many pedestrians below on the plaza of the HR alliance building. Quite a few tourists were even taking photos for memories in the plaza.

“RUMBLE~~”

As if a cannonball fiercely smashed into the plaza, the stone pavement of the plaza instantly blew up. The surrounding patrolling soldiers were shocked and were panicking. The tourists in the plaza taking photos from afar were also shocked as they started screaming. Some of the flying rock even smashed into people. Pedestrians also panicked as they screamed and a few rocks even flew onto the street.

Many cars on the street abruptly stopped, causing a traffic jam. Quite a few drivers angrily honked their horns.

“Holy!” many passersby stared at the plaza.

What they saw was a youth in casual black attire on his soaring shuttle as he amazingly hovered in midair. From the hole in the plaza came flying out a man who was covered in black.

The gaze of the youth on the soaring shuttle was ice cold as he waved his hand!

The golden silk net that was focused into a ball in his left hand instantly struck Li Yao in an instant like lightning. It then automatically spread out and trapped him, as if he was a pig waiting to be slaughtered.

Chapter 20 – Luo Feng, Death Penalty!

The rock pavement of the plaza shattered and rocks flew everywhere.

“Golden silk net!”

When the golden silk net came towards him, Li Yao, who was already getting beat up like a dog, dramatically changed his expression and fiercely roared: “OPEN!”. What could be seen was Li Yao’s black arms ferociously expanding, expanding to a length of three to four meters long. They tried to grab the two ends of the golden silk net and burst it open.

“CHI!” At the instant the golden silk net trapped Li Yao, as if there were a pair of hands tying up the ends, the eight openings of the golden silk net were swiftly sealed.

And Li Yao also instantly attacked with a force of over 1,000,000 kg!

CHICHI~~

Even though the golden silk net was tight, Li Yao still wasn’t able to break it open. Since he has already been completely tied up, how can he escape? This is what the emperor level monster, the ‘black widow spider king’, uses to trap emperor level monsters. Even emperor level monsters have to try super hard to break out of it, so how can Li Yao break it?

“Not good!” Li Yao, who couldn’t escape, saw out of the corner of his eye Luo Feng’s eyes that were filled with intense killing intent as he stood on his soaring shuttle. He also saw 16 flowing lights!

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

16 flowing lights, like 16 roaring dragons, directly flew towards Li Yao!

“I CAN’T DIE!” roared Li Yao in his heart.

“Chi!” “Chi!” Li Yao, who was stuck, instantly decided to do something in this crucial moment. His black legs started to extend and become longer and thinner. They became half of their original width. Those skinny black legs were able to slip through the holes in the golden silk net and step on the ground of the plaza.

Li Yao now had two long black skinny legs that were two meters long!

BOOM!

The 16 flowing lights yet again smashed into Li Yao, “AHHHHH!!!” Li Yao clenched his teeth and his eyes became blood red, “I CAN’T DIE, I CAN’T DIE!!!”. When that horrifying impact force of over 8,000,000 kg smashed into him, even though the black god set cancelled out most of it, Li Yao couldn’t help but to crazily spit out blood. He felt like all of his organs were going to rip

apart. However, his powerful will helped him hold on.

Whoosh!

Using the powerful impact force of the 16 blade pieces, Li Yao's black skinny legs started running! He was already fast enough, and with the impact force of the 16 blade pieces, he flew out like a black shooting star, smashing sculptures on the plaza into pieces in the process. Those black skinny legs then suddenly changed direction as they charged towards the crowds on the streets.

"Not dead yet?" Luo Feng's gaze became cold as he stood on his soaring shuttle.

"Crazy, Luo Feng is crazy, I can't believe he's trying to hunt me down in a public area like the HR alliance plaza! Crazy, he doesn't want to live anymore. As long as! As long as I can grab a bunch of ordinary people to become my 'shield', I still have a chance to live" Li Yao crazily charged towards the street with his two long skinny legs formed by the black god set.

There were tons of people on the streets, and many people stuck in the traffic jam got off their cars. Over ten million people were staring and each of them seemed to be quite excited!

The process where Luo Feng was chasing after Li Yao was as fast as lightning.

Before most people even reacted, Li Yao was already charging

towards them!

“AH!”

“WHAT IS THAT THING?”

Li Yao, who was completely black and had two long skinny legs that were two meters long, indeed seemed so peculiar that he was horrifying. The way he charged towards the crowd like lightning caused many people to panic. And at this time..... Luo Feng, who was on his soaring shuttle, instantly reached a speed of over 1,300 m/s! He brought a horrifying sonic boom with him as he directly landed in front of Li Yao.

“You can’t escape” Luo Feng stood in front of Li Yao, his 16 blade pieces hovering beside him as he coldly looked at Li Yao.

“LUO FENG, YOU CAN’T KILL ME!” roared Li Yao as fresh blood continuously flowed out of the side of his mouth. Luo Feng’s two attacks greatly injured Li Yao. The only reason he was able to sprint was because of his will to live on.

Luo Feng gave an ice cold smile.

Suddenly, Luo Feng’s expression slightly changed. A blond haired girl in the packed crowd on the streets filled with people and cars raised a tiny controller in her hand towards Luo Feng. She revealed a weird smile: “Luo Feng, let go of my husband!”

“Venina?” Luo Feng slightly frowned.

With a thought, the golden silk net hovered, making Li Yao look like a pig waiting to be slaughtered as he was hovering in midair, unable to escape! And Li Yao couldn’t use the ground to help him in the air!

“VENINA!” yelled Li Yao in the golden silk net.

“Why should I let go of your husband?” Luo Feng looked at Venina calmly. Instinct told Luo Feng that directly killing Li Yao could leave to grave consequences.

Luo Feng has always ignored the Venina in front of him.

Because in Luo Feng’s heart, Li Yao was the one doing everything behind the scenes. But Luo Feng didn’t know that—— Venina was the one who sent out the astronomical bounty! The ‘laser cannon’ used to hunt down Luo Feng in the continent of Australia was also something Venina got! And even the idea of destroying Luo Feng’s family, was suggested by Venina!

Li Yao is nicknamed vulture, because many people who know him use this nickname to show his violence.

And Venina is nicknamed scorpion, because she is poisonously cruel!

Dogs that bite don’t bark. Luo Feng didn’t know that..... the truly

cruel one in this couple that is always scheming is this woman.

Venina looked at Luo Feng while she stood in the crowd.

“Luo Feng” Venina held the small controller, “In the villa sector beside the HR alliance and on this street, I’ve planted T111 bombs! If I press this button.....” the surrounding crowd went into an uproar in an instant. Many people were screaming and running around in every direction.

“then boom, tens of thousands of people in this sector will lose their lives” Venina’s voice sounded like a demon from hell as it reverberated around every surrounding person’s ears.

Fear!

Panic!

And Luo Feng focused his eyes and stared at this woman in front of him.

“Cruel enough” said Luo Feng lightly.

“If you want to kill my husband, then, let’s just all die together” Venina’s voice was soft. However, Venina had no other choice. She and her husband have antagonized too many people back then. Thankfully, Li Yao risked his life and managed to receive a black god set after entering archaeological ruin #9. After that, the couple was able to live a peaceful life.

If her shield, Li Yao, dies, then Venina's life will be ruined!

"Everyone stop!"

"Stop!"

"Put down your weapons"

The army stationed near the HR alliance's building swiftly rushed over. A few agents of the country's special forces also swiftly came. The one leading them was a middle-aged man wearing a traditional chinese robe. The middle-aged man cursed in his heart: "Fucking shit, three advanced level wargods fighting together. If they want to fight, then fight, but they even dragged in regular people. Now tens of thousands of people could die at any time!"

The power of the T111 bomb is extremely powerful.

"You all"

"Wargod Luo Feng, Madam Venina, let's talk this out peacefully" the middle-aged man squeezed out a smile, afraid of angering any of the two parties.

He has more authority, but the people in front of him are advanced level wargods!

“I would suggest you guys not to search for the T111 bomb” Venina glanced at the middle-aged man, “I placed it in a position that is extremely hard to locate. Even if you can find them, you should know how hard it is to defuse this bomb! Once you begin to defuse it, I will know instantly and will directly press the button”

The middle-aged man in the traditional chinese robe broke out in a cold sweat!

He hates messing with figures like these with both power and authority. An advanced level wargod and the director of the HR alliance in China, messing with such a figure would lead to grave consequences.

“Luo Feng” Venina stared at Luo Feng.

“Either my husband and I and tens of thousands of innocent Chinese civilians die together” Venina’s voice echoed around Luo Feng’s ear, “Or, you let go of my husband and nothing happens to anyone! The choice, lies in your hands!”

Luo Feng was expressionless, but his gaze became colder and colder.

“Wargod Luo Feng!”

“Madam Venina” the middle-aged man in the traditional Chinese robe started to panic a bit, but he thought to himself, “Why isn’t

Mr. Lan here yet?”

Whoosh!

The temperature of the shattered HR alliance plaza started to drop. It was already winter, and now the temperature dropped below 0. The fountain instantly froze, and the air started to become chilly. A middle-aged man with slightly green hair flew down from the sky.

“Representative Lan” Venina, Li Yao, and Luo Feng recognized the person who came.

“Hmph, even if you guys have a grudge, don’t drag in regular people” as if he has been frozen for a thousand years, representative Lan’s gaze caused one to shiver.

“Representative Lan” Venina shook her head, “I had no choice. This Luo Feng wanted to kill my husband inside a headquarter city, so I had no other choice! I am not his opponent, so this is the only path I can take. If my husband is going to die, then let those tens of thousands of innocent civilians die with him. Furthermore, the choice lies within Luo Feng’s hands. If he lets go of my husband, everyone is happy”

There are 52 representatives on earth.

There are over 10 ‘existences surpassing the wargod level’ of Chinese descent. Even though only three or four of them are

completely loyal to the country, quite a few of them still live in seclusion in the country. They would occasionally help the army and the country, or the HR alliance..... anyways, they can help whoever they want to and still live in seclusion peacefully.

'Ice Blade' Lan Ran is one of the representatives living in seclusion in Jiang-Nan headquarter city.

Only when a major event occurs will Lan Ran show up.

And this time, Lan Ran has to intervene.

"Luo Feng"

Representative Lan hovered beside Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, you should know the laws of the country and the rules of the Palace of Wargods!"

"Quite a few rules in the Palace of Wargods are absolute. Nobody is allowed to infringe upon them"

"Killing the family members of someone in the Dojo is one rule!"

"Openly killing a fighter in a headquarter city, is also one rule!"

"Wargods are not allowed to fight each other in a headquarter city, is also one rule!"

Representative Lan said lowly: “Powerful wargod fighters are the wealth of humanity! Each one of them is important”

“And the fact that you dared to openly hunt down a fighter in the plaza of the HR alliance while over ten million people are watching means you deserve the death penalty! But the wargod you want to kill is part of the Palace of Wargods! So your crime is even worse! Even if you kill him, you still get the death penalty! The laws are set by the five chairmen. Are you really going to give up your life for Li Yao’s? And also kill tens of thousands of innocent Chinese in the process? Some of them are teenagers that are still growing, and some of them are just naive babies. Is it worth it?” representative Lan stared at Luo Feng.

Chapter 21 – Representative Luo Feng

Many fighters in the HR alliance building watched through the window. The soldiers surrounding the plaza also watched Luo Feng! With Luo Feng's speed on the soaring shuttle, even representative Lan cannot save Li Yao from his hands.

The choice is in Luo Feng's hands!

"Yes, it isn't worth it" Luo Feng's expression was calm.

PA!

The golden silk net dropped from midair and untied itself, releasing Li Yao who was so heavily injured that he wasn't far from death! The golden silk net quickly shrunk into a ball and flew towards Luo Feng. Luo Feng extended his arm to grab the ball and then glanced at Li Yao. After that, he glanced at Venina in the distance and couldn't help but to sneer: "Venina, I admit I underestimated you"

Whoosh! With his foot on the soaring shuttle, Luo Feng turned his head and transformed into a flowing light as he flew away.

"Phew" the soldiers in the surrounding squadrons let out a sigh of relief. They knew that there were T111 bombs on the street. With the power of the T111 bombs, they would be affected too since they were on the plaza.

“Averted this crisis” the middle-aged man in the traditional Chinese robe secretly let out a sigh of relief.

“Phew!” Venina also let out a sigh of relief.

Venina ran to her husband Li Yao and supported him: “Are you okay?”

“Yeah, I’m not dead” Li Yao looked towards the direction where Luo Feng left, his face extremely pale.

While on the soaring shuttle, Luo Feng was moving at over 1,000 m/s. With this alarming speed, he flew out of the main city sector and entered the food storage sector between the main city sector and the surrounding cities.

A headquarter city is split into a main city sector and eight large cities!

Why would they split up a perfectly fine headquarter city?

Because, the large amounts of land between the main city sector and the eight large cities are used to produce food for the humans in the headquarter city.

“I underestimated Venina!”

“If I got rid of Venina from the start, none of this would’ve

happened” Luo Feng was as fast as lightning on his soaring shuttle as he flew past field after field, “However, thankfully representative Lan’s words reminded me of, yes, the rules of the Palace of Wargods! Since I can’t kill Li Yao myself, I’ll use the rules of the Palace of Wargods to kill them! In the end, it’s the same thing”

He was stuck in the same place for a year and three months.

And right when he came out, he saw his father injured and lying on a bed. The resulting anger blinded Luo Feng. As his anger filled his entire chest, he directly went to kill Li Yao without thinking about anything else!

Yes.

A wargod that kills another wargod in public in a headquarter city will receive the death penalty! Representative Lan is correct. However, he, Luo Feng, can just completely reveal his strength..... as of now, he can completely compare to an ‘existence surpassing the wargod level’. A representative who kills a wargod out of anger for the sake of his family’s safety.

Will at most receive a punishment like sitting in jail for a few years.

Wargods and representatives have completely different amounts of authority.

If a chairman kills a wargod, there won't even be a punishment! If the first chairman, 'Hong', kills a representative or chairman, nobody would dare to call for Hong's punishment!

"Li Yao and Venina, the importance of your lives don't even come close to the importance of the lives of those tens of thousands of civilians"

"Well, this is good too"

"I don't have to risk sitting in jail for a few years to kill Li Yao" because of the words 'Palace of Wargod rules', Luo Feng was swiftly thinking of a plan! A plan that results of the death of Li Yao and Venina!

"First, I need to make sure everyone knows my strength, know that I have strength comparable to an 'existence surpassing the wargod level'!

"After that....."

Ming-Yue sector.

"Luo Hua" Luo Feng walked to his brother's room. Luo Hua, who was sitting in front of a computer, turned his head and had a look of confusion on his face. Luo Feng said directly, "Which special forces sector did you ask last time to protect dad and mom? Contact them and tell their director to come to our home"

“Okay”

Even though Luo Hua was confused, he immediately made the call.

Within a minute, a disc shaped fighter jet landed in Ming-Yue sector. Three directors of the country’s special forces arrived at the living room of Luo Feng’s home.

“Hello, Mr. Luo Feng, we have met before” smiled the old man with white hair.

“Sector leader Liu Yan” smiled Luo Feng, “Director of sector 9”

“Haha, Mr. Luo Feng sure has good memory” after shaking hands, the old man Liu Yan said, “I wonder what kind of business Luo Feng has after finding us in such a rush?”

“It’s like this”

Luo Feng’s expression became serious, “For a while, Li Yao and Venina used all sorts of tricks to deal with my family, and my brother requested for your help back then”

“Yes, such a thing has happened” the old man Liu Yan nodded.

“You guys should have enough evidence to prove that it was Li Yao and Venina that were behind these schemes right” asked Luo

Feng

Liu Yan smiled: “This is Jiang-Nan headquarter city, territory of China. Most of their actions are within our surveillance. We indeed do have enough evidence to prove—— that Li Yao and Venina are the masterminds behind the actions used against your family!”. Liu Yan leaned towards Luo Feng’s side without hesitation.

“Very good, I need you guys to supply me with sufficient evidence” said Luo Feng seriously.

“No problem, the evidence will definitely be absolute. You have to believe that in our territory, we have absolute control” smiled Liu Yan.

The reason why Liu Yan is being so cooperative! Is because he received a phone call when he was flying over on his disc shaped fighter jet: “Old Liu, that Luo Feng has the strength of an existence surpassing the wargod level!”

.....

China, Kyoto headquarter city.

In an elegant lobby were the leaders with the highest level of authority in China, the highest ranking military personnel, and even an existence surpassing the wargod level——a middle-aged man wearing leather clothing of the previous century’s style. All of

these people are major figures that can shake the country of China.

A display was projected onto the wall of the lobby as it played a video.

Everyone was watching.

“Yes” the middle-aged man in the old leather clothing nodded, “Look, this Luo Feng is controlling 16 small weapons. With Li Yao’s advanced level wargod level fitness level and the ‘black god set’, a huge amount of force is required to make him spit out so much blood in midair with just one attack. And in two attacks, Li Yao was rendered defenseless! The amount of impact force is definitely greater than 6,000,000 kg!”

“And, Luo Feng was originally a spirit reader at the peak of the advanced level wargod level. A spirit reader at this level can usually control things like throwing knives with a limit of 520,000 ——560,000 kg of impact force.

“Luo Feng is controlling 16, and he clearly won’t control more than he can just for the looks. 16 throwing knives would result in an impact force ranging from 8,000,000——9,000,000 kg”

“Luo Feng’s strength, has definitely reached the level of an ‘existence surpassing the wargod level'” after saying that, the middle-aged man took out a pack of cigarettes from his pocket, lit one up, and started smoking.

Smoke emanated within the lobby.

Within this lobby were the top people of China, but none of them would call this person an ‘old guy’. He seems to be around 40 years old, but he’s actually almost 80.

“I can’t believe our country of China has yet again gained another existence surpassing the wargod level”

“I suggest we contact Luo Feng immediately”

This news was indeed first grasped by the country of China. However, the incident at the HR alliance’s plaza was huge, so how could it be hidden from everyone else? The Dojo of Limits and the Thunder Dojo just had to give a phone call to the Chinese government to immediately receive the most accurate recording. All 360 degrees of the scene were clearly recorded. You could even clearly see Luo Feng, Lan Ran, and everyone else’s faces.

The Dojo of Limits, the Thunder Dojo, and even the HR alliance swiftly received the news.

From the video, with each organization’s capability, Luo Feng’s strength was easily estimated: 16 throwing knives with a total impact force of 8,000,000——9,000,000 kg! These numbers shocked everyone.

A regular advanced level wargod level can only unleash an attack with 800,000 to 900,000 kg of impact force!

Luo Feng's power is 10 times that!

Definitely comparable to an attack from someone at the 'star traveller level one stage'!

.....

When the powerful fighters of the Thunder Dojo received this piece of news, they got so angry that they started yelling swears. They were raging about the Dojo of Limits' bullshit luck! They actually got yet another 'powerful representative fighter'. And when the HR alliance received this piece of news, they swiftly prepared a strategy pertaining to the matter of Luo Feng, Li Yao, and Venina's conflict.

Ming-Yue sector seemed calm, but tons of things were actually secretly happening.

"Mr. Luo Feng" Liu Yan pointed at the laptop, "The evidence is currently transferring. After 10 seconds, all sorts of documents, videos, etc. will finish transferring"

Luo Feng stared at the laptop that Liu Yan personally brought.

Even with Liu Yan's identity, he doesn't have enough authority to bring around all those classified documents with him.

“Transfer complete” smiled Liu Yan.

“Good. Thank you, old Liu” Luo Feng felt much more relaxed.

While Luo Feng was still in the HR alliance’s plaza, he instantly thought of a simple plan. The plan had three main steps——

1. Get enough evidence to prove that the masterminds behind the attacks on his family are Li Yao and Venina.

2. Broadcast his strength and become a representative!

3. Use his identity as a representative to sue Li Yao and Venina through the ‘Palace of Wargods’.

Suddenly——

His cell phone started ringing. Luo Feng took out his cell phone: “Hello”

“Luo Feng, it’s me, Liu He” a gentle voice carried over.

“Investigator Liu” smiled Luo Feng.

“Haha, still calling me investigator. Luo Feng oh Luo Feng. You sure hid your strength well. When the head personally headed over to the amazon rainforest to pick you up, you didn’t even speak

about your strength! And now, the head and the rest of us have already seen the video where you publicly heavily injured Li Yao in Jiang-Nan headquarter city" laughed Liu He, "The head said right then that your strength has reached the level of a representative!"

Luo Feng froze.

He was planning on taking the initiative to broadcast his strength, but who would've thought that the Dojo of Limits already knew about his strength before he started.

Well, it's good if they know!

Once he sues Li Yao and Venina, they will definitely not get off lightly thanks to the sufficient evidence he has. A wargod that dared to attack a representative's family, would such a person be let off lightly? A wargod attacking another wargod already results in a huge punishment! Sometimes even the death penalty! And to attack a representative's family undisputably results in the death penalty!

"From now on, you are also an existence surpassing the wargod level" Liu He's voice was filled with joy, "Soon enough, our Dojo of Limits will publicly announce a day to the entire world where the head will personally grant you the title of investigator! You will be the sixth investigator of our Dojo of Limits!"

"Luo Feng, in the future, people will have to call you representative Luo Feng and investigator Luo Feng!" Liu He started laughing loudly.

Chapter 22 – Arrest

The sixth investigator of the Dojo of Limits! Even though he has been prepared for this, it would be a lie to say he wasn't excited!

But now, he has more important things to deal with now——to make Li Yao and Venina die!

"Old Liu" Luo Feng held his cell phone and waved his hand towards Liu Yan.

"I'll be going out first"

Liu Yan took the laptop with him as he left Luo Feng's room. Luo Feng was the only one left.

"There were other people in your room?" laughed Liu He.

Luo Feng walked towards his window: "Yeah, one of the directors of the Chinese special forces sectors. I asked him for some concrete evidence just now! I'm preparing to go through the 'Palace of Wargods' to sue Li Yao and Venina and prove that they are the masterminds behind the plots to kill my parents. Liu He, what would the final verdict be for those two?"

"Oh? The Vulture Scorpion couple dared to move against a fighter's family?" Liu He was shocked.

“Yeah, otherwise I wouldn’t go out of control and chase them down in public” nodded Luo Feng.

“No wonder!”

“These two are too cocky” Liu He’s voice that carried from the phone was filled with anger, “Attacking a fighter’s family has always been strictly forbidden!”

“Liu He, what do you think the final verdict will be?” followed Luo Feng.

“The death penalty. No doubt about it, the death penalty! And a death penalty where it is executed immediately!”

Liu He said with anger, “Luo Feng, don’t worry. Your identity is different now. The Palace of Wargods will immediately raise your identity to ‘representative’. As a representative, you have a completely different amount of authority. Since the Vulture Scorpion couple were the ones pulling the strings to attack a representative’s parents, they will definitely receive a huge penalty!”

“Luo Feng, keep in mind that the Palace of Wargods committee is formed of 52 representatives and 5 chairmen”

“The committee decides the result. Harming the family members of a representative is forbidden! This is equivalent to challenging every single representative, so the representatives must decide to

sentence them heavily. Only this way can they set an example for everyone else" said Liu He, "This is an unspoken rule. If something challenges the 'position, authority, etc.' of all the representatives, all the representatives will come together to give their punishment"

"So, as long as there is enough evidence, there is only one outcome for the Vulture Scorpion couple——capital punishment, immediately enacted!" Liu He said all of this in practically a single breath, which clearly showed how angry he was.

Luo Feng secretly let out a sigh of relief.

Just like he thought. Actually..... when he attacked the Vulture Scorpion couple, Luo Feng wasn't a 'representative' or 'investigator' yet. However! The verdict the Vulture Scorpion couple will receive immediately changed precisely because of the change in Luo Feng's identity.

In the room, there were a bunch of documents and videos displayed on the laptop.

Luo Feng read through them carefully.

"Hmph"

"Such disgraceful and underhanded tactics" Luo Feng's face turned really bad as he read through the large amounts of documents and videos. All the tactics and tricks Li Yao and Venina

used from the beginning to end were all crystal clear! Luo Feng was also scared. If his brother was just a bit less capable, his parents would definitely be ruined.

Thankfully, his brother was straightforward enough to directly rely on the ‘thousand year black crow root’ to become the eighth largest stockholder of ICBC.

Keep in mind that in the headquarter city age, buying a huge amount of stocks of the largest bank in China, ICBC, is basically impossible. Huge organizations usually wouldn’t be willing to! Even if you have money, you can’t buy them. Only with something like the ‘thousand year black crow root’, which is also something that cannot be purchased with money, can you exchange for them.

“All of this evidence is more than enough”

“Even if I supply only a tenth of this, it would be enough to prove their guilt”

Luo Feng immediately closed the video files, word documents, etc.

He zipped the evidence up and then entered his personal webpage as he transferred them over to the ‘Palace of Wargods’. In the mail he sent, he wrote the names of the people he’s suing, their crimes, etc.

In just three minutes.

His cell phone's ring tone rang and Luo Feng picked up his phone.

"Hello, representative Luo Feng" a gentle voice rang, "We just received your mail. May I ask if representative Luo Feng himself wants to sue Li Yao and Venina Paulinus?"

"Yes!" Luo Feng nodded.

"Alright. When we determine the time and location of the court session, we will notify representative Luo Feng"

After confirming via phone, a few members of the Palace of Wargods started organizing this.

There were indeed many documents. It took Luo Feng around two hours to read through all of them. By the time this news carried to the ears of the head of the 'Dojo of Limits', Hong, it was already midnight.

Dojo of Limits world headquarters, in the gigantic spaceship-like structure.

In a quiet room.

The black clothed man, Hong, was currently holding a cup of hot tea as he surfed through some information on the internet.

“Master!”

A low voice reverberated around the quiet room, “Representative Luo Feng has provided evidence that Li Yao and Venina Paulinus are the masterminds behind the actions to kill his parents”

“Is the evidence sufficient?” the black clothed man, Hong, slightly frowned.

“The evidence is sufficient” responded the voice.

The black clothed man, Hong, slightly nodded: “Notify the three best lawyers in our Dojo of Limits and tell them to accept this case! Also….. arrange for star traveller level fighters to personally arrest Li Yao and Venina. As of 15:30 tomorrow afternoon, we will hold the court session in our headquarters”

“Luo Feng is about to openly become the investigator of our Dojo of Limits! I want this case to be executed beautifully” commanded the black clothed man, Hong.

“Yes”

After the low voice said this word, the quiet room returned to silence.

※※

Ming-Yue sector, night time. All the lights in the homes were lit up.

Luo Feng stood on the balcony as he gazed the infinite starry night.

“Hm?” his cell phone rang.

Luo Feng took out his cell phone and saw that it was a call from Xu Xin. He accepted the call: “Hello”

“How come you didn’t come pick me up?” asked Xu Xin.

“Sorry, I’ve been busy dealing with some stuff. I just finished. How about I go to Kyoto headquarter city now?” Luo Feng felt a bit guilty, since he devoted all his time into the case of his parents since he got back and didn’t even think about picking Xu Xin up.

“I’m here, in front of Ming-Yue sector”

PA! The phone call ended.

Luo Feng slightly froze. Xu Xin already rushed to his home from Kyoto headquarter city?

“I’m such a bastard” Luo Feng cursed himself in his mind and then directly leaped off the balcony. As if a mirage crossed the sky,

Luo Feng leaped across a distance of 100 meters with the help of his spiritual force before landing. After a few leaps, he was 30 meters away from Ming-Yue sector's main gate.

With a glance, Luo Feng saw.....

A slightly skinny young girl silently standing in front of the sector's gate under the dim light from the streetlights. This scene caused Luo Feng's heart to ache a bit.

After becoming his girlfriend, not only did Xu Xin not receive anything good, she had to go through some bitter times instead! Ever since he came back..... he hasn't been able to be with her and made her come all the way over here from a few thousand kilometers away.

.....

Xu Xin looked inside the sector through the gate and couldn't help but to shiver a bit.

It was winter right now, and nighttime!

Even though Kyoto headquarter city was also cold, the air there was dry while the air in Jiang-Nan headquarter city is humid! And after Xu Xin received Luo Feng's phone call, she quickly got on the earliest train to Yang Zhou city without remembering that Jiang-Nan headquarter city is colder than Kyoto headquarter city.

“Xu Xin” a voice rang beside Xu Xin.

Xu Xin froze and then turned to look beside her. That familiar image, her first boyfriend. This past year, and especially the past three months, Xu Xin spent every day in sadness. “Luo Feng!” Xu Xin’s voice was a bit hoarse and couldn’t help but to cry after saying that. She directly hugged Luo Feng, tightly hugged him!

“Sorry, I’m really sorry” Luo Feng hugged Xu Xin and felt her tears go through his clothes.

Under the dim light and the cold wind of winter……

Luo Feng and Xu Xin finally meet each other after a year and three months.

Compared to Luo Feng and Xu Xin’s feelings, which were filled with a bit of sadness but also the joy of reunion! Li Yao and Venina’s feelings, even though they were together, were in disarray.

On the passenger plane headed to Paris headquarter city from Jiang-Nan headquarter city.

Li Yao and Venina grasped each other’s hands.

“Now we’re in big trouble” Venina glanced at the surrounding passengers and then lowered her voice, “He became a representative! In the future, if he wants to deal with us, then…..”

“Don’t worry”

Li Yao lowered his voice, “We only had to wait for two or three hours for the passenger plane in Jiang-Nan headquarter city, and he didn’t come find us within that time span! After we return to Paris headquarter city, we will be in our territory. My senior and our HR alliance’s representatives are there, so everything will be fine, everything will definitely be fine”

Who knows whether he was comforting Venina or comforting himself.

“How could this happen, how could he become a representative!” Venina started clenching her teeth a bit.

A fierce light lit up in Li Yao’s eyes.

Damn!

“Endure, endure, we can only endure” Li Yao kept his voice down as his sentence came out one word at a time.

The passenger plane finally arrived in Paris, Europe.

Paris was a bit dark as of now, but the sky wasn’t completely dark.

Paris headquarter city's airport. The passenger plane slowly landed. After stopping, the hatch automatically opened and a staircase extended outwards.

The passengers came off.

"Back"

"Finally back in Paris" Venina let out a smile. Li Yao also let out a rare smile. This is the first time he smiled since he learned that Luo Feng became a 'representative'.

The Vulture Scorpion couple were mixed in the crowd as they walked down the staircase.

"Li Yao, Venina!" a sound rang.

The Vulture Scorpion couple was shocked as they turned their head. What they saw were four people walking over. One of the two people leading in front was a middle-aged man with brown curly hair wearing a black robe. His lightning-like gaze caused fear. And the one beside him was a man whose white, long hair was spread out. He seemed like a dead piece of wood.

"Representative Yan, Representative Bonnett" Venina was surprised.

"Senior" Li Yao looked towards that old man.

That old man ‘Yan Hai’ was indeed the one who had deep ties with Li Yao.

Representative Bonnett’s gaze was ice cold as he looked at Venina and Li Yao and then said lightly: “We represent the Palace of Wargods to officially arrest you two. If there is any resistance, we have the right to kill you two”

Li Yao and Venina’s eyes widened. They thought they were safe in their territory, but who would’ve thought that this would happen right when they came back.

“SENIOR!!!” Li Yao quickly looked at Yan Hai.

Yan Hai sighed: “Little vulture, this is the highest command of the Palace of Wargods. Nobody can help you. You….. were too reckless, too reckless! Go, if you don’t resist you might have a chance to live”. If you resist the arrest of the Palace of Wargods, you are opposing the entire Palace of Wargods.

The Palace of Wargods is a power that has all the wargods and existences surpassing the wargod level gathered together.

Resist?

Want to die?

“CLICK!”

Special handcuffs were put on Venina and Li Yao. Both of them were a bit dumbfounded, but didn’t resist at all.

“Senior, senior” Li Yao looked at Yan Hai. Yan Hai sighed and said nothing.

“Take them away” representative Bonnett coldly gave his command.

Chapter 23 – The Way to Reach the Star Traveller Level

That night, Li Yao and Venina panicked while they were arrested. They were directly sent off to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters on that same night.

Meanwhile, Luo Feng and Xu Xin were snuggling together while they talked about what happened over the past year.

“Sleeping here tonight?” Luo Feng hugged Xu Xin as he smiled.

“You wish”

Xu Xin said in a displeased tone. After that, she looked at the time on her watch, “It’s already 12, Luo Feng, send me back”

“Okay” smiled Luo Feng. The two of them chatted for such a long time, so they have calmed down quite a bit.

They rode the auto jet and left Yang Zhou city’s Ming-Yue sector and headed towards the Xu family’s place in the main city sector. In just a few minutes, the auto jet arrived at the skies of the Xu family’s home.

Inside the auto jet that was in the sky.

“Luo Feng, I need you to promise me that, whenever you do

something dangerous in the future, you have to tell me first" Xu Xin stared at Luo Feng, "I won't stop your work or your goals! But, I need to know about your situation....."

"Xu Xin" Luo Feng nodded, "Okay. I will tell you in the future. In the past, I just didn't want you to worry"

"I am willing to worry about you"

"I want to worry about you!" Xu Xin stared at Luo Feng, "But what I am most afraid of, is you not telling me anything!"

Luo Feng slightly nodded, his heart felt warm.

Even though his girlfriend comes from a big family, the family's elite education made his girlfriend smart and considerate. On the internet, he read that some girls are always sticking to their partners, not giving them any space at all. And some girls will dwell on even the smallest, insignificant things.

But Xu Xin isn't that kind of person, which makes Luo Feng glad.

"Oh yeah, can you still re-enroll after quitting school?" asked Luo Feng.

"I arranged to quit school, not take a break. It will be hard to re-enroll the normal way. I could use our family's special connections....." Xu Xin shook her head, "But I don't care about the little paper degree. While in university for two years, I have

basically finished learning the basic knowledge I need. I have also experienced the university life, so that is enough. I am preparing to start my own company”

“Start a company?” Luo Feng froze.

“Yes”

Xu Xin nodded, “The family prepared to have me take over some things, but, I didn’t want to take over them immediately. No matter what I do, I want to start from the bottom and go forward one step at a time. I want to first start a company and get some real world experience. After that, I’ll take over my family’s business”

“Oh, Luo Feng’s girlfriend sure is a capable girl” laughed Luo Feng.

“You don’t like that?” Xu Xin looked towards Luo Feng.

“I do. Since as a fighter, there will be many times where I won’t be able to be with you. Even if we marry in the future, I don’t want you to be a housewife without a business” said Luo Feng. As of now, all the young couples think this way. The husband and wife usually both need jobs.

Without a job, there isn’t much to do.

“Thank you, respectable representative Luo Feng, for understanding this young maiden’s thoughts” Xu Xin smiled and

did a bow like the girls of the ancient times used to do. After doing that, Xu Xin herself couldn't hold it in as she started laughing.

After sending Xu Xin home, Luo Feng was in a good mood.

Yang Zhou city's Ming-Yue sector, Luo Feng's home's training room. Deep into the night, Luo Feng sat cross legged.

"Such high efficiency" Luo Feng looked at the news he received on the mini quantum computer, "They arrested Li Yao and Venina so quickly. Okay, tomorrow afternoon, 15:30, Dojo of Limits world headquarters court case? Li Yao, Venina..... tomorrow, we can finally end this"

Luo Feng closed the message. As of now, Luo Feng really hasn't considered the Vulture Scorpion couple as his opponents!

After his position changed, his view changed too.

Maybe the youth back then that was running around in the wilderness in panic was afraid of the Vulture Scorpion couple's astronomical bounty, as he had to be extremely careful in everything he did. But after experiencing the 'elite training camp', 'misty island', and 'archaeological ruin #9', the youth grew. As a result, the Vulture Scorpion couple was no longer this youth's opponent.

"The so called archaeological ruin, as the bald crystal person said it, was left behind by a race in the universe! Like archaeological

ruin #9 was left behind by the master of Yun Mo planet. And that Yun Mo planet is just one planet in the wide, vast universe" Luo Feng felt a bit of danger for some reason.

The fact that a race in the universe can leave behind this ruin.

Represents that this race in the universe will arrive one day! When that happens, who knows whether that would be a blessing or a curse for the humans on earth.

"And the bald crystal person also said that, in the future, when earth is discovered by the countries in the universe, the more powerful I am, the better off we would be. I can even potentially help my country" Luo Feng subconsciously stopped treating the monsters on earth as his opponents. The real danger for earth.....

lies within the universe!

When compared with the powerful countries and races in the universe, earth as of now is indeed very fragile. Even star traveller level fighters were rare. And earth's so called 'high technology'..... is a joke compared to the rest of the civilizations in the universe.

"What I need to do now is exactly what the bald crystal person said to do, train! First, I'll set 'Hong' and 'Thunder God' as my targets, then I'll train hard to surpass them"

"And become the world's most powerful fighter!"

Luo Feng’s eyes were determined.

Back then, the bald crystal person said that the ‘method for Luo Feng’s breakthrough’ was left in his mini quantum computer. But after coming back today, he first had to deal with Vulture Li Yao and then comfort his girlfriend. He didn’t have time to look at it again! Now that he’s free, Luo Feng immediately started looking through it.

“An effective method for breaking through the star traveller level that cannot even be found on earth now” Luo Feng was filled with curiosity. Soon enough, he found the method in the mini quantum computer on his arm.

He started reading carefully.

“Student levels, are infinite across the universe”

“From the student level to the star traveller level is the most important step, and also the most basic step, for a life form’s advancement! Once past that step, the life form officially goes from the student level to a genetic fighter or a spirit reader in the universe”

“This instruction manual will describe the method as to how to become a spirit reader of the ‘star traveller level one stage'”

“Spiritual force, which can actually be called the power of your spirit, power of your soul”

“The body is divided into body and spirit, or body and soul. The spirit and the soul is the same thing”

“Spirit (soul), is divided into the power of your spirit (power of your soul) and consciousness!”

“When the power of your spirit becomes powerful enough, it can leave the realm of consciousness, control materials in the outside world, seep into other life forms’ realm of consciousness, etc. A strong enough power of the spirit is spiritual force!”

“How can the spiritual force of someone at the student level nine stage breakthrough to the star traveller stage?”

“First, your spiritual force needs to reach the peak of the student level nine stage!”

“Next, out of your ‘consciousness’ and ‘spirit, namely ‘consciousness’ and ‘spiritual force’, your spiritual force has to spread across your entire realm of consciousness. It is something with form! And consciousness is an intangible existence without form! Consciousness, what is it? What purpose does it serve?”

“You can say that spiritual force represents the soldiers while the consciousness represents the general!”

“The entire combat power of an army depends on both the soldiers and the general!”

“Simply put, when a regular person’s spirit is vigorous, they can lift up heavier objects. And when the spirit is lethargic, they might only be able to lift half of the usual weight! In these two situations, the body’s power stays the same. But the two states of the spirit, ‘vigorous’ and ‘lethargic’, could lead to different levels of battle power”

“Just like how the consciousness is important to a fighter, the consciousness is also important to spirit readers!”

“Capable generals will be better at commanding the soldiers”

“If two people are both at the student level nine stage, the one with the more powerful consciousness can accurately control 10 small weapons, or even more. And the one with the weaker consciousness might only be able to control four or five small weapons! This is the difference!”

“There are many ways to train the consciousness”

“For example, going through painful and difficult times will strength a fighter’s will. Actually, a ‘solid will’ is one way to represent a powerful consciousness!”

“Of course, that is a very primitive way. There are many ways in the universe to train the consciousness. The main way of our Yun Mo planet is the secret instruction manual of the controllers, 《basic 312 moves》, the secret instruction manual of the illusionists, 《basic 186 moves》. Out of the two branches, one of them is direct

while the other is indirect. Both of them are effective”

“Of course, students have varying talents. Some of them have low brain vigor while some of them have brain vigor of over 20, and even over 30, over 40!”

“Higher brain vigor makes their breakthrough requirements harder too. But a powerful consciousness will allow them to reach greater heights!”

“So, when both your consciousness and spiritual force reach the requirements! Then the next step is——your breakthrough!”

“When you reach the border and feel like you can breakthrough at any time, you do not know the amount of time it actually takes to breakthrough. When this happens, there are three ways!”

“The first way is to wait for your chance or a special situation. When your emotions are stirred up, your ‘consciousness’ will become invigorated and you could breakthrough! But there also exists the chance of waiting for three or five years and no breakthrough opportunities come”

“The second way, is to continue to strengthen your consciousness! A powerful consciousness could let your spiritual force instantly breakthrough”

“The third way, is the method this instruction manual is going to describe, ’81 spirits forging’, which is a process split into 81 steps.

Each step requires 1.5 hours. When undergoing this 81 spirits forging, stopping in the middle means you have to start from the beginning again, so you must finish it in one go. Once you finish the 81 steps, you can breakthrough to the star traveller level”

“Below, is the specific way of doing the 81 spirits forging.....”

Luo Feng was extremely excited as he read this. This instruction manual the bald crystal person left for him is definitely an extremely valuable treasure! Way better than the《Spirit Reader Basics》Hong gave him.

After it was translated, the words were super easy to understand.

It basically described the source of a spirit reader’s power——spirit! Which is the soul! This spirit is split into two things, ‘spiritual force’ and ‘consciousness’.

“Consciousness is the general and spiritual force is the soldier?”

“Yeah, according to what the bald crystal person said, my consciousness and spiritual force have reached their limit and can breakthrough at any time”

“But, if I just foolishly wait, who knows how long I’ll have to wait for?” Luo Feng instantly decided, “I’ll just follow the 81 spirits forging!”. Luo Feng didn’t even know that, even across the vast universe, the instruction manuals for breaking through the student level nine stage to the ‘star traveller level’ are all

extremely valuable.

Some powerful races and countries in the universe are not willing to share them.

“Every step needs 1.5 hours and there are 81 steps in all. Which means I need a little more than five days” Luo Feng took in a deep breath, “The court session is tomorrow, so I don’t have enough time. After the verdict is given and the Vulture Scorpion couple is executed, I’ll finish this 81 spirits forging in one go”

“Next, I’ll take a look at the《Soaring Sky》instruction manual”

“According to what the bald crystal person said, only through the《Soaring Sky》can I truly unleash the power of the soaring shuttle! Maybe my power will raise by quite a bit tonight” with a thought, an instruction manual with a bit of starlight shining from it floated out from the surface of his black vest. This was indeed the soaring sky instruction manual that he received from the archaeological ruin, which Luo Feng has always left in his vest formed by the black god set.

Chapter 24 – 3 Forms of the Soaring Shuttle

“《Soaring Sky》” Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at the book in his hands.

He has never seriously read this instruction manual after receiving it. The pages of the book were made out of a special black material, unlike any material on earth. And the bit of starlight on the cover had a fear inducing aura that couldn’t be detected unless carefully observed.

“Even a book is made like this” Luo Feng flipped open the first page.

“This is the instruction manual passed along the controllers of Yun Mo planet. Those who read this cannot spread its contents to other people. If you pass its contents to other members of Yun Mo planet, you will receive a punishment of 60 years of hard labor. If you pass its contents to people outside of Yun Mo planet..... death with no exceptions!”

Just these short phrases shocked Luo Feng.

Clearly, this Yun Mo planet is an extremely strict organization. You can’t even pass its contents to other members of the planet, and passing its contents to the outside world is absolutely forbidden!

“I passed the death mission, so the bald crystal person clearly treated me as a member of Yun Mo planet” Luo Feng flipped to the

second page.

“The《Soaring Sky》instruction manual is a unique instruction manual for using the soaring shuttle”

“The soaring shuttle is one of the spiritual weapons created by the master of our Yun Mo planet, ‘Hu Yan Bo’. However, only when combined with the instruction manual《Soaring Sky》, can the soaring shuttle’s true power be unleashed. The soaring shuttle can allow the controllers of Yun Mo planet to defeat enemies that are more powerful than them”

“The soaring shuttle has three main forms”

“The first main form can be trained when your battle ability amplifier reaches 12”

“The second main form can be trained when your battle ability amplifier reaches 30”

“The third main form is the soaring shuttle’s ultimate form. You need to have reached the ‘universe level’, have your own domain, and have a battle ability amplifer of 48 to train it”

“The contents that describe the first main form of the soaring shuttle in the instruction manual,《soaring sky》, can be flipped to immediately. To read the contents describing the second main form, your battle ability amplifier has to have reached 30 to have the ability to open that page. As for the contents describing the

third main form, your spiritual force has to have reached the ‘universe level’ to be able to open that page”

“The next part describes the first main form of the soaring shuttle”

After reading this page, Luo Feng didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

It looks like it isn’t even possible for him to read through the entire instruction manual right now. “Let’s try” Luo Feng tried flipping through the pages one at a time.

He flipped through the pages made out of the special black material one at a time. However, after he flipped through about a third of the pages, Luo Feng wasn’t able to flip any more, as if the rest of the pages were stuck together with glue. On the last page Luo Feng could read was a complicated, mysterious diagram. Beside it was a line of words—— “seep your spiritual force into the diagram to read the contents of the soaring shuttle’s second main form”

“Looks quite mysterious” Luo Feng stared at this diagram and, with a thought, his spiritual force extended into the diagram.

Instantly, his spiritual force fell into a new universe. At this time, Luo Feng himself was like one of the planets in that vast universe. As if the end of times has come, a countless amount of planets started crazily flying towards Luo Feng. Over thousands of billions of them! An infinite amount! This armageddon-like scene shocked

Luo Feng. He tried to use his spiritual force to control the planets and block them away.

"RUMBLE~" not even a second has passed and Luo Feng has already been smashed into pieces by the infinite amount of planets. The spiritual force he extended into the diagram was directly destroyed.

"Huff, huff"

Sweat appeared on Luo Feng's forehead as he looked at the diagram in front of his eyes, his heart still shocked.

"What is this thing? An illusion?" Luo Feng was flabbergasted. He hasn't even heard of any spirit reader on earth who could create such a realistic illusion.

"Looks like it's just like the instruction manual says. My battle ability amplifier has to reach the required level to read the second main form's contents. And now, my battle ability amplifier is only 16, which isn't even close!" Luo Feng figured out in archaeological ruin #9 that the maximum amount of small weapons you can control at once represents your battle ability amplifier!

Luo Feng's battle ability amplifier is 16!

Across the entire earth, not a single spirit reader is more powerful than him. Of course, across the vast universe, Luo Feng's skill is nothing. He can only brag a bit on earth.

“The soaring shuttle is split into the ‘attack form’, ‘defense form’, and ‘flying form'”

“The ‘flying form’ of the first main form is the soaring shuttle itself. The attack form is the ‘mountain drill’ and the defense form is the ‘mountain bulwark’. The first main form is split into three stages. The first stage can be trained when your battle ability amplifier reaches 12. The second stage can be trained when your battle ability reaches 18. The third form, when your battle ability amplifier reaches 24”

.....

《Soaring Sky》is split into three main forms, where each main form has three stages. Which is to say, there are nine stages total!

As of now, Luo Feng’s battle ability amplifier is 16, so he can only train the first stage of the first form!

“Amazing”

“This master of Yun Mo Planet, ‘Hu Yan Bo’, is fantastic. How did he even think of this, coming up with ideas like these” as Luo Feng continued to read, he praised the master of Yun Mo planet more and more. According to the instruction manual, 《Soaring Sky》and the soaring shuttle is just one of the various creations that the master of Yun Mo planet, ‘Hu Yan Bo’, has created.

That archaeological ruin #9 was also left by Hu Yan Bo.

“So that’s what the complicated engravings on the 365 blade pieces of the soaring shuttle are for. But how do they work?” Luo Feng didn’t understand some of the latter contents.

Take an assault rifle for example. The instruction manual tells you how to use an assault rifle, but it won’t tell you how to make one

And there were no principles of the soaring shuttle written here.

“Amazing”

“Absolutely amazing”

Luo Feng was a bit excited, “I’ll go to the wilderness right now to test out the first stage”

Deep into the night, Luo Feng stepped on his soaring shuttle and directly flew out of Ming-Yue sector. He transformed into a flowing light as he swiftly flew out of Yang Zhou city sector and arrived at the wilderness.

Around 300 km away from Yang Zhou city.

An image fell from the sky and completely spread his spiritual force out, which caused the scavenging monsters on the ruined

highway to run away in fear. Luo Feng looked towards a hill around 100 meters away. The soaring shuttle in its original form instantly split into 365 thin blade pieces, which hovered in front of Luo Feng.

"Combine! Mountain Drill!" Luo Feng focused his eyes.

Whoosh!

The 365 blade pieces instantly gathered together and became a single entity as it formed a round drill! There were even spirals on the surface of the drill. It seemed like an electric drill workers use to drill through walls!

"Not sure if it'll work on the first try" Luo Feng swiftly recalled how to operate the mountain drill.

"BREAK!" Luo Feng stared at the hill in the distance.

12 golden thin lines reached their maximum power as they were controlled by Luo Feng's spiritual force. They immediately went up along the engravings of the mountain drill. Immediately, golden thin lines appeared on the originally gray soaring shuttle, each thin line carrying an astonishing amount of power, as if they were going to split the sky and earth. A total of 12 golden thin lines extended from the bottom of the mountain drill to the top as they extended towards the tip. One of them arrived first.

CHI! The 12 golden thin lines immediately dissipated and the

mountain drill returned to its original gray color.

“Failed” Luo Feng shook his head helplessly.

“Again”

Chi! The 12 golden thin lines dissipated again.

In terms of his power, Luo Feng’s current limit is 16 small weapons. So controlling 12 portions of spiritual force to activate the ‘mountain drill’ isn’t that hard. However, it is hard to get all twelve engravings to perfectly reach the tip at the exact same time.

Thankfully, Luo Feng’s amplifier has reached 16, which makes the first stage a bit easier.

If his amplifier was 12, that would mean he just reached the requirement, so he would probably have to spend a lot of time to succeed.

Time passed slowly. Luo Feng tried over and over again.

A bit of light started to appear in the originally dark sky. The winter mist emanated. In the ruined highway of the wilderness, the shadows of monsters started to appear! When these monsters saw the corpses of other monsters surrounding a mysterious person, they didn’t dare to come near.

The sky became brighter and the clouds towards the east started to become red.

Finally—— The sun started to appear from the east.

“Break!” Luo Feng’s eyes were focused on the mountain drill in front of him like lightning.

12 golden thin lines were instantly conjured from the complicated engravings on the surface of the silverish gray mountain drill. Like snakes made out of lightning, the 12 golden thin lines instantly extended to the tip of the mountain drill! As they arrived at the exact same time, it seemed as if the 12 golden thin lines were calling upon the forces of nature.

The 12 golden thin lines instantly started rotating!

“ANG~~”

The mountain drill transformed into a golden light as it rotated and pierced the air. Its speed accelerated to an unbelievable level. The golden light that the mountain drill formed directly pierced into the hill, as if it had limitless power. “RUMBLE~~” Smoke and dust spread out, and the mountain crusher flew back from the other side of the hill.

After the dust cleared out around the hill in the distance, half of the hill was missing. Under the destructive force of the mountain drill, the hill was only half of its original height.

“Such high speed, such powerful piercing power!”

“It’s at least 50% faster than my original attacks”

“According to the instruction manual, the first form, mountain drill, has around three times more power than my normal attacks! And a star traveller level two stage has around two times the power of a star traveller level one stage! Which is to say, with the mountain drill, I am stronger than a regular ‘star traveller level two stage'” Luo Feng’s heart was filled with excitement. This is the difference between an elite with a background, and a fighter without any guidance!

Almost all of the fighters and spirit readers on earth have no sort of inheritance. All of them train bitterly without understanding anything. Even if they receive a spiritual weapon, they don’t know how to use it.

And Luo Feng?

After becoming a member of Yun Mo planet, he immediately received the instruction manual《basic 312 moves》, which greatly increased Luo Feng’s battle ability amplifier. After that, he received the《Soaring Sky》instruction manual, which increased his attack power greatly. Both sides were greatly increased, which allowed him, an elite at the student level nine stage, to skip a level and be able to fight a ‘star traveller level two stage’!

This is the benefits of receiving guidance!

Luo Feng spent five hours to successfully complete ‘mountain drill first stage’, and another three hours to successfully complete ‘mountain bulwark first stage’. As of now, even when compared with elite students from large organizations from other parts of the universe, Luo Feng isn’t much weaker.

“With the inheritance of Yun Mo planet, after I reach the star traveller level one stage, the other representatives will pose no threat to me” rapid increase in strength caused Luo Feng to become excited.

However—— he was also a bit worried. He just received the entry-level teachings of Yun Mo planet and instantly became so powerful! Once the powerful races and countries in the universe actually arrive, will earth really have the ability to fight back?

Chapter 25 – Death Penalty

12/27/2058, afternoon. Outside of the Dojo of Limits world headquarters were large amounts of parked ‘disc shaped fighter jets’ and ‘auto jets’. Each of these fighter jets were extremely expensive. Luo Feng’s ’emperor level auto jet’ could only count as an average jet here; it didn’t stand out at all.

Because, over 30 representatives have come here today!

15:10, over half of the powerful representatives, and an extremely small amount of wargods with a lot of authority, were gathered inside the court in the gigantic spaceship structure.

“Luo Feng, let me introduce to you, this is representative Bygrave” under the introduction of Luo Feng’s friend, ‘investigator Liu He’, Luo Feng met a few famous people one by one. These representatives were also respectful towards this soon-to-be sixth investigator.

“This is representative Zhu Xi” smiled Li He, “He is also from China”

“Hello, representative Zhu Xi” Luo Feng extended his hand.

“Hello, representative Luo Feng” the skinny man with an aquiline nose, ‘Zhu Xi’, shook Luo Feng’s hand.

This scene seemed to be exactly the same as the other scenes he

just experienced when meeting the other people, but Luo Feng's heart was full of amazement right now. Back then when wargod 'Lu Gang' died, representative Zhu Xi also attended the memorial. The scene of the large figures from the government, economy sector, military sector, and fighter circle respectfully greeting representative Zhu Xi greatly shocked Luo Feng, who was still in the fire hammer squad back then.

And after a blink of an eye, he also has become a representative.

"Luo Feng, look, at that guy with white hair and seems to have no life to him at all, that's representative Yan Hai" Liu He lowered his voice, "Even though he is also from China, he has an extremely good relationship with Li Yao. Since Li Yao is going to die because of you, things between you two are irreparable! It will be hard to be on good terms with him"

"He is extremely powerful and has the right to go for the spot of the fifth chairman. But don't worry, he won't dare to mess with our Dojo of Limits" said Liu He quietly, "Of course, don't mess with him for no reason"

Luo Feng glanced at him and then simply smiled.

Representative Yan Hai? Not just Yan Hai, even the third, fourth, and fifth chairmen won't be his opponents after he practices '81 spirits forging' and steps into the star traveller level one stage.

Yan Hai glanced at Luo Feng from far away without an expression and sneered! The time he spent with Li Yao together

back in the Grand Nirvana period was an experience on the border of life and death. After that, Yan Hai treated Li Yao as his own son. After all, going through an experience like that indeed forges a deep relationship.

Sadly, his opponent is part of the Dojo of Limits. Even though Yan Hai has a grudge, he can only keep it in.

“That’s Luo Feng?”

“It is said that he can control 16 small weapons at once. His most powerful impact attack can reach around 8,000,000——9,000,000, which can indeed compare to some representatives”

“So what if he can compare to them? He still hasn’t become a representative yet. His movement speed on land and various techniques in combat cannot compare to us! If he really had to fight against a representative, he probably wouldn’t even be able to defeat one”

“Some representatives can control fire while others can control ice, so their attacks are indeed more flexible than his”

Some representatives were quietly discussing in a few corners in the court gallery. While they discussed, they formed a barrier around them to prevent their voices from spreading out to Luo Feng. After all, these star traveller level fighters don’t want to antagonize Luo Feng, they’re just slightly looking down on him.

And their negative feelings were born from jealousy.

They were jealous of Luo Feng's potential! To have such attack power at the 'peak of the wargod level', Luo Feng will definitely stand out when he breaks through to the star traveller level!

"So what if he has high potential. If he fights with us right now, he's still not enough" quite a few representatives were thinking this.

After chatting with many representatives, Luo Feng noticed that these representatives were keeping a bit of distance with him. Only the investigators of the Dojo of Limits were approachable and kind to Luo Feng.

"The first and second chairmen are here"

"Hong and Thunder God"

The powerful representatives and wargods in the gallery all quieted down. From the side door of the court walked in one black clothed man and one bald monk in a white robe, one in front and one in back, towards the front of the gallery. The black clothed man, Hong, seemed to swallow all the light around him, while the bald monk gave off a feeling that made one's heart shake.

"Hong, star traveller level six stage"

"Thunder God, star traveller level seven stage!" Luo Feng looked

at these two people.

The black clothed man, Hong, cold and expressionless.

The white robed Thunder God, filled with warm smiles but seemed a bit fearful.

These are the two most powerful fighters on earth! In terms of fitness level, Thunder God surpasses Hong. But since Hong has his own domain, he completely overwhelms Thunder God!

When Hong and Thunder God arrived, court quickly went into session. Luo Feng sat at the plaintiff area while Li Yao and Venina stood at the defendant area with handcuffs on.

The judging of two advanced level wargods is quite a rare event.

16:20, afternoon. The court made their decision.

“Li Yao, Venina※Paulinus, instructed other people to kill the family members of a representative. Their guilt is clear, decision: death penalty! Immediately!”

The faces of Li Yao and Venina at the defendant area slightly changed. Truthfully, they have long prepared themselves for this result.

“Luo Feng!”

Li Yao and Venina glared at Luo Feng at the plaintiff area.

Luo Feng just glanced at them coldly. The Vulture Scorpion couple actually tried to harm his family..... he already messed up once, so he definitely cannot mess up again. He cannot allow these threats to exist! Letting these two live means he is being irresponsible and ignoring the safety of his family.

“Li Yao, hand over the black god set” two powerful representatives stood in front of Li Yao.

Li Yao at the defendant area scanned the court. There were over 30 powerful representatives in this court and the first chairman, ‘Hong’, and the second chairman ‘Thunder God’. You can say that killing Li Yao would be as simple as a hand raise. Even though Li Yao didn’t want to, he could only force the black god set of his body and hand it over.

“Bring the criminals to the wilderness and execute their death penalty” said the judge of the court.

The ones responsible for executing the penalty were two representatives, one of them from the Dojo of Limits, ‘Liu He’, and the other from the Thunder Dojo, ‘Amuhan’. Under Luo Feng’s request, Luo Feng was allowed to go along with them.

Inside a prehistoric level auto jet.

LI Yao and Venina had cuffs on their hands and feet and were being watched by the three representatives Luo Feng, Liu He, and Amuhan.

“Luo Feng” Venina stared at Luo Feng, her Chinese a bit accented, as she grinded her teeth, “If you’re capable, you would’ve killed us directly in the headquarter city yesterday. But who would’ve thought you were underhanded enough to judge us through the court of the Palace of Wargods, you disgraceful bastard, even in death I won’t——”

“Shut up” Liu He, who sat in front of her, scolded with dissatisfaction.

“I’m about to die, I’m not scared of you” sneered Venina.

Venina is European. Even though she knows Chinese, she clearly is not good at using Chinese to insult people. Luo Feng simply looked at her coldly. He basically ignored what Venina said..... she’s just a pitiful bug about to die anyway.

But Vulture Li Yao simply stared at Luo Feng, not making a single sound.

“Even though you were trying to hunt me down in the continent of Australia, I never did anything to you. I let you stay in Paris headquarter city peacefully” Luo Feng looked at Li Yao coldly, “But I never would’ve thought that once the news of my death went out, you immediately made your move against my family. Li Yao, oh Li Yao. I’M NOT HUMAN IF I DON’T KILL YOU!!!”

Li Yao stayed silent as he stared at Luo Feng.

“Wei, I wasn’t able to avenge you”

“I’m useless”

“Over, over, everything is over”

“LUO FENG, LUO FENG!!! If an afterlife exists, I won’t let you go” even though Li Yao said nothing, he kept roaring in his heart. But no matter how angry he is, everything will disappear when he, Li Yao, dies!

“I can’t accept this, I can’t accept this!”

“I DON’T WANT TO JUST DIE LIKE THIS!!!” Li Yao roared in his heart, his teeth were clenched so tightly that blood started seeping out of his mouth.

The prehistoric level auto jet slowly landed.

“Get off”

Li Yao and Venina were depressed as they walked down one step at a time. Since their feet were cuffed too, they could only walk tiny steps. Li Yao and Venina stood in the vast wilderness.

“Liu He” said representative Amuhan on the side, “You kill Li Yao, I kill Venina”

“No problem” smiled Liu He.

Amuhan walked towards Venina one step at a time. Venina’s face was indeed beautiful, but this beautiful woman’s eyes were full of hatred and even had some tears in them. When representative Amuhan neared, the scimitar on his waist instantly unsheathed! A light drew past, and Venina, who wanted to dodge, stopped moving.

HUALA~~

A head directly rolled down and a headless corpse fell onto the ground.

“Venina” Li Yao stared at Venina’s body and couldn’t help but to close his eyes in pain.

“If I die, everything will be gone”

“It doesn’t matter how angry I am. It’s all useless, useless”

“I DON’T WANT TO DIE LIKE THIS!!! But, everything will disappear when I die” Li Yao’s emotions were in disarray as he closed his eyes. He was angry, unsatisfied, depressed, and

saddened. Death itself isn't too scary, but waiting for death like this seems to take an eternity.

Li Yao's body couldn't help but to shake a bit due to these emotions that were stirred up like never before.

"Li Yao, Venina.... Vulture Scorpion couple" Luo Feng glanced at Venina's corpse and then looked towards Li Yao, "Let's end this"

"Luo Feng, do you want to do it?" Liu He looked at Luo Feng.

"You can do it" said Luo Feng.

Liu He smiled and then walked towards Li Yao. Li Yao's entire body was slightly shaking as his eyes were closed. Tears seemed to appear in the corner of his eye.

"Li Yao, die"

smiled Liu He as he spoke.

"CHI~"

The surrounding light suddenly curved. Li Yao, who was standing there motionlessly, furiously leaped back over a hundred meters, "AHHHHHHHHH~" Li Yao raised his head and roared. He pushed with his hands, BANG, and broke out of the handcuffs. His feet also moved, BANG, and the legcuffs shattered.

“LUO FENG!!!” Li Yao furiously soared into the air, “I WILL KILL YOU, I DEFINITELY WILL!!!”

“You’re not getting away”

Luo Feng ferociously roared and then stepped on his soaring shuttle as he swiftly flew into the sky.

Chapter 26 – Li Yao's Death

"Chase after him!"

Liu He and Amuhan didn't hesitate at all as they also soared into the air.

Star traveller level fighters can all fly. This is the biggest change resulting from the student level to star traveller level transformation. However, you can't use your legs when flying in the air, so their flying speed is way slower than their sprinting speed on land!

"So fast!"

"Luo Feng is also very fast"

Liu He and Amuhan looked at Li Yao and Luo Feng in the air, one in front and one in the back. Both of them were soaring at an extremely high speed and quickly disappeared from Liu He and Amuhan's field of view.

"This Li Yao's special ability is probably 'light'" frowned Liu He, "Like the head, those with the special ability of light will be able to fly much faster than us. We can't get him". The reason why the universe deems star traveller level fighters as 'true fighters' is because once they reach the star traveller level, fighters obtain their true abilities!

“Contact the head” Liu He commanded the tactical communications watch.

“Contact the head” Amuhan also wanted to contact Thunder God.

The call quickly went through.

“Head, right in the crucial moment where Li Yao was about to be executed, he broke through to the representative level! And his special ability is probably ‘light’, so he’s extremely fast. He just flew into the air and Luo Feng is currently chasing after him. Amuhan and I haven’t been able to chase them” Liu He immediately reported. Amuhan also reported.

After their report.

“Go, let’s chase on the auto jet” Liu He called the universe level auto jet. However, Liu He and Amuhan were clear that even the auto jet wouldn’t help.

The auto jet’s flying speed is way faster than the speed of the representative level fighters. However, once the auto jet catches up, Liu He and Amuhan have to get off the auto jet to kill Li Yao. But since they are slower than Li Yao, there’s no point in chasing him!

.....

Dojo of Limits world headquarters, banquet hall.

Of course the Dojo of Limits wouldn't make all these representative fighters come over here for nothing, so they held a banquet in the banquet hall just for these 30 representatives. For representative fighters, the deaths of two wargods..... is but a small matter. The only one who would actually care about this is probably Yan Hai.

"What?" in the banquet hall, the face of the black clothed man, Hong, slightly changed.

"He broke through?" the bald monk Thunder God was also shocked after receiving the report.

The entire banquet hall immediately quieted down.

The black clothed man, Hong, gave his order right away: "Allure, Vladimir"

"Yes" royal guard Allure stepped forward.

"Yes" a black man also stepped forward.

"Get on my prehistoric level auto jet and immediately assist Luo Feng in killing Li Yao!" commanded the black clothed man, Hong, "Li Yao has already broke through to the representative level! His special ability is 'light'. Depart quickly"

“Yes!”

Allure and investigator Vladimir quickly left the banquet hall as they rode on the prehistoric level auto jet towards the wilderness.

The entire banquet went into an uproar.

“Li Yao broke through?”

“Breaking through before his death. This Li Yao sure is powerful. And his special ability is ‘light'”

The representatives discussed with each other quietly. The old face of ‘Yan Hai’, who was in the corner of the group of representatives, had a rare smile on as he thought to himself, “Little vulture, you definitely must grab on to this chance and escape”

“The first chairman ordered Vladimir and Allure to assist Luo Feng? Could Luo Feng be chasing after Li Yao?”

“Li Yao’s special ability is light, so he is much faster than most representatives. Luo Feng dares to chase after him?”

“This Luo Feng is way too cocky”

“His attack power rivals a representative, but this Li Yao’s attack

power isn't any weaker than him right now! And with his special ability of light, his agility is extremely amazing. Luo Feng is doomed this time"

Some representatives felt bad for Li Yao. If Li Yao made his breakthrough before the court session, he definitely wouldn't receive the death penalty! And now, it's too late! Some also thought that Luo Feng was too cocky. All he has is an attack of over 8,000,000 kg with 16 small weapons. Just with that, he dares to chase after a representative?

"Brother Hong, this Luo Feng fellow is a bit too courageous" smiled the bald monk Thunder God.

"A bit reckless indeed" frowned the black clothed man, Hong, "Right now, he isn't Li Yao's opponent. Vengeance and hatred has blinded his eyes..... sigh, he still has to be raised, since he's too young"

"Yeah. this Luo Feng fellow is a good seedling. If raised properly, his future will be bright. If we run into something big in the future, he might be able to help us" smiled Thunder God.

The black clothed man, Hong, slightly nodded: "He has high potential. He might be able to become the third chairman in 10 or 20 more years, assuming he works hard enough"

In the eyes of the two most powerful fighters on earth, Luo Feng has potential. But now..... he isn't enough.

“This time, he was reckless” The black clothed man slightly shook his head. Clearly, Luo Feng’s actions this time has disappointed him.

.....

In the sky, stratosphere.

“This is the power of an existence surpassing the wargod level, the power of a representative?” Li Yao, who was soaring in the sky, couldn’t help but to laugh loudly with excitement. His laughter blasted around like a shockwave. The light around him was slightly curved. Sometimes his body was blurry and sometimes it was unclear. The tattered clothes on his body were torn apart by the swift wind.

Revealing his powerful body!

“Such great power”

“My agility and power is way higher than before” Li Yao waved his fist and the air burst apart, “Using the energy of the transformation to assist with the impact clearly makes strength exertions way easier. No wonder the representative level fighters are all so powerful”

And behind him——

Whoosh!

A flowing light swiftly approached.

“LI YAO!” a roar came.

“Luo Feng!” Li Yao glanced at Luo Feng out of the corner of his eye. A cruel light shined in his eye and he actually hovered in midair as he watched Luo Feng. Luo Feng stopped on his soaring shuttle as he hovered in front of Li Yao.

“All because of you. Because of you, my son is dead. Because of you, my wife is dead..... today, I will let you know the power of an existence surpassing the wargod level!” under Li Yao’s tattered clothes, the muscles of his body seemed sculpted, the curves were perfect. His eyes were full of killing intent as he stared at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was cold towards Li Yao as he stood on his soaring shuttle, the black god set on his body transformed into a battle uniform set and a helmet.

An existence surpassing the wargod level?

Just a star traveller level one stage!

“Li Yao, you are still fated to die by my hand” Luo Feng looked at Li Yao coldly.

“Too cocky!” roared Li Yao.

And at this time, the universe level auto jet that the two representatives Liu He and Amuhan were riding on was hovering in the distance. However, because Li Yao and Amuhan were slower than Li Yao, they didn't rush to come out..... since even if they rush out, they wouldn't even be able to touch a corner of Li Yao's clothes. They were only responsible for chasing after him!

As long as they don't lose him, when the people sent by Hong arrive, they can easily kill vulture Li Yao.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng, get in the fighter jet quickly" Liu He's voice carried over.

But Luo Feng and Li Yao continued to watch each other.

"Luo Feng, you're too young, too cocky. Today. you die because of your arrogance!" sneered Li Yao. After that, he slightly extended his hands. A ray of golden light slowly started to appear on Li Yao's hands, as if they were two blades! His hands also started to become blurry.

Luo Feng's soaring shuttle was already hovering in front of him. Black footboards extended from his feet, which allowed him to hover in midair.

He silently watched Li Yao prepare his ultimate move.

"Even though the black god set is powerful, your body is still at

the advanced level wargod level" Li Yao let out a peculiar smile as he closed his eyes. Light slowly appeared from his entire body, and he seemed to be covered in a layer of golden light. This scene shocked Liu He and Amuhan on the auto jet.

"Going all out right off the bat?" Liu He was shocked.

"This Li Yao indeed has a gigantic grudge with Luo Feng. He's willing to heavily injure himself to kill Luo Feng" as star traveller level fighters, Liu He and Amuhan were clear as to what Li Yao was doing.

Li Yao, whose entire body was coated with the golden light, suddenly moved!

Whoosh!

He shot towards Luo Feng like a rainbow.

"Li Yao, die" Luo Feng slightly waved his hand as he hovered in midair.

Whoosh! The soaring shuttle instantly transformed into the 'mountain drill'. 12 golden thin lines were born when 12 portions of powerful spiritual force merged into the engravings. They immediately rushed towards the tip of the mountain drill, forming an incredible piercing power. It seemed that the mountain drill contained an impact force formed from hundreds of billions of tons of dynamite.

“ANG~”

As if the soaring shuttle drilled through space itself, it formed a golden light as its speed reached an incredible level. Even a star traveller level nine stage probably wouldn’t be faster than the soaring shuttle in the ‘mountain drill’ form!

“WHAT!” LI Yao’s mind only had enough time for shock; there was no time for anything else.

BOOM!

Under absolute speed, Li Yao, who was preparing to unleash his ultimate move, had no time to think nor dodge as a huge hole was drilled through his chest by the ‘mountain drill’. And the powerful rotation power of the mountain drill instantly shred Li Yao’s corpse into pieces. Blood and flesh was scattered everywhere.

HUA! The mountain drill instantly disassembled into the ‘soaring shuttle’ and returned to Luo Feng’s feet.

Li Yao, dead!

Right when he became an existence surpassing the wargod level and was preparing to have his revenge, he was directly killed by Luo Feng!

Just like that!

The soaring shuttle is split into three main forms. In the soaring shuttle's first main form, it can transform into the 'mountain drill' and the 'mountain bulwark'. And the second main form of the soaring shuttle requires a battle ability amplifier of 30 to start training it! As for the third main form of the soaring shuttle, you need to have reached the 'universe level', have a battle ability amplifier of 48, and have your own domain to start training it.

Maybe the second transformation of the soaring shuttle is even more absurdly powerful.

However, the first form's transformations, 'mountain drill' and 'mountain bulwark', just the power of the first stage has completely satisfied Luo Feng.

"Holy!" Liu He froze in the distance.

"Great Buddha, I, I...." Amuhan was also stunned.

A representative fighter was killed by a golden light!

Luo Feng's movements were too fast just now. He instantly transformed the soaring shuttle to attack. Even Liu He and Amuhan weren't able to see what the golden light Luo Feng sent out was! They only saw..... that before Li Yao's seemingly powerful attack was able to reach Luo Feng, Li Yao himself was blown to smithereens!

“Head, head” Liu He quickly contacted.

“Head” Amuhan did the same.

Both sides connected.

“Liu He, Luo Feng is fine right. Hurry and let him in the auto jet and tell him to calm down and stop being reckless” right when they connected, Hong immediately gave his command.

“Head, Li Yao was killed by Luo Feng” said Liu He after clearing his throat.

Chapter 27 – It's Called the Soaring Shuttle

On the other side of the tactical communications watch, the head, 'Hong', went silent for a moment, and then couldn't help but to ask: "You said Li Yao was killed by Luo Feng?"

"Yes, head" Liu He was also extremely confused.

Luo Feng can control 16 small weapons and the fact that an advanced level wargod level spirit reader is comparable to a 'representative level fighter' can be accepted by them. But no matter how powerful he is, for him to kill a representative? That's sleep-talk! Unless he saw it for himself, Liu He would never believe this.

"Head, I'm sure I saw it. Luo Feng transformed the soaring shuttle into a golden light, which pierced through Li Yao and killed him" said Liu He.

"Soaring shuttle? Golden light?"

On the other side of the tactical communications watch, Hong went silent for a bit and then commanded, "Liu He, bring Luo Feng back to headquarters immediately"

"Yes!" Liu He heeded the command.

"Also, your auto jet probably recorded the battle just now right? Send a copy to me" commanded Hong.

“Yes” Liu He heeded the command.

Besides Liu He, that investigator from the Thunder Dojo, Amuhan, has also finished his report to ‘Thunder God’. Liu He and Amuhan exchanged glances and then turned their heads towards Luo Feng, who was still hovering in midair. The hatch was already opened!

“Li Yao was killed by me!” Luo Feng gazed upon the infinite sky, his thoughts in disarray.

Ever since he completed the first stage of the first main form of the ‘soaring shuttle’, Luo Feng stopped taking the regular star traveller level one fighter seriously. Even though Li Yao made his breakthrough, Luo Feng had absolute confidence in killing a ‘Li Yao’ without a black god set! However, at the instant he actually killed him for real——

Luo Feng’s feelings were in disarray.

His grudge with Li Yao has been going on for a long time.

When he was still a rookie fighter, Li Yao was like a gigantic mountain that stood in his path that struck fear into him. Step by step..... as he grew, Li Yao’s threat drastically lowered. This time, because of what happened to his parents, his rage decided that Li Yao must die! Which is why he killed him!

“Luo Feng, what are you thinking about?”

“Haha, is it because killing Li Yao in an instant made you feel accomplished?” Liu He yelled from the auto jet faraway.

“Coming” Luo Feng smiled and then flew over with the soaring shuttle.

After he entered the plane, the hatch closed.

“Return to headquarters” ordered Liu He.

The auto jet immediately turned around and flew back.

In the plane, Luo Feng could feel that Liu He and Amuhan’s eyes were different than before. He couldn’t help laugh and say: “Liu He, what are you guys looking at me like that for?”

“Powerful, powerful indeed. To be able to kill a representative level fighter” Liu He stared at Luo Feng.

“Respect” twisted Chinese came out of Amuhan’s mouth, and he even gave a thumbs up.

“It’s nothing. That Li Yao didn’t have a ‘black god set’. If he had a black god set, it would be hard for me to kill him” Luo Feng slightly smiled. Liu He and Amuhan were secretly shocked. How many existences surpassing the wargod level are there on earth?

All the other representatives don't have the record of killing a 'representative'.

After killing a representative fighter, Luo Feng is still so calm?

Liu He and Amuhan were of course shocked by Luo Feng's maturity.

"Killing a star traveller level one stage?" Luo Feng shook his head to himself.

On earth, this is an incredible thing! But after going through archaeological ruin #9, Luo Feng was clear: star traveller level fighters in the vast universe can barely survive. He, who has received the inheritance of Yun Mo planet, indeed has nothing to be proud of over killing a star traveller level one stage.

After a moment, this universe level auto jet landed at the apron.

Luo Feng, Liu He, and Amuhan. These three representatives entered the large spaceship structure.

"All the other representatives are at the banquet hall" smiled Liu He as he said, "This way"

Under Liu He's lead, Luo Feng and the others quickly arrived at the banquet hall.

The large door to the banquet hall was dark red. Beside the door that was 3.6 meters tall and had detailed engravings on it stood two servants. The two servants slightly bowed: “Please enter, three representatives”. As he said that, he pushed open the huge heavy door. The door slowly opened and the sounds of discussion within immediately spread out.

Luo Feng, Liu He, and Amuhan directly walked in.

At the instant when Luo Feng, who was wearing a black casual outfit, stepped in the banquet hall, all the ‘existences surpassing the wargod level’, whoosh!, turned their heads and looked over. All of their eyes landed upon Luo Feng.

“Hm?” Luo Feng was slightly shocked.

Over 30 powerful star traveller level fighters were staring at just him?

“Luo Feng”

“Luo Feng”

Vladimir, Wang Yu, and the other investigators from the Dojo of Limits came up with a smile and greeted Luo Feng. As for the other representatives, they were all discussing quietly together. However, most of them formed a barrier around them so their voices won’t spread out. Clearly, the things they were talking about were not appropriate for others to hear.

“That Luo Feng still needs to step on a weapon to fly, which means he hasn’t broke through yet. He’s still at the peak of the advanced level wargod level. He, a spirit reader at the ‘peak of the advanced level wargod level’, was actually able to kill Li Yao with a golden light!”

“Luo Feng must’ve got an extremely powerful special weapon”

Representatives discussed quietly with their good friends.

Previously, Li Yao’s breakthrough shocked everyone here. Many representatives were talking about that. And after that——the news of Luo Feng killing Li Yao spread! The various representatives of course wanted to know how Li Yao was killed. When faced with over 30 representatives worrying about the same thing, Hong and Thunder God can’t keep hiding it.

So, they played the video of Luo Feng killing Li Yao.

Hong and Thunder God didn’t put the video on ‘slow’, rather, they played it at the regular speed! All the various representatives only saw that the special weapon hovering beside Luo Feng instantly transformed into a golden light and shot out, blowing Li Yao into smithereens!

“Luo Feng’s weapon is too powerful”

“Didn’t he stay in archaeological ruin #9 for a year and three

months? He must've got some special rewards. He probably got that weapon from the archaeological ruin"

"He, at the peak of the wargod level, can bring out so much strength with this weapon. Then if a powerful fighter who has truly broke through to the 'representative level' uses it, he could probably become even more powerful"

Everyone wants good things. If a kid is hugging a piece of gold and walking down the street, it would be weird if someone didn't steal it.

One thing is for sure.

These representatives are all a bit envious of that special weapon that can transform into a golden light, but Luo Feng is no child. In fact, he's a powerful fighter that can kill a 'representative'! That's why these representatives are still able to show some self control. However, these representatives still had confidence in themselves, since they are different from Li Yao.

When Li Yao was killed, he didn't have a black god set.

And all the other representatives have black god sets! With a black god set, their defensive abilities go up by over 10 times.

Luo Feng was with the other four investigators.

"How come I feel like quite a few representatives are looking at

me in a weird way” said Luo Feng quietly.

“You made such a big scene”

The investigator named Wang on the side said quietly, “You, a spirit reader at the peak of the wargod level, was able to rely on a weapon to kill a true representative level fighter! Clearly, this weapon is powerful. You tell me..... how can all of these representatives not be envious? They are barely able to control themselves. However, once there’s a chance, some of these people will make a move”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to laugh.

A bunch of representatives?

He seriously doesn’t care about them. There are only two people that he is aiming for on earth—— Hong and Thunder God! As for the others, they’re seriously not much.

After going back, he’ll start the ’81 spirits forging’ and directly become a spirit reader at the star traveller level one stage!

At that time.....

The representatives that dare to come after him will end up giving up their lives! However, these representatives probably aren’t that daring.

“RUMBLE~~” the door to the banquet opened once again.

Everyone turned their heads.

The black clothed ‘Hong’ and the bald monk ‘Thunder God’ walked in, one in front and one in back. All the representatives quieted down and didn’t dare to speak any further.

“Everybody”

The eyes of the black clothed man, Hong, scanned across everybody in the room. The formless pressure caused everybody’s heart to shake with no will to resist at all, “I heard your discussions just now nice and clear. Who would’ve thought that after just a mere 10 years, people have started to forget about the ‘Yahan case'”

“Bunch of trash!” Thunder God also sneered on the side.

The faces of many representatives went pale. The ‘Yahan’ case was when ‘Hong’ struck down a representative fighter ‘Yahan’ back then out of anger.

Not just Hong!

On earth, not just Hong, Thunder God is also a fighter who has killed a ‘representative fighter’! Of course, today, Luo Feng will be added to that list. However, unlike Luo Feng..... the

representatives Hong and Thunder God have killed were representatives with black god sets!

"I created the Palace of Wargods with Thunder God so everybody can come together. I wished for the elites of humanity to work together for humanity's survival!"

"Unity!"

"You must remember this one word! Otherwise, in the battle between humans and monsters, humans might end up being eliminated" the black clothed man, Hong, said coldly, "The amount of monsters in the sea are many times more numerous than humans. They also have way more emperor level monsters than us, and they have two grand emperor monsters!"

Luo Feng, who was in the banquet hall, froze when he heard this..... grand emperor? Two of them?

However, the other representatives weren't shocked, as they clearly all knew this already.

"Unity is the most important thing!"

"I don't want to see something similar to the cases of Yahan and Li An Sheng happen again. If they do happen, I and Thunder God wouldn't mind getting rid of them. These kinds of people are just ruining everything for everyone else!" the black clothed man, Hong, spoke with a cold voice. None of the representatives dared

to say anything. “As for Luo Feng’s case, Luo Feng’s weapon..... is called the soaring shuttle!”

A bunch of representatives started listening carefully.

“That is something I gave to Luo Feng” said the black clothed man, Hong, coldly, “Of course, one point is because Luo Feng has enough talent. Another point is that Luo Feng gave me all of the huge amounts of spirits of nature he got back at the misty island, which was why I exchanged them for a soaring shuttle”

“I am a fair man”

“If you want something, then you need to give something of equal value”

The black clothed man, Hong, looked towards Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, come with me. The rest of you continue the banquet”

After saying that, the black clothed man, Hong, turned around and headed outside. The bald monk Thunder God also followed. After Luo Feng heard the command, he also followed them and left the banquet hall.

RUMBLE~~

The huge door of the banquet hall closed once again. Only then did all of the representatives let out a sigh of relief. All of them exchanged glances with a bit of fear in their eyes! Hong and

Thunder God have not shown their anger in front of the representatives for an extremely, extremely long time. Humans are a forgetful species. Roughly 10 years was enough time for them to forget about Hong and Thunder God's cruelty.

In that scene before, everyone felt.....

that in front of Hong, their lives were no longer their own! This feeling scared all of them, and none of them dared to think of any twisted ideas.

Chapter 28 – Misty Island

Luo Feng quietly followed the black clothed man, Hong, and the white robed monk, Thunder God.

“These two are the strongest fighters on earth” Luo Feng watched their backs and set them as his goal! One of them reached the star traveller level seven stage in just a few dozen years while the other is at the star traveller level six stage but ‘invincible in the star traveller level’. This training speed is way faster than everybody else on earth.

HUA!

Along the tunnel, the metal door opened. The three of them went in and the metal door closed.

They walked forward and quickly arrived at the open-air rooftop.

Hong and Thunder God both sat down. Hong glanced at Luo Feng: “sit”

“Yes, head” Luo Feng sat down on the side, his back straight.

“Kiddo Luo, how did you kill Li Yao with just the soaring shuttle, tell me the details” Thunder God’s face was filled with smiles and seemed quite kind, “Back then, I discovered this soaring shuttle with your head and spent a lot of time on it. Even though we know that this ‘spiritual weapon’ is extremely powerful, we didn’t know

how to use it”

Luo Feng’s heart leapt.

The bald crystal person said that Hong and Thunder God have received inheritances from other archaeological ruins, so they clearly know the power of a ‘spiritual weapon’! But the ‘soaring shuttle’ is one of the unique spiritual weapons in Yun Mo planet. The usage of it is definitely a secret. Even if someone outside of Yun Mo planet gets it, they can’t even use it.

“What should I do?”

“The secret of the instruction manual《Soaring Shuttle》definitely cannot be spread. According to what was on it, if I pass it to other members of Yun Mo planet, hard labor for 60 years. If I pass it to people outside of Yun Mo planet, death without exceptions! The bald crystal person is watching the entire planet. If I expose the secret, he’ll definitely know. He might even shoot out a laser beam and kill me” Luo Feng didn’t dare to take the risk.

Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances.

“Is there something wrong?” Hong watched Luo Feng.

“I’m thinking about how I should explain this” Luo Feng took in a deep breath, “I trust that the head has guessed, that there is an AI system controlling archaeological ruin #9 from behind the scenes!”

Hong and Thunder God nodded.

With so many wargods on earth entering it over and over again, it was really easy to discover that this archaeological ruin was following a process. People naturally guessed that there is an AI system controlling the archaeological ruin.

“I said before that because of my brain vigor, I took a special exam in archaeological ruin #9, which was my death mission. During the mission, I received a bit of guidance for ‘spirit reader controllers’! From there, I learned two ways to use the soaring shuttle: an attacking method and a defending method”

“Finally, I successfully completed the mission in one year and three months! And I received a training method for spirit reader controllers”

“However, even though I feel like this archaeological ruin #9 is like a teacher picking out students, a lot of things were hidden from us” Luo Feng shook his head and sighed.

Hong and Thunder God slightly nodded.

“That’s normal”

Hong lightly smiled, “That archaeological ruin #9 is one of the few archaeological ruins on earth that are functioning perfectly. According to what we know, that’s a place to pick out students! However, it prefers spirit readers, which can be determined by

comparing the death rates of spirit readers and regular fighters”

Luo Feng froze.

Yeah, before entering, Hong told him that even though spirit readers at the ‘advanced level wargod level’ have failed after entering archaeological ruin #9, none of them died! Rather, the death rate of advanced level wargod level fighters is high.

Clearly, this archaeological ruin #9 ‘likes’ spirit readers and isn’t very fair on the screening process.

“So my guess is that, the organization behind archaeological ruin #9 values spirit readers” said Hong.

Luo Feng applauded in his mind.

According to what he knows, the master of Yun Mo planet, ‘Hu Yan Bo’, created many spiritual weapons. Someone who can create spiritual weapons is probably an incredible existence within the spirit reader division! Keep in mind that to use the third main form of the ‘soaring shuttle’, you have to at least be a universe level spirit reader!

To be able to create a weapon that even powerful universe level fighters have to struggle to use.

The strength of this Hu Yan Bo probably exceeds the universe level!

Since the master of Yun Mo planet is such an accomplished ‘spirit reader’, it isn’t weird that he prioritizes spirit reader students.

“This organization heavily values spirit readers, and archaeological ruin #9 is just an entry level test; how could it teach a lot?” Hong shook his head and then looked at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, there is only one spirit reader on earth who has reached the ‘representative level’: the fourth chairman Eastbourne. However, he isn’t as talented as you. Furthermore, that guy is too ambitious, which I don’t like”

“You can control 16 small weapons now, so you can probably breakthrough?” Hong looked at Luo Feng, “That Eastbourne can only control at most 14 small weapons”

“Probably. Recently, I have been feeling like I can make my breakthrough at any time” replied Luo Feng.

“Okay”

Hong and Thunder God both slightly nodded.

Hong and Thunder God are definitely the two people on earth who know the most about the universe! Most of the various archaeological ruins on earth were discovered by these two powerful fighters! Luo Feng’s knowledge of the universe doesn’t even come close to Hong and Thunder God’s. Because they know so much about the universe, Hong and Thunder God don’t dare to relax.

“Keep working hard” encouraged Hong.

“Head, you mentioned a ‘grand emperor monster’?” asked Luo Feng, “What is this grand emperor monster?”

Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances.

Hong said seriously: “You haven’t been in the circle of representatives for a long enough time. This actually isn’t a big secret! Whether humans or monsters, after breaking through the ‘wargod level’ and ’emperor level’, it’s not like their strength doesn’t grow anymore! Our representative fighters are of varying power, and me and Thunder God surpass the others by far”

“Monsters are the same”

“There are strong emperor level monsters and weak emperor level monsters. However, usually, the difference isn’t too great, just a difference of a few times”

“However, the sea, with an area several times that of land, has countless monsters. There are also many emperor level monsters! Naturally, a few horrifying monsters will be born! We call these two monsters the ‘grand emperor monsters’! Each of them have an astonishingly high amount of strength. Except me and Thunder God, anyone else on earth who encounters them will die for sure” said Hong without hesitation.

Luo Feng was shocked.

Such horrifying monsters exist?

But after thinking a bit, one can understand that the higher your authority, the more you will know. For example, regular fighters don't even know things like 'spirits of nature'. If the news of the 'grand emperor monsters' goes out, human society will just go into more turmoil. As long as the representatives know that there are still monsters that can kill them within a second, they'll keep working hard without relaxing.

"Keep in mind that the representative level is only the beginning and not the end" said Hong seriously, "Do not let your guard down"

"Understood" nodded Luo Feng.

Of course he understood.....

that the so called representative level is actually the 'star traveller level'. He even knew that the star traveller level was split into nine stages and the level of the two heads: star traveller level six stage and star traveller level seven stage.

"Okay" Hong paused a bit before saying, "Our appointment of the sixth investigator of our Dojo of Limits is going to be broadcasted around the entire world, so we have to pick an important day. I think..... the 1st, 5th, and 18th of January are all good days, you can

pick one”

“Appointing the investigator?”

Luo Feng thought a bit and then smiled, “January 1st is new years, so that probably is not a good day. We can do it on January 5th”

“Okay” Hong nodded, “Alright, go participate in the banquet”

“Yes”

Luo Feng obeyed and immediately left.

Only Hong and Thunder God remained on the open-air rooftop.

“Brother Hong, I think this little fellow is hiding something” Thunder God smiled as he looked towards Hong.

“Everyone has their own secrets. Some secrets cannot even be told to one’s own family, so is there a need to force it out?” Hong said seriously, “The thing I am worrying about is that earth will one day be discovered by the countries and organizations across the universe! At that time, it is hard to say..... whether humanity will be eradicated, sold off as slaves, or will somehow be able to luckily survive.”

“So, we must enter the ‘star level’ as fast as possible. That way,

we will have the ability to protect earth”

“Yeah” Thunder God slightly nodded.

The two peak existences on earth..... were worrying about humanity’s fate.

They were clear how insignificant earth was in the universe! And the humans on earth are only living on the land of this planet.....

Knock! Knock! Knock!

A knocking sound rose.

“Enter” Hong spoke, and the door opened automatically.

Royal guard Allure walked to the open-air rooftop and said respectfully: “Head, we just received news that there has been some special change at the misty island. It will become clear after the head watches the video”

“Misty island?” said Thunder God with shock, “Brother Hong, isn’t that where you got the cloud contact vine?”

“Play it” commanded Hong.

.....

Ming-Yue sector.

Night, Luo Feng and his family were eating dinner.

“Dad, mom, I have to go out to deal with some business tonight. I probably need about five to six days” Luo Feng held his bowl and picked up a piece of scrambled egg.

“Five to six days?”

Beside the dinner table, father Luo Hong Guo, who was sitting on a wheelchair, mother Gong Xin Lan, and brother Luo Hua were all shocked.

“You just came back for two days, how come you’re going out again?” Gong Xin Lan couldn’t help but to say, “There’s no danger is there?”

“Our child is going out to do important things, don’t hinder him” scolded Luo Hong Guo.

“I’m just worried about Feng, what’re you yelling about” yelled Gong Xin Lan immediately.

“Okay, dad, mom” followed Luo Feng, “There won’t be any danger this time. I’m just going to deal with something important. I’ll be able to come back five to six days later”

Only after that was the family at ease.

Since Luo Feng indeed just disappeared for a year and three months.

Deep into the night.

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle and silently left home. In the night, he entered the 'emperor level auto jet' without a sound.

Inside the auto jet.

The seat was placed horizontally and was as flat as the ground. Luo Feng silently sat cross legged on it.

"Don't worry, be good, I'll call you later" Luo Feng ended his call with Xu Xin.

"#1, do not allow anyone to disturb me until I come out" commanded Luo Feng.

All preparations were made!

He told his family and Xu Xin. His investigator appointment was also on January 5th, so he had eight or nine days, which was enough for him to break through to the 'star traveller level'.

“81 spirits forging”

Luo Feng took in a deep breath, closed his eyes, and swiftly recalled the 81 steps of 81 spirits forging.

“No problem”

“Then.....”

“Begin!”

Luo Feng’s breathing became steady and his heart rate slowed down. In his vastless realm of consciousness, the originally calm, galaxy-like spiritual force ferociously surged. “RUMBLE~~” The surging spiritual force started rotating and started constantly accelerating, accelerating.....

Chapter 29 – Birth

Luo Feng began the ’81 spirits forging’. The representatives that received the warning from ‘Hong’ all became well-behaved. The countless regular civilians of China were all preparing for the upcoming new year’s day.

The entire earth was calm.

.....

12/30/2058, 21:36. Earth, the Pacific Ocean. Depths of the sea a few hundred km away from the Hawaiian Islands.

Cold, darkness.

In this area of the sea, the black, oval shaped egg that was around 12 meters in diameter has been here for around a year already. Weeds and dirt covered it and it was quite inconspicuous. Quite a few monsters in this area have discovered this mysterious egg in the past year, but none of them were able to bite through the egg’s shell. As time passed, very few monsters bothered to deal with this mysterious egg.

“Crack crack crack~~”

The mysterious black gigantic egg slightly shook and a bit of the weeds and dirt on the egg fell off. Actually, since a month ago, this gigantic egg would occasionally shake a bit. The shaking slowly

became more and more frequent. Yesterday, this mysterious gigantic egg shook around 10 times.

“Crack crack crack~~”

The mysterious black gigantic egg shook again and more weeds and dirt fell off. As they fell off, they revealed the mysterious golden markings on the surface of the black gigantic egg.

Ring! Ring! Ring!

The black gigantic egg started shaking violently. It shook more and more and with a crisp sound, a crack appeared on the surface of the black gigantic egg. Soon after was “PA!” “PA!” “PA!” a few heavy sounds. The cracked area of the black gigantic egg broke, and an ‘unidentified being’ covered in black slime appeared.

“Kechi, kechi” this unidentified being covered in slime started swallowing the egg shell.

As if it was starving for who knows how many years.

It swallowed crazily!

In just around 10 minutes, a third of the black oval shaped egg that was 12 meters in diameter was eaten up, and the body of the black unidentified being was completely revealed. This was an unidentified reptile with four powerful legs that was covered in black scales. Its large, black body had a pair of wings that were

covered in scales and a tail that seemed to be that of a dragon's.

On its head was a single horn that was pointed directly at the sky!

However, its entire body had slime on it, so it was impossible to discern its true appearance!

As it ate the black egg shell, the black monster's body started to become bigger and bigger. From a body size of 12 meters, it became longer. When it finished eating up the egg shell, its body became 16 meters long! As of now, all of its slime has been absorbed and the black monster's body became clear.

"WU——"

A sharp, joyful shriek rang from its throat.

This was a 16 meter long monster that has never been seen on earth before. Its black scales all over its body were like sharp blades that sent chills down one's spine. The pressure from the odd aura emanating from its body was suffocating. Whether the scales all over its body or its terrifying wings, its powerful four legs, its tail, its horn, all of them were an ice cold black!

To be more specific.....

there were some hidden mysterious golden stripes on its sharp, black horn. However, it was extremely inconspicuous, one would have to look closely to be able to find them.

The mysterious golden stripes went from its horn to the scales on its head, neck, and back, as if there was a layer of golden stripes merged into its back. Some of the densely packed golden stripes on its back even spread out to its wings and limbs!

After finishing the black egg shell, the mysterious monster swam around the area under the sea.

Ancient memories contained in its blood flowed into its mind.

The mysterious monster's eyes ferociously brightened as they became a shining golden color! The golden stripes on the scales of its horn, neck, and back also slightly lit up, and a golden color visible to the naked eye appeared! The water around it suddenly paused a bit, and the bedrock that the mysterious monster was laying on started trembling slightly.

Power flowed into its body.

But, in just a moment, it stopped absorbing energy.

"WU——"

The mysterious monster stood up with a bit of anger as it looked around its surroundings, as if it was thinking. Finally, it let out a roar of dissatisfaction and slightly shook its tail. With a whoosh, it started moving forward in the water. It seemed like it was born without the need of oxygen and could naturally move around the

sea as if it was flat ground.

Suddenly, a group of fish type monsters appeared in front of it. The monsters had staggered teeth and red eyes. Each of them were over five meters long, and a few peculiar claws grew out of their abdomens.

“Yu~” a shrieking sound came.

The large group of fish type monsters swiftly surrounded the mysterious monster. They have already treated this monster they have never seen before as their prey! There are way too many species of monsters in the sea, so monsters that live in the sea use their body sizes as an indicator of an unidentified monster’s strength.

Sea monsters are larger than land monsters.

Emperor level sea monsters are usually over 100 meters long!

Horde leader level sea monsters are usually over 20 meters long!

And this mysterious monster in front of them was only 16 meters long, so it probably isn’t at the horde leader level yet. Of course this group of fish type monsters wouldn’t be scared. If they work together, they can even hunt a horde leader level monster.

“Yu!”

The command was given.

Fish type monster after fish type monster ferociously charged out. At the same time, ‘whoosh’ ‘whoosh’ ‘whoosh’, red beam after red beam shot out of the eyes of these fish type monsters. The red beams shot out by the densely packed fish type monsters swiftly formed a net, which covered the entire mysterious monster. The mysterious monster looked at the countless amount of fish type monsters charging at it with its ice cold eyes.

“WU——”

A roar.

Whoosh!

The blade-like scales covering the mysterious monster’s wings suddenly spread out! Its wingspan was at least 20 meters!

It moved!

The mysterious monster instantly transformed into a blurry image that carried a bit of golden light with it. The image instantly spread out across a 300 meter radius, and that 300 meter radius instantly became a zone of pure death! All the fish type monster instantly died, and all the other sea monsters in that area were minced to death too!

They were killed by the pair of wings!

“Kechi, kechi” the mysterious monster picked the corpses of the three strongest sea monsters. The size of the corpses of the three monsters were even larger than its own body size.

Its bloody, large mouth easily ate them up in just around 10 seconds!

“WU!”

The mysterious monster let out a roar of dissatisfaction, as if the three monster corpses couldn’t satisfy it at all. Its body was still 16 meters long, no change at all.

“Whoosh!”

It shook its tail and continued forward! It didn’t even stop for monsters lower than the horde leader level.

Two horde leader level mountain shaking whales appeared in front of it. It roared and spread out its wings again……

Starting from tonight, the mysterious monster began a bloody hunt in the surrounding area!

Its stomach was like a bottomless hole.

Eat, eat!

It ate a huge amount of horrifying sea monsters, each of them at the horde leader level! If you stack all of these sea monsters together, you could probably make a mountain! However, even though it ate so many monsters within a day, the length of its body didn't change much at all.

.....

For this area of the sea, this was a huge disaster!

The death of large amounts of horde leaders finally brought about the attention of the king of this area——a large, powerful emperor level monster, 'dragon turtle'! To be able to occupy the core region of the Pacific Ocean that was thousands of km large, this dragon turtle, even within the group of the emperor level monsters, was an extremely horrifying existence.

Before the Grand Nirvana period, it has already lived in some cave beneath the sea for a hundred years. It was a turtle with a long lifespan.

"HOWL~~"

The gigantic dragon turtle was like a mountain as it swiftly moved forward on the seabed.

Just the turtle shell's diameter was over 300 meters. If this

dragon turtle floated above the surface of the sea, it would seem like an island. Sadly, because it's too large, it isn't able to enter land through a river. Otherwise..... with the dragon turtle's famed defense, it will definitely cause a lot of trouble for humanity.

"It dared to kill such a large amount of my subordinates. I will definitely kill it, KILL IT!!!" the dragon turtle howled in its heart.

In terms of intelligence, some emperor level monsters are even smarter and more cunning than humans.

"So it's there"

Under the lead of a horde leader level monster, the gigantic dragon turtle swiftly moved forward. It will definitely kill its opponent, who invaded its territory and slaughtered tons of its subordinates! If it doesn't fight..... then it must admit defeat, leave, and allow the opponent to take over this land. This is the rule of the sea monsters.

.....

"WU!"

"WU!"

The mysterious monster, which was born almost a day ago, was unhappy. It ate up a large amount of sea monsters that seemed to be pretty good in this sea. According to its inherited memory,

monsters of those size should be pretty powerful, and eating them would be beneficial. However—— eating that much didn't prove to be of much help.

Not even a ten thousandth as satisfying as the egg shell.

"WU!"

Dissatisfaction and exasperation made the mysterious monster decide to lay down and rest for a bit. After all, it was just a baby that has been born less than a day ago.

Suddenly——

The mysterious monster slightly raised its head and looked into the distance. Its pair of cold eyes slightly lit up with a bit of golden light. Its golden eyes seemed to be able to see quite a far distance in the deep, dark seabed. "WU~" the mysterious monster swiftly got up and, after letting out a roar of excitement, its tail shook and it charged forward like lightning.

.....

The seabed.

A black monster that was 16 meters long and the gigantic being that had a turtle shell with a diameter of over 300 meters, the 'dragon turtle', have finally met. They were only a few hundred meters apart.

The dragon turtle's gigantic eyes seemed to stare at this tiny thing from the 3rd floor of an apartment building.

16 meters long?

It was indeed a tiny thing!

"What species is this, I've never seen this before? Four limbs, is it a land monster? A pair of wings, is it a flying monster?" the dragon turtle was intelligent, but no matter how much it observed, it couldn't recognize which type of monster this 'tiny thing' was! It seemed to move quite freely in the sea, which showed it was comfortable in water.

It seemed like a land monster that had a flying monster's wings, and yet it was a monster that lived in the sea……

What is this thing?

"WU!"

The mysterious monster excitedly roared.

Its pair of wings that were covered in scales ferociously spread out, whoosh! Instantly, the mysterious monster transformed into a blurry image. When faced with this, the dragon turtle simply stared at this 'tiny thing' without any worry. With the dragon

turtle's defense, even other emperor level monsters will have trouble damaging it.

"CHI CHI CHI CHI~~"

The gigantic dragon turtle that seemed to be like an island on the seabed suddenly shook. The mysterious monster's sharp wings flew past its turtle shell, which actually made it crack open. However, thankfully the turtle shell is extremely thick, so there was no problem.

"This tiny thing....." the dragon turtle looked at the mysterious monster suspended in the water with disbelief.

"WU~~" the mysterious monster seemed to yell with joy.

Whoosh!

This time, the mysterious monster didn't spread its wings. It flew in a straight path and, as if teleportation, charged in front of the dragon turtle's gigantic head. After that, the mysterious monster stuck its two forward limbs out. Each of its four limbs had five toes, and now, shua! shua! shua! shua! shua! The claws that were normally hidden extended out like blades!

Hu!

The claws drew past the dragon turtle's head. The dragon turtle's head, which was covered with tough scales, was instantly slashed

open by the claws! Its cerebrospinal fluid shot out!

"Too fast!" the dragon turtle only felt a bit of fear and shock, and then died.

Fast!

So fast that even an emperor level dragon turtle couldn't dodge!

Powerful!

So powerful it killed an emperor level monster, 'dragon turtle', in one hit with its claws!

"WU~~" the mysterious monster excitedly started to eat up the entire dragon turtle. The mysterious monster seemed to have a much easier time eating the dragon turtle, which was as large as an island, than the egg shell. In just a few minutes, not even a speck was left of the gigantic dragon turtle! And the surrounding horde leader level monsters have long fled in fear..... there's no helping it. This mysterious monster was just too horrifying.

"WU~~" after eating, the mysterious monster comfortably lie down and closed its eyes.

It's finally a bit satisfied.

And as of now——

The length of its body finally increased by around 0.1 meters!

Chapter 30 – Stepping Into The Star Traveller Level

The birth of the mysterious monster led to a bloody hunt in the Pacific ocean. However, the humans on earth did not realize that at all, and Luo Feng was still continuing his '81 spirits forging' in his emperor level auto jet.

Time flowed, January 1st, 2059.

Ming-Yue sector, Luo Feng's home.

"Sorry, Mr. Wang, my brother isn't home" Luo Hua smiled in the living room as he spoke to an elegant middle-aged man with glasses.

"Today is new years and representative Luo isn't home?" this elegant middle-aged man was a bit shocked.

"Yes. Very sorry" Luo Hua nodded, "My family still has things to do, so we won't be keeping Mr. Wang. Next time..... I will personally welcome Mr. Wang"

"Okay, then I will be leaving now"

Mr. Wang politely left.

As he watched Mr. Wang leave, Luo Hua shook his head. This is

already the 12th wave of invitations within the past few days. To be confident enough to invite a representative level fighter, this person must be an important figure! Powers like the Xu family, if not for Xu Xin, don't even have the right to go up to a representative's home.

That Mr. Wang from before came on behalf of the top level in China's government.

"Where did bro go?"

Luo Hua stood in front of his home's door, "People from the Dojo of Limits, army, government, and even HR alliance are all inviting him. People from Europe and America have been sending their invitations too! It seems like..... nobody knows that my bro is busy"

"What is he doing?" Luo Hua thought to himself.

Barely anyone knew of Luo Feng's situation.

.....

On the night of new year's day, most people were watching the celebrations. And in an auto jet in Ming-Yue sector, there was a bit of faint light in the cockpit, and Luo Feng sat cross legged inside without moving at all.

In his realm of consciousness.

“HUAHUA~~” the marvelous galaxy transformed into a whirlpool. Water rotated like crazy inside, forming whirlpool after whirpool.

The whirlpool furiously spread out, and suddenly, the flowing water became much thinner, as if it became transparent.

Contract!

The originally spread out transparent curtain of water furiously contracted, becoming a gigantic, rotating ball of water! The ball of water was half transparent and had some weird, shining light in it. An extremely small amount of shattered dark golden pieces were mixed inside too, as they clearly haven’t dissolved yet.

Expand, contract!

Expand again, contract again!

The spiritual force in the form of ‘flowing water’ was like a heart. It contracted and expanded over and over again, as if it had its own life. In this special rhythm, the dark golden shattered pieces slowly dissolved, causing the flow of water to become more powerful.

“Expand, thin like a cicada’s wings”

“Contract, transparent ball of water”

“80th step complete!

“I can begin the 81st step now, the final step!” Luo Feng was a bit excited. This 81st step was the most important and most difficult step of ’81 spirits forging’.

In Luo Feng’s realm of consciousness.

A gigantic ball of water that was completely transparent continuously rotated, as if it was a rotating planet. There was no emanating mist, and the size of the ball of water didn’t change at all.

“Begin!”

And then Luo Feng started controlling it.

“RUMBLE~~”

In his infinite realm of consciousness, the hovering gigantic transparent ball of water started rumbling from its core. Spiritual force in the form of mist emanated out and eventually spread throughout the entire transparent ball of water! 10 portions of spiritual mist, 20 portions of spiritual mist, 30 portions..... gradually, the entire transparent ball of water was covered in spiritual mist.

Time passed slowly.

Under Luo Feng's extremely delicate and precise control, the transparent ball of water continued to change slightly. The mist surrounding its surface became more and more powerful, and even formed a gigantic ball of mist. You couldn't even see the 'ball of water' inside the ball of mist.

After who knows how long……

The super gigantic ball of mist was 100 times bigger than the ball of water.

"Still hasn't separated yet, now's the time!"

"EXPLODE!"

Luo Feng roared in his heart.

"BOOM!"

The super gigantic ball of mist in the infinite realm of consciousness furiously expanded in an instant! As if a supernova at the end of a star's life, the gigantic ball of mist instantly exploded! Right when it exploded, it spread to every location in the entire realm of consciousness! Right after that, an extremely powerful suction power was born in the core of the realm of consciousness.

Collapse!

“Huhu~~”

Large amounts of mist and water, as if falling into a black hole, crazily gathered in the core!

“BUZZ!”

The entire realm of consciousness trembled!

Everything was empty. All the mist and water completely disappeared. In the vast, limitless realm of consciousness, only a ‘point of light’ was left in the core, as if there was only one planet in this vast, limitless universe. On the surface of this ‘planet’ was a layer of light, as if it was a ball of light.

In the core of the realm of consciousness, was just a single ball of light.

.....

This was a beautiful and dreamy ball of light. Other than the layer of light on its surface, the essence of this ball of light was large amounts of ‘pyramid’ shaped transparent crystals. The densely packed transparent crystals gathered together to become a planet! A shapeless, yet odd, wave continued to spread out from

this ball of light.

Hu~~hu~~

In his realm of consciousness, only this ball of light continued to rotate. A formless energy spread out from it, filled Luo Feng's entire body, and then spread outside of his body.

"I succeeded!"

"This is the star traveller level?"

"This ball of light is the core of a star traveller level fighter?" with a thought from Luo Feng, refined portions of spiritual force immediately spread out from the ball of light, covering his entire body.

In the auto jet.

At the instant Luo Feng's 'star traveller level spiritual force' spread throughout his body, his originally calm body started to dramatically change! The bones, bone marrow, arteries, muscles, tendons, skin, etc. of his body started to undergo an incredible transformation. His body's inherited genes also started to swiftly disassemble and reassemble!

A transformation of life!

This transformation was much larger than any change in the past! Back in archaeological ruin #9, the bald crystal person said that going from the student level to the ‘star traveller level’, is the transition of a life form! After reaching the star traveller level, you don’t need to breath and you can fly…….

Only having reached the star traveller level can fighters have the right to be called genetic fighters and spirit readers!

Only having reaching the star traveller level can you wander around in the universe and have the right to live! Without reaching this level, you won’t have the ability to wander around in the universe.

“This feeling, is splendid”

After his transformed spiritual force triggered the transformation in his body, Luo Feng felt like he has never been this amazed before. It’s like his body was a gigantic brute who has reached his limit and was unable to grow anymore, instantly transformed into a ‘baby’. The essence of his muscles, bones, and organs have changed!

A transformation of a life form!

“A student level fighter, from the student level one stage (beginner level warrior) to the student level nine stage (advanced level wargod), becomes stronger by building upon the genes that already exist. Once at the advanced level wargod level, the limit has been reached. If you don’t break past that limit, you will never

become stronger”

“And once past it.....”

“I have stepped into the realm of a greater life form, the star traveller level one stage, and will gradually grow until the star traveller level nine stage”

.....

Deep into the night.

Many families have already fell asleep in Ming-Yue sector. The hatch of the auto jet that was parked on the lawn slowly opened.

Whoosh!

A human image soared into the sky and then hovered around 300 meters above ground. His black robe swayed in the wind. He wasn’t standing on anything; he simply hovered.

“This is the star traveller level?”

Luo Feng looked at the city below him while he focused on the ball of light in his realm of consciousness!

He finally realized the true power of the star traveller level. That

‘ball of light’ wasn’t just the core of his spiritual force, but it held a type of mysterious power! You could say it was a ‘miniature planet’: it rotated and had its own magnetic field. Because of this miniature planet in his realm of consciousness, Luo Feng no longer needed to breathe.

And Luo Feng can even control the magnetic field around him according to his own will!

If he can erase earth’s gravity, then naturally, he can hover!

If he changes the magnetic field around him, he can swiftly fly forward!

In otherwords——

every star traveller level fighter has their own ‘miniature planet’! They are the masters of this miniature planet! According to the star traveller level fighter’s will, they can change the strength and direction of their magnetic field! This way, they can naturally fly at will.

However, there is a limit as to how powerful the magnetic field of their ‘miniature planet’ can become, so there are limits to a star traveller level fighter’s flying speed.

“No wonder it was said that going from the student level to the star traveller level is a transition in life itself”

“There’s no doubt about it. A star traveller level has their own ‘miniature planet’, which can rotate by itself and has its own magnetic field. Maybe this ‘miniature planet’ is still weak, but as the miniature planet grows, it will naturally help its master, the ‘star traveller level fighter’, even more”

“Only powerful fighters with their own ‘miniature planet’ can be counted as real people of the universe” thought Luo Feng to himself with amazement.

……

The dark night.

Luo Feng hovered above the city with both of his arms spread out!

“The spiritual force was combined into a ‘tiny crystal planet’. My mind strengthened quite a bit because of how densely packed the planet is” Luo Feng was extremely happy. A person with a weak body and mind could faint at any time, while someone with a powerful body will be able to stay awake!

And after his spiritual force, which used to exist in the form of a flowing river, was forged into the ‘miniature planet’.

Luo Feng’s mind strengthened by quite a bit.

However, chances like these are very rare. A transformation in

life occurs when one goes from the student level nine stage to the star traveller level, the star traveller level nine stage to the star level, the star level nine stage to the universe level, only transformations like these are a transformation in life itself. Only transformations like these can strengthen the mind. Other than cases like these, you won't have a chance to strengthen your mind.

"Soaring shuttle!"

with a thought from Luo Feng.

The 365 blade pieces merged into his black vest swiftly flew out and assembled into the soaring shuttle as it appeared below Luo Feng's feet.

"I'll form a magnetic field around my body"

"And add my spiritual force for a force of propulsion!"

"And I'll also step on the soaring shuttle!"

"I wonder what level my flying speed will reach!" in the sky above Yang Zhou city, Luo Feng, who was like a spirit in the night, instantly left behind an after image, as if teleportation, and directly disappeared from his original position.

Chapter 31 – Extra Reward

This is the first time that Luo Feng isn't restricted by the gravity of earth. The feeling of being able to fly however he pleases was quite splendid.

Night, wilderness.

Luo Feng hovered in midair and then lowered his head as he looked at his mini quantum computer: "Thankfully I have this mini quantum computer, I'll test my speed!"

The mini quantum computer was a necessity for members of Yun Mo planet. Its capabilities far surpass earth's 'tactical communications watches'. The mini quantum computer is able to evaluate the basic strength of fighters from the student level to the universe level. It can also scan the surroundings within a certain radius, test speed, test the power of an attack, etc.

"I'll test all of my flying speeds under different conditions!"

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Luo Feng, who was wearing black, flew across the sky like lightning over and over again, his speed differing each time.

In just a few moments, he finished all of his testing.

In the first situation, he didn't form a magnetic field and didn't use his soaring shuttle. He only used his spiritual force, and his speed reached 912 m/s!

In the second situation, he didn't use the soaring shuttle but formed a magnetic field and used his spiritual force. Most spirit readers do this. Luo Feng's speed reached 1,223 m/s.

In the third situation, which is Luo Feng's best, he let everything explode: the soaring shuttle, magnetic field, and spiritual force! His speed reached an astonishing 2,412 m/s.

"The difference between using and not using the soaring shuttle is completely different" Luo Feng himself was shocked by the numbers, "an average star traveller level one stage spirit reader has an average speed of 1,200 m/s. With the soaring shuttle, my speed was able to reach 2,400 m/s. My speed was completely doubled"

Luo Feng was clear that the faster you fly, the more resistance you encounter. So it would be extremely difficult to increase your speed starting from 1,200 m/s. And don't even think about doubling your speed. Even star traveller level four stages or five stages wouldn't be able to reach such an astonishing level of speed.

From this——

We can see the power of the 'soaring shuttle'.

“A spiritual weapon really does greatly increase the strength of a spirit reader” Luo Feng was amazed.

“Let me test my current attack power”

With a thought, one of the blade pieces of the soaring shuttle came out and ‘whoosh’, under the effects of the spiritual force, instantly transformed into a flowing light and cruelly smashed into an old gas station on the ruined highway. The gas station was like tofu as the blade piece directly created a hole by piercing through. A powerful shockwave exploded, causing most of the broken gas station to collapse.

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at the display of the mini quantum computer.

“Attack power: Star traveller level one stage 28% (spirit reader)”

This made Luo Feng smile.

There was an introduction in the mini quantum computer. The ‘highest value’ of a star traveller level one stage’s attack power is double the amount of the ‘lowest value’. The lowest attack power of a star traveller level one stage (spirit reader) is about one million kg! And the highest value is two million kg!

And star traveller level one stage 28% (spirit reader), means that Luo Feng’s blade piece’s attack was around 1.28 million kg!

“I just entered the star traveller level one stage and my blade piece is already so powerful, not bad” Luo Feng himself was quite satisfied.

According to the introduction on the mini quantum computer.....

After stepping into the star traveller stage, spirit readers and genetic fighters differ greatly!

Genetic fighters’ power come from the ‘power of their body’ and ‘genetic energy’. After stepping into the star traveller stage, their genetic energy can be released! Their genetic attacks can reach one million kg, and their physical attacks can reach one million kg too! So a star traveller level one stage (fighter) has a range of two million kg——four million kg.

Double the spirit reader’s range!

It seems like fighters are more powerful!

However, keep in mind..... that in terms of battle ability amplifiers, it would be good for fighters to have an amplifier of four or five. ‘Thunder God’, who has the highest battle ability amplifier on earth, only has an amplifier of seven!

And Luo Feng? After stepping into the star traveller stage, his battle ability amplifier is already 16!

And the advantage in flying speed..... furthermore, spirit readers

also train their genetic energy! Since you need a powerful body to withstand spiritual force.

“Now, I’ll test the power of my soaring shuttle’s first form, ‘mountain drill'”

.....

In the dark night, a golden light drew past, which caused a series of rumbling explosions.

“Attack power: star traveller level one stage 28% (spirit reader), battle ability amplifier 36!” after reading the numbers on the display, Luo Feng felt great.

An amplifier of 36!

Thunder God is only at seven, and the other star traveller level on earth is only at 14, which is a huge difference from his own.

Even though Luo Feng used 12 portions of spiritual force, which is equivalent to a battle ability amplifier of 12, to activate the ‘mountain drill first stage’, the ‘mountain drill’ can triple the power of the spiritual force Luo Feng merges into it! So that’s why the battle ability amplifier reached an astonishing ’36’.

“According to what the bald crystal person said, most of the star travellers on earth are at the star traveller level one stage. A few of them are at the star traveller level two stage and there are two star

traveller level three stages! Only Hong and Thunder God are higher than that”

“Two star traveller level three stage fighters! They probably aren’t that much more powerful than me, and my flying speed is probably faster than theirs”

.....

“Now I’ll see how many small weapons I can control” with this time’s transformation, Luo Feng felt his mind become much stronger. He just doesn’t know..... exactly how much stronger it has become!

With a thought.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Blade pieces left the soaring shuttle one by one as they circled Luo Feng at their maximum speed. Each blade piece held Luo Feng’s maximum attack power.

One blade piece, two, three..... sixteen, seventeen, eighteen!

“I can’t get the power of the 19th blade piece up”

“18 blade pieces”

The smile on Luo Feng's face became brighter and brighter, "18....."

"Doesn't that mean I can start training the second stage of the first form in《Soaring Sky》?"

The first main form of the soaring shuttle has three stages. The first form requires one to be able to control 12 small weapons to train. The second stage requires control over 18 small weapons. The third stage requires control over 24 small weapons! It is extremely hard to strengthen the mind. Luo Feng had to rely on the star traveller's transformation to be able to strengthen his mind.

In the future, he can only train one step at a time.

"The power of the first stage is already so great"

"What about the second stage?"

"Even if it's also triple the power, 18 multiplied by 3, which is an amplifier of 54! Besides Hong and Thunder God, I can beat everyone in one hit!"

Raising his throwing knife count from 16 to 18 is an extra reward from stepping into the star traveller level! And this reward allowed Luo Feng to directly start the first main form's second stage in《Soaring Sky》. However..... after he actually started practicing it, Luo Feng discovered that it was way too difficult.

Back when he could control 16 throwing knives, the requirement of the first stage was merely “12 throwing knives”. And just learning that took him a few hours and tens of thousands of failures!

This time, Luo Feng barely met the requirement.....

January 2nd, failure!

January 3rd, still failed!

January 4th, once again, failure!

Luo Feng finally realized the difficulty of practicing《Soaring Sky》. However, even though it’s hard..... once he succeeds, Luo Feng’s spot as the third most powerful fighter under Hong and Thunder God will be secured. As for now..... even though Luo Feng has confidence in defeating the third and fourth chairmen, he will have difficulty in killing them in one hit!

It’s just that his strength is near them.

.....

January 5th, the day that Luo Feng becomes an investigator.

Dawn.

Above the ocean, a blood red colored triangular fighter jet swiftly flew past. This fighter jet was indeed Hong's unique 'Prehistoric level auto jet"

Inside the jet.

The black clothed 'Hong' and the white robed 'Thunder God' were both sitting on chairs.

"Brother Hong, you better not fight over the good parts of the misty island with me" said Thunder God.

"Good parts? If you want to talk about the good parts, how about we get rid of that grand emperor level monster first" Hong glanced at Thunder God and then picked up a tea cup and sipped a bit as he sighed, "This grand emperor level monster is the third grand emperor on earth. Even though it just appeared, it can perform perfectly on land, water, and underground"

"Well, there are difficulties to deal with. This misty island definitely has some huge treasures"

Thunder God said with dissatisfaction, "Even if we ignore those spirits of nature, you discovered the 'cloud contact vine' on this misty island. According to the data we've read in the archaeological ruins, this cloud contact vine..... even in the vast universe, is an extremely rare treasure. With the cloud contact vine, brother Hong's strength is probably going to increase by quite a bit"

“The cloud contact vine is still growing, right now it can probably increase my strength by around 50%” the black clothed Hong let out a rare smile”

“50%!”

“Brother Hong, you are already invincible in the star traveller level. With another 50%! And the more the cloud contact vine grows, the more effective it becomes” Thunder God couldn’t help but to say, “A cloud contact vine appeared in the misty island, and an extremely powerful monster we’ve never seen before came out of nowhere. This must be because there are treasures in the misty island, which attracted so many monsters”

Hong slightly nodded.

“Yeah”

“Back when Luo Feng discovered the misty island, there were large amounts of monsters in the surrounding lake. Back then, I was confused..... why were there so many monsters gathered in that lake? However, my thoughts were all on the cloud contact vine. After I took away the ‘cloud contact vine’, I quickly looked through the misty island. Since I didn’t find anything, I left”

“Now that I look at it——”

“Not only are there tons of horde leader level monsters in that

lake, a ‘grand emperor’ appeared” frowned Hong, “It seems like it has an octopus-like shape, so it clearly belongs in the water or underground. Normally, monsters at the grand emperor level should enter the limitless sea. And yet, this monster is staying underground a few thousand meters below the misty island”

“Spirits of nature, cloud contact vine, grand emperor.....”

“This misty island is indeed special” Hong looked towards Thunder God and slightly smiled, “However, everyone has a chance for the treasures in the misty island. Don’t worry, I won’t find over them with you. But you also know..... that things in places like archaeological ruins cannot be obtained with just strength alone. Luck is also a factor”

Thunder God slightly smiled and then laughed: “After I finish participating in your Dojo of Limits’ investigator ceremony, I’ll be staying in the misty island. I don’t believe..... that I won’t be able to get any treasures”

“Even if you keep staying there, I’ll be there too. We’ll just have to see which of us brothers is luckier” Hong slightly smiled.

“Greedy”

Thunder God only said that one word.

Chapter 32 – The Sixth Investigator

Yang Zhou city's Ming-Yue sector. Dawn, the sun was rising.

"Dad, be careful, don't go so fast" Luo Feng held his father Luo Hong Guo, and Luo Hong Guo shakily walked on the path of the sector one step at a time.

"Hello, representative Luo"

A young fighter in the sector saw Luo Feng and let out a face of admiration as he greeted respectfully. However, he thought to himself in his heart with shock: "Representative Luo is already an existence surpassing the wargod level and is able to sit on an equal level with the leaders of the five countries, and yet, he's personally assisting his father"

On the cobblestone path on the lawn, Luo Feng held his father.

"Feng, your identity is different from before. You don't need to be with me. Don't we have servants at home?" said Luo Hong Guo quietly, "Look, quite a few old neighbors have already told me in secret. Feng, you're already a 'representative'. Pay attention to your identity"

"I'm a representative, and you're a 'representative's father', so you're still bigger than me" laughed Luo Feng.

Luo Hong Guo couldn't help but to shake his head and laugh.

Luo Feng felt a bit helpless inside after seeing how much trouble his father had with walking. Back when Li Yao and Venina was dealing with his family, his father almost lost his life. Even though he luckily escaped death, his father's waist and spine are heavily injured. He tried getting some medicines, but their effects weren't that great.

And now, his father's legs are powerless.

"If that thousand year black crow root was still there, my dad would probably fully recover after consuming it a bit. Sadly, my brother sold the 'thousand year black crow root' to other people" Luo Feng didn't blame his brother. If his brother didn't rely on the 'thousand year black crow root' to become the 'eighth largest stockholder of ICBC', his family would probably be in even worse condition"

"Even if I'm a star traveller level fighter, getting a spirit of nature is no easy task" Luo Feng was in a bind. At the same time, he was amazed at his own luck back then, being able to get so many spirits of nature in one go. After that, he exchanged most of his stars for the 'soaring shuttle'.

Noon.

"Feng, can we see your investigator ceremony on this channel?" in the living room, Luo Feng's parents, his brother Luo Hua and Luo Hua's girlfriend Zhen Nan, and even Zhen Nan's parents were here.

“This specialized channel”

Luo Feng nodded and smiled, “The investigator ceremony begins at 2 PM”. Today is the day that an investigator is appointed, which is something major for the Dojo of Limits. It is a public ceremony! However, even though we say it’s public, it’s only public to the higher ups of each country.

Regular fighters and citizens aren’t too clear about the situation of ‘existences surpassing the wargod level’.

“Dad, mom, I’ll be going first”

At the same time, Luo Feng turned towards Zhen Nan’s parents and smiled as he nodded. Zhen Nan’s parents’ hearts started beating faster. This young man in front of them is an ‘existence surpassing the wargod level’, who has who knows how many more times authority than the CEO of the company they work at.

.....

1/5/2059, 2 PM sharp. In a huge conference room in the Dojo of Limits world headquarters, the investigator ceremony officially began.

“Ladies and gentlemen, welcome to the Dojo of Limits world headquarters investigator ceremony. Today, participating in this ceremony is..... head of the Dojo of Limits world headquarters,

‘Hong'” the host on the stage introduced loudly. Instantly, the camera was faced towards the one sitting in the middle seat of the front row, ‘Hong’.

“Head of the Thunder Dojo world headquarters ‘Thunder God'”

“Third chairman of the Palace of Wargods, ‘Mo Henderson'”

“Fourth chairman of the Palace of Wargods, “Eastbourne'”

.....

The major figures quietly sat on their seats. And now, the 3D hologram on the stage started displaying the images of each guest.

“The last one I will introduce is the one to receive the position of investigator at the Dojo of Limits world headquarters, representative Luo Feng!” suddenly, the 3D hologram displayed Luo Feng’s image.

“This is the first time I had to memorize so many representatives’ names” said Luo Feng quietly.

“The investigator ceremony is a rare chance for representatives to gather together” smiled Liu He, who was sitting beside Luo Feng, “Even the two heads will participate in this ceremony. The other three chairmen will participate too. Most representatives..... unless they have something urgent to do, will all come”

Luo Feng nodded.

“We have invited instructor ‘Jiang Nian’ from the Yi-An region in Jiang-Nan headquarter city’s Yang Zhou city, who is Luo Feng’s first instructor” yelled the host. Suddenly, music started playing and instructor Jiang Nian, who was clearly a bit nervous, swiftly stood up from the back of the conference hall and quickly walked towards the stage.

When he saw Jiang Nian, Luo Feng was a bit stunned.

Even instructor Jiang Nian was invited?

“Liu He, what is this ceremony like?” asked Luo Feng quietly, “In the past two days, Yang Zhou city’s chief instructor ‘Wu Tong’, and my brothers Chen Gu and Zhang Ke have been invited here. Will they appear on stage today too?”

“This ceremony will introduce your ‘glorious feats’ starting from the beginning” Liu He smiled as he said softly, “Don’t rush, it’s just beginning! In the middle, some songs, dance performances, etc. will be mixed in. These are the world’s best singers, dancers, etc.”

Indeed——

This so called ceremony is basically an ‘introduction to an investigator’s past’.

From Luo Feng living in a rental house and bitterly training in the Dojo (Jiang Nian steps on stage), to his first ‘fighter combat exam’ (Wu Tong steps on stage), to his first time into the wilderness with the fire hammer squad (the members of the fire hammer squad all come on stage), to his training in the elite training camp (teacher Jiang Fang steps on stage) .....

All of the things were positively introduced.

The entire ceremony gave Luo Feng the image of a ‘perfect genius fighter’.

“Don’t you think you’re majestic” laughed Liu He quietly.

“A bit, even I want to praise myself a bit” smiled Luo Feng.

The various performances in the middle of the ceremony were the best on earth. The masters on stage would express their praise or respects to ‘representative Luo Feng’. Some female singers even secretly expressed their admiration and love. The entire ceremony was planned to go on for about two hours or so.

.....

The investigator ceremony was ending and entering the conclusion.

“Representative Luo, representative Luo” a voice carried from the seat behind.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng turned his head in confusion. An old man with white hair on the seat behind him smiled as he said: “It’s me, Liu Yan”

“Old Liu, this is?” Luo Feng clearly remembered that the person sitting behind him wasn’t Liu Yan back when the seating order was arranged..... he clearly just swapped seats.

“Representative Luo, do you still remember that you wanted us to help find your parents’ relatives before you entered archaeological ruin #9?” said Liu Yan.

“Oh, yeah”

Luo Feng nodded. His father and mother’s biggest wish is to find the various relatives and friends they lost back in the Grand Nirvana period. Right when Luo Feng received the title of examiner, he asked someone to help him. Who would’ve thought that the news would arrive after a year.

“Did you find something?” asked Luo Feng.

“We found a bit” said Liu Yan quietly. He apologized: “Because of the formation of headquarter cities, lots of data was lost. It was indeed hard to investigate. We spent quite a bit of energy to search back then..... but during our investigations, representative Luo seemed to be stuck in archaeological ruin #9, so the investigations

were halted. Only until representative Luo's massive increase in power recently were we able to mobilize more resources for the investigation"

"I understand" nodded Luo Feng.

Of course there is no need to waste too much energy for a dead wargod.

And when Luo Feng became a 'representative level fighter', the country's special forces immediately used more of their resources to investigate, which led to greatly increased efficiency.

"I want to know how many of my parents' relatives are still alive" continued Luo Feng.

His parents were both born after the year of 2000.

Both of them were orphans, so the friends his parents had were his parents' cousins.

"We have found two of them" said Liu Yan quietly, "One of them is your father's cousin, 'Tang Cheng', and the other is your mother's cousin, 'Gong Xin Hua'. The mother of your father's cousin 'Tang Cheng' is still alive, which is your father's aunt, 'Luo Hong Qin'! Of course, she is representative Luo's great-aunt"

Luo Feng froze.

When he was small, his parents frequently mention this great-aunt ‘Luo Hong Qin’ when they talk about their relatives. His great-aunt is not much older than his father ‘Luo Hong Guo’. She would frequently bring father Luo Hong Guo around to play and even bought snacks for him.

Who would’ve thought that she’s still alive.

As for mother’s cousin ‘Gong Xin Hua’, Luo Feng heard his mother talk about her before, but mother didn’t say much.

“As for the other relatives, we are still investigating” said Liu Yan.

“Thank you” nodded Luo Feng.

“I will transfer the data to representative Luo later” smiled Liu Yan.

Indeed——

Even though many people died in the grand nirvana period back then, his parents had quite a few relatives, so it was highly unlikely for all of them to die. And now, two of them have been found. After his parents know that, they will surely be overjoyed.

“Everyone”

“This is the most important part of this ceremony. Representative Luo, please!” yelled the host loudly.

Luo Feng stood up and, while the music played, walked up the stage under the eyes of all the guests from all parts of the world. The host slightly bowed towards Luo Feng and then continued: “Below, we will have to invite the world’s number one person, the head of our Dojo of Limits ‘Hong’, who shall personally name Mr. Luo Feng as the sixth investigator of the Dojo of Limits”. Instantly, the applause started.

The black clothed Hong walked up the stage.

Hong stood besides Luo Feng.

“Head” Luo Feng looked towards Hong.

Hong slightly moved his hand and the ‘Limits Investigation Order’ that symbolized the authority of an investigator appeared out of thin air on his hand. When Hong looked at Luo Feng carefully, he couldn’t help but to be a little surprised: “Luo Feng, you broke through?”

Under the eyes of the various powerful fighters below the stage.

The air between Hong and Luo Feng slightly curved, completely blocking all sound.

“I just broke through recently” smiled Luo Feng as he answered.

“A star traveller level spirit reader flies extremely quickly. You also have the soaring shuttle, so your flying speed should be even more amazing. What level has your speed reached?” Hong’s eyes were shining.

“Head, what star traveller level?” said Luo Feng curiously on purpose.

“I’ll tell you that later” followed Hong, “What is your flying speed?”

Luo Feng didn’t hide it: “Over 2,400 m/s”

“Wow, over 2,400 m/s? That’s way faster than the fourth chairman ‘Eastbourne’! In terms of flying speed, you now rank #3 on earth. Only slower than me and Thunder God” Hong slightly nodded his head, “After this ceremony, prepare to go to the misty island with me. With your speed, your life will not be endangered”

“The misty island?” Luo Feng became even more confused.

“Talk about that after the ceremony” as he said that, Hong passed over the ‘Limit Investigation Order’ in his hand to Luo Feng.

Luo Feng accepted it seriously!

As of now, Luo Feng has become one of the six investigators of the Dojo of Limits!

Chapter 33 – Stationing at the Misty Island

After the ceremony ended.

The Dojo of Limits' Headquarters, which was an enormous spaceship construct. Within it, lay a metal passageway.

The man in black 'Hong' walked ahead, with Luo Feng following behind him.

KA!

The metal door opened automatically for Hong and Luo Feng to enter, before closing by itself after.

"Luo Feng, this is your first time in my Dojo of Limits Headquarters. Have you have ever thought about whether this Giant Spaceship construct is really a flying ship, or just modeled after one, incapable of flight?" Hong spoke. Luo Feng smiled a little before answering, "I've had my guesses, but only a slight suspicion."

"I'm telling you, this is a real interstellar spaceship." Hong said.

"Really?"

Luo Feng couldn't help but be astonished as he surveyed the passageway. Hong proceeded to move into a secret room, and Luo

Feng naturally followed.

The room was empty except for a large display screen.

“This is a damaged interstellar warship.” Hong’s expression was quiet and calm as he continued, “When I discovered it many years ago, it was already damaged and unable to fly in the universe. However, while this warship seem like an empty shell, it’s defensive capabilities still far exceed any of Earth’s military constructs.”

“In future, once I have the ability and resources, I will get it flying again.”

“It will become an interstellar warship for the Dojo of Limits Headquarters! Even lasers would not be able to attack this interstellar warship.” Hong gestured towards the display screen and it began to light up, displaying a shot of the universe. “This universe, isn’t as simple as what we earthlings and commoners think.”

“We people of Earth can get so arrogant at times.”

“Even on dry land, we have yet to discover every form of animals and plants. The sea has so much more to discover too. All of this means that we have not even fully explored our Earth. Yet, people can say with full confidence, that there’s no other intelligent life forms besides us in the universe. Isn’t that just a joke?” Hong looked towards Luo Feng as he speaked.

Luo Feng smiled as he nodded.

Indeed...

Ancient civilizations of Man thought that the Earth was flat, and only discovered later on that it was in fact round. Ancient civilizations of man thought that the Earth was the center, and that the Sun revolved around it. It wasn't till later, that they learnt everything revolved around the sun!

Man tended to believe that when he learnt any new information, he understood and knew everything.

It's not only till later when he learns more that he realizes how ridiculously wrong he was before.

Without even a grasp of Earth's many species of life and principles, he bases on simple deductions that the whole universe and milky way, and even further cannot have any other forms of intelligent life other than man!

"How dogmatic."

"What a joke."

"The endless seas have yet to be fully explored by Man."

"What's more, the universe is so much bigger than the sea, a

trillion times maybe? Not even close! The limitless universe, can't possibly be judged by the humans on earth. Isn't this synonymous with the story of the frog in the well, thinking that the world and sky is only as big as his well?" Hong shook his head, "The civilizations that exist in the universe, race and ethnicities, are complex and mysterious beyond compare."

"Luo Feng, look at the screen. These are the true ranks of the military, spiritual and scholarly level.

Hong pointed at the screen.

The screen displayed detailed analysis of the military, spiritual study ranks, apprentice level, star traveller level, star level, universe rank! Every rank had 9 levels! In addition, the screen video even displayed the star traveller's champion, the star level's champion and even the Universe level's champions and strengths.

"My god." Luo Feng was completely dumbfounded.

Even the bald headed crystal people know that the universe level champions are scary, but looking at the screen, it was clearly one a different level altogether!

"A whole city turned to ashes just like that?"

"Meteorite?"

"What is that, white dwarf star?" Luo Feng exclaimed as a white

planet was displayed on the screen. The screen showed a recording of a white planet with 2 fighters, landing on the planet to duel hand to hand. There was even an introduction on the side stating that that land had a gravitational pull that was 3 hundred million times of earth!

A gravitational pull of 3 hundred million times!

Luo Feng could get up to a 1000 times normal gravity in the elite ancient civilization training room. Yet, this was in no way close to 300 million at all.

300 million, this wasn't simply just another number.

Under such terrifying gravitational pull, even atoms will get pulled down and crushed. Going by human's law of physics, there was no way any human could live and battle on the White Dwarf planet.

"Battling on the White Dwarf Planet."

"Unbelievable isn't it. However, the mystery behind the true limits of man's body, can it really be measured by science? Can they even fathom that our bodies within can have a miniature planet, that they can generate magnetic fields? A body can only weigh as much as a few hundred kilograms, yet a punch can generate a few kilotons of strength, does this adhere to Earth's "physics or science?" Hong spoke indifferently.

The deeper one digs into research, the more he realizes he knows nothing.

Luo Feng agreed strongly with that.

The video left Luo Feng completely shocked.

Regardless of what the bald crystal person said, this video alone was way more shocking.

“This is the a video of the universe level champions battling, the only record and video of universe level champions fighting that I have.” Hong watched the video, eyes filled with a sense of longing, “Universe level champions could cross the universe and fight barehanded with warships! They can even live on the White Dwarf Planet. Destroying earth and man would be as easy as eating a bowl of rice to these champions!”

“Star Traveller champions, in the universe, could at best be a bodyguard or lackey, just to get some pay and eat.”

“Star level Champions are the important ones.”

“Universe level Champions, those are the most important and revered champions, almost like emperors and rulers. They could randomly join a universe army and instantly own large portions of space and land, commanding more than a thousand troops and people.” Hong spoke in a calm voice, but with a very slight shudder, that was so subtle it was hard to detect.

Hong turned and faced Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was staring intensely at the screen, thinking how impossible it was to battle under 3 hundred million times gravity. However, according to the bald crystal person, out of countless planets' geniuses, only one universe level champion will be there.

"Luo Feng." Hong said with a deep voice.

"Head." Luo Feng looked towards Hong.

"Your brain vigor is really high, and even though I have no means to fully test your abilities, the special test you've experienced in archaeological ruin #9 is enough proof of that." Hong said with a deep voice, "You are a genius, and while at the universe level it may not seem like much, at least here on earth, there is no doubt your genius level is the highest!"

Hong stared at Luo Feng: "The Thunder god and I, are the most talented fighters. We are the strongest on earth. Your mental abilities are the earth's greatest, but I hope you do not relax even for a minute. Don't ever get arrogant just because you've become the earth's greatest."

"In the vast universe, we are but human, just inhabitants from another planet."

"The earth's position and status relies on us to fight for!"

“Even the future fate of earth and man relies on us!” Hong stared intensely at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng nodded his head profusely: “Understood, head!”

It was only then that Luo Feng truly understood why Hong and Thunder God were already so much stronger than everybody else. They never relaxed for a moment and are constantly upgrading themselves.

******

That day.

Hong brought Luo Feng and both got on their respective auto jets to leave for Australia’s ‘Misty Island’. Even though he had received Liu Yan’s relatives’ information, his father’s body was currently not fully recovered and unable to travel far for a visit. Once the information was known, there was no doubt his parents would rush over.

This was why Luo Feng had yet to give the information to his parents. “Just a little longer, the right time will come once my father’s body recovers. I’ve already waited 20 over years, so another half a year won’t make much of a difference”

……

A red triangular battleship appeared, with a dark blue triangular battleship following behind.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were all sitting in the red triangular battleship.

“We arrived at the misty island.” Hong exclaimed.

The projection within the cabin of the plane had already shown the image of the entire plains below. Luo Feng looked at the perimeters of the lake below. Surrounding the huge lake were large numbers of flying warships, triangular warships etc. There were even several bases under construction.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but be shocked.: “Head, is this Misty Island?”

“Of course it’s Misty Island.” Hong nodded.

“But, but…” Luo Feng looked at the three virtual projections on the screens and it was indeed Misty Island. He was stunned.

There was no mist anymore on Misty Island, in fact, even the island was gone.

All that was left was a mist covered lake!

No mist, no island…was this the same misty island from before?

“The coordinates are right.” Luo Feng looked at his communicator watch’s coordinates, and got an even bigger shock.

“Once the misty island’s long vine was taken by me, the mist naturally dissipated.” Hong explained, “As for the island. In the big war not long ago, it got destroyed in the battle. The land got destroyed and everything was swallowed by the water.”

“Destroyed an entire island?” Luo Feng said alarmed.

What kind of battle could destroy an island that had a 10 km radius?

Afraid that it was the war on the level of the long vine.

“Luo Feng!”

Dressed in white, the Thunder God bellowed as he pointed into the fog towards the lake, “This island’s lake is strange. There’s a huge amount of water creatures that are really strong! In fact, there’s even one with 13 tentacles. It was us who discovered the earth’s third monster king.”

“Monster emperor?” Luo Feng couldn’t believe it.

That lake…

If one were to ever get too close, one would definitely lose his life. If there was a monster higher than the king level, one would definitely be killed.

“This misty island is really special.”

Hong continued seriously, “A small island like this, could produce so many spirits of nature! It could even produce the long vine, what a scary existence! The lake’s creatures were also far more fearsome and mysterious, much more than the oceans, and there’s also this Monster Emperor.”

“The long vine, various spirits of nature and the monster emperor, they are all gathered here!”

“All the powers in the earth consider this place as a wonder!”

Previous discoveries by the ancient civilizations have never been so crazy or big. This discovery would shake the earth. Hong pointed to the lake’s surroundings, “Look at those spaceships and the bases. They all belong to the 5 great nations, each having their own base and some representative champions.”

“The number of laser cannons exceed 20 around this lake!” Hong said towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was shocked.

Lasers that could kill emperor level monsters, more than 20 just

here?

“Whoever gets the treasure, depends all on luck.” Hong ordered, “If you have no interest, just go back. If you do however, set up around Misty Island’s surroundings. I do not however have any place to look after you, go back to your auto jet.”

“Alright.”

Luo Feng nodded his head, and proceeded in that direction.

“Remember, if you ever meet the Monster Emperor, do not rely on brawn against it. Use your speed to get further away.” Hong ordered, before leaving the cabin.

……

Jumping off the ship and landing on the endless wild plains, all that could be seen was a white mist.

Compared to a year ago, the change was too drastic. Nothing of the old Misty Island remained.

“Misty Island, what exactly are you hiding for which all the major powers of the world are here?” Luo Feng sighed and turned towards his own dark blue auto jet, “Hong and Thunder God are here, I hardly stand any chance of getting the treasure with them around. I’d be better off by the sidelines watching the show while practicing the first and second stages of the soaring shuttle .

Luo Feng wasn’t greedy.

Man’s gift was his self-awareness. With the gathering of the 5 great countries, different bases and the 2 great dojo heads, plus the monster emperor, what place did he have among all these? How can he, Luo Feng compete with everybody present here for treasures.

Chapter 34 – 3,500m Below The Earth

The auto jet floated high above in the air.

Luo Feng looked down from above, one after another, small fighter jets were spread out across the perimeters of the huge lake. Some were there to construct laser cannons, while others had special apparatus for exploration and to monitor the situation at the lake. Whatever the case, a large number of workers, under the protection of a group of warriors, had begun their work! Meanwhile, there wasn't a sight of a single living monster within a span of tenths of Li close to the lake.

Other than these small fighter jets, there were six other enormous spaceships for passengers.

"The whole world and it's countries have arranged for how many people and horses?"

Luo Feng sighed with emotion.

A country's ability to command and rally was definitely on a different level. Just an order and all kinds of facilities and construction, along with talents and elites were deployed and gathered over here.

……

"Command Headquarters, Command Headquarters, I am number

03, I am number 03, situation normal, situation normal."

"Command Headquarters, Command Headquarters, I am number 08, I am number 08, directional adjustment is complete, directional adjustment is complete."

A large number of news and reports were flowing into the command headquarters.

An enormous blood red disc shaped passenger plane stopped at about 1500m away from the lake's shores. This was the exact center of the whole Misty Island Lake, where Hua Xia's men and horses were stationed and based. This was the Command Headquarters.

The 6 enormous disc shaped passenger planes were spaced 1cm apart, lined up majestically on the lake's shores. They each came from different places, Hua Xia, Soviet Russia, India, America and even the European HR Alliance. The construction cost of each of these huge disc shaped passenger planes were extremely expensive, normal bases couldn't even afford it, or just couldn't spare the money to do so.

There were even times where the 5 great nations and the HR Alliance picked and shared one of these huge disc shaped passenger planes to land at the lake's shores, using it as a shared base of operations.

With its great defensive capabilities and high mobility, it was indeed the optimum base of operations.

……

“I’d better get serious and finish the 2nd level of the soaring shuttle.” Luo Feng was excited and curious, on one hand observing the course of events below while preparing to begin his training on the other.

Suddenly, the mini quantum computer on his arm lit up and began to vibrate slightly.

“Wei, how are you.” Luo Feng answered the call.

“I am Jia Yi, may I have the honor of inviting representative Luo Feng for a meeting?” a prominent but gentle voice came through.

“Jia Yi? Are you here now?” Luo Feng’s emotions stirred.

“Luo Feng, being up in the air, you should be able to see that Misty Island’s shore has a total of 6 huge disc shaped passenger planes right? The blood red one is exactly where our Hua Xia’s base of operations is located in. I’m in that one. I’ve already arranged for people to welcome you at the entrance of the base.” Jia Yi was very enthusiastic about the meeting.

“I’ll be there immediately.”

Luo Feng flew directly out of his auto jet and headed towards the

blood red disc shaped passenger plane.

“Testing battle ability, student class ninth level and above display.” Luo Feng turned the communicator straight towards the passenger spaceship.

Suddenly, the screen from his arm’s mini quantum computer displayed a message.

“Oh, 4 representatives? As high as the 12 wargods?”

“We at Hua Xia have always been pretty strong.” Luo Feng was secretly shocked.

Luo Feng flew and landed at the entrance of the passenger spaceship. A pretty and girl with nice facial features humbly approached: “Representative Luo Feng, Please follow me.” Following the welcome girl into the walkways of the passenger spaceship, the girl explained: “This passageway has already been reconstructed to the ‘laser path’, if there were to be an intruder in here, he would be immediately shot to death. Please hold on a minute.”

“Di, Di, Di!”

The red security light originally shining above the passageway sounded 3 times before going off.

“The commanders are all gathered at the top floor cabin of the

ship.” The welcoming girl pointed towards the stairs, of which Luo Feng looked up towards. The metal door at the end of the stairs was close, and it was guarded by 2 wargods.

“Even the guards are wargods.” Luo Feng was secretly surprised.

“Pleasure to see representative Luo.” The 2 guards humbly bowed.

Hua! The metal door opened.

Luo Feng walked directly in, this particular circular hall had already been completely remodeled. It didn’t have a single passenger chair, but was fully equipped with the world’s leading technological facilities, even some of the ancient civilization’s equipment was excavated and installed in here. In the middle of the circular room, was a round slightly protruding stage, and on this round metal stage, stood 4 warriors in full battle armor.

They were not young at all, one even had a full head of white hair.

“Luo Feng.”

“Representative Luo.”

The 4 men were laughing excitedly as they walked over, led by the skinniest middle aged man who laughed: “Luo Feng, have you broken through?”

“Oh, I broke through a few days ago.” Luo Feng nodded, obviously directed to the fact that he flew over himself without his battle weapon, letting the 4 representatives know that he had officially broken through to the star traveller level. Immediately, the attitudes was drastically different. The representatives in the past didn’t have that much respect for Luo Feng, but now that he had broken through...

Even before breaking through, he had the ability to kill Li Yao.

Now that he had broken through, how powerful had he become? He definitely was a champion amongst the representatives, how could they not be passionate and friendly with him?

“Mr Jia Yi, ever since I knew of Representative Jia’s achievements, I’ve always wanted to meet you. When I was on patrol previously, I didn’t get to meet Mr Jia Yi, now it’s finally happened.” Luo Feng laughed. This was hardly a compliment, ever since his status had risen, he had access to many people’s files and records.

Especially once he saw Jia Yi’s files, Luo Feng had since then respected this person!

Jia Yi, was quite a legend.

Jia Yi’s father’s generation, grandfather’s generation were all military men.

Even Jia Yi's old grandfather, once fought in the 8 year war, resisting the US and assisting North Korea! This was a family of military personnel, and yet Jia Yi was fraught with illness when he was young. He had a poor constitution and was small and skinny. However, during the Great Nirvana, that was Jia Yi's time! There were so many legendary stories of his rescues, saving over 10 million Hua Xia people!

During the Great Nirvana, warriors didn't have a proper training system.

But because of this, Jia Yi became the military's first 'existence to surpass the wargod level', his contributions in the building of the base were even bigger. He took pride in his military background, especially having become the 'existence surpassing the wargod'. Jia Yi didn't have the slightest hesitation and was still as loyal to his country!

Over many decades, the number of people saved by him ranged more that 10 million. The ones he indirectly saved were even more!

With his hard work and power, Jia Yi was the current vice-chairperson of the military commission, with authority and power ranking in the top 3 in Hua Xia. He was considered in the Hua Xia military to be a true and elite leader.

"Star traveller level 2!"

"If Jia Yi was living in my generation, with proper guidance and

training, he'd be at a much higher level." Luo Feng had much respect for him, especially for the fact that he had saved 10s of millions of people during the Great Nirvana.

"Haha, I would also like to see what Hua Xia's new generation of geniuses can do." Jia Yi smiled. "Come, the 3 people beside me, you recognize them don't you."

"Representative Zhu, Representative Tuo Ba, Representative Deng." Luo Feng smiled.

The 3 representatives smiled back. Luo Feng looked towards the circular hall, it was filled with many types of apparatus, many of which he had never seen before. He couldn't help but comment: "Looking at the types and construction, these are really unique apparatus, not like any of earth's construction I presume."

"Some were excavated from the ancient ruins."

Jia Yi pointed towards a large screen and commanded," Send the readings from Misty Island's lake here."

"Yes, Commander."

The screen immediately lighted up and displayed the Mist Island Lake, there were countless complex figures around the lake.

"These figures, are they all water creatures?" Luo Feng curiously looked at the screen, "Amazing, the entire lake's population of

creatures can all be scanned from here."

"It's not hard, the great 5 countries can all do it."

Jia Yi walked to the front of the screen, pointing at it, "Look, Misty Island's Lake's average deepness is approximately 300m. The deepest regions go close to 1000m. However, the Monster Emperor, is not in the lake."

"Scan 3500m below." Jia Yi ordered.

The screen's diagram started to fluctuate irregularly, until it went 3500m below ground level.

"This is..." Luo Feng's eyes opened wide with shock.

"This is the Monster Emperor, named by us as the 'Tentacle Monster'." Jia Yi pointed towards the blur figure. The figure was enormous. The screen depicted the whole island 3500m below ground level, and yet this figure took up a good half of the screen, showing just how big this creature was.

"Monster Emperor 'Tentacle Monster,' has a total of 13 tentacles, each spanning approximately 1500m." Jia Yi pointed towards the figure. "Look, it even carries a shell like toy, able to hide all it's tentacles in the shell in a flash."

"This isn't all."

“It even has a special feature unique to tentacle creatures, it can easily and quickly regrow any of it’s lost tentacles.” Jia Yi shook his head, “We’ve already combed this island for many days and we’ve yet to discover any trace of a treasure or secret! The main thing is that monster emperor is down there and we do not dare to go down.”

Luo Feng nodded slightly.

Enter the ground and kill the monster emperor? In your dreams.

“A few days ago, Hong went down once and managed to cut off two of it’s tentacles, before it got away.” Jia Yi looked at Luo Feng and smiled, “It’s usually very special when a treasure appears, and it usually relies heavily on luck. When it comes to power, Hong alone was stronger than all the representatives together. However, when it comes to luck…”

“Luo Feng, are you willing to join us, give Hua Xia a hand.” Jia Yi looked at Luo Feng.

The other 3 were also looking at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was stumped.

This Jia Yi really knew how to pull at a Tiger’s skin, looking for treasure in Misty Island’s Lake, using the country and patriotism to rope in Luo Feng. If the country was really in trouble, Luo Feng

would definitely help, but this was something else...

"Mr Jia Yi, I'm sorry. The Head is here, I do not feel good going up against him." Luo Feng laughed embarrassedly, "I've got other matters, I shall take my leave." After rejecting them, Luo Feng didn't feel too good staying around them.

Jia Yi noticed the situation and smiled: "It's fine. We'll be here for awhile, do come and chat when you have the time."

"Yes."

Luo Feng smiled. Including Jia Yi, all 4 of the representatives personally sent Luo Feng out, and once they saw him fly by himself, his position in their hearts had risen a great deal.

.....

Walking out the Base's door, there was a squall going on, the wild leaves and weeds were leaning low.

"Attention all personnel!"

"I, the Dojo of Limits Head 'Hong' have entered the Misty Island Lake in an attempt to kill the Monster Emperor. In order to avoid dying from the crossfire, all personnel not at representative level should immediately enter their bases! Representatives near the lake should also be careful." A thunderous voice sounded throughout the lake's perimeter.

Luo Feng looked up. Up high in the sky, the black clothed man that was shouting in the air was indeed royal guard Ice Mountain.

“The Head wants to go kill the monster emperor?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but be shocked.

“What, Hong wants to kill the monster emperor?” Jia Yi and the 4 representatives behind Luo Feng were also shocked by the news.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

One by one, the warriors began to fly and leave the scene.

Chapter 35 – Hong And The Monster Emperor

In the overcast sky above, 30 or so silhouettes hovered. They were all world renowned warriors who stood at the peak of strength, existences that surpassed the wargods.

Luo Feng, along with Jia Yi and the 3 other representatives were floating a few hundred meters in mid air.

“The last time Hong attempted to kill the monster emperor, he failed and left. While he may have damaged the monster emperor, he himself was also injured.” Jia Yi used his remote control from afar, the big auto jet stopped moving, “It’s only been a few days since you, Luo Feng, have had your big appointment ceremony and he intends to immediately deal with the monster emperor?”

“It is indeed strange.” The other 3 representatives were also suspicious.

Man cares a lot about their reputation.

Hong’s first attempt at the monster emperor was a failure, but everybody could understand.

But without a solid plan of attack, he’s attempting it a second time. This naturally led to suspicion and discussions behind his back.

“I reckon the Head has confidence.” Luo Feng’s eyebrows cringed together.

“The confidence to kill the monster emperor?” Jia Yi and the other representatives shook their heads gently, “If he had the confidence and guarantee, the other 2 monster emperors in the sea would have been settled long ago..”

.....

A good number of representative warriors were all hovering in the air high above, waiting to watch the battle.

The large number of small aircrafts and battleships by the shore were all flying back to their respective bases. All personnel below the level of representative had already returned straight into the bases! They had already witnessed plenty the last time Hong battled the monster emperor. They knew that it was a huge deal and battle, and the moment the battle had any crossfire or leaked out, even the representatives had to be careful not to lose their lives.

“Look, Hong and Thunder God.”

“Are the two of them teaming up this time?”

Up above, the representatives still had good vision and a good view.

“Retreat, Retreat, don’t ever get too close to the shore, get further away Luo Feng. The airspace above the lake is a really good spot to get caught in the crossfire. Whether it’s your Head or the Monster Emperor, a single stray punch or blow isn’t something we can handle, do not get careless.” Jia Yi and the other representatives were moving away, Luo Feng followed suit and flew backwards.

******

Misty Island’s Lake’s surroundings were quiet, the bases around were all monitoring every movement happening in the lake.

The 30 representative warriors, who were almost all clad in black, were hovering high in the sky, focusing all their attention on ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’.

……

The black clothed ‘Hong’ and the white robed bald monk ‘Thunder God’ were flying close together towards the center of the lake. Thunder God looked at Hong, whispering softly, “Brother Hong, once that tentacle monster enters the lake, it will be like fish getting into water. On the other hand, we human warriors lose a lot of our power in water. You failed the last time. Just bringing the cloud contact vine along gives you the confidence to win this time?”

Man’s every action and movements were affected by water resistance.

The faster one was, the higher the resistance!

Hong and Thunder God met with exceptionally high resistance and limitations under water, yet the monster emperor was at it's strongest there.

"With the Cloud Contact Vine, I have three times the confidence to kill the tentacle monster. Even if it isn't killed, we'll be able to return safely. Unless it hides. Otherwise there's no way I'll get injured again." Hong was floating calmly towards the lake, "What's more, this Misty Island's Lake's strongest creature is that monster emperor, it is the biggest obstacle between us and the treasure, how can we not kill it if we want the treasure?"

Thunder God was stumped for words.

Indeed, without killing this monster emperor, there was absolutely no safe way to go excavate below.

"Your actions will be helping the five countries, HR Alliance," Thunder God laughed, "and also helping me."

"I've said before, attaining the treasure relies on fate and destiny. It's like the soaring shuttle, it was mine and yet I couldn't and didn't know how to use it. The moment it landed in Luo Feng's hands, it became so powerful. The Soaring Shuttle and him were destined to be!" Hong smiled, "This Cloud Contact Vine, may not be of Earth's origins. I've never left earth, and yet it landed in my hands. It can be said we were fated to be."

Thunder God laughed: “I look like a monk because I’m bald. You however aren’t bald and yet you sound exactly like one!”

“You baldy, can stay here and watch how I deal with this tentacle monster.” The black clothed Hong finished speaking and immediately became a black light, rushing fiercely into the surface of the lake. The middle of the lake gave a shake, and the black clothed Hong was already 300m or more below the surface, breaking in the mud and rock stratum.

It was an extremely quick infiltration!

******

The sky steadily grew darker, the lights in the 6 bases began to light up.

The 30 silhouettes looked vaguely like gods and angels, hovering in the sky.

“Look, it’s moving.”

Jia Yi stared at his watch communicator’s screen, the three other representatives along with Luo Feng were all glued to the same screen. The screen displayed the figure of the enormous monster emperor. It had been still without movement for the longest time, and yet now it was moving frantically, three of it’s tentacles waving madly!

At the same time, it's whole body was quickly rising up!

"This red light represents Hong." Jia Yi was pointing towards a little light that was floating on one of the tentacles. A figure that was no taller than 2m, while each tentacle was about 1500m, the difference between the two was simply jarring.

"Hong is moving quickly, the monster emperor has to rely on its tentacles to retaliate."

"Look, the whole ground and wilderness is shaking."

Luo Feng and company were a little afraid as they looked at the ground a few hundred metres below, as this monster emperor, 'tentacle monster', was violently retaliating, the whole surface was shaking from its attacks.

"A tentacle has been broken."

Luo Feng and company were staring at the screen, one of the tentacles was 1/3 cut off.

"Hong and the monster emperor were moving extremely fast."

"The monster emperor had already escaped into the lake, ah. Between the rock stratum and the lake, it's movements were faster by countless times! Hong also entered the lake, speed increasing by

quite a lot too. But definitely nowhere close to the increase in speed by the monster emperor." A few representatives were nervously watching the battle, discussing the points of it.

"Not good, retreat!" Jia Yi roared in a deep voice.

A tentacle was shown on the screen, rapidly heading to break the surface of the lake.

Indeed!

In the retreat of Luo Feng and company, a long 20m or so tentacle that was covered on its surface totally by rocks and land rushed towards the sky. It rushed up to a length of about 1000m, almost like a raging train linking its carriages together.

One tentacle that was about 1000m long, had about 20m or so of rock and earth, yet, almost like the legendary Sun Wukong's golden staff, it moved swiftly and quickly engulfed everything within a kilometer!

Explosions and rumbling filled the air.

The air exploded and huge waves rose from the lake. A huge number of water creatures were rustled up into the air from the battle, or mashed into meat and dirt. Some just died pitifully while others were crippled or injured heavily. Almost like a dance of tentacles, the monster emperor shook the heavens and earth.

“It’s even crazier than the war against the long vine.”

Luo Feng could smell from the mad waving tentacle that seemed like it was about to puncture the sky, a really pungent fishy smell! It almost smelled like sea produce, and yet a little like earthworms. It was extremely pungent and made one nauseous! While pungent, the power of that tentacle was definitely shocking.

“Even if we have the Black God Sets, if we were to even touch the tentacle, 8 or 9 out of 10 of us would die.” Jia Yi looked at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, I advise you to wear a SS grade battle armor on top of your Black God Set.”

“No wonder you are all wearing battle armor.”

Luo Feng nodded his head profusely.

Jia Yi and the representatives were all wearing a SS grade battle armor on top of their Black God sets! It wasn’t just them wearing the two layers of protection, all the representatives and warriors in the sky were mostly all doing the same.

“With the monster emperor, this SS grade armor definitely could save our lives.” Luo Feng nodded.

SS Grade armor, while unable to fully disperse damage to the entire body, was still able to reduce the amount of damage taken considerably.

……

Luo Feng and the four representatives stared intensely at their watches' screen. The monster emperor was huge and easy to spot, while Hong was only a small 'red light'.

"Hong has rushed into the monster emperor's shell."

"What an intense attack!"

Rumble!

A human silhouette rushed towards the sky from the lake, it was the black clothed 'Hong'. His hand was holding a silver spear, eye's filled with intensity! The surrounding 100m area was enveloped in darkness, as though the God in this area, Hong gripping the spear, once again pierced into the water.

"The second tentacle is broken!" Zhu from the side couldn't help but shout out.

"Hong is floating on the monster emperor's shell."

"Ah, what's going on?"

"What's going on?

“Luo Feng and the four representatives were shocked, mainly because the light representing ‘Hong’ had vanished. Luo Feng and company looked at Jia Yi, Jia Yi just shook his head, full of doubt: “It’s not clear, the device has never reacted this way before. Whatever is alive, should be detected by it.”

“Alive? Does that mean that Hong has died?” Representative Tuo Ba said softly from the side.

“Look at the lake.” Luo Feng shouted out.

Immediately, everybody looked towards the lake, only to see the originally tumultuous waves exploding up! All that could be seen were tentacles rushing high up, piercing the sky. A good 7 or 8 of them were flailing violently about, without any proper motive or plan, it was just madly waving them.

A large number of water creatures were caught in the crossfire, coloring the lake in red.

“Na!!!” an ear piercing and mournful scream came from below, shaking the the surface of the ground.

“How ear-piercing.”

The thirty plus star traveller level warriors floating in mid air couldn’t help but cover their ears, face grimacing in pain.

The tentacles, once filled with strength and power were slowly,

one by one, slowing down, falling lifelessly into the lake. A couple even fell on the wilderness land by the shore. The weight alone from the tentacles split 2 deep ditches in the land, water rapidly gushing in to fill them.

"It's dead."

"The monster emperor, 'tentacle monster' has died."

"Look at the screen, the monster emperor's silhouette is fading, his life signal is fading fast, really fast. It's gone!"

Under the close attention of Luo Feng and company, the silhouette of the enormous monster emperor vanished!

A red light shone exceptionally bright!

That's Hong!

The lake's surface rippled once more!

The thirty plus star traveller leveled warriors floating in mid air all turned towards the vast lake's surface, rippling, until a covered in stone and earth tentacle flew out of the water, followed by the black clothed man 'Hong'. Hong's right hand actually lifted a 10m long tentacle wrapped in vine.

Drag!

The black clothed man ‘Hong’ flew towards the sky! Including the tentacle which was longer than 3000m, a monster material, they left the water’s surface completely. It was almost as though a huge black floating island had appeared above the lake.

The thirty plus star travellers, the earth’s five great countries, the HR Alliance, the commanders from each base, workers etc all stood there in shock as they witnessed this scene.

At the same time, the scene and news were being broadcasted to the whole world and organizations.

Everybody remained silent…

Chapter 36 – The Big Excavation

The over 3000m long grand emperor's body was definitely a sight to behold. The strong personnel from every country had gathered around Misty Island's Lake, these also included the strong beyond compare Star Traveller warriors. Every one of them felt as though their heart had stopped beating, their blood stopped flowing as they saw this sight. It was too unbelievable, too exaggerated!

In the air above the lake, Hong, who was dragging the corpse of the grand emperor, was heading towards the wilderness land, before descending slowly, allowing the corpse to rest on the land.

Pu tong!

Each of the rough 1500m long tentacles began to fall on the wilderness land, causing the entire land to rumble as though an earthquake has occurred.

"So strong."

Luo Feng looked up towards the black clothed 'Hong'. While his face was ghastly pale, his eyes were bright and shining, with a sense of glee and satisfaction! Floating high above, Hong surveyed his surroundings, almost like a King overlooking his territory. No one dared make eye contact with Hong.

"Invincible amongst the Star Travellers? Even in the water, he was able to kill a water grand emperor." Luo Feng was really shocked.

Invincible amongst the Star Travellers only meant that no other star traveller could be his match. It didn't mean that he had the ability to kill the star travellers at his level! Like how the "Higher Monster leaders" were as strong and fast as the wargod leveled humans, because of their diversity and growths, had a natural advantage in power and strength.

Grand emperor! Just it's body strength and everything else should be above 'Hong'.

It was even in it's natural habitat, the water, when it battled. If it wasn't for Hong's own domain, any other level 6 star traveller would have instantly died! Because Hong had his own 'domain', he was invincible amongst the star travellers. Be it on land or air, he was able to kill any enemy.

However, in water, his power was greatly diminished, while the monster's power was greatly boosted. One diminished while the other got stronger.

That was why Hong was not guaranteed to kill the grand emperor in the water!

This time however, with the Cloud Contact Vine, along with a few well-timed attacks and opportunities that he took advantage of, Hong succeeded!

"Grand Emperor, one day, I want to be able to kill one by myself." Luo Feng looked far at Hong, who seemed almost like a

god, and his heart was filled with great longing.

******

While Luo Feng and some of the other warriors were still in shock over Hong's battle accomplishment, the other governments from the countries of earth began to feel an itch for the materials.

.....

"Grand Emperor corpse, this is the first the world's ever seen and acquired. It's price is immeasurable."

.....

"My Prime minister, we at the National Research Department have never gotten a piece of a grand emperor's body, I beseech you Mr Prime Minister, please talk with the Dojo of Limits to let us have a piece of the grand emperor's corpse."

.....

"I suggest immediately buying a piece of the grand emperor's body, and the part we should research first should be the bone structure and skeleton, skin composition and more. We, the HR Alliance are the world's leading weapon suppliers. We need this to research and create more powerful weapons and battle armors to continue to dominate the high-end market."

.....

The 5 great countries, HR Alliance and more were all eyeing the corpse greatly.

One has to know that when the first corpse of a King level Monster first came about, this allowed man to create the SS grade battle armors and weapons. This ultimately led to the SSS level grade battle armors and weapons. However, in comparison, the SSS leveled items were too expensive as they were completed made with high grade and expensive materials. That was why almost no one bought the SSS grade armors.

With that kind of money, one would rather buy a Black God Set!

Now that the first grand emperor corpse was acquired, with intensive research and study, who knew what results and discoveries would be made!

******

Night had come and it was dark.

The Australian Mainland, over the vast wilderness, had what seemed like a small mountain of a corpse lying on it. A black clothed Hong was standing at the side, in comparison to the size of the grand emperor's corpse, was like an ant next to a giant.

“Liu He.”

Hong began to speak.

“Head.” Liu He, who was far in in the Hong Ning base immediately responded.

“Immediately dispatch a research team, along with 2 special small teams of wargods. Using the fastest speed, get over here to Misty Island to meet me.” Hong ordered.

“Yes, Head.”

Liu He followed his orders.

……

Not just that, Hong immediately ordered ‘Beast’ of the three royal guards to rush over. With that, all of them would be gathered here! In the most crucial moments, these were the people Hong trusted the most.

“Yes, Master.” A low thick voice emanated from the phone’s communicator.

“Brother Hong.”

A voice filled with ridicule sounded, face still pale without a hint of blood, Hong turned coldly towards the voice. It was from the white robed baldy ‘Thunder God’. Thunder God was smiling, raising his head to look at the enormous corpse: “Brother Hong, I really admire you, you actually killed the grand emperor.”

Hong just nodded his head a little.

“Damn, not in the least modest.” Thunder God couldn’t help but blink his eyes.

Hong gave Thunder God a look with a sense of helplessness.

They were both born right before the period of the Great Nirvana, Thunder God was a mixed blood, with a little Chinese and Indian lineage. Thunder God’s father was a Yoga Master who once specially went to India to study Yoga, that was where he met Thunder God’s Mother and subsequently returned to China.

Thunder God’s demeanor had always been fun and mischievous, but due to the influence of movies and television, grew to love Chinese Martial Arts.

Having been trained under his father from a young age, his yoga was pretty good. Along with that, his hard work and study in chinese martial arts gained him quite a reputation among the martial arts circles as the ‘Thunder Madman’. Within the Chinese martial arts circles, everybody knew there was a really competitive mixed blood youngster. When the Great Nirvana period came, Thunder God combined his Chinese martial arts and Yoga to create

his powerful body's technique, <Nine Stage Lightning Blade>. Unlike Thunder God, before the Great Nirvana, Hong was an assassin!

A killer and a buffoon, what a bizarre combination.

While their characters were different, they did share a similarity, and that was their expectations of themselves were extremely high and strict!

From knowing nothing to being strictly trained in yoga by his father, Thunder God could definitely do hard work.

There was no need to even mention Hong. His background as an assassin led to his cold personality.

During the Great Nirvana, the two's power levels suddenly soared, in addition to a few miracles plus their natural genius, the two mutually verified, their strengths grew even faster! With the basics of the body and a proper training regime from a young age, Thunder God naturally grew stronger than Hong. Also, with such a systematic form of training and learning, his improvement speed had always been shocking.

Be it body strength, speed, sturdiness and usage of the muscles and their limits, Thunder God was above Hong in all.

Hong only had one thing, his perception and wits were extremely high, a star traveller having his own domain! Naturally he became

the world's strongest.

Of these 2, one established the Dojo of Limits while the other the Thunder Dojo.

While those under them were constantly fighting and competing, Hong and Thunder God never stopped or intervened. The two have been through countless life or death situations together and were on good terms. The competition between the warriors below them had their benefits.

"Brother Hong, you've already killed this grand emperor, there's still two more in the sea, can't you kill them too?" Thunder God asked, "If you do that, our lives would be a lot easier and safer."

"It's not the same."

Hong shook his head," This lake's depth is only 300m, in spite of its large area. To the grand emperor, one tentacle alone is 1500m. This means that in the lake, it is difficult for it to fully move. The shallow depth limits its full capabilities. Not to mention it barely just evolved to the grand emperor level not long ago, not fully learning how to utilize its body and power. It's all these reasons put together that I was able to kill it.

"The two old bastards in the sea however, evolved to the emperor level during the Great Nirvana period, before growing to the emperor level afterwards! Those two have fought countless battles in the sea before gaining the emperor status."

“This tentacle monster seemed to have popped out of nowhere suddenly, with little experience and control of itself. It doesn’t hold a candle to the other 2.” Hong shook his head.

Thunder God nodded his head slightly.

“No rush, our strengths are greater than those two bastards, they will never dare to come on shore!” Hong said, “When we finally enter the Star level, or my Cloud Contact Vine grows more powerful, we will definitely stand a chance. The cloud contact vine is still very weak.”

“Don’t talk to me about the cloud contact vine. It makes me green with envy.” Thunder God couldn’t help but spit out,” Damn, to be able to find a Cloud Contact Vine on earth, your luck definitely is off the charts.”

Cloud Contact Vine

It was definitely an invaluable treasure. In the vast universe, just one of them was indefinitely valuable. It was because of some universe knowledge passed on from previous generations that one knew what it is worth of. Hong was extremely excited then from attaining this treasure, so much so that he gave the ‘spiritual weapon’ to Luo Feng. That was because to Hong, the spiritual weapon couldn’t compare to the Cloud Contact vine!

******

“Luo Feng, gather here with me.” Luo Feng received his phone call.

“Yes, Head.”

Luo Feng flew towards his Dojo’s Head’s location, overlooking the enormous grand emperor’s corpse below. In his heart, he felt a little suspicious. If the Head had enough power alone to kill the grand emperor, why did he need to gather him over? To Hong, a few more helpers and representatives shouldn’t make any difference.

Sou!

Luo Feng descended, at the same time Hong was standing at the side of the grand emperor’s corpse, beside him stood the Great Allure and Ice Mountain.

“Head.” Luo Feng landed.

“Luo Feng.”

Hong looked at Luo Feng, slightly nodding his head, “I’ve already killed the grand emperor, the biggest obstacle in our excavating of the Misty island lake is gone. The other countries, HR Alliance etc and the representatives, some of them have already begun their excavation of the lake! There are many more who’ve begun to prepare to work.”

“I’ve already arranged for many to come over.”

“Right now, you three should immediately begin entering the lake and excavating for treasures!” Hong ordered seriously, “The moment you discover a treasure, if you can take it, take it! If it’s not possible, let me know immediately.”

“Yes, Head.”

Donning a golden mask, Allure and Ice Mountain, along with Luo Feng immediately followed his orders.

“Of course, once you’ve discovered a treasure, if we’ve successfully acquired it, the person who discovered it will too be rewarded 30% rewards. The person who acquires it too will get 30%. The remaining 40% will go to the dojo.” Hong stated seriously, “This means that once you discover a treasure and acquire it, you automatically get 60% of the rewards.”

Allure, Ice Mountain, and Luo Feng nodded their heads.

To get 60% was not a bad deal. Also, once they acquired the treasures, they didn’t have to worry about theft or fights from others, since they had Hong backing them.

“Good, you three can set off now!” Hong ordered.

“Yes.”

Luo Feng, Allure and Ice Mountain followed the order.

They immediately became three bright lights rushing towards the lake. At the same time, countless other representatives and warriors, occasionally one or two at a time, flew towards Misty Island lake. A big excavation that captured the attention of the whole world had just officially begun.

Chapter 37 – Ice Emperor

Luo Feng, Allure, and Ice Mountain were wearing similar outfits: battle uniform sets on the outside and black god sets on the inside. Allure and Ice Mountain both had an extra golden mask on! Luo Feng put on his battle uniform set, etc. in the auto jet after watching Hong's battle with the grand emperor monster.

The three of them flew above the sky side by side.

"We'll split up and search" said royal guard Allure.

"Ok" Ice Mountain's voice was as cold as usual.

"Alright"

Luo Feng nodded.

The radius of this misty lake was over a hundred km, which meant its area was huge! Furthermore, the place where that grand emperor was staying at was 3,500 meters below ground while the lake itself is only 300 meters deep. So maybe the treasure is below the dirt of the bottom of the lake in some rocky layer underground. The search will be quite hard.

Luo Feng also agreed that splitting up was the right course of action.

“Compared to the larger layers of rock underground, I’ll first check out this smaller lake” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to glance at the distance and saw an image charge into the lake a few thousand meters away. This was clearly another representative level fighter, “The appeal of the treasures in the misty lake are indeed big”

PUTONG!

Water splashed everywhere as Luo Feng directly charged into the lake.

With his battle uniform set on the outside and his black god set on the inside, he stepped on his soaring shuttle and had 18 blade pieces circling around him, ready to attack at any time.

Luo Feng was completely armed.

“Treasure, I don’t even know what treasure it is, so how am I supposed to find it?” Luo Feng was in a bind. As of now, the various powers weren’t even sure what the treasure was and how many of them there were. Everyone could only search like blind people, “Good thing I’m a spirit reader. I’ll spread my spiritual force within a 200 meter radius and search!”

The scanning from his spiritual force was more effective than radar.

.....

Just like this, Luo Feng started a ‘bloody’ treasure hunt! Back when he came to this misty lake last time, he almost lost his life. And this time, those so called ‘high level horde leader level monsters’ were easily killed by Luo Feng’s blade pieces. Extremely easily.

After using up 32 minutes!

Luo Feng scanned over 80% of the lake with his surprising speed. On the way, he killed over a thousand monsters and 13 horde leader monsters. Luo Feng used his spiritual force to collect the materials of two ‘high level horde leader level monsters’ into the backpack formed by the black god set.

“Star traveller level spirit readers sure make money easily on earth” thought Luo Feng to himself after collecting the materials from two monsters and giving up the rest.

“Luo Feng, any discoveries in the lake?” a sound carried from the tactical communications watch, which was Allure’s voice, “I have already scanned over 36% of the lake, nothing”

“Nothing” said Luo Feng quietly, “I scanned over 80% of the area”

In terms of searching abilities star traveller level fighters are definitely better than wargods, because even star traveller level fighters can release their genetic energy outside of their bodies! For example, the flames surrounding representative Farr’s body. For example, Lan Ran back in Jiang-Nan headquarter city caused the

surrounding temperature to drop dramatically and the water fountain to freeze when he stopped Luo Feng from killing Li Yao.

Star traveller level fighters can control the energy in a certain radius and search for treasures like that.

Of course……

Star traveller spirit readers are even better at searching! After that are the star traveller level fighters, and after that are the wargod level spirit readers. Lastly are the wargod level fighters! Wargod level fighters can only sadly use their two eyes to search, which is extremely inefficient.

“You scanned 80%, I scanned 36%, Ice Mountain scanned 41%, and none of us found anything. In total, we probably scanned over 95% of the lake. I think….. we should go underground” messaged Allure.

“I agree” replied Luo Feng.

Whoosh!

At the same time, the three powerful star traveller level fighters Allure, Ice Mountain, and Luo Feng broke out the surface of the water and flew into the air. After that, they flew towards the ‘misty island ruins’ in the center of the lake.

PUTONG! PUTONG!

Luo Feng saw in the distance wargod after wargod leap into the lake from fighter jets.

“Even wargods have come to search for treasures, really.....” Luo Feng shook his head, “Good thing they aren’t dumb and are just searching among the island and dirt”. If a wargod encounters a horde leader in the lake, he’s basically not taking his own life seriously. The lake area where those wargods leaped into was still part of the island in the center not too long ago!

However, the huge battle shaved the sides off the island a bit, so the rest of the island is underwater. Those portions cannot be seen with the naked eye.

Those wargods that leaped into the water can swiftly dig into the dirt.

And then search for treasures in the dirt and rocks! Monsters are rare in the rocky layer, and even if they do appear, they are usually quite weak.

“The dirt and rock layer underground has an even greater area than the lake, and searching there is harder than in water” said Allure coldly, “Same old way, we split up”

“I’ll go ahead first”

Luo Feng charged into the lake right away and after just a few

meters deep, drilled into the dirt and rock below. His head was above and his feet were below as his two feet automatically extended into a drill. He easily pierced through the dirt and rock and drilled downwards!

Underground, everything was dark.

“Searching for treasures underground is probably difficult for others” Luo Feng’s spiritual force spread out. He didn’t know what the shape of the treasure he was looking for was. Is it a plant? An ore? Or is it life? Or an archaeological ruin? Because he doesn’t know and has no target, it took him a long time to search.

Three hours later.

Two to three thousand meters below ground, an underground river was raging. With a PENG, Luo Feng smashed through the rocks and fell into the dark river.

“It’s here”

“I consumed the thousand year willow heart beside this river back then. How nostalgic”

“I’ll dig a hole and rest here too”

Luo Feng easily dug out a hole a bit above the dark river and sat cross legged as he closed his eyes. Even if he had plenty of spiritual force, his mind was quite tired after searching for three hours

nonstop with his spiritual force searching the surrounding 200 meter radius with him at the center.

"What smell is that?" Luo Feng, who was resting as he sat cross legged, suddenly sniffed with his nose.

A light scent slightly carried into his nose.

The scent of rice?

Luo Feng furiously opened his eyes: "Treasure! It could be treasure!"

It is quite peculiar to smell rice two to three thousand meters below the ground. And weird things could probably lead to the treasure of the misty island.

Luo Feng sniffed with his nose and leaped into the dark river like a fish. At times, he would come out the river to sniff with his nose: "It's this direction! The smell is carrying from this direction!" Once he confirmed the direction, Luo Feng immediately headed towards that direction as he swam along the dark river.

As he got closer, the scent of rice became easier and easier to smell.

"RUMBLE~~" Luo Feng went along this dark river and appeared in an even wider river, as if the dark river from before was merely a branch of this wider river.

“There are sea monsters”

Luo Feng’s spiritual force discovered after a single scan, “There aren’t many of them, but most of them are quite powerful”

Luo Feng didn’t think this was weird at all.

Back then, Luo Feng saw from the screen at the Chinese base that the lake had an average depth of 300 meters, and its deepest part was 1,000 meters. However, these diagrams only pointed out the main parts. In reality, there are still quite a few tunnels connecting the lake to the underground area. For example, the ‘grand emperor’ from before managed to charge up to the lake from a distance of 3,500 meters underground.

Sometimes it would go to the lake and sometimes it would return underground.

Because of the grand emperor’s movements, tunnel after tunnel was formed! At that time, the display showed that it discovered an area formed by many tunnels, and quite a few sea monsters were there.

So Luo Feng wasn’t surprised at all right now.

“The smell is coming from there” Luo Feng swiftly flew up.

Whoosh!

As if teleportation, Luo Feng appeared 50 meters away three meters above the wide underground river. He stepped on the surface of the river and looked in front of him.....

Above the dark river was a white transparent crystal that hovered in midair. Because of it, the originally dark river had a tiny bit of weak light. This white transparent crystal was also emanating the scent of rice, which caused one to feel like drooling. However, large amounts of sea monsters in the underground river were all staring at this white crystal, and one of them even instantly leaped up to swallow it.

Right when Luo Feng saw the white crystal, it was swallowed by a sea monster in basically a blink of an eye.

“Not right”

Luo Feng ignored his grief as he watched the scene in front of him with confusion, “How come the other sea monsters didn’t leap up to fight over it? Quite a few of these monsters are horde leader level monsters with intelligence comparable to humans. They aren’t dumb, so there must be some reason”

“Chichi~”

The entire body of the crustacean type sea monster that leaped up and swallowed the white crystal started shining in the river. Its

entire body seemed to be expanding. Roars and screams of pain rang, “PENG!”, with a sound, the crustacean type monster exploded. Pieces of its corpse and blood flew around everywhere, and the extremely alluring white crystal continued to hover above the lake in midair.

A bunch of sea monsters surrounded this white crystal.

Each of them wanted to eat it so badly, but none of them dared to swallow it.

Luo Feng took in a breath after seeing this. That white crystal seemed extremely marvelous and its scent caused one to drool naturally. But who would’ve thought that it was ‘poison’, death awaits after eating it.

“There are so many pieces of blown up corpses in this lake” discovered Luo Feng with a scan with his spiritual force, “Looks like quite a few monsters died because they swallowed this”

And at this time——

“It’s treasure”

“Treasure of the misty island”

Gasps in English arose, and two images flew over from different directions.

“It’s mine” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed and with a thought, his spiritual force formed a gigantic formless hand which directly grabbed towards the crystal! Luo Feng didn’t dare to use his real hand to grab this peculiar thing.

“PENG!”

A huge white hand as large as a sink appeared and also grabbed towards the crystal. It collided with Luo Feng’s spiritual force and both of the hands disintegrated.

“Luo Feng, this is mine, Mo Henderson’s. Swiftly leave” a roar in twisted Chinese rang.

“The third chairman, Ice Emperor Mo Henderson?” Luo Feng swiftly recalled this person’s data. Ice Emperor Mo Henderson is one of the two star traveller level three stage fighters on earth. He was born in America and as of now, is the most powerful fighter the American government has. Because his ability to control ice has reached an extremely high level, people nicknamed him Ice Emperor.

He’s a super powerful fighter only below Hong and Thunder God!

“This belongs to the Dojo of Limits and you dare to steal it? Do you want to die?” roared Luo Feng as his soaring shuttle hovered beside him, ready to unleash his ultimate move any time.

Chapter 38 – The Miraculous White Crystal

Deep in the underground lake, 3 star traveller warriors were hovering defensively.

“Luo Feng, who do you think you are talking to?” a thick voice sounded, a tall and sturdy body built almost like a male lion, with the condescending tone of an emperor who was vastly superior. He stared coldly at Luo Feng.

“Mo Henderson, I discovered this first. Please give way.” Luo Feng’s expression was just as cold and unrelenting.

“Very well.”

The Ice Emperor began to smile instead, a smile out of rage, “It’s been a long time since anyone has had the nerve to talk to me like that. You are nothing but a 20 year old youngster, how dare you talk to me this way. On behalf of your Head, I shall teach you a good lesson today.” Following that, he shot a glance at the other person hovering not too far away.

That other representative looked at Mo Henderson and then to Luo Feng, before forcing out a smile: “Two gentlemen, harmony is most important to me, I shall not partake in the contest for this treasure.”

Sou!

He retreated in a flash of lightning.

“I’ll allow you to strike first, we’ll settle this in 3 seconds. That old man will definitely inform others about this. We shall settle this quickly.” The Ice Emperor Mo Henderson said indifferently.

“Arrogant indeed, 3 seconds? Even 30 seconds will not be enough!”

Luo Feng raised his hand and pointed to Mo Henderson, “I hope you won’t lose after one attack!”

“Hmph.”

Mo Henderson snorted in disbelief. He was the third chairman, and he didn’t get there by sucking up and relying on others. Even the star traveller level 2 spirit reader Eastbourne lost to him, why would he be afraid of a spirit reader who had just stepped into the star traveller level? He was the strongest in America, not one to be trifled with.

“Mountain Drill!” Luo Feng’s expression was cold.

In an instant, the Soaring Shuttle separated into 365 blades and just as quickly regrouped together! It became cone shaped, circling around it in a spiral pattern weapon! This was the ‘Mountain Drill’ from the Soaring Shuttle’s first form! The speed in which it separated and reassembled was so fast that even a star traveller warrior wouldn’t be able to fully see it. This was the Soaring Sky’s

basic attack.

12 golden threads immediately spiraled around the cone.

Attack!

“Ang!!!”

A deafening explosion occurred, almost as though the whole space was blasted in disarray. A golden light penetrated the distance of 50 m in a blink of an eye, piercing through with a violent spiraling wave of pressure. The Ice Emperor’s expression changed greatly, using his right hand to punch as quickly as lightning, the special design of his glove had sharp thorns.

However, the Mountain Drill was too fast!

The Ice Emperor Mo Henderson’s punch brushed the Mountain Drill, causing it to stir slightly, before directly piercing straight into the Ice Emperor’s body armour!

“Ang”

The Mountain Drill resumed its mad drilling!

With the piercing power of the Mountain Drill, it easily broke through the Ice Emperor’s SS Grade battle Armor, tearing it apart! The backlash of the attack went on to hit the Ice Emperor’s Black

God set, penetrating strongly to weaken 9 layers of the set until finally the last layer scattered throughout the Ice Emperor's body.

"Hmph." The Ice Emperor groaned, unconsciously backing 70 to 80m away, face pale as ever.

"What a sturdy body." Luo Feng was slightly alarmed.

However, this was all still within his calculations. A star traveller level 3 without a black god set would have been dead by now. With the black god set however makes things a lot more difficult!

"Very good."

"You've injured me." The Ice Emperor Mo Henderson's stare was cold, "Now I..."

"You are too slow, you cannot hit me." Luo Feng smiled.

"Become a target!"

Luo Feng coldly sneered.

Immediately, the Mountain Drill in front of Luo Feng became a golden light, "Ang!!!" A deafening sound boomed again, spiraling with winds almost like a tornado. Mo Henderson didn't dare arrogantly stand his ground again. Instead, he quickly backed away and raised his fists.

A deep impact rang.

The Mountain Drill actually collided with one of Mo Henderson's fists, causing his face to go white and backing away a few more metres.

"The Mountain Drill's speed; it seems even a star traveller level 3 can barely block it." Luo Feng quickly had a thought, "It's a good thing the Mountain Drill's penetrative force relies not on it's speed, but on the golden thread that creates the amazing drilling force."

"Ang!"

The Mountain Drill, which was about 20m to the left of Mo Henderson once again began generating the sound which causes panic.

Xiu!

The golden light once again attacked towards Mo Henderson.

"Pu."

This 3rd attack once again caused Mo Henderson to unconsciously back away, at the same time blood began to trickle from his mouth: "How can this Luo Feng's attacking power be so

strong? Even Eastbourne doesn't differ too much from him in strength. But what's different is that his weapon is too fast. Way faster than Eastbourne's concealed weapon!"

"Ang!"

"Ang!"

"Ang!"

The Mountain Drill attacked Mo Henderson time and again. Because of its fearsome power and speed, Mo Henderson couldn't escape it or dodge, causing him to get hit over and over again and forcing him back a few metres every time. Within the short time he uses to back away, the Mountain Drill would once again start spiralling again and attack.

This forced Mo Henderson into a corner with no time to attack.

It was indeed as Luo Feng had said...

Mo Henderson had become a target!

"What should I do, What can I do?" Mo Henderson thought as quickly as he could, the world's 3rd strongest hadn't been caught in such a predicament in a very long time.

This little brat Luo Feng had an attacking power that was similar

to Eastbourne, even if it broke through the Black God Set, it would only injure him slightly! The speed however, was way faster. He could barely use his hands to defend against it, his body was all the more unable to move freely and out of the way.

If I can't dodge it, then I'll be attacked!

After impact, he would naturally be knocked back by the force, and within the short time, the Mountain Drill's attack came once again.

If this goes on, it'll exhaust him in a endless circle.

"Will you give up?!" Luo Feng shouted loudly.

"Ang!" The sound Mo Henderson hated more than any other had begun again.

"I'll give it my all!"

Within the short span of 10 seconds, Mo Henderson had been attacked 12 times, finally he gritted his teeth and used the stupidest and yet the most effective method!

"Ang!"

The 13th time the Mountain Drill became a golden light, it once again headed towards the 'poor target' Ice Emperor Mo

Henderson. However this time, he didn't use his fists to block...he used his open palms! Both black palms of his seemed to have stored up some power for a while between the attacks!

Chi Chi...The black hands exploded violently!

Peng!

The golden light attacked the Black Palms, and within that moment, the black skin in the palm closed together like a black case, trapping the Soaring Shuttle in it!

"Pu!" Mo Henderson couldn't help but spit out fresh blood, staining the lake below.

Using the black god set's defensive ability to trap the Soaring Shuttle during its attack was possible. However, there was a reason he didn't want to use this. This was due to the fact that every attack before had caused him to retreat a little, it was a natural instinct to reduce the attacking power and damage to the body.

And within the time he was retreating, Mo Henderson would step sidewards to disperse some of the attacking power from the Soaring Shuttle.

Trapping the Soaring Shuttle however...

This was akin to taking on the full damage! Even though the damage barely increased five fold, however once at the critical

point, every point increase in damage would mean a huge difference in damage to the body! This one time was akin to the 10 times before.

"Luo Feng!"

Spitting out blood while trapping the Soaring Shuttle, Mo Henderson eye's were raging with fire. His mouth was filled with fresh blood. Suddenly, he stepped towards the mountains beside, rumbling! The explosive power of a star traveller level 3's legs allowed Mo Henderson to rise quickly and cover over 2000m every second! Within that time, he let go of the trapped Soaring Shuttle.

If he didn't, the Soaring Shuttle would begin its movement again and he would be in a pinch!

"It's speed is too fast!" Luo Feng rushed upwards in an instant, which was all rock!

Chi!

The rock was split open almost as though it was tofu and Luo Feng rushed into the rock stratum. A spirit reader once in the rock stratum, be it flexibility, speed, a fighter could never match up!

"Luo Feng, if you have the ability, come out." Ice Emperor Mo Henderson was steaming mad, it had been long since he had such trouble.

To be attacked so many times.

Finally, it was only from brute force and taking heavy damage did he get an opportunity.

“If you have the capabilities, come in.” Luo Feng’s voice resounded.

Sou!

From a few hundred meters outside, Luo Feng’s body had broken through the rock stratum, a stunned expression on his face as he looked towards white crystal floating above the lake...during that time, it had been swallowed by a water creature. Before he ran, Luo Feng had already noticed this earth dragon heading to swallow the crystal.

He however did not think much of it as he had believed that it would explode and the white crystal would return.

However, with his spirit reading spread around had noticed, that earth dragon did not die!

“What’s going on?” Mo Henderson’s expression also changed.

“Not even knowing the treasure was eaten by a monster.” Luo Feng snorted, maintaining his observation on that earth dragon!

The earth dragon was a mutation from earthworms, one of the many fearsome types. These were usually the ‘Horde Leaders’ level creatures.

Within the Monster Emperor level, there was also an Earth Dragon King.

“Hmph.”

Mo Henderson stared coldly at Luo Feng, after being attacked 10 over times by him, it was almost like a normal person being kicked over 10 times! How could there be no resentment? What’s more, he was the Ice Emperor, people had to speak to him with respect, not to mention this disgrace.

A warrior could take disgrace, but definitely won’t forget it!

However, Luo Feng’s weapon made him helpless and fearful.

******

At that time...

Both of them were observing that earth dragon which was in the lake! It’s body was lengthening constantly, with a white light glowing from within. The fragrant rice smell was exceedingly strong, emanating from the earth dragon.

“The white crystal should have been eaten by this earth dragon.”

Mo Henderson wasn’t a spirit reader, how could he have kept track of treasure. The creatures before all did not dare swallow the crystal, hence, he never worried about the creatures stealing the treasure. He believed that if they had wanted to, they would have long ago swallowed it even before they had come. His only competitor was thus Luo Feng!

Suddenly, this 50m or so earth dragon raised its head and roared!

Chi Chi...

A horn grew from its forehead, it’s body which was originally glowing from the white crystal within began to twitch around, before expanding and growing suddenly!

“Horn!” Mo Henderson was shocked.

“Emperor Level!” Luo Feng was shocked too.

“A medium level horde leader became an emperor level creature immediately after eating the white crystal?” Luo Feng was completed shocked, his mind was immediately filled with a thought, “Without any prior warning an emperor level monster appeared, did it too eat the white crystal to evolve?”

Chapter 39 – Huge Commotion!

Luo Feng was very clear, between Hong, Thunder God and the others, those with strengths above the Emperor Level monsters were already recorded in files. The birth of an Emperor level monster was also a long and arduous process of growth. Yet, within this little underground cave, a Emperor level monster just suddenly appeared…

It was unbelievable!

This was also the reason why Hong, Thunder God and the rest of the world started observing this place.

“My god.” Mo Henderson’s gaze was alert and he was totally shocked.

Luo Feng too was carefully observing the currently evolving ‘Earth Dragon King’, only to see its body rapidly expanding in length, width and its skin colors changing fast. “ROAR…” This newborn dragon emperor let out a roar of pain, the horn on its forehead growing almost a meter every second!

It’s strength was flying off the charts at a rapid rate!

The speed of evolution, to Luo Feng who took the ‘Thousand Year Willow Heart’ and ‘Dragon Blood’, was still extremely shocking. It was basically reaching the heavens in one step!

“Head, Head, I’m Luo Feng.” Luo Feng knew this matter was of utmost importance.

“Luo Feng, What’s the matter?” Hong’s voice was as usual, cold and calm.

“The place where I’m at currently had an unique white crystal, that was eaten by a Horde Leader earth dragon monster. Now, that monster, within 10 seconds, has grown to the level of an emperor monster, and it’s still evolving!” Luo Feng was serious and reported swiftly.

“Stay there, I’m coming immediately!” Hong’s voice was a little urgent.

……

At the same time, within Hua Xia’s base on Misty Island, lay an enormous passenger spaceship.

The other representatives were already excavating, only Jia Yi was left in command headquarters.

“Attention, attention, a life force that’s rapidly evolving has been detected.”

“Attention, attention.”

Within the circular cabin, an alarm went off. The usually quiet and calm, almost like a rock, Jia Yi was shocked.

“Display the location.” Jia Yi ordered.

“Di!”

The screen on the wall quickly enlarged, displaying a spot within a 500m area. At the same time, a worker said: “Commander, there are two representative level life forms here, and during that time, a life form that wasn’t that strong suddenly evolved, becoming stronger than all of Misty Island’s other monsters. We are sure...It is an Emperor Level monster!”

“That means, within 10 seconds, a horde leader lever monster became an Emperor level monster.” The worker’s voice was trembling.

“Your small group has confirmed this theory?” Jia Yi’s expression showed a big change.

“90% confirmed.” The worker replied.

“Continue investigating.”

Upon issuing the order, Jia Yi immediately controlled his tactical communications watch, Zhu Xi, Old Deng, Tuo Ba, immediately head to the coordinates I sent, I’ll be there immediately.”

.....

It wasn't just Hua Xia who had the monitoring devices and apparatus. These devices were discovered in large numbers back then in one of the archeological ruins. All the five countries had it. Hence, at about the same time, everyone noticed the anomaly. It wasn't long before all the people who hadn't had any success so far began to gather.

******

2,000m below the ground, what was once an underground lake was now in chaos.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

It was as though a level 20 hurricane core was passing through, under the immense painful struggling from the earth dragon king, the whole lake was shaking violently, splashing water everywhere onto the sides of the caves. It had grown to 50-60m wide, about a 100m long and every time it rolled and tumbled around, the walls of the mountains cracked and split open.

Luo Feng and Ice Emperor were both floating in mid air.

The walls and ceilings of the caves were falling, violently crashing around and the waves were splashing all over.

To the two star traveller warriors, it was like a spring's breeze. Absolutely nothing could get within 1 meter of these two. Luo Feng's surrounding spiritual powers were easily defending him. Ice Emperor's surroundings were covered in cold air, almost like a white cover, protecting him well.

Luo Feng and Ice Emperor were closely watching that earth dragon emperor.

Even after evolving, so what?

Ice Emperor was a level 3 star traveller.

Luo Feng, while only a level 1 Star Traveller spirit reader, had a high battle amplifier and his spirit weapon the 'soaring shuttle' had strength no less than the Ice Emperor's.

If the 2 wanted to deal with the newly evolved king level earth dragon king, a simple move and it'll be over! At that moment, to the two, killing the earth dragon king wasn't important; the important thing was to clearly observe what powers that white crystal had, and to what extent will the monster evolve!

"Hong!"

A black light filled the cavern, at the speed of Luo Feng and Ice Emperor's heart beat, a black clothed Hong appeared within the place.

“Head.” Luo Feng flew over.

Hong slightly nodded his head, glancing over to Ice Emperor Mo Henderson. The once cocky and arrogant Mo Henderson, under his glare, couldn’t help but bow his body. At that moment on Earth, the only person capable of speaking on equal terms with Hong was Thunder God! Everybody else was too far away.

“Luo Feng, this is that earth dragon king?” Hong looked at the monster that was nearing its completion.

“That’s it, 20 seconds ago, he was only a middle horde leader earth dragon.” Luo Feng confirmed.

“Mo Henderson?” Hong looked at the Ice Emperor.

Ice Emperor slightly bowed:” First chairman, it is as Luo Feng has stated.”

“Just a simple crystal, allowed a medium level horde leader to rise to an emperor level monster?” Hong arched his eyebrows in disbelief.

Keep in mind that.....

From a high level horde leader to rise to the Emperor Level, the difficulty was no easier than for an advanced level wargod to rise to a star traveller. Yet the number of emperor level monsters were much more than the population of earth’s star traveller wargods.

This was due to the number of monsters being much much more! There only so few human warriors.

With greater numbers, the number of emperor level monsters were naturally more.

This idea of ‘more’, was in comparison to earth’s star travellers. Compared to the large numbers of monsters in total, the number of Emperor level monsters were actually few. Yet this small crystal allowed a medium level horde leader to rise to the king level, it was akin to a middle level wargod rising straight to the representative level.

Is it possible?

Every Wargod on earth had trained till they became an advanced level wargod, before realizing how hard it was to breakthrough to the star traveller level.

“Hong, you discovered treasure and yet you didn’t call me!” A loud voice sounded.

A white robed silhouette appeared in the air beside them.

“Thunder God.” Luo Feng slightly bowed.

“2nd chairman.” Ice Emperor bowed too.

“Luo Feng, you sure are the head’s lucky star.” Thunder God smiled, “What a pity, this earth dragon became an earth dragon king, its life energy suddenly became tens to hundred times stronger. Everybody’s devices detected it. I calculate that all the other countries are coming soon.” The moment he finished, a silhouette broke into the mountain.

Followed by…

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! One after another, star traveller silhouettes appeared in the air in that underground lake.

“Earth dragon king? There is actually a dragon king?”

“The rapidly increasing life force that became so strong, that’s it? From a horde leader, he became an emperor level monster?”

Many representative warriors arrived, floating above the lake, observing the dragon king.

The earth dragon king had already finished its evolution, its eyes as big as its face looked up in fear as it realized long ago that man’s elite and strongest were all floating above it, warriors capable of matching the emperor level monsters; Even though it had finally become an emperor level monster.

But the enemy was too numerous.

“Chi Chi…” The earth dragon king immediately dug towards the

bottom of the lake, trying its best to get as deep as possible into the rock stratum.

"Thinking of escaping?"

Hong waved his hands, a black domain immediately spread open, trapping the earth dragon king within it! Caught within his panic inducing domain, the earth dragon king began to violently struggle, however it felt as though it's whole body was bound tightly by countless ropes, unable to struggle. It could only painfully roar.

"Tear open!" Hong waved his hand.

A black laser shot towards the earth dragon king's head, peng! It's head split open and his brains and other matter were flung all over.

Hong, Thunder God and the others examined the open head.

"No abnormalities." Hong scowled.

"It's like a normally evolved earth dragon king." Thunder God also frowned.

In the air above the underground lake, where many representatives were floating, everyone witnessed how a newly evolved king level earth dragon king was so easily... like a small white mouse being a killed and dissected. America, Europe, India,

Russia and the HR Alliance, its strongest warriors were all fearful and in awe of the Hong who easily killed the emperor monster with a wave of his hand.

They all knew of his strength, but every time they witnessed it firsthand, it led to a sense of helplessness and fear.

“Luo Feng, can you explain in detail once more about that crystal from before.” Hong ordered.

“Yes, Head.”

Luo Feng carefully recapped, replying, “It was a white crystal. It was previously floating above the lake over there! It was as though it was lighter than everything, strangely floating in mid air. The light that came from this crystal even illuminated this dark underground place…also there was a fragrant rice smell emanating from it.:

“Rice smell? White crystal? Floating? Eaten, evolved a monster?” Hong was deep in thought.

Thunder God too was thinking deeply.

“Right, there was a monster leader before who ate the white crystal, but the the moment it swallowed it, it’s body exploded and the white crystal came back out unscathed.” Luo Feng added a line.

“Body exploded after eating?”

Among Hong, Thunder God and the other representatives, three people's eyes lit up.

"No.5 Archeological Ruins!" A black representative couldn't help but shout out, his body trembling with excitement.

"It's the Mu Ya Crystal. It's the Mu Ya Crystal." A chinese representative also chimed in.

"It's the Mu Ya Crystal."

Hong and Thunder God's gaze met, a sense of excitement and madness in their eyes.

"The Cloud Contact Vine appeared on earth, even the universe's valuable Mu Ya Crystal appeared on earth." Thunder God couldn't help but mumble softly.

"Mu Ya Crystal."

On the side, Luo feng was confused, repeating these words over in his mind. What does the Mu Ya Crystal represent? Looking at Hong and Thunder God, these 2 were the pinnacle of earth's strongest, yet at that moment they couldn't hide the madness in their eyes. While he didn't know the usage of the Mu Ya Crystal, Luo Feng could guess...

The Mu Ya Crystal, was definitely infinitely more valuable than the spirit of nature.

Even in the vast universe, the Mu Ya crystal could count as a treasure.

Chapter 40 – The Bloody Fight

“Mu Ya Crystal.” Luo Feng and the other representatives were filled with suspicion, what exactly was this Mu Ya Crystal? Everyone looked towards Hong and Thunder God. Everyone here was an elite, even without saying a word, just judging from their reactions, one could guess…

This Mu Ya Crystal was a treasure!

“It’s called Mu Ya Crystal?” A blonde, curly haired representative from the European Union said, “After eating one of the crystals, a horde leader monster was able to evolve straight to a emperor level monster! If he ate more, wouldn’t he get even stronger? Don’t tell me…don’t tell me that Monster Emperor came to be because it ate a crystal?”

Silence!

The earth’s strongest fighters floating in that underground cavern were all silent, Hong and a few others knew that the Mu Ya Crystal was special and were extremely frustrated with the blonde representative that voiced it out. The blonde representative purposefully looked puzzled and suspicious. The five who knew of the crystal’s special abilities all understood…the monster emperor only evolved to that stage because of the crystal.

Yet, those who knew the secret did not want to divulge this as chaos would break loose the moment they did!

“Monster Emperor!”

“Right, this little lake definitely doesn’t have the right environment to produce a monster emperor, it must be the Mu Ya crystal.”

“The monster emperor ate the crystal, the earth dragon king also ate that crystal, there must be plenty around!”

“This Misty Island Lake, underground should still have more Mu Ya Crystals.”

“Hurry up and find them.”

All kinds of quiet discussions had broken out amongst them,

A great many of them even glanced from the side towards Hong, Thunder God, the five people who knew just to watch their reactions.

“Quickly, quickly quickly, we have to go find the Mu Ya Crystals.”

“Let’s head out.”

Whether it was in English or in other various languages, the representatives were all calling out to their teammates, or contacting their headquarters. Within a short amount of time, a

large number of representatives were combing the underground lake, or breaking through the rock stratum, beginning a mad search underground for the crystals. Totally different from before!

Before, they were searching aimlessly without a solid target. Now their eyes were all lit with motive.

******

Looking at those who represented the other powers leaving quickly, Hong and Thunder God shot each other a gaze.

“I bet that bastard intentionally said that.” Thunder God said softly.

“Nobody is an idiot.” Hong was calm.

“Aren’t you anxious? You need the crystal more than I do!” Thunder God smiled. However, Hong turned straight to look at the three people behind him, Luo Feng, Allure and Ice Mountain, ordering: “There must be more Mu Ya Crystals in this underground lake, you all hurry and search.”

“Yes, Head.”

Luo Feng and the other two complied.

“Go.” Hong slightly nodded his head, before he himself rushed

towards the underground lake, heading deeper down below.

……

Luo Feng expanded his spiritual energy to cover the underground city and rushed quickly deeper below.

“Head and Thunder God, and the others who know of the Crystal’s powers, never mentioned exactly what it does!” Luo Feng’s expression was cold, “Their silence only proves one thing… this Mu Ya crystal definitely has the capability to drive people mad.” To be able to get a universe treasure down on earth was an extremely rare opportunity.

Luo Feng didn’t dare to relax at all.

Swiftly searching, about 25 minutes later.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng.: A voice came from his tactical communications watch.

“Jia Yi.” Luo Feng responded.

“Congratulations, your Head has just acquired a Mu Ya Crystal. It was however seen by seven or eight other people.” Jia Yi said.

“Oh.”

Luo Feng was a little shocked, it was barely half an hour and the second crystal was discovered, and acquire by Hong no less.

After breaking the transmission, Luo Feng focused harder on the search: “The first crystal was eaten by a monster, the second was acquired by Hong. This underground place…must have many more crystals!”

Another 16 minutes passed.

Within the darkness of the rock stratum, the lake water flowed between the cracks of the rock stratum, a nauseous smell suddenly emanated from the rocks. Luo Feng habitually took another whiff, star travellers had a developed sense of smell, and this allowed Luo Feng to detect within that nauseous smell, a sense of that familiar rice smell from before!

“That’s it!” With the experience from before, Luo Feng came to a conclusion.

“Over there!”

Luo Feng’s eyes lit up.

Whoosh!

The black helmet on his head became a drill and the Soaring Shuttle below him took off, “Chi Chi…” The rock broke apart as though it was tofu, splitting apart away as Luo Feng drilled

through with amazing speed towards the fragrant smell.

A loud mix of voices resounded with curse and swears in them!

“Hm?” There were already a few star traveller warriors who had battled there, leaving big holes in the underground cave. Luo Feng had rushed straight in, only to be rudely shocked when he discovered...

At the side, a seemingly south Asian fighter had had his body split into 2, lying on the rock floor. While his body was cleanly broken into two portions, with his big and small intestines lying outside, his upper half was still struggling. A short while after, all movements stopped. A silhouette scuttled over and kneeled beside him: “Maha, Maha.”

“You actually killed Maha?”

“Representative Farr, you people were too much.”

The three indians were staring at the others in rage, on the other side stood 4 star travellers from the European Union.

“One single wargod, should obediently give up the Mu Ya Crystal. We would’ve spare his life that way. If you resist, you are looking for death.” One of the four representatives from the European Union laughed coldly, all 4 were representatives, while the Indian side had only two representatives out of the three remaining.

“Luo Feng?”

“Let’s go.”

The European Union’s four members noticed Luo Feng’s arrival, immediately turning and drilling into the rock stratum, leaving swiftly.

“Bastard.” The Indians gritted their teeth.

“They actually killed someone?” Luo Feng looked at the corpse on the floor, before using his watch communicator to contact his Head, “Head, Head, this is Luo Feng. Where I’m at, a European group just snatched a Mu Ya Crystal away from an Indian group, killing one of the Indian Wargods in the process.”

“They finally started killing.” Hong’s voice sounded through the communicator, “Luo Feng, within such a short time, each country’s men have brushed against each other in this search, this is the first murder. You’d better be careful. This is a war between countries, not just one between the dojos. It can be cruel beyond comparison.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng answered softly.

Representing each country’s fighters, fighting for the crystals. Even if they killed others, who was going to judge them? No one could.

Luo Feng gazed at the group collecting the body: “With insufficient power, getting the treasure would only mean disaster.” With that, he left!

******

Late at night, 10:56, the first crystal was swallowed by the earth dragon, evolving it to the earth dragon king before being killed by Hong.

Late night 11:31, the second crystal was discovered and acquired by Hong.

Late night 11:47, the third crystal is discovered, acquired by a group from the European Union, also the first death has occurred. As such, whatever reservations everybody had before were now gone and the search became more violent with more bloodshed!

Late night 0:12, the 4th crystal is discovered and acquired by the American group. The American and Russian groups had a big battle for the crystal, resulting in three representatives being heavily injured, one of them had his internal organs destroyed. Luckily, he used the ‘Life Water’ in time, or the team would have lost a representative.

As time passed, every side got crazier.

Late night 1:56, almost 2 hours since it began, the 5th and 6th crystals were discovered and acquired by Thunder God! While the

other star travellers looked on with envy, they didn't dare challenge him.

……

The 6th crystal has been acquired. Excluding the one eaten by the earth dragon, earth's gathered forces of star travellers had already acquired a total of five crystals!

"What good luck, getting two crystals in one go."

The underground cavern had been blasted open, with over 10 star travellers gazing at Thunder God and the two crystals emitting light from within his left hand. They were all green with envy, but even Hong, who was at the side didn't attack, how could the rest of them attack?

"Head Hong, I'll be taking the lead." Thunder God laughed at Hong who was rushing over.

"Two of them?" Hong shook his head helplessly.

"Go, continue the search." Hong turned and left, 'Beast'' and Luo Feng from the Dojo of Limits all left to continue their hunt. Beast, the most powerful royal guard,had only just arrived an hour ago.

……

“Five crystals have been found.”

“One for the Head, one for the European Union, one for America and two for Thunder God.”

Luo Feng immediately drilled downwards, with one breath, he dug about 4000m deep, beginning his search at that level.

“Searching wise, I, Luo Feng, and the 4th representative Eastbourne are star traveller spirit readers. We should be the most adept at scanning. Yet the both of us have yet to get a crystal.” Luo Feng felt a sense of longing after seeing Thunder God and his two crystals. He began to focus and search more seriously.

About half an hour later.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng’s nose picked up a smell, smelling again, “Yes, it’s the smell of rice!”

Luo Feng grew excited, rushing straight to where the smell emanated from. The search for the crystals had to be quick, the moment one hesitated, others would grab it away.

“Pu!”

Breaking through a layer of rock, the sound of water gurgling

could be heard. This was a place where water was flowing thinly through cracks, and when Luo Feng smashed through, the fragrant smell of rice emanated over, he turned…his pupils contracted from shock!

“My god.” Luo Feng could feel his own heartbeat stop for a moment, blood rushing to his brain.

Through the thin stream within the darkness, three white crystals were glowing faintly, floating and emanating a fragrant rice smell.

“Three crystals!”

“Three Mu Ya Crystals!” Luo Feng couldn’t help but be shocked, and reached for the crystals immediately!

The shapeless spirit energy became like a shapeless big hand, swiftly grabbing the crystals from 20m away and keeping them.

“Peng!”

A loud rumble sounded.

Three silhouettes crashed through one after another through the rock stratum, one of them was the Ice Emperor Mo Henderson, and two other representatives from the European Union.

“Three Mu Ya Crystals!”

“Three of them!”

The three could barely see the shape of the three crystals as they landed in Luo Feng’s grasp.

“It’s mine.” Luo Feng’s glare was firm and apprehensive.

“Come.” Luo Feng immediately took the 3 crystals into his black god set, unless he was killed, they would never obtain the crystals. Luo Feng’s directed an icy cold stare towards the 2 European Union representatives and then to the target from before, the 3rd chairman Ice Emperor Mo Henderson.

“I’ll be going first.” Luo Feng transformed into a black light, drilling into the rock stratum.

Chapter 41 – Mu Ya Crystal Feast

“They didn’t chase me, that Mo Henderson is probably worrying about the last time he became my target.” Luo Feng swiftly flew through the rock stratum, his anxiousness relaxing a little.

He initially thought Mo Henderson and the other two would attack, but he met no obstruction, even after he left into the rock layers.

The three thought that even if they tried, they didn’t have the power to stop him.

******

The European Union’s two representative warriors, watched wide eyed as Luo Feng left. They couldn’t help but feel urgent and helpless, turning towards Mo Henderson, one of them, a middle aged man with brown curly hair said: “3rd representative, that was three whole crystals, how could you just stand by and watch as Luo Feng take them away.

“Three crystals.” The other chimed in urgently.

“Heng!”

The Ice Emperor looked coldly at the two, he had known of these two’s intentions from the start, laughing coldly, “Bo Ni Te, if you two want the crystal, go get it yourselves! If you think you can use

me Mo Henderson, you must be dreaming!" Once finished, the Ice Emperor became a silhouette and dug into the rock stratum, breaking apart huge chunks of the rock.

Only the two from the European Union remained, their bodies began to emit a burning flame and a green light, causing all the rocks around them to float up.

"That's weird."

"What caused this Mo Henderson's temperament to change?"

The two representatives from the European Union looked at each other, feeling helpless. Watching Luo Feng get away with three Mu Ya Crystals, they were definitely envious...However Luo Feng killed Li Yao even before he broke through to the star traveller level, now that he was one, he was definitely stronger and not something the two of them could deal with.

They had hoped Mo Henderson would have attacked! They had calculated that if the 3rd representative had attacked as they hoped, the two would have been able to at least snatch away one of the crystals in the scuffle.

"This Ice Emperor had such a bad temper before. His tyranny, who doesn't know?"

"Hmm, he is overbearing, I really thought he'd attack just now, not just stand there without doing anything."

“Bo Ni Te, I heard that the Ice Emperor had a fight with Luo Feng during the appearance of the first crystal.” The blonde curly haired white man spoke softly, “I thought it was just rumors before, but at the looks of it, I would say that news is 8 or 9 out of 10 true. In fact, during the fight, the Ice Emperor might have been losing, or just unable to gain an advantage.:

“Oh? The brown haired middle aged man stared blankly.

“Unless Luo Feng’s power made him worry, otherwise how could he not attack? Do you remember, just for one crystal earlier, the Ice Emperor brought backup to fight with the Soviet Russia’s side, resulting in a huge battle! If he did that just for one, how could he do nothing for three!” The blonde’s eyes were lit brightly.

“Makes sense. That’s right, we should quickly spread the news of Luo Feng’s three crystals!”

“Yes, we cannot let him just get them too comfortably.”

……

These two representatives, along with the Ice Emperor Mo Henderson, swiftly spread the news of Luo Feng attaining the three crystals!

******

Deep in the darkness of the underground, a decayed smell permeated the air.

“Luo Feng.”

A message tone came from his watch’s communicator, Luo Feng immediately responded: “Head.”

“You acquired three Mu Ya crystals?” Hong’s voice came through the communicator.

Luo Feng was a little shocked, the news sure spread quickly. He had just obtained the three crystals not a minute ago and the Head already knew. Several thoughts quickly formed in his head, Luo Feng answered: “Yes, Head.”

“Very good, stay there, I’m coming immediately.” Hong said.

Awhile later…

Hong!

A black light broke through the rock stratum, appearing beside Luo Feng, it was a black clothed Hong.

“Head.” Luo Feng bowed his body slightly.

“Luo Feng, your luck is really good.” Hong couldn’t help but laugh and compliment, “You obtained three Mu Ya crystals, as per our earlier agreement...60% belongs to you, which means 1.8 crystals. To round it off, you’ve obtained two crystals, the last one goes to the Dojo of Limits.”

“Yes, Head.” Luo Feng didn’t hesitate and handed one crystal over.

Hong raised his hand and kept the crystal that emanated a fragrant rice smell.

Rumble!

Two silhouettes immediately appeared beside them, drawn in by the fragrant rice smell, Jia Yi and Zhu Xi noticed that it was actually Hong and Luo Feng. Jia Yi was surprised and couldn’t help but laugh: “1st representative has obtained yet another crystal, congratulations.”

“It’s nothing, it’s just that Luo Feng just obtained three crystals and passed me one, that’s all.” Hong replied.

“Oh?”

Jia Yi looked at Luo Feng, “Then truly congratulations.” Following that, he took Zhu Xi along with him and left.

After watching the two leave, Hong turned over to Luo Feng,

smiling: “Luo Feng, these crystals are extremely dangerous…if you meet anybody else, tell them you’ve passed all of them to me. They won’t give you any trouble then. While you may be pretty strong right now, if several other representatives teamed up, you’ll be in danger.”

Luo Feng nodded his head slightly.

Indeed…

The Soaring Shuttle could only attack one person at a time, if several representatives teamed up and attacked him, with his weaker physical body compared to them, he would definitely be in danger.

“Continue. This misty island seems to be hiding many more Mu Ya crystals.” Hong let out a rare smile, before turning and digging into the rock stratum.

“What powers did these crystals have?”

Luo Feng watched as his Head left, heart filled with suspicion, “The fact that the Head and the others have refused to say anything, I shall not question then. Forget it..I’ll work hard to collect more of them. There can only be good, no bad from collecting more!” remembering how he couldn’t even attain the spirits of nature, he knew that attaining these treasures were extremely difficult.

While he may be a star traveller, this did not guarantee he could get the spirits of nature.

He definitely had to take advantage of this opportunity and get more crystals!

……

Since 2:30, Luo Feng alone acquired three crystals, making Man's total seven to nine crystals. It seemed Earth's warriors had run out of luck right after, with a solid three hours of no yield.

Early morning 6:08, Hua Xia finally obtained their first crystal, making the total yield to man ten crystals.

Afternoon 8:36, India obtained one, making it eleven crystals in total.

At about the same time, the 12th was obtained by Hong.

This was an excavation that shook the entire earth!

Before long, it was the 2nd day's dusk 5:31. It had been a total of nearly 20 hours since the beginning of the search, a total of eighteen crystals were discovered by Man, excluding the one eaten by the earth dragon king, the other seventeen had all been acquired. Of course the eighteen crystals news was openly broadcasted.

Several country's powers, individuals had discovered and acquired some of the crystals alone and kept them, without letting anybody know.

That means to say...

While the official count was: 18 discovered, acquired 17; The truth remained that the total count should have exceeded twenty crystals!

.....

It was at dusk 5:31, the biggest haul was to be welcomed by Man's warriors, a total of eight crystals together had appeared! The first to discover these eight crystals were none other than Luo Feng and the European Union's Eastbourne and a few others, however the eight had emanated such a strong fragrant smell that many more would come.

Within a few seconds, the number of star travellers caught in the battle grew to ten!

.....

2000m underground in that expansive underground river, ten star travellers were engaged in battle!

“Careful, Luo Feng.”

“Get out of the way.”

Two representatives from the American side nervously shouted.

“Ang!”

It was as though the sound of space and time had been ripped apart, a golden light, almost like an invitation from the King of Hell, violently smashed into a black representative’s abdomen region, smashing his SS grade battle armor immediately. The dreaded golden light later went on to heavily attack the black god set within, causing the black man to violently smash into the side rocks, shaking the entire area. Following a quick silence, a large number of cracks were seen and rubble began to fall.

“Pu...” The black representative spit out fresh blood, body sprawled against the wall and sliding down.

“Life water.” While falling, he took out a test tube and threw it into his mouth.

Ka Cha!

Biting straight into the test tube, he quickly absorbed the life water. “Pu.” The black representative spit out the broken glass pieces mixed with traces of blood.

“Move out of the way!”

Luo Feng roared, directing his attention to another fighter ‘Eastbourne’.

“Ang…”

Transforming into the ‘Mountain Drill’, the soaring shuttle became a golden light and charged straight towards the 4th representative ‘Eastbourne’, Eastbourne hardly managed to use his spirit energy to control his concealed weapons to withstand Luo Feng’s attacks and to luckily dodge.

“Good job.” A totally blonde man who resembled a lion’s big physique punched heavily, sending star travellers one after another flying, roared excitedly, grabbing one of the crystals.

“Wild Beast, beautiful.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Be careful Allure.” Ice Mountain shouted from the side.

A white silver sword was heading in Allure’s direction sneakily.

……

This was a messy battle.

Within a short 10 seconds, the thick fragrant smell emanating from the crystals had attracted eighteen star travellers, it was by good fortune that Ice Mountain, Allure and Wild Beast all three were present, giving a big help to Luo Feng! This allowed the Dojo of Limits to have a great advantage in power over the battle, giving them the opportunities to grab the crystals.

“It’s too crazy, eight crystals appearing together?” Luo Feng couldn’t believe it.

“This underground lake, the first crystal appeared upstream, even after careful searching, one would never expect eight to pop out like that.” Luo Feng had realized that these floating crystals were moving about on their own.

“Why isn’t the Head here yet?” Allure shouted.

“The head will be here soon!” Wild Beast roared.

“Make way.”

Luo Feng fiercely roared.

“Ang…”

The familiar spiraling began again, The European Union, America, India and the HR Alliance members were all painfully

suffering. In the big battle for the sudden appearance of eight crystals, Luo Feng's special attack has really made a name for itself! That golden light...

Extremely fast attack speed and crazy amounts of power!

Even the 3rd chairman Ice Emperor cannot dodge it!

Even the 4th chairman Eastbourne, who was similarly a spirit reader couldn't totally dodge it.

"Weird, too weird. The moment my spiritual energy tries to exert any force on his golden light weapon...the moment it gets close, the golden energy actually rips it apart." Eastbourne was troubled over the mysterious power of the soaring shuttle.

Such strong penetrative powers! Even my spirit energy gets ripped apart when it gets close!

"Hong!"

The surrounding air shook, a black silhouette appeared amidst the battlefield and the star travellers.

It was as though time had stopped!

The black domain quickly engulfed the area, almost as though it was a god's domain, spreading swiftly to a 100m area, placing Luo

Feng and the twenty star travellers within it.

“What.”

Luo Feng felt as though he was an average person being pushed down by several hundred kg’s of force, unable to walk or lift his arms properly. As though there were countless plants and vines wrapped around his arms. He couldn’t move at all! In Hong’s Domain, no one could resist at all, everyone fell silent.

……

In the air above the underground lake, everybody stopped their battles.

Hong reached and acquired the last available crystal before going over to Luo Feng and company’s side. Allure immediately reported: Reporting to Head, the four of us acquired a total of four crystals, the main thing is Luo Feng discovered them and even in the battle he was the decisive factor, stopping both the 3rd and the 4th representative.

“Hm.” Hong nodded his head slightly, before turning to Luo Feng, “Luo Feng.”

“Head.” Luo Feng replied.

Hong nodded his head:” Not bad!”

……

The battle had barely lasted 30 seconds and the Dojo of Limits was the biggest winner, acquiring four Mu Ya Crystals, America got one, the European Union got one, the HR Alliance got two and the Indian group got none.

Watching Hong and his crew leave, the other star travellers began their discussions.

“4 crystals. The Dojo of Limits have gotten quite a reward.”

“It was mostly Luo Feng, who held down the 3rd and 4th representative.”

“Luo Feng’s attacks are scary.”

“Such power, if not for the Life Water, there would be at least three dead representatives from him.

“Even the 3rd and 4th representative couldn’t do anything about him.

The representatives were all softly discussing, they had previously respected Luo Feng but had not cared or worried too much about him. But they had never seen such power from Luo Feng, or the extent at which he was on par with both the 3rd and

4th representative. They made a mental note to themselves never to cross paths with Luo Feng!

They believed in their hearts...

The earth's strongest were Hong and Thunder God!

The next level would be Luo feng, the 3rd,4th and 5th representatives!

Jia Yi, Yan Hai and a few other level 2 star travellers, along with with level 1 star travellers with special skills, a little over 10 people, these formed the 3rd level.

The remaining 40 plus level 1 star travellers formed the 4th level of strength!

"Let's go! Seize the time and look for more crystals." The Indian representatives started shouting out.

"Quickly, quickly, quickly." Ice Emperor shouted, clearly anxious and rushed.

Immediately...

A large number of star travellers flew swiftly and separated, the Mu Ya Crystal Feast had yet to end!

Chapter 42 – Earth's Most Powerful Weapon Appears!

China, year 2059, 8th January Night 11:36. The continent of Australia where the Misty Island stood was however, afternoon.

Peng!

From the vast surface of the lake, Luo Feng broke through from below, floating in mid air.

"It's been three days since I've seen sunlight." Luo Feng raised his head towards the blue sky, watching as several monsters flew past, before looking back down at the lake, "within three days the excavation of the Mu Ya Crystals have almost finished. The biggest haul was done on the first day, the second had a lot less and the 3rd, so far there's only been two."

However, just by comparison, his haul over the three days have been pretty good.

Firstly, his luck has always been good, coming across three crystals in one go.

Secondly, as a star traveller level spirit reader, his searching ability was originally amongst the top three... with these two factors together, Luo Feng on his own found another crystal, making it his 5th! If he included the ones he worked together with Ice Mountain, Allure and the other royal guards, there would be

many more.

“Luo Feng.” The Head’s voice transmitted from his watch’s communicator, Luo Feng’s watch had been in constant contact with the Head and a few others these three days.

“Head.” Luo Feng replied.

“Come to where I’m at.”

“Yes.”

Luo Feng followed the coordinates in his watch and locked in, “Hm? He was actually 2000m underground. At one of that underground lake’s bends.”

Sou!

Luo Feng immediately dug down, breaking through the surface of the water and swiftly underground.

******

At a particular point at the vast underground lake.

The black clothed Hong, along with the three royal guards wearing their golden masks, Allure, Beast and Ice Mountain, plus

the other investigators from the Dojo of Limits, all of them were gathered together. “Luo Feng!” The ceiling broke apart and Luo Feng came down, floating back up the moment he touched the surface of the lake below.

“Head.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Hm, we’ll begin in a moment, others haven’t arrived.” Hong nodded his head, looking at Luo Feng with a sense of accomplishment...

From the Dojo of Limits, Hong being the strongest on earth had acquired the biggest returns, next in line would be Luo Feng!

Luo Feng, in this Crystal Feast/battle, had made a name for himself! All of Earth’s star travellers were clear, with his current power, he was already able to break into the 2nd tier of strength! To be able to compete with the 3rd, 4th and 5th chairmen on the same level. This was truly a frightening power.

Out of those three charimen, the 3rd and 5th were level 3 star travellers! The 4th was Eastbourne, a level 2 star traveller spirit reader!

With such a general under the Dojo of Limits, Hong was indeed happy.

“Hu.”

Another silhouette flew in, this was one of the Dojo's investigators Liu He, "Head." Liu He paid respects to the Head before flying towards Luo Feng and the others, laughing: "Luo Feng, You've earned big this time. We four other investigators have yet to even come close to your earnings."

"Luck, just luck." Luo Feng politely laughed.

Hong initially only brought Luo Feng, Allure and Ice Mountain, later on bringing Beast. The other five investigators weren't brought along...

However...

When the news of the Mu Ya Crystal spread out, The Dojo of Limits other five investigators knew of the crystals' worth, and that a good number of earth's star travellers were all gathered there at Mist Island. Immediately, Liu He, Vladmir and the others took a fighter jet over.

However, those that missed the initial excavation chance naturally had lesser returns.

"Alright, everyone is here." Hong looked towards the three royal guards and the six investigators and immediately secluded the surrounding space.

"This time, our Dojo of Limits have had a bountiful return."

Hong couldn't help but smile, "Following our agreement, discovering the crystal and finally acquiring it, the discoverer gets 30% while the person who battled for it gets 30%, finally the remaining 40% goes to the Dojo."

"Beast, you discovered one on your own, so you get 60%, 0.6. You also helped in battle three times, considering you had different contributions for all three battles, they add up to 1.2 crystals. So ultimately, you get 1.8 Mu Ya crystals." Hong reported.

"Yes, Head." royal guard Beast respectfully replied.

"Allure... in total, you get 1.6 crystals."

"Ice Mountain...in total, you get 2.2 crystals."

"Liu He...in total, you get 0.3 crystals."

.....

Going through their efforts and calculations, everybody's returns were calculated.

"Finally, Luo Feng, who earned the most this time. He singlehandedly acquired four crystals, following the 60% rule, this equals 2.4 crystals. Joining forces in battle 4 times, with different contributions, these add up to 2.1 crystals. Finally, they come up to 4.5 crystals." Hong finished and began distributing the crystals.

Luo Feng first handed in the Mu Ya crystals he had and then received four Mu Ya crystals.

Allure received one.

Ice Mountain received two.

……

“For each crystal, I can give you twenty stars worth!” Hong commanded, “For example, Luo Feng, you currently have four in your hand, in your account you still have 0.5. This means just from your account you have ten stars! Of course you can use the crystals to trade.”

“It’s the same for everyone else.”

“Once we return to base, you can use your crystals to trade for stars, which can be further used to buy items and goods.” Hong said.

Hearing Hong’s words, the three royal guards and six investigators smiled.

“Luo Feng, you earned so much this time. One crystal gives you twenty stars, you have 4.5, that equates to ninety stars! You can even buy a prehistoric level auto jet” Liu He laughed, “I’m so poor,

with just 0.3 crystals, that equates to 6 stars only, nothing compared to you…”

“Just luck, just luck.” Luo Feng humbly laughed.

In actual fact, he had actually acquired five crystals, not just four.

During the excavation, most of the news of discoveries were official and public. However, there were times when crystals were discovered without anybody else around. Luo Feng’s four out of five crystals were discovered with others around, one in exception was in secret, so he naturally hid it.

This was actually an unspoken rule.

To be able to acquire one without anybody else finding out, just hide it. Hong too knew about this rule, if no one realized one’s wrongdoing, one would have no enemies. Hong wouldn’t be too strict. What’s more, the returns to the Dojo were already 40 crystals, it was definitely enough.

“Right now, Misty Island’s underground lake, not much of the crystals are left.” Hong looked towards his people, “Our search shall officially end here, those who want to return can go while those who want to further try their luck can stay and search! Whoever finds anything from here can keep 100% of it. However, almost the entire area has been searched, so don’t get your hopes too high.”

“Yes. Head.”

Luo Feng and others exchanged a few more words before separating.

Liu He who came later was determined to get more, thus continuing their search. Beast on the other hand was getting ready to return to the main base.

“You guys go ahead and search, I’m fine.”

“Luo Feng, you’ve already gotten so many, naturally you are fine, hm, I’ll head on first to search.”

Luo Feng and Liu He parted ways, before digging fiercely 3000m below the lake. Gathering his spirit energy to create a cave.

Using his mini quantum computer.

“Hello.”

Luo Feng contacted Xu Xin’s phone. Earth’s communication systems were far more advanced. Other than special areas like archaeological ruin #9, even in the deep underground or in the rock stratum, one could easily get a signal! This was a great discovery from the archaeological ruins.

“Luo Feng, you are only calling me now, what’ve you been

doing?” The screen display lit up, Xu Xin was wrapped in a bathrobe, hair still dripping wet.

“I’ve been at the continent of Australia these few days.” Luo Feng laughed.

“Oh? I heard that the whole world, HR Alliance all went over there. Right, what have you all been doing exactly? Even my grandfather hasn’t been granted access to the information, the HR Alliance say it’s SSS grade news and we are not allowed to it.” Xu Xin was filled with curiosity.

“Getting treasures, they are called Mu Ya Crystals.” Luo Feng answered.

“Mu Ya Crystals, what are they for?” Xu Xin was curious.

“I’m not sure either, I just know they are infinitely valuable, converted to money, a huge passenger plane’s price doesn’t even come close to one crystal.” Luo Feng paced around in the cave as he talked.

“What? That’s not possible right?” Xu Xin was alarmed.

‘Right, your entire Xu Family’s wealth added together, can’t even buy one crystal.” Luo Feng nodded his head.

“Oh my god.” Xu Xin finally understood why even her family didn’t have the authority to receive the news.

Luo Feng wasn't lying.

The price Hong put on the crystals was twenty stars, one must know that dragon's blood was only worth one star! One portion of dragon's blood was worth 80 billion, one could only imagine the crystal's worth...not to mention the crystals were worth more than weapons and armies to the countries! It wasn't something that could be measured with gold or money!

No one would trade the crystals for money!

It's worth far surpassed the world's currency. In truth, the twenty star price that Hong put one it was pretty low, but since more that ten crystals appeared in the world suddenly, he couldn't give too high a price.

"One crystal alone is worth more than my family's fortune." Xu Xin was shocked.

"Surprised? In this battle for the crystals, the number of wargods who died was more than twenty! The number of representatives who died was three! If it wasn't for the elixir of life, I'm afraid more than ten representatives would have died!" Luo Feng initial news didn't seem to shake Xu Xin much, hence he reported something more shocking.

"Representatives, beings that have surpassed the wargod level? Three died?" Xu Xin was deeply shocked by this news.

Luo Feng was still in the deep underground cave, pacing step by step while looking at the quantum computer screen. Seeing Xu Xin's shocked expression was interesting to him.

"Hm?"

Pacing around the cave, Luo Feng suddenly felt pain at his soles!

"What's going on?" Luo Feng stepped back, cold sweat dripping from his head, moving his body about 10m away. He was a star traveller spirit reader, donning a SS Grade battle armor along with a black god set! With this kind of defense, what kind of attack could let his leg feel pain?

He didn't even realize it happened.

"Just what could it be?" Luo Feng used his spirit energy to sweep the area.

His spirit energy swept the area.

The place where he felt pain before lay a piece of rock that had an item stuck in it.

"This is?" Luo Feng controlled his breathing and walked over.

Reaching out to the rock which held a blood red broken shard, he

realized it was really heavy! Laying as big as his palm, Luo Feng felt it weighed about a ton, far surpassing the density of any known material on earth.

A broken blood red shard. One side was a sharp knife's edge.

This shard, should have come from a battle knife or sword.

Who knew how long this shard had been stuck in this rock, and all he did was step on it and it hurt.

"My leg?" Luo Feng lifted his right leg to check, the SS grad battle armor was slit open! There was an open slit! As though the armor was sliced open like tofu.

"My god."

Luo Feng stared at the slit, shocked.

"This, this, this..." Luo Feng was stuttering, face flushed.

"This is a SS grade battle armor."

What exactly was the SS Grade Battle armor? It could withstand an attack by a king level monster, only after repeated attacks by a king level monster would it break apart! Just like the Mountain Drill, only with Luo Feng's twelve blades joining forces can it break apart an SS grade battle armor.

Otherwise, even with the Mountain Drill, even if it was a wargod, one couldn't break the SS grade battle armor.

"My god."

"I didn't use any strength, just walking and just by stepping on it, it cut through the ss grade battle armor?" Luo Feng's hand held the blood red knife shard, just grasping it and he could feel an indescribable fear, almost as though that shard could cut through anything or material.

"It, just how sharp is it." Luo Feng immediately took off his battle armor.

Right hand holding the shard.

Xiu!

He easily swung it around.

Pu! Pu! Pu! Almost like cutting tofu, the SS grade armor was immediately cut into small pieces falling on the floor, with hardly any resistance.

"I haven't even used much of my strength, about 10% maybe, and it easily cut through the SS material."

“If I use my full strength, cutting through the monster emperor’s defense should be easy too.”

With that thought, Luo Feng’s heart pounded.

Almost like seeing a ghost while he stared at the shard, this was a divine weapon! Stronger by who knows how much than his Soaring Shuttle, with just a shard, it can cut through the SS armor like tofu!

This weapon was too powerful.

This weapon was scary enough to threaten the monster emperor, maybe even Hong or Thunder God.

“No.”

“This weapon is too scary; I cannot reveal it at the moment. Once it’s out…no matter how much they respect me, Hong or Thunder God would never allow such a powerful weapon to stay in my hands.” Luo Feng was clear on this point, that this was the most powerful weapon on earth! An unbelievably powerful weapon!

“Just, just who does it belong to?”

“How, how did it even break?”

Luo Feng carefully analyzed the blood red shard in his hands as

he felt the ancient powers it held within it…who knew just how old these powers were.

Chapter 43 – Archaeological Ruin

Grasping the blood red shard in his palm, Luo Feng was nervous and trembling! There was no way he wouldn't be nervous, this was such a miraculous discovery, almost as though a beggar suddenly discovered in an abandoned factory 10 piles of gold, piles as tall as two people. This discovery was extremely shocking.

With just a little strength, he could cut through the SS grade armor. This would drive anyone on earth crazy.

"Hu."

"Calm down."

This kind of excitement persisted for some time before he started calming down, taking his time to carefully sort out the situation.

"Obviously, this is a shard from a knife!"

"I am a spirit reader, I can use my spirit energy to control it, using it as one of my flying blades to attack the enemy. However... for Hong and Thunder God, this shard's abilities shouldn't be as attractive to them as I thought. "Calm down, Luo Feng understood, "Hong and Thunder God are fighters! Hong uses a spear while Thunder God uses a battle sword. This shard is practically useless to them!"

"Smelting weapon? With this kind of special material, smelting it

would definitely be too difficult and impossible.”

While Luo Feng didn’t understand much about the blood red shard in his hand, within the short amount of time he had with it, he understood that this was an extremely scary weapon, a weapon shard! That weapon shard, how could it withstand extreme high and low temperatures? Hong and Thunder God wouldn’t be able to use it effectively!

This little shard...was meant for a spirit reader to control and use.

“No matter, without a 100% guarantee of a way to protect myself, I’ll be better off not using this shard yet!” Luo Feng made a quick decision, “From today, I’ll keep this shard on myself at all times, never ever taking it out. Unless a situation arises where I have to deal with an enemy, it shall remain hidden. However once it’s out, I have to kill the enemy no matter what!”

In his heart, Luo Feng had decided the shard would be his trump card!

Even with the full strength of the Mountain Drill, it took power and effort to break through the SS armor, this shard however was way more powerful!

“Go!”

Luo Feng’s intentions moved, surrounding the shard with spirit

energy, at the same time taking off the armor from his left foot and right foot using his spirit energy to hover them in mid air.

"Break!"

The knife shard, under the control of his spirit energy became a red light, "Pu, pu, pu" very light sounds, the two battle boots, under the red light's attack, quickly got slashed apart. This led Luo Feng to pause as the two boots became a large number of torn bits, falling from mid air.

"It's really powerful."

"Even the speed of flight is amazingly fast, more than 10 times faster than the speed of sound, without any sonic booms." Luo Feng took a deep cold breath.

Normal wargods used weapons that weighed a few hundred kg and could travel several times the speed of sound.

Luo Feng, a level 1 star traveller spirit reader, controlling a weapon shard that weighed a ton, this speed was normal! However going by theory, the speed shouldn't be that fast as he was using light knife blades, flying knives. It was only through experiment that he realized something weird.

This weapon shard, travelling 10 times the speed of sound, slicing through the air, never actually caused any sonic booms!

Under the pressure of the weapon shard, it was as though even the air was sliced apart easily! The air resistance was... extremely low. One must know, the faster something was, the high the air resistance. Yet, this weapon shard was extremely fast and met with very little air resistance, while it may be heavier than the flying blades he normally used, it wasn't slower by much.

"Such low air resistance. If a battle sword was made with this, it's speed would be frighteningly faster by many times." Luo Feng was liking this this weapon shard more and more.

Luo Feng looked at his Black God Set.

"Black God Set!"

"The black god set is well known for its defensive capabilities, extremely durable and sturdy! I wonder if this weapon shard can break through the black god set!" Luo Feng's head was filled with this thought, unable to resist the temptation. With a thought, the arm on the black god set extended to 3 m long.

The blood red shard floated not too far away.

"Is this weapon shard's attack power stronger, or the black god set's defensive powers?" Luo Feng's eyes lit up.

"Go!"

With a thought, the blood red shard increased its speed in an

instant to become a red flash! Owing to it's own specially built properties, with very low air resistance, one could barely hear a faint sound of wind from its movements. At that moment, the red weapon shard had already cut into the black god set's thumb.

Pu!

Almost like cutting tree root, with large amounts of plants and vegetation wrapping around the shard, it was obviously difficult.

"Pu!"

With extreme difficulty, the shard finally cut through!

The black god set's thumb swayed for a moment, before naturally, like water flowing, swiftly joining back together, as though it had never been damaged.

"It actually broke through?"

"My god,"

Luo Feng's heart was really excited! He knew no matter how powerful the defensive capabilities of the black god set was, it should have its limits. There couldn't be no attack that could penetrate it's 9 layers! However...he, just a level 1 star traveller spirit leader, with the help of the miraculous weapon shard actually had the power to cut through the black god set.

While it was for only a brief moment, the black god set repaired itself perfectly after.

But Luo Feng remembered it very clearly.

“Great. But this black god set’s defensive capabilities are definitely formidable, I cut through the SS amor like tofu and yet it was so difficult to cut through the black god set. No wonder even at full strength, my Mountain Drill couldn’t break the black god set.” Luo Feng was delighted, he knew from today…

If he was caught in a real deathmatch.

Even if the 3rd, 4th or 5th representative faced himself, would be courting death!

However against Thunder God or Hong, he didn’t have such guarantee.

“Finding both the Mu Ya Crystals and this weapon shard.” Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat, “Will there be other treasures, like other pieces of this weapon shard?”

With this thought, Luo Feng apologized to Xu Xin who was still on the line, and continued his search.

******

About 15600 m underground, deep in the thick rock stratum.

“Locked on target.”

“Acquired the shard of the outer layer.”

“Change suggestion, begin luring”

A small ripple of change undetectable by the naked eyes had begun, from the deepest parts of the underground in a straight line along the rock stratum…reaching the currently excavating Luo Feng. This thing, which was invisible to the naked eye, apparatuses, and spiritual force travelled straight into Luo Feng’s thoughts.

……

Luo Feng was gradually heading deeper.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked at his communicator. He was receiving a call.

“Hello.” Luo Feng answered.

“Luo Feng, it’s me Liu He! Have you found anything, any more crystals? Countless representatives have been searching but have yet to even discover a strand of hair.” Liu He was unresigned.

“I haven’t found any crystals myself, it’s all based on luck.” Luo Feng laughed.

“Hm, I’ve discussed with the others. We intend to search for another 6 hours, if we find nothing, we’ll head back.” Liu He said, “We can go back together then.”

“Ok.”

Luo Feng was all smiles. He ended the call.

“I’ve been searching for so long and have yet to discover another shard piece. Hm, I’ll have to dig deeper. After such a long time, with the transformations of the world and the movement of the earth etc, such a mysterious weapon should have sunk to the deepest parts of the earth.” Luo Feng proceeded to go deeper, until he reached 9000m underground.

9000m, 10000m, 11000, 12000…

Deeper and deeper!

Finally, 15000m!

……

“Arrived at the destination.”

“Hide the cabin door, close.”

This deep underground, there was a huge accumulation of rock stratum, and at that moment, a particular rock began to shake and rumble, before ‘Hu’, like a bubbly bursting, that rock just vanished, revealing behind it...

A half opened cabin door covered in dust!

.....

Luo Feng was heading deeper without a destination, just following a hunch, that if there were any other shards around, they would be here.

“I’ll head this way.”

Luo Feng was moving purely on instinct, heading deeper to follow that path. However the strange thing was...every move he made to follow that path, was leading him closer and closer to that ancient cabin door, until finally...

“RUMBLE”:

Breaking through the rock stratum, Luo Feng turned around. While it was dark, a star traveller’s eyesight allowed Luo Feng to see clearly through the narrow cracks that there was metal.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng used his spirit energy to clear a large amount of the rocks surrounding the door away, at the same time making a path big enough only for two to pass. At the end of path...lay a dust covered bizarre silver white metal door, and this door was similar to the intelligent battleship doors, left half open.

“What is this?”

“Door?”

Luo feng was shocked.

Deep underground over 1000m below, appears a dust covered door?

“Is this an ancient ruin on earth that has yet to be discovered?” Luo Feng was excited as he knew earth had already discovered many ancient ruins and Hong and Thunder God had received knowledge from these ruins, possibly the reason why Hong and Thunder God managed to stay so high above everybody else in power.

“What door is this?”

Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat, immediately deploying 18 blades

from his soaring shuttle. The blades quickly became blurred light, smashing away the rocks surrounding the door.

Chi chi chi...

Once the rocks were cleared, piece by piece falling off, it revealed a similar silver white metal.

“This ancient ruin might just be dangerous.” Luo Feng was like a curious monkey, wanting to eat the peach but worried about the traps that may lie around. Taking one step a time till he was just 20m away.

“Spirit energy sweep.”

20m away from the door, Luo Feng focused his spirit energy along the door and permeated the surface, checking just what lay behind this mysterious door.

“That, that is...”

Luo Feng was dumbfounded, eyes bloodshot from the excitement and shock.

Chapter 44 – The 50,000 Year Corpse

“It’s no wonder so many Mu Ya Crystals have appeared on Misty Island. Historical remains, discovering historical remains was the quickest way to make a name in the world. Hong discovered quite a few remains, thus becoming the earth’s richest, giving him the ability to build his own unique auto jet.” Luo Feng’s black god set started to move, enveloping his whole body.

This ancient ruin seems really big.

One needed to walk in himself before he could examine the whole place!

“One needed to make sacrifices to get results.” Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat, his soaring shuttle immediately took the form of the ‘Mountain Bulwark’, floating his blades along with the blade shard in mid air surrounding him.

Luo Feng squinted his eyes, taking one step at a time towards the cabin door.

The cabin door was about 20m wide, with a 8m deep path, one that was spacious and forked left and right.

“Mu Ya Crystals!” Luo Feng lowered his head, looking straight ahead.

In the ground along the path, small white glowing crystals were

all gathered together, 10, 20, 30...a white blur, the thick fragrance of rice as he stepped in through the cabin door suffocated him! Luo Feng bent down, quickly collecting all the floating Mu Ya Crystals, putting them into the black bag on his bag.

As he collected them, he counted each one of them.

“289 crystals!” As he put the last crystal into his back, Luo Feng could feel his heart racing, almost as though someone was beating a big drum inside.

“The combined forces from earth managed to acquire a total of 42 crystals officially! Adding on those that weren’t reported, I’d estimate the total to be about 60.” Luo Feng came up with the rough estimate, everyone of those crystals were worth a fortune to Man!

Hong may have acquired 10 and felt beyond satisfied. He even proposed to Luo Feng and the others; every crystal is worth 20 star points.’

Now...

Luo Feng, just in that cabin, had acquired 289 crystals! Much more than all of earth’s forces combined.

“This must be the real resting place of the crystals, the ones outside can’t be that many.”

“Just the door entrance and there’s 289, I wonder what else is in there.”

Luo Feng was anticipating much more, an archeological ruin can’t just have Mu Ya crystals…in fact just the entrance to it had so many crystals, this proved that this ruin was holding a much bigger treasure inside it! Much bigger and more bountiful than any of earth’s other discovered ruins.

……

Following the pathway, Luo Feng was careful as he stepped in through the dust-covered floor.

Once through the door, the path broke into two paths left and right.

The moment he stepped to the crossroads, looking left and right, stunned, “That, that…” On Luo Feng’s left down the path, the walls were made of a unique metal, however, the walls had huge dents and fist marks, a total of nine huge fist prints.

The path itself had a huge corpse leaning on the pathway!

“Mini quantum computer, scan.” Lupo Feng aimed the mini quantum computer straight at the body.

“The target has no life force, deceased.” The mini quantum computer displayed the words through its screen.

Yes, a corpse!

Luo Feng held his breath, carefully examining the corpse, this corpse's skin was totally dark, body strong and sturdy. He even donned a special battle armor that was covered in unique patterns, patterns that were much more complicated than those on the soaring shuttle. Both his fists were covered in a special glove, one red pupil still open and looking determined.

"My god."

The moment Luo Feng made eye contact with the corpse, his heart began trembling, almost like an ant against a giant dragon...

No!

Correctly put, it was like a normal person facing PanGu, the creator of the universe. Even though it was a corpse, that one eye alone hadn't lost it's light! Who knows how long since has that person been dead...yet that one look made Luo Feng tremble, cold sweat running from his head and back.

"This, what kind of level has this powerful fighter reached? Too frightening." Luo Feng drew a big cold breath.

"Calm down."

“Calm down.”

He realized he couldn’t manage eye contact with the corpse, the moment he did, even if he tried to calm himself down, he would still uncontrollably be filled with fear. The kind of fear for his life! No matter how strong his willpower was.

“Don’t look at it’s eyes.”

Luo Feng gradually calmed down, avoiding the corpse’s eyes, carefully examining, “Its height was about 8m! It was fairly similar to a large black gorilla, but it’s skin was totally hairless, shiny and smooth! Judging from its surroundings, it should have died many many years ago. Yet its skin, hair, hasn’t decayed or dried up at all? Almost like it’s alive?”

If the corpse wasn’t covered in a layer of dust, Luo Feng would have assumed this mysterious being may have died not too long ago.

“The body seems undamaged, how did it die?” Luo Feng thought for a while, shaking his head. He didn’t have an answer at all.

“Let’s see what’s inside.”

Luo Feng was in no rush to further examine the body, walking past through the side of the corpse. Following down the spacious path, one road was unblocked with little side roads along the way, but Luo Feng continued following down the big spacious path.

After about 300m, the path began to wind, until a big door appeared!

This door was more than 10m wide, and more than 10m tall. It was half-open.

“This is…”

Luo Feng tried not to make any sounds as he stepped through the door.

“My god.” Luo Feng unconsciously gasped cold air, this was a at least 10m tall, 200m wide semi-circular gorgeous hall. What shocked Luo Feng the most was…the hall had a total of five oddly shaped bodies! No…it was six in total!

Luo Feng used the mini quantum computer to scan once, there was indeed no life force or energy coming from any of them.

None of the five bodies still looked very alive, without any form of decay whatsoever.

The 6th body however, was left with nothing but bones that glowed golden, skin and hair long turned to ash.

“This 6th body.”

Luo Feng carefully examined.

One of the odd shaped corpses was very similar to the one he discovered at the entrance, slightly smaller but akin to that of a black gorilla with a height of about 6m. This body collapsed half kneeling on the ground. His battle armor was broken, body riddled with injuries, yet none of the injuries had a trace of decay.

The 2nd body was more similar to that of man, about 4m tall, covered in black scales with a horn on his forehead and a tail covered in scales!

The 3rd body was also similar in shape to man, about 6m tall, it's skin looked almost like tortoise shells. This was like one of the American old films Luo Feng was familiar with, <Fantastic 4>, where one of the characters was like a stone man. This body however was much better looking. The shell was smooth and shiny, gathered together almost like an exquisite battle armor.

The 4th body, was almost identical to a human's body.

Yellow skin, black hair and a scar on it's face, yet he looked calm as he sat cross-legged on the floor, body covered in dust.

"From earth? Chinese?" Luo Feng stared at the 4th body, curious but regretful.

Luo Feng could feel that...while these things had been dead for a very long time, every corpse emanated a power that made one

tremble helplessly! These were all exceptional warriors! Way stronger than Hong and Thunder God by many times, countless times stronger than Luo Feng himself.

And this one actually looked like a Chinese man, making Luo Feng even more regretful that he was dead.

“This 5th body?

Luo Feng was suspicious as he looked.

The four bodies he had examined had injuries, but non-lethal injuries. This 5th body was 5m tall, it’s body was a copper color, almost like it was molded in copper, and his chest had a huge cavity, like it was pierced with a hand.

The strange thing was... The cavity in it’s chest was actually filled with copper colored weird materials, not organs.

“Is this a person? Luo Feng shook his head.

“This 6th body is the most normal.” Luo Feng looked at the body, about 2 m tall, left with nothing but bones, glowing golden. The most unique thing was that there was a small curved horn on his skull’s forehead, almost like it was proving it was different from earth’s man with that.

.....

Six bodies in the hall, including the one at the entrance path, a total of seven corpses.

These seven corpses, only one had decayed until only gold bones were left, the other six were almost undamaged, vividly life-like.

“If they all died at the same time, why has this one decayed till only its bones are left, obviously dying a long time ago, while the others haven’t decomposed at all?” Luo Feng was suspicious, time was a very powerful weapon, under time’s movement, what kind of body could not decompose?

He surveyed the surroundings of the hall.

The Hall was most empty, only the floor and ceilings had dents here and there, as though a battle had occurred before.

“Di!”

A sound came through.

“Hm?” Luo Feng was startled.

The dark hall suddenly lit up, a blinding light shot down from the ceiling of the hall, enveloping the entire hall. At the same time, the peculiar light concentrated in the middle of the hall, forming a black silhouette figure of a man. This figure was about 1.4 or 1.5 m

tall, small like a child, two horns growing from its forehead, pupils red and dressed in a black robe.

"Luo Feng, You've finally come." The black robed child stared at Luo feng, red pupils shining with glee.

"You are?" Luo Feng cautiously looked at the black robed child.

The child was actually speaking one of earth's language, chinese!

It even knew his name!

"I've waited for you for 50,000 years." The child shook his head, "The knowledge you earthlings possess is really too little and lousy, 50,000 years before I finally get a suitable candidate."

"50,000 years?" Luo Feng trembled, "You are saying, this archeological ruin has been here for 50,000 years, have they been dead for 50,000years?"Luo Feng pointed towards the 6 uniquely shaped bodies in the hall.

"Yes."

"They've been dead for 50,000 years." The black rocked child glanced at the six bodies in the hall, shaking his head and sighing, "They were all unmatched powerful and important figures in the vast universe, immortal beings. Time itself lost its splendor in front of these beings, even in death...Their bodies stay forever immortal."

“However, once the Master dies, they must follow and be buried along with him.” The black robed child looked at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, follow me to pay respects to the Master.”

Chapter 45 – My Name Is Babata

In the marvelous, semicircular shaped hall, the black robed child's small white hand pointed at the center of the ground. Suddenly, a "CHICHI" sound rang, and the metallic floor suddenly split open, revealing a tunnel.

"Come with me"

The black robed child walked in front while Luo Feng followed behind.

"He wants me to go pay my respects to what master? The master that died 50,000 years ago?" Luo Feng was filled with confusion. But one thing was clear: with what the archaeological ruin has displayed so far..... it really wouldn't take any special trick to kill him. So Luo Feng could only forcefully suppress his curiosity and follow one step at time.

At the end of the tunnel, the black robed child leaped down, while Luo Feng also leaped after him.

The depth of the passage was around 30 meters. When the black robed child and Luo Feng landed on the ground below, the dark hall lit up. With a glance, Luo Feng saw..... that this dark hall was empty. The walls formed an octagonal shape but there was nothing inside the hall.

"Open!" the black robed child pointed towards the ground.

“CRACK~~~”

The ground slightly shook and slowly started to split open.

“Master’s corpse was placed in an extremely secure location. You’ll have to wait a bit to see it” the black robed child looked towards Luo Feng, his blood red pupils caused one to freeze, “Luo Feng, you must be full of confusion now right?”

“Yes” Luo Feng didn’t deny it.

“Let me introduce myself, I’m Babata! You can call me ‘Demon Babata’. Of course, this is how it sounds when translated into earth’s Chinese language. It should be called ‘xxxx’ in the common language of the universe.” Even though Luo Feng heard what the black robed child said, he couldn’t understand him at all.

Luo Feng froze, Demon Babata?

“The word ‘demon’ here, is a title I gave to myself” continued the black robed child, “In essence, I’m an AI!”

“AI?” Luo Feng was confused.

An AI like the bald crystal person in archaeological ruin #9.

“However, AIs have different levels! Your simple logic programs

on earth have no right to be called an AI! To be able to be called AI..... it cannot be inferior to a human in critical thinking. Like the AI in archaeological ruin #9, only that can be called a true AI" said the black robed child.

"As for me....."

"Even though I'm an AI at my core, after following master for countless years, I have already surpassed an AI. I can be called a 'living AI'! I'm a lifeform like you humans, and animals, plants, etc!" the tone of the black robed child was a bit excited, "I also have various emotions like joy, anger, sadness, etc. And I also have the ability to train myself!"

"And back then, my master prepared a body for me. With that body, I let the name 'Demon Babata' spread across many galaxies in the vast universe!" a bit of pride was on the black robed child's face.

Luo Feng was secretly shocked as he heard this.

Joy, anger, and sadness? The ability to train? How is this an AI system at all. It indeed has the right to be called 'living AI'.

According to what he said, there are four levels: logic programs ——AI comparable to the logic of a real human——AI with emotions——living AI.

"In the battle that involved countless galaxies and destroyed

countless things in its wake, my body was destroyed and I once again returned to the virtual existence of an AI" said the black robed child with a bit of sadness, "I can still go back to being a virtual AI, but master....." he turned his head to the slowly appearing crystal coffin!

A transparent crystal coffin slowly floated up from the ground!

Luo Feng also looked carefully. The crystal coffin was six meters long, four meters wide, and two meters tall. The completely transparent crystal coffin emanated horrifyingly cold air. Luo Feng, who was wearing his black god set and was a spirit reader at the star traveller one stage, couldn't help but to shiver. It was too cold! With temperatures this low, this crystal coffin probably wasn't made out of crystal. But Luo Feng didn't know what material this was either, so he'll call it the crystal coffin for now!

Inside the crystal coffin lay a corpse!

This corpse was around three meters long and had two flexible antenna on its forehead. Other than its large body and its antennae, it looked exactly like a human on earth.

It wore a black robe that was shining dimly. Its long hair was spread out as it silently lay in the crystal coffin, as if it was asleep. Its face was extremely handsome, and its two narrow, long eyes were quite feminine..... even though it's just a corpse now, it had a peculiar beauty to it that could shake one's spirit.

"Master!"

The black robed child held onto the crystal coffin. His tiny white hands grasped tightly while he had a fierce expression on.

“PA!” “PA!”

Two tears dropped.

“Living AIs can even cry?” Luo Feng was a bit shocked.

“Kneel down” the black robed child furiously turned his head towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng froze.

“I told you to kneel down. Because you are a member of Yun Mo planet, and my master..... is the master of Yun Mo planet! You should be kneeling down!” roared the black robed child. A bit of insanity could be seen in his eyes. However, soon after, the black robed child closed his eyes and then opened them again. He calmed down quite a bit as he laughed bitterly, “I haven’t talked to anyone for 50,000 years, so my emotions are kinda in disarray. Without joy, anger, or sadness, I would just be a simple AI. 50,000 years of solitude wouldn’t be much. But after developing emotions, 50,000 years was gruelling to endure. Really..... my temper was quite good in the past”

Luo Feng didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

“Babata, you said this corpse is the master of Yun Mo planet, could he be Hu Yan Bo?” Luo Feng was a bit nervous.

“Yes, when translated into earth’s Chinese language, it could be translated into Hu Yan Bo!” the black robed child’s emotions seemed to gradually relax.

“Hu Yan Bo..... Yun Mo planet’s master Hu Yan Bo!” Luo Feng took in a deep breath.

“Just because of the inheritance I received from him, I should pay my respects!”

Luo Feng directly kneeled down and tapped his head on the ground three times consecutively. To this person called Hu Yan Bo..... even though Luo Feng has never seen him before, ever since he started practicing《Soaring Sky》, he has always praised this senior! To be able to create so many spiritual weapons, how amazing must he be? And the ‘soaring shuttle’ is just one of those weapons.

Since he uses the soaring shuttle and is practicing《Soaring Sky》, he should pay his respects to this senior!

“Luo Feng”

The black robed child looked towards Luo Feng, “Let me ask you, are you willing to become a student of my master and become the future master of Yun Mo planet? Of course..... Yun Mo planet has

already been destroyed, this power has already been eradicated”

“Become his student?” Luo Feng froze.

Becoming a student of a dead person? Could it be..... that this super powerful master of Yun Mo planet has some sort of treasure to be inherited?

When the black robed child ‘Babata’ saw Luo Feng hesitate, he started to get a bit nervous since this was the first suitable person he encountered in 50,000 years. He quickly said: “Luo Feng! My master Hu Yan Bo..... is an eternal existence! In the roughly 6,000 eras he was alive, he ventured across the universe and became one of the truly powerful fighters in the universe”

“Around 6,000 eras?” followed Luo Feng.

“One era, is equivalent to earth’s..... 10,081 years” said Babata.

“Senior Hu Yan Bo was alive for around 60 million years?” Luo Feng stared at Babata.

Babata widened his eyes and said with anger, “Master was an undying existence, an eternal existence! If it wasn’t for the final battle..... master could live on forever! In the vast universe, there are many who have lived over a hundred million years. There are even some undying existences who have existed longer than the earth has!”

Luo Feng blinked twice.

The time of earth's existence?

The time of some powerful fighter's existence?

"Luo Feng, using a phrase from your earth, you're a frog in a well!" Babata's face was filled with anger. However, his tiny white face seemed to be quite cute, "You have been to archaeological ruin #9, but that so called archaeological ruin #9 is just one of the large amounts of monitoring bases under Yun Mo planet, and it has very, very little information!"

"Today, I'll teach you a lesson and let you understand the wonders and vastness of the universe!"

Babata raised his tiny head, "According to what you earthlings say, the galaxy you reside in is called the Milky Way! But do you know..... how many galaxies there are in the vast universe?"

"Uh....."

Luo Feng remembered learning in school that earth has discovered over ten billion galaxies! The universe is indeed vast and limitless. A galaxy is already super gigantic, and ten billion galaxies is an astronomical number. And this is only the portion that humanity has discovered.

"A few dozen billion galaxies?" Luo Feng was a bit hesitant and

gave a rough number without any confidence.

"Hm?"

Babata frowned and then said, "I guess it's good enough for you to give such an answer. There are a countless number of lifeforms in the countless amount of species growing in the universe! Out of those species, humans are one of the most powerful races in the universe. When I'm talking about humans, I'm not talking about what you know on earth"

"Like in the little games on your planet, 'orcs', 'elves', etc. are mentioned. Those all count as a branch of the human race"

Luo Feng could only listen carefully.

"The Milky Way galaxy in which your earth resides in has a total of around two hundred billion stars! The amount of planets are so high that it's shocking. However, out of the countless planets, only about 210,000 of them have large amounts of people living on them" said Babata, "The Milky Way galaxy, Beta galaxy, etc. These neighboring eight large galaxies form the Silverblue Empire, a low level civilized nation in the universe!

"Eight galaxies, one empire?" Luo Feng was in disbelief, "And also, you said that there are around 210,000 planets with large amounts of life on them in the Milky Way galaxy?"

Holy!

And earth hasn't even discovered a single one so far.

"Startling?"

"Even though the Silverblue Empire is a low level nation, it's still a 'low level civilized nation' in the universe! Their civilization greatly surpasses yours. Even if they send a fleet of starships to the space surrounding your earth, you probably wouldn't even be able to discover them!" said Babata with disdain, "Normally, if a galaxy as large as the Milky Way galaxy develops normally..... one universe level fighter will be born! Of course, with the guidance from a powerful teacher, efficiency could be higher! However, my guess is that in the eight large galaxies under the control of the Silverblue Empire, it would be pretty good for the number of universe level fighters to surpass ten."

"Of course, a low level civilized nation..... is like an ant in front of my master" spoke Babata nonstop.

Chapter 46 – Undying, Eternal, Deity

A low level civilized nation is like an ant in front of Yun Mo planet's master?

Luo Feng was shocked by this sentence.

This Silverblue Empire is a vast empire that controls the Milky Way galaxy, the Beta Galaxy, and six other galaxies! Just the Milky Way galaxy has over 210,000 planets with large amounts of life on them, so how vast must this empire be? Earth is like a grain of sand in the ocean compared to this empire!

But such a powerful empire seems to be nothing in Babata's mind.

"Don't doubt"

"You cannot even begin to imagine the might of my master." There was a bit of praise in Babata's eyes.

"I've already said that the Milky Way galaxy, Beta galaxy, and the other six galaxies come together to form the Silverblue Empire, a low level civilized nation in the universe!"

"According to what the map of the universe describes, your galaxy is part of the 'Black Dragon Mountain starfield', which contains a total of 8,000 galaxies! And the one that controls the 'Black Dragon Mountain starfield'..... is a pretty decent medium

level civilized nation in the universe—— the Black Dragon Mountain Empire”

“The Black Dragon Mountain empire has direct control of over 6,000 galaxies and over 500 low level civilized nations. And the Silverblue Empire is just one of the nations that belongs to the Black Dragon Mountain Empire” Babata spoke fluently.

Luo Feng was a bit flabbergasted.

The Black Dragon Mountain starfield? Contains around 8,000 galaxies? Has control of over 500 nations? The Silverblue Empire is just one of the nations under its control?

“Don’t give me that look”

“Even though the Black Dragon Mountain Empire is a bit more powerful, they still have to be polite in front of my master!” said Babata, “As for powerful fighters, if they develop normally..... around 1,000 galaxies will give birth to one ‘sector lord level’ fighter”

“STOP!”

yelled Luo Feng.

“What?” Babata looked towards Luo Feng.

“What sector lord level? I only learned from archaeological ruin #9 that..... fighters are categorized into the student level, star traveller level, star level, universe level, and the level above the universe level” asked Luo Feng. As he listened to Babata speak, he felt like he was looking up to an extremely high mountain, and then realized that there were even taller mountains behind that mountain!

The limitless universe contains an uncountable number of powerful fighters!

“Oh, let me develop your common sense a bit” said Babata, “The fighter and spirit reader categories can be split into... oh and don’t mention students to me. Students do not have the right to be called ‘fighters, spirit readers'”

“They are mainly split into the star traveller level, star level, universe level, domain lord, and sector lord, these five major levels. Once you surpass sector lord..... you become undying!”

“The star traveller level can only wander around in the universe. They can be guards for hire, servants, or cannon fodder” said Babata with quite a bit of disdain.

“The star level can count as a major figure on some insignificant star in the universe. However, on some more important stars, they should keep a low profile”

“The universe level, hmm, yeah, they can count as a powerful fighter! After all, a galaxy usually only gives birth to one universe

level fighter. They can easily earn a few dozen stars as territory after joining a civilized nation”

“The domain lord can count as the king of an area! Low level civilized nations wouldn’t mess with domain lords, and they can build up their own powers and organizations. In the vast universe, any civilized nation fights over domain lord level fighters!”

“The sector lord, hehe, they have authority! It’s extremely easily for them to earn an entire galaxy as their territory! Sector lord level fighters..... have definitely reached the ‘inner world’ state where they control an entire world..... Luo Feng, if you can become a sector level fighter and have no ambitions, you can wander the universe” said Babata seemingly jokingly as he looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng listened carefully.

According to what he heard in archaeological ruin #9, a countless amount of planets only give birth to one universe level fighter, so it seemed hopeless for Luo Feng. And now, he heard that above the universe level is..... the domain lord! And there’s even a sector lord above the domain lord! One can imagine how difficult it would be to reach such a level!

“Only above the sector level can you become undying”

Babata’s expression became serious.

“Whether the star traveller level, star level, universe level,

domain lord, or sector lord, they are all under the restraints of life. Star level fighters can live for one era at most, universe level fighters can live for 10 eras at most, domain lord level fighters can live for 100 eras, and sector lord can live for 1,000 eras! Of course, using the time of your earth, sector lords can live for a bit more than 10 million years”

“Sector lord existences will still fall with time!”

“Only those surpassing the sector level become undying! Undying fighters, also called ‘eternal fighters’, also called ‘deities'” Babata’s eyes were shining, “Once you become an undying fighter, you can enjoy eternal life! Master..... was an undying fighter!”

Luo Feng held his breath.

Undying fighter?

Star traveller, star, universe, domain lord, sector lord, undying!

“Undying fighters have a countless number of special abilities!”

“Even a star railgun that can instantly vaporize a galaxy cannot injure an undying fighter!” smiled Babata, “Now you should understand why I said..... that a low level civilized nation is like an ant in front of my master”

Luo Feng’s blood was boiling.

An attack that can instantly vaporize a galaxy? Cannot even harm an undying fighter?

“Don’t think so far ahead”

“1,000 normally developing galaxies give birth to only one sector lord!”

“Luo Feng, even with my master’s inheritance and my help, you can probably barely become a sector lord in 100,000 years! However, to become undying..... the possibility is basically zero!” Babata slightly shook his head, “Sigh, you humans aren’t talented at all. If you lose to everyone else at the starting line, then it will be extremely, extremely, extremely difficult to achieve greater heights!”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to say: “Come on Babata, you don’t have to say it like that”

“Hehe”

Babata grinned, revealing two little fangs, “I just said basically zero! There’s actually a way to speed up your training by ten times, a hundred times”

“What way?” said Luo Feng curiously.

“Soul transfer!” Babata smiled mysteriously.

“Soul transfer?”

Of course Luo Feng knew what this meant.

Babata smiled: “You probably have realized that the descendents of the so called ‘fighters’ on your earth clearly have a higher chance of becoming fighters”

“Yes” nodded Luo Feng.

The descendents of a fighter have a higher chance of becoming a fighter! That’s because their parents’ genes are already splendid, so their genes won’t be deficient!

“This is a type of evolution” said Babata, “If your earth had another 10,000 years or another 100,000 years, every single person on earth can become a ‘student level’ fighter”

“And in the vast universe, there are some human races that have evolved quite perfectly” sighed Babata, “For example, the human race that ranks in the top ten in terms of lineage—— Manka planet people. Even though Manka planet people are few in number, each one of them is born as a star traveller level fighter. As children, they are usually at the star level. When they are young adults, they are usually at the universe level. And when they are adults, they are at the domain lord level! They have one of the best lineages out of the human race”

Luo Feng was flabbergasted.

Holy!

The difference is just infuriating.

All the humans on earth put their lives on the line to bitterly train. They tried everything they could, got lucky, found a good teacher..... and finally! An absolute genius finally stepped into the star traveller level!

And them?

They just drink and play and when they become adults, they are at the 'domain lord level', able to destroy a planet with a flip of the hand.

"This, isn't this too unfair" Luo Feng didn't even know what to say anymore.

"Unfair? That's because the ancestors of the Manka planet people trained bitterly to constantly improve and perfect their race! Only after that could their race stabilize at that level!" said Babata with dissatisfaction, "If earth doesn't give birth to large amounts of powerful fighters, the people on earth will never become powerful"

Luo Feng slightly nodded, the anger in his chest dissipated.

Yeah, only because of the work of a race's ancestors can the genes of that race become more and more perfect, which leads to more and more talented descendents!

"How much faster can a Manka planet person train compared to someone from your earth? Can you imagine it?" scoffed Babata, "In the entire Milky Way galaxy, there are 210,000 planets with large amounts of people living on them. The total population is uncountable. But even from that, it would be nice for one universe level fighter to be born. As for Manka planet people, once they become adults, they become domain lords!"

"So!"

"If you want to become an undying fighter, one way is to..... wait for yourself to become a bit stronger and then steal a more powerful race's body!" Babata turned towards the crystal coffin, "Do you see that? Even though master's original body was a bit better than you earthlings, it wasn't better by much"

"Afterwards, under chance and luck, master used the soul transfer technique and took over a youth's body from the 'Longke tribe'! The Longke tribe can rank in the top 30 in terms of the lineage ranking of humans. When they become adults, they can reach the 'universe level'! With this body, master's training speed soared at an astonishing rate! But even with that, master went through trial after trial to become an undying fighter!"

“Since it is extremely, extremely, extremely difficult for a Manka planet person or someone from the Longke tribe to become undying!”

Babata grinned towards Luo Feng, “What, you have something against soul transferring? Can’t give up your own body?”

Luo Feng admits that he wasn’t really willing to give up his own body.

“How stupid!” Babata curled his lips helplessly, his blood red eyes looked towards Luo Feng with disdain, “And you’re a spirit reader. Don’t you know….. that the essence of one’s self is the soul?”

“Oh well”

“Soul transferring isn’t that easy anyway. You can only soul transfer a target with a soul weaker than yours. If you meet someone with a stronger soul, you’ll end up getting eradicated by them” Babata shook his head, “Too bad you humans just don’t have the talent. Since one with a brain vigor of 22 finally appeared, I can’t be too picky”

“Shouldn’t it be 21?” said Luo Feng.

Babata smacked his little head: “Holy, you are as innocent as a white piece of paper! Do you think that if you keep training as a spirit reader, your brain vigor will never increase? When you were at the student level nine stage, your brain vigor was 21. However,

breaking through to the star traveller level is a transformation in life itself, so your brain vigor increased to 22”

“However, don’t get cocky. These numbers can only be said out loud in the Milky Way galaxy” Babata shook his head with disdain, “In some more powerful planets or core planets in a nation, there are people with brain vigor reaching 30 or even 40 at the student level!”

“Too bad I don’t have a choice. Or more accurately, I can only pick on earth”

“Gotta pick a tall one out of these dwarves”

“I guess the majestic Demon Babata has to graciously help a little star traveller kiddo like you” Babata lifted his head up.

Chapter 47 – Becoming a Student

“I must admit I had a very late start.” Luo Feng said, his heart heavy, and yet he couldn’t deny that on earth, within the pugilistic world, he was considered a genius, always the best and brightest amongst those his age at the dojos! In high school, he was the best and brightest! Once he had become a warrior, entering earth’s most prestigious dojo, he was still considered the best!

Just 21 years of age and he had become a star traveller spirit reader, one of the six big investigators! He was even on par with the 3rd chairman!

However, from Babata’s words…

His worth was beyond pitiful! He knew himself that what Babata said was true, only that Babata’s horizons went beyond earth.

“Babata, if I do not do the soul transfer, how long will it take for me to reach the star level? And how long before I reach the universe level? Luo Feng questioned.

“Fifty years to the star level, definitely.”

Babata confidently said, “500 years to the universe level, no problem! As for the domain lord level, with the preparation my master left before he died for his disciples, 5,000 years-10,000 years should be enough! These four levels, I’m definitely confident, as for the sector lord…training for about 100,000 years should be able to barely make it, you may even need a longer time than that.”

“50 years for the star level? 500 years for the universe level?” Luo Feng blinked hard, the amount of time required seemed forever. From the time he was born till now, Luo Feng had only experienced 20 years, 500 years seemed too long and arduous. The famous Journey to the West had a story about Sun Wukong being trapped under the five finger mountain for only 500 years, the entire Chinese culture has only been around for 5,000 years.

It was too long and endless.

“What, resenting the length?”

The black robed child Babata was so enraged he jumped up, baring his fangs, roaring, “Luo Feng, you have to be clear, earth is in the milky way and should only get a single universe level fighter through normal evolution! Do you think the universe level is so easily attainable? What’s more, your aptitude is so low. If I wasn’t trapped here in earth...looking at the universe, countless geniuses from the many races and species would kneel before me and beg me, Babata, to become my master’s disciple.”

“Do you know the position and rank of my master?”

“Yun Mo Planet’s master!!!”

“He wasn’t just an undying being, he was a champion among the undying! He had a total of nine strong undying beings under him! At the universe level, even a middle level civilization, such an enormous power, had to bow and respectfully bow to my master,

not daring to utter a sound!”

“Even the universe’s high level civilizations had to be polite around my master!”

“The master was one of the most powerful people in the universe, do you not understand?”

“With master’s careful preparations for you, even with such a weak and low aptitude, 50 years to the star level, 500 years to universe level, 5,000-10,000 years to domain lord, and 100,000 years to a sector lord! You find it long?” Babata was angry to the point of shouting, “You really are living in fortune and yet are oblivious to it!!!”

Luo Feng actually knew it himself...

When he was in the 9th archeological ruin, he believed he didn’t stand a chance of ever entering the universe level. Even more so the domain lord or sector lord level! Hell, it took 1,000 eras of normal evolution for a sector lord to appear! Within this 1,000 eras, the number of geniuses from the other human races and species were countless, far above his own aptitude. Yet out of this tens of thousands of geniuses that were above him, they may not even become sector lords...

The difficulty in becoming a sector lord was beyond one’s imagination!

“Babata, what did you say before, nine undying beings as servants?” Luo Feng opened his eyes, “don’t tell me those corpses outside were all servants?” 50,000 years and not a shred of decay, even their hair and skin were still lifelike, Luo Feng guessed that besides the one that had turned to golden bones, the rest were undying beings.

But he never imagined…they were servants!

“Heng!”

Babata lifted his head, full of pride, “Do you only now understand the position of the master?”

“This ship, the Yun Mo planet spaceship’s seven corpses, had one that was left in bones. The remaining six were undying.” Babata looked at Luo Feng, “You should have seen the six undying beings. One of them had a large crevice in his chest, but no internal organs within, right?

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“That was the enemy, an undying being from the automaton race.” Babata sneered, “But him coming in here was like sending himself to death, did he think that an injured master was one he could deal with?”

“Automaton race?” Luo Feng quietly memorized it. That was a race that was completely opposite from the human race, bodies

that weren't made from flesh and blood.

"The other five undying corpses were all master's servants! The Master actually had a total of nine undying servants, however the war that year...involved too many of the universe's strongest, four of his best servants perished in that war, even the master's soul was severely damaged. Even this Yun Mo Planet ship was heavily damaged." Babata shook his head.

Luo Feng was shocked.

The big four undying servants perished? Yun Mo Planet's master soul was heavily damaged?

"Actually, the master, even if his body and soul were to be wiped out, so long as a single cell existed, he could be reborn. Only during then, the enemy was more vicious and stronger than the master." He shook his head.

"Was it a human?" Luo Feng was dumbfounded.

Both body and soul destroyed, even without a soul, he can be reborn from just a cell or fragment?

"Don't be surprised, when you get the master's level, every cell contains a soul imprint (spirit imprint), of course he can be reborn." Babata proudly said, "and master's self-preservation methods didn't just limit itself to one. There were many more methods...however it was a pity that within the vast universe,

endless time and space, there were others stronger than the master!”

Luo Feng slightly nodded his head.

There’s always a mountain taller, one must never get complacent.

“Babata, you said that earth was considered a low level civilization belonging to the Silverblue Empire!”

“And under the Silverblue Empire, there are 8,000 or more Galaxies and the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.”

“What about the high level civilizations?” Luo Feng questioned.

Babata smiled: “Luo Feng, within the universe, one starfield, has 1,000-20,000 Galaxies. Of course there are some specially small starfields and some specially large starfields! The Black Dragon Empire Starfield has 8000 or more Galaxies.

“Above the starfield, there are star sectors! The universe’s biggest unit of measure.”

“One star sector, average level, is about 10,000 starfields, about 100 million galaxies. Of course there are bigger and smaller ones.”

“Your earth, belongs to the Ganwu main star sector, Black

Dragon Empire starfield, milky way." Babata continued, "and this Ganwu main star sector has about 13,000 star fields, galaxies numbering more than a 100 million, it is run by the high level civilization Ganwu universe, with 1,000 or more medium level civilizations under it. This can be considered, in the vast universe, the human race's highest level universe civilization."

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

The universe's highest level civilization?

13,000 galaxies in the starfield? The Black Dragon Empire alone has about a 1,000? The Silverblue Empire, such a low level civilization, like grains of sand...were undoubtedly nothing but ants to the master of the Yun Mo Planet.

A high level civilization in the universe, middle level and low level." Luo Feng committed these to memory. "My earth, belongs to the Ganwu main star sector, Black Dragon Empire Starfield, milky way.

"Do not be ambitious."

Babata said, "The Ganwu universe civilization has existed for countless eras, with vast territories, even undying beings cannot hope to cover all of it."

Luo Feng nodded.

The diameter of the milky way is over 100,000 light years, The Ganwu universe civilization has over 100 million galaxies, just how huge is it?

“Luo Feng.” Babata looked at Luo Feng, “in the vast universe, the race of man is one of the leading races! Do you know why?

“Hm?” Luo Feng was suspicious.

“There’s a wide diversity!” Babata emphasized, “There’s many different types of man, the Manka person from before, Longke, are the strongest bloodlines! However, as there are many different bloodlines and clans ranging up to the tens of thousands, there’ll be the strong and the weak! Like earth’s bloodlines are considered generally weaker, but don’t despair, within the universe, there are many more weaker ones.”

“With the many species of man, the population is greater too, hence they became one of the universe’s leading clans.”

“Besides the leading clans, there are many more different and unique forms of life in the universe! These groups, don’t ever think they are easy to deal with! It’s just because they are small in population, hence their positions aren’t high in the universe. If it came down to power, there are many forms of life that are very powerful and shocking.”

“Different strange and weird forms of life, up to tens of thousands, very peculiar.”

“While most are weaker in battle power, there are many that are stronger.”

“Man’s Manka bloodline, become domain lords when they become adults, they are one of man’s leading bloodlines…however in the vast universe, there are special forms of life that are even stronger than Manka people! One of the most reputable would be the ‘Space Beasts’.

“Space beasts, once matured, can all wander the universe without any protective gear.” Babata said.

Luo Feng was shocked.

“Space beasts, have many types, the weak ones, are star travellers at birth, star travellers at adolescence and universe level at maturity.” These are the weakest space beasts.”

“Some are closer to the Manka people, star travellers at birth, star level at growth, universe at young adults and domain lords at their peak.”

“The scariest of the space beasts, star travellers at birth… Universe level at youth, domain lords at young adult and sector lords at their peak.’ These are the leaders in the universe.” Babata looked at Luo Feng, “The undying level is unattainable just by relying on bloodlines, so the best bloodline is those that can reach the sector lord level.”

“Man’s best bloodline, can reach the domain lord level. It is considered very good.”

“In the universe some can actually grow straight into the sector lord level, that was like taking a step and reaching the heavens. Of course…this had its cons. Their numbers were shockingly small!” Babata laughed, “let’s take the leading group of space beasts’ bloodline, ‘Flaming star beast,’ they are born within a star, the high temperatures can’t even harm them. They swallow countless stars and spend lots of time before becoming sector lords. Once they become sector lords, they don’t have the need to swallow stars anymore. One flaming star beast’s lifespan is extremely long! But from its birth till its death, it wanders the universe, probably never ever meeting another flaming star beast!”

“There are several more types similar to the life of these space beasts.”

“Without exception, pitifully small in population!” Babata shook his head, “However if you ever meet one in the universe, you have to be extremely careful.”

Luo Feng nodded his head.

My god, a creature that eats stars, what an abnormality! However it may never meet one of it’s kind with it’s extremely small population.

“Generally speaking, there are countless races and clans of man, along with countless other forms of life.”

“The vast universe, even undying beings have a hard time fully understanding it.”

“Even if you are as strong as my master, you can still fall.” Babata looked at Luo feng, “Luo Feng, before my master died…he said, no matter how strong you are, you still must treat the universe with respect!”

Luo Feng nodded.

Yun Mo Planet’s master, with nine undying beings under him, still perished!

“Luo Feng, you decide, whether or not you’ll call my master your teacher.” Babata looked at Luo feng, “If you do, then you’ll be able to receive what he prepared for his disciples.”

“Of course, you can choose not to.” Babata smiled, revealing his two fangs, “If you don’t, to protect my master and his secrets, I will have to kill you.”

“Choose, the decision is yours.”

Chapter 48 – The Teacher's Inheritance

Within the huge octogram shaped hall.

Luo Feng stared at the enormous crystal coffin. The white blonde man in a black robe that was lying peacefully within was almost like a god. This was the man who walked parallel with the universe, with nine undying servants…Yun Mo Planet's master! In his heart, Luo Feng had always respected and worshipped such a warrior, and he was very clear of the difference between having a teacher and guidance versus not having one, two roads that were vastly different.

What's more…

With the black robed Babata staring at him, what choice did he have?

"How do I pay my respects?" Luo Feng looked at Babata.

"Very good, you choice is the right one!" Babata raised his head, "because of your choice, the entire earth will benefit. With the help of I, Demon Babata, Luo Feng, your name will resound throughout the entire milky way, even around the countless planets in the Black Dragon Empire, countless humans will worship you and look up to you. Your one word will determine if an entire planet's culture rises or perishes, you…"

Luo Feng had mixed emotions as he interrupted the excited Babata: "How do I pay my respects?"

“Uh...following tradition, when the master accepts a new student, he should have his closest friends around, with a lavish event. However, now that he’s dead and Yun Mo Planet is gone, everything is simpler. Babata looked at the crystal coffin, his voice suddenly dropping deep and low, “You only need to kowtow eight times in front of his body.

Luo Feng nodded.

Looking at the crystal coffin, the one who had lived for over 60 million years, Yun Mo Planet’s master, had been dead for 50 thousand years. And now he was taking him as his teacher!

“Peng.”

Luo Feng knelt down, knocking his forehead against the ground heavily 8 times.

“From today, you’ll be the masters 5th disciple, and his last, the only living disciple!” Babata looked at Luo Feng

Luo Feng immediately understood...

His teacher was Yun Mo planet’s master, and his fellow disciples were all dead. What kind of enemy did his teacher actually fight with? So much so that the entire Yun Mo planet was destroyed.

“Luo Feng, as the master is dead, he cannot personally teach you, therefore…I will take the place of teacher to teach you.” Babata looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng nodded.

“Rest assured, before his death, master assigned everything to me. In fact, as an AI who has always been beside master, master’s initial teachings and instructions to his disciples, I can display them to you on a screen. Don’t worry.” Babata confidently said.

Hearing that, Luo feng didn’t worry at all anymore.

“I’ll first give you a spatial storage item.” The black robed Babata waved his hand casually and a silver light flew out.

Luo Feng caught it, opening his palm…it seemed like an ordinary silver ring.

“This spatial storage item can be made into many forms, rings, wrist guards and many more.” Babata smiled, however, to build a ‘spatial ring’ is very difficult. Even in the universe, it’s considered a luxury good. This spatial ring’s material is very unique, it can enter and stay within your skin.”

Luo Feng put on the ring on his left middle finger.

Without a sound or trace, just like mercury flowing, it entered his skin, Luo Feng felt a chill and the ring on his finger had

disappeared completely.

"You can use a little spiritual energy to permeate into it, let your energy imprint within. You just need to do it once, never again in the future." Babata said.

"Spiritual imprint?" Luo Feng was suspicious, "How do I do it?"

"Stupid."

Babata was angry, "Spiritual imprint, every person's soul, no matter how strong, will always have its own innate differences and weaknesses! No two souls are completely the same, you just have to use your spiritual energy to permeate into it and print! Don't care about anything else."

"Oh." Luo Feng's intent shifted, a thread of spirit energy quickly flowed from his hand down to his finger, permeating the ring.

The ring slightly changed, quickly...

Luo Feng felt something, the ring had become like his hand itself, without the use of any spirit energy, he could feel it there. This ring had an empty space within it, extremely high capacity, just feeling it, almost like a space that was 100m tall.

"This ring's space is a cuboid shape, following your earth's measurements, it's about 612m long, 521m wide and 108 m tall. I won't go into the decimal points." Babata looked proudly, almost

as though he was hoping to see Luo Feng's shock.

"Oh." Luo Feng nodded.

"Damn, don't you know how hard it is to actually cut a piece of the universe's space and input it into an item? And such a big space at that?" Babata was unsatisfied with Luo Feng's reaction, "If any of the universe's warriors knew, you'd be dead. However, as long as you don't tell anyone, no one will know."

Luo Feng was secretly shocked...

To build a space within a ring, was to actually rip space from the universe? Unbelievable! It was no wonder even in the crazy and proud Babata's words, it was an extremely difficult task.

"Let's go up." Babata said.

"Oh, this crystal coffin..."Luo Feng looked at the coffin.

The black robed Babata looked at the body within the coffin, a complex look on his face. Softly: "Boss, from today on, I'll be following your disciple. Don't worry, I will handle everything." Very softly, so soft that Luo feng could barely hear it clearly, Babata raised his hand and pointed to the ground.

Ka ka ka

The crystal coffin began to slowly descend into the ground and the ground began to seal up.

“Up.” Babata calmed down.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Luo Feng followed behind Babata through the pathways and up into the round hall.

******

The lights were shining brightly in the round hall.

Luo Feng looked at the six corpses with a sense of sorrow, these six corpses...five of them were undying beings!

“Luo Feng.” Babata pointed towards the golden bones, “This was master’s 2nd disciple, also master’s most exceptional student. However in that fight, as master was being pursued, the enemy’s attack actually broke through the defense of the Yun Mo planet ship and into the interior of the ship! The undying beings were fine, he however...died instantly.”

“Past the exterior, straight in?” Luo Feng was very shocked.

“This 2nd senior of mine, what level was he?” Luo Feng asked.

“Sector lord!” Babata said.

Luo Feng was silent…

A sector lord, attacked by a super undying being breaking into the ship’s interior, died instantly! That undying being’s main target should have been Yun Mo planet’s master!

“Ah.”

Luo Feng suddenly stared at Babata, “Babata, universe fighters could all battle on the White dwarf planet, this sector lord could destroy one with a flip of his hand. This enemy’s attack broke through the ship’s exterior and killed him! Yet this ship hasn’t been destroyed, just what was it made of?”

“You are finally becoming aware.” Babata pointed at the surrounding walls, “Look, there are dents in the walls and ground! Those are all imprints left from the undying fighters’ battle! Even if one wasn’t an undying being, he could leave probably only one dent!”

“This Yun Mo Planet ship, the product of my master’s endless hard work, is an immeasurably prized ship! Named the Yu Mo Planet.”

“Price wise? Even if we sold your entire earth, it still wouldn’t be worth even half of the ship.” Babata raised his head, “Right… didn’t you pick up a red shard before?”

“Oh, yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

That blade shard has a ridiculous amount of power.

“That was a piece of the ship that broke apart when the ship fell into earth a long time ago, lodging itself deep in the ground!” Babata laughed, “Don’t think it was caused by the impact, even if the ship hit a middle sized planet, it would still be undamaged! That was actually caused by an attack from an extremely strong enemy, causing the hull to be damaged, and hence led to a piece breaking off.”

“Only initially, the shard was still caught within the ship’s protective barrier. Once it crashed into earth and the barrier was gone, the shard flew out.” Babata explained.

“It’s just a piece of the ship? So sharp?” Luo Feng questioned.

“Let me show you how this ship’s exterior looks like.” Babata pointed towards the space in front.

Hu!

Immediately within the space, a 3D image appeared showing a small replica of the ship!

This was a blood red triangular space ship, just three points, with

their own arcs! In addition, the ship's periphery was extremely thin, very sharp!

A very malevolent appearance!

"Once the ship picks up speed in the universe, with the sharpness of its periphery, even a meteorite zone can be cut through without any problem! Without any detriment to it's speed." Babata proudly said, "You used it to cut your armor, is like big materials for a small job. That is a material that even undying beings have difficulty destroying!

"Oh?" Luo Feng wa stunned.

So it was actually just a piece of the ship, and he thought it was a knife's blade.

"However, the damage it received was critical, now it cannot even fly, otherwise I wouldn't have had to wait on earth for 50,000 years." Babata shook his head, "It can't even fly, don't even mention fixing its body! You can keep this shard, I'll teach you in the future how to use it, it's much stronger than your Soaring Shuttle."

Luo Feng asked: "This shard has it's own special usage?"

"Of course!" Babata laughed, "Your earth's training and battle methods are too primitive and raw."

“Oh, now for your inheritance from your master.” Babata said.

Luo Feng listened intently.

“The Mu Ya Crystals from before, you’ve kept them all?” Babata asked.

“These crystals, what use do they exactly have?” Luo Feng asked.

“They are training devices, and also taming monster and raising plants. They have many uses.” He continued, “Just one crystal can let a student level 8 or 9, with one month of training go into the star traveller level 1 stage! Of course in the universe, we use it more to cultivate and tame monsters and raise plants. Like the cloud contact vine Hong has, with the crystals, they will grow extremely fast.”

“From today on, you shouldn’t be absorbing energy from the universe, its results are too low, too low, wasting more than half your time on absorbing energy, you’ll never reach the universe level that way.

“From now on, you’ll use these crystals to train. I have many of them here.” Babata said.

Chapter 49 – A Rewarding Journey

“Plenty? That’s extravagant.” Luo Feng could feel from Babata’s tone of voice how wealthy and overbearing he was.

“Luo Feng. I’m not scolding you, but as Yun Mo Planet’s only living disciple, you have to set your sights much further, don’t always have the foresight of an ordinary human on earth.” Babata said dissatisfied. “If master was still around, as his only disciple, your position would be higher than the emperor of the Silverblue Empire! Set your sights on the vast universe! Disciple of the undying, who doesn’t use countless treasures to train?”

“You must understand!”

“Usually within 1000 planets, one sector lord will occur through natural evolution!”

“Hence, to guarantee becoming a sector lord, one has to surpass others from the start. Your aptitude is very low, using these crystals doesn’t mean a thing. Compared to the other undying disciples, your rank is much lower.” Babata has followed the Master of the Yun Mo planet all over the universe for countless millions of years, his sights were plenty and high.

Luo Feng: “I understand.”

“Ok.”

Babata continued," When you train, you can rely on the crystals. For defense during the star traveller stage, your teacher prepared the black god set for you. Since you already have it, that's good! Also...I still have a young cloud contact vine, when it's time, it can be used to protect and attack. It's the best companion to have."

"Cloud contact vine?" Luo Feng had heard of this from Hong and Thunder God's conversations.

The cloud contact vine is the universe's most popular plant life, especially amongst powerful fighters and their disciples." Babata continued, "In cultivating it, the cloud contact vine continuously evolves and gets stronger. It has many paths of evolution, the main component being what treasures it gets to absorb."

"If left on earth, it can only absorb the universe energy, peaking at a star traveller level 7 or 8 power."

"However, if you have countless Mu Ya crystals for it, it can definitely grow to universe level." Babata's eyes lit up, "Master spent more than half his wealth on cultivating his cloud contact vine, that particular one...ultimately became an undying. Master has relied on it many times to escape trouble. Only this last time, the enemy was too strong...the cloud contact vine also died."

"More than half his wealth?" Luo Feng couldn't imagine.

One who has nine undying servants, more than half his wealth must be really shocking.

It was reasonable to say that this Yun Mo Planet ship was already expensive beyond comprehension.

However, it seemed that it was only worth a small fraction of the master's wealth.

"Babata, with the crystals we have, can we let this cloud contact vine grow to the universe level?" Luo Feng asked.

"You must be dreaming!"

"Universe level! That requires countless crystals!" Babata shook his head, "These are good for you to train, just enough for you to reach the star level. For the cloud contact vine, which has such a voracious appetite, it's definitely not enough. Relax, I'll tell you in time how to cultivate this cloud contact vine. There are many ways to do it, knowing how to do it is easy, acquiring the treasures required for it is difficult."

Luo Feng listened carefully.

"The master also left you a spirit weapon, suitable for a star traveller to use. It is called the 'arc cutter blade'. However, it's a basic weapon, comparable to your soaring shuttle. On the way back you can decide for yourself which kind of weapon you want to use." Babata smiled, "Between the arc cutter blade and the Soaring Shuttle, these are both secondary. Your strongest weapon right now is actually the shard from the ship."

Luo Feng nodded.

He definitely understood, that shard was something even the undying had trouble destroying, its worth was something one could imagine just by closing one's eyes.

"Luo Feng, listen carefully." Babata grew serious, "This concerns your little life."

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"This shard's material is extremely valuable, domain lords will all vie for it crazily, while sector lords may not be as crazy for it, they might still eye it." Babata continued, "Once discovered by an informed warrior, snatching away the shard is simple, he might even kill you to see if there's any more treasure, that's the big problem."

Luo Feng's heart trembled.

My god.

Domain lords will crazily come snatch this thing? Just this shard?

"Relax, domain and sector lords who recognize 'hybrid copper essence' are few. What's more, if you meet a domain lord in the milky way, you can go buy the lottery." Babata said." On the way back, you should ponder on how to change the form of this shard

to something that even those who know what the Scarlet Mother is wouldn't recognize it."

Luo Feng nodded.

It's hard to meet a domain lord in the milky way, so what's there to be afraid of?

"Hm, master prepared the arc cutter blade for offense, black god set for defense, enough Mu Ya crystals , a spatial ring and training manuals for your star traveller level." Babata said.

"That's it?" Luo Feng looked at Babata.

"Yes."

Babata nodded, "When one's power is weak, carrying a bunch of treasures would be akin to courting death. Master has left you three bank accounts in the Universe Galaxia bank, separately for when you reach the star level, universe level and sector lord level. Once you reach the sector lord level, you will be like a tyrant, able to take huge wealth and treasures.

Luo Feng nodded.

This deceased master had indeed very meticulously prepared for everything, even leaving three accounts behind.

“Only what suits you is good.”

“There are many treasures that you will acquire that you will not be able to use. Acquiring them will only spell disaster.” Babata said.

******

15000m deep underground, at the entrance of the Yun Mo Planet ship.

Luo Feng was extremely satisfied with all his earnings. While it wasn’t extremely shocking, whatever was left behind was indeed very useful. From the attacking weapon, to the defensive armor, training abilities, spatial storage equipment, combat companion cloud contact vine and the training manuals, everything was very well prepared!

“Luo Feng, actually these corpses are the real treasures.” The black robed Babata looked at each body, “These are undying bodies! These will make the Sector lords go crazy for them.

“Oh?”

Luo Feng looked towards the bodies on the ground. Of the four undying bodies on the ground, besides one that was similar to the humans on earth, the rest were other forms of humans. The 5th undying was more machine.

“However, if you dare to take any of the undying corpses out, it’ll be courting death. Also, you have no capabilities of using these bodies. Keep them. We’ll do as we see fit in the future.” Babata said.

“Yes.” Luo Feng’s intent moved.

A formless special energy enveloped the surroundings, quickly keeping the five bodies. There was only one set of golden bones left in the big hall.

“Your senior’s bones, Sector lords’ bones are also very valuable, he’s also your senior...once you leave earth, you can leave his bones to the vast universe, letting him return to the starry skies. Or you can find a secret place to bury him.” Babata looked at the golden bones, expression complex.

He was the one who followed the master throughout the universe, he was also the one who bullied master the most.

Now...

The master is dead, Yun Mo Planet is gone, the once bright and powerful force had dissipated! While Babata’s words were still crazy and proud, he was clear...he was only an AI life form now, without any power, a virtual existence. His only pride would be knowledge and experience.

So he understood...

Without the Master, seniors and elders to protect Luo Feng, the road to becoming a powerful force was a hard one. He had to be extremely careful!

……

Including the corpse at the entrance, six undying bodies and one senior's bones, all were kept in the ring.

At the entrance of the ship.

The black robed child and a youth stood.

"This Yun Mo Planet ship has suffered heavy damage and will never be able to fly again." Babata shook his head, "To fix this unique and leading ship, even the entire Silverblue Empire doesn't have the ability. Maybe the Black Dragon Empire can."

"Damaged, no ability?" Luo Feng asked.

"The ship's main energy is light, but within my own spatial storage space, I've stored energy." Babata shook his head, "The main point is the ship's vital system is damaged critically. The self-repair system is also unable to repair it. Luo Feng...I am now a virtual existence, so to leave with you, I need the help of equipment."

Babata flipped his hand, revealing a black wrist cuff.

“This wrist cuff, is common in the universe, not worth a lot. However, in the left wrist, there is a crystal core, that’s where my consciousness is currently being stored. This core has its own spatial storage space and within it is a large amount of Mu Ya crystals, the arc cutter blade etc. I’ll pass them all to you now.” Babata looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng nodded, Babata was now his substitute teacher.

“Wear it.” Babata ordered.

He immediately put on the cuff. The black robed Babata laughed, turning to what seemed like soap bubbles before disappearing.

“Hu!”

Luo Feng, who was originally standing at the entrance of the ship felt his body tremble.

Rumble!

The enormous Yun Mo Planet ship disappeared immediately, creating a huge crevice, causing a large number of rocks to fall through. A black robed Luo Feng used his spirit energy to envelop his surroundings, not allowing any of the rocks to get close.

“Luo Feng.” A sharp and clear child’s voice sounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

“Ah?” Luo Feng was startled.

“Why are you shocked? Real AI’s all communicate with their masters through their minds!” Babata proudly spoke, “From now on, your mini quantum computer is useless and can be thrown away. That rubbish, I have all its capabilities and I’m 100s of millions times stronger. Also, whenever you enter the virtual space, don’t wear a helmet, that’s very lowly.

“Those with position in the universe, mini quantum computers, consciousness sensor, livelihood caretaker etc and other systems, are all combined in one.” Babata continued, “when you want to speak to me, just send some spirit energy into the crystal core, immediately through the mindlink.

Luo Feng tested it out.

That wrist cuff didn’t resist Luo Feng’s spirit energy, it had already recognized him and let it flow through...Luo Feng felt as though he saw within the core, a black robed child Babata was sitting in a palace throne, smiling at him, revealing his two cute fangs.

“You are saying I can enter the virtual wargod palace?” Luo Feng said.

“Of course, I can let you into the wargod palace, and also into the virtual space I Babata have built.” Babata was proud, “your earth’s wargod palace, was built by an intelligent processor, compared to the amazing virtual space of mine, it’s too far away.”

“It’s a pity…”

“You are an earthling, your consciousness is unlicensed, even if I connect your consciousness to the universe network, it’ll still be unauthorized. For someone like you, you need to be present to open an account, to be able to connect to the universe network.” Babata was somewhat helpless, “also, keep that cloud contact vine beside you into your bag. It is a form of life, so it cannot be stored in the spatial storage space. Keep everything properly and we can leave.”

Chapter 50 – Growth

Luo Feng spread his spirit energy around, sensing on his left about 100m away a bottlegourd plant, about 2m long.

Directing his spirit energy forward to open a path, he went straight ahead.

“Luo Feng, this cloud contact vine is going to be your companion for life.” Babata sighed, “Of course, I, Demon Babata, will also accompany you for life. Only if you die will I leave. Following the Master’s command...until you become a domain lord, I will be your master.”

Babata’s words sounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

“Oh?” Luo Feng suddenly realized.

In the three bank accounts left behind in the universe star river back, each account held different treasures for the different levels, mainly the star level, universe level and the domain lord level! Meaning the biggest and last treasure can only be attained once he reached that level. The living AI Babata will also only recognize Luo Feng as his master when Luo Feng reaches the domain lord levell.

Obviously...

His teacher will only approve of him after he reaches the domain

lord level!

Carefully placing this bottle shaped young contact cloud vine until his bag, Luo Feng rushed straight to the sky!

******

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

From the depths of over 10,000m underground, he broke through countless rock stratum layers, through the surface of the lake and into the sky. The sky was blue and clear, clouds as smooth as silk floated around, one in awhile, a huge flying monster would pass by. Luo Feng floated in mid air soaking in the sights and surrounds, he was in a good mood.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked at his communicator, a missed call?

He called back.

“Hi, Luo Feng, what happened earlier? I called you two to three times but was unable to get through?” Liu He’s voice transmitted from the watch communicator.

Luo Feng was shocked…

Suddenly, Babata’s voice ringed in his mind: “Luo Feng, when you were in the Yun Mo Planet ship earlier, all outside

communications were blocked.

"That's weird." Liu He seemed troubled.

Luo Feng quickly thought about different answers. Communication systems these days were extremely efficient and reliable, almost under no circumstance would there be a situation where a call couldn't get through.

"Oh, is that it, my communicator watch was almost out of power, that's why I shut it off. I've just left underground, getting ready to go back! I can charge my communicator in my auto jet, that's why it's on now." Luo Feng quickly came up with an excuse.

"Oh? Turned it off? Doesn't it tell you when the other person's phone is off? However, it does have problems at times." Liu He didn't pursue the matter further, "Luo Feng, you said you were getting ready to return? We are still underground looking."

"I feel like I can't find anymore, so I've stopped." Luo Feng laughed.

"Alright, we'll keep searching, who knows what we might be able to find." Liu He hung up.

"Looking for Mu Ya crystals? There's no way they'll find anymore." Babata laughed.

Luo Feng flew straight towards his auto jet, controlling it to take

off.

“You are saying there’s no more crystals?” Luo Feng was shocked.

The ship swiftly stopped in mid air, opening its cabin door for Luo Feng to enter through.

“No.1, return home.” Luo Feng ordered.

“Of course not,” In his mind, Babata’s voice resounded, “those crystals were all left there because I put them there. I threw them out from the ship’s cabin door up! I relied on the ship’s energy to emulate a virtual shape, and because of that, I cannot leave the ship. I initially threw the crystals up to attract the strongest geniuses of earth, to test their mental aptitude.”

“Test?” Luo Feng was shocked, “When we were searching for the crystals, you tested us all?”

Luo Feng remembered back in the archeological ruin 9, that test took pretty long before it completed.

“Do you think my efficiency is as low as that outpost’s AI? Babata proudly said, “however, you earthlings’ aptitude are seriously too low, so many star travellers and a large number of wargods... mental capacity wise, you are the best with 22, the next would be a wargod with 16, the 3rd is a star traveller level 2 with 15.”

“16?” Luo Feng asked, “who’s that?”

The 4th representative Eastbourne, mental capacity 15, Luo Feng wasn’t surprised.

But there was actually someone higher than him.

“It’s a kiddo from India.” Babata answered.

“India? Oh…” Luo Feng didn’t question further.

If he was from China, Luo Feng would train him. Since he was from India, forget it, he can rely on himself. But since he’s already a wargod, he seems to be doing well.

……

The auto jet was cruising in the Australian skies, quickly heading towards the Asian region, Jiang Nan city.

Inside the ship.

“Luo Feng, the cloud contact vine is very loyal, it’ll recognize its master for life. This is also why when my master first died, the cloud contact vine also died. Once it’s recognized its master, no one else can use it. That’s why…The process of it recognizing its master is extremely important. Before that, let me make a few changes to your auto jet’s system.” Babata said.

“The auto jet’s system?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Several buttons and consoles lit up within the ship, lights filled up the consoles for a good 15 seconds before returning to peace.

“Now it’s good.” Babata said.

“Why change the system?” Luo Feng asked.

“This auto jet’s system, answers first to your Dojo of Limits Head Hong, second to you. That’s why…as long as he wishes, he can find out whatever you do or did in this ship. He can also take it back whenever he wants.” Babata said, “Now that I’ve changed it, Hong won’t even notice, it will listen first to you and 2nd to Hong.”

Luo Feng was shocked, and understood immediately.

If he had bought an intelligent warship on his own, he would have left something within it too.

“This cloud contact vine, is much stronger than what Hong has.” Babata sighed, “During the Great Nirvana before, Earth began to generate stronger warriors. In order to attract these warriors, I tossed a cloud contact vine out which began to grow! Also, after absorbing three Mu Ya Crystals, along with two crystals that I made into powder, they got absorbed into the plants, becoming what you call the spirits of nature.”

“It’s a pity…”

“Hong and his underlings immediately took away the cloud contact vine and spirits of nature. I could only use the Mu Ya crystals to cultivate an Emperor level monster to attract you all over. After that, I used the crystals one by one to attract the countless warriors so that I could pick out the one with the highest mental capacity.” Babata explained, “Initially, I piled a small number of crystals at the ship’s entrance, throwing them out. Three of them I purposely threw to your side! And the eight crystals were left close to you on purpose…”

“However just by throwing a few, I reached my goal.”

“As I am unable to leave the ship, I could only use the ship’s natural spirit energy emitter to invade your thoughts, subtly influencing you to where the shard was and to pick it up. Later on, I subtly instructed you to come to the ship’s entrance. “Babata said in one breath.

Luo Feng was shocked!

Damn!

From the start to the end, the entire Misty Island saga was orchestrated by Babata!

Spirits of nature, cloud contact vine, Monster emperor, Mu Ya Crystals!

Luo feng was initially suspicious, why would the monster emperor not collect the other crystals, they were in fact thrown only at the time! And he acquiring the shard, discovering the ship, were all inception by Babata!

“Spirit energy emitter? Why would it influence me?” Luo Feng urgently said.

This thing was too scary.

“It’s not as strong as you think.” Babata said, “By itself, it’s very weak, it can only subconsciously attract you. You were previously blindly searching underground, under my suggestions, you naturally headed in the right direction! If I had suggested to you to, for example, kill yourself! You would have definitely noticed, don’t you agree?”

Luo Feng nodded.

Indeed, when he was talking to Xu Xin earlier on the phone, his mind was wandering.

“Let’s not talk about this anymore, let’s make the cloud contact vine recognize its master.” Babata said, you just have to slit your wrist, this cloud contact vine requires quite a bit of fresh blood.

Slit my wrist?

To a star traveller, this wasn't dangerous at all, Luo Feng was initially shocked but went ahead and slit his wrist, chi! He cut it right next to the cloud contact vine, fresh blood flowing out straight into the vine as it absorbed it. With Luo Feng's regeneration level, the wound quickly regenerated and he had no choice but to cut it open again!

"Xiu!" A blood red fruit like a grape appeared out of nowhere, falling onto the vine's body, large amounts of vine curling up.

Si la! Si la! Si la!

Blood red strobes of light began to peek out from the vine's body.

"What's up? Babata?" Luo Feng asked, that fruit earlier was definitely the handiwork of Babata, other than himself, only Babata had a crystal core for a storage space.

"The first time feeding the cloud contact vine!" Babata explained, "I've always been afraid of feeding the vine's young body, as feeding it makes it stronger. If you are weaker than it, then you cannot tame it! That's why throughout these years, I've been laying the foundation, now that it's recognized it's owner, it's the best time for its first feeding!"

"It's like your earth infants, mother's milk is very important. For this first feeding, what it eats is also very important."

"Firstly this treasure, next, it has to be something the vine can

swallow.” Babata explained, “That fruit earlier, was something your master specially left for your cloud contact vine. If you do a price comparison, it’s worth more than even your red shard.”

Luo Feng was extremely shocked.

Babata had easily thrown out a fruit that was more valuable than his red shard, proving that Babata had his own private stash.

“Are you saying the master left me just these?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

“I’m only giving you these. Within my storage space, what’s there is for the vine. Don’t think about the treasures I have, I’ll adhere strictly to my Master’s instructions and plan to train you.” Within that space within his wrist, Babata’s face was filled with pride.

While they were talking...

The cloud contact vine, which was originally green, began to change to a dark red, and its surface had traces of red silk flowing around.

“You can keep it now, straight into your skin. This first feeding... the fruit I gave was too powerful, it’ll take a long time to digest.” Babata said, Luo Feng curiously raised his hand to rub the vine, their minds linked and the vine’s thoughts went into Luo Feng, teaching him the methods to use the vine.

It’s usage was really simple.

With a thought, the vine quickly shrank, like a half a meter long whip, swiftly entering Luo Feng’s skin and vanishing.

It felt like he had another layer of icy clothing, very comfortable!

The vine’s simple and innocent reliance on Luo Feng was conveyed in that mind link, like that of an infant towards its parents, Luo Feng could feel…The vine was like his child.

“Since its first feeding was so good, it’s initial step will be way above other cloud contact vines. Once it’s first evolution has completed, it’ll become your helper. By then, your black god set will be useless. Babata was proud, “I dare say, within the entire Black Dragon Empire, there aren’t that many as extravagant as to feed something so good the first time!”

Luo Feng was already used to Babata’s haughty ways.

“Babata, if I use the shard, what levels can I fight against?” Luo Feng finally asked the question that was egging him.

“You? Hm, your usage as a spirit reader right now is very raw, and you use the ‘hybrid copper essence’ shard too simply. I calculate you should be able to fight normal star traveller level 6 warriors! This thing is after all something even undying beings have trouble destroying.” Within the space, the black robed Babata

shook his head, “However, once you get home and receive the manuals and training from the master, along with some basic training, you’ll be able to deal with star traveller level 8s. That Thunder God…no matter how much he tries, won’t be your match.”

Luo Feng’s heart trembled…

Thunder God?

“What are you shocked for! Can’t you see who I, Babata, am? You are the only disciple from the Yun Mo Planet, using the hybrid copper essence shard, dealing with some guy who hasn’t properly trained even if he is 7-8 levels higher should be very normal no?” Babata was proud, “your teacher was an undying being! And a champion amongst the undying.”

Luo Feng’s heart grumbled one sentence…

In the end, he still perished to an even strong undying being.

“Right, Babata, how did master die to the enemy?” Luo Feng was very curious, someone who was walking parallel with the universe, how did someone like that die?

“You really want to know?” Babata asked.

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“If you want to know, then first become an undying being.” Within the space, Babata’s small fair face revealed a mischievous smile.

“Undying…” Luo Feng said hoarsely.

Too far away.

To become a sector lord required 100,000 years, how long would it take to become undying? China’s culture was only 5,000 years old.

******

The dark blue triangular auto jet was flying towards Jiang Nan city in the middle of the night.

The bright moon shone down on the little district, Luo Feng’s house’s lights were still lit, standing at the entrance of the courtyard was his little brother, mother and others.

Luo Feng had called earlier to inform them about his arrival.

“Dad, mom, look at the fighter jet.” Luo Hua kept saying towards his father who was in a wheelchair and his mom who was looking at the side.

“Little Feng has returned.”

The family all went out excitedly, a dark blue fighter jet began to descend from high above, stopping about 100m away on a grass patch away from the house. The cabin door opened, Luo Feng, donning a black armor walked out, excitedly shouting: “Dad, Mom!”